

---

Electronic Thesis and Dissertation Repository

---

2-1-2016 12:00 AM

## Civilizational Imperatives: American Colonial Culture in the Islamic Philippines, 1899-1942

Oliver Charbonneau, *The University of Western Ontario*

Supervisor: Dr. Frank Schumacher, *The University of Western Ontario*

A thesis submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the Doctor of Philosophy degree in History

© Oliver Charbonneau 2016

Follow this and additional works at: <https://ir.lib.uwo.ca/etd>



Part of the [Asian History Commons](#), [Cultural History Commons](#), [Islamic World and Near East History Commons](#), [Race and Ethnicity Commons](#), and the [United States History Commons](#)

---

### Recommended Citation

Charbonneau, Oliver, "Civilizational Imperatives: American Colonial Culture in the Islamic Philippines, 1899-1942" (2016). *Electronic Thesis and Dissertation Repository*. 3508.  
<https://ir.lib.uwo.ca/etd/3508>

This Dissertation/Thesis is brought to you for free and open access by Scholarship@Western. It has been accepted for inclusion in Electronic Thesis and Dissertation Repository by an authorized administrator of Scholarship@Western. For more information, please contact [wlsadmin@uwo.ca](mailto:wlsadmin@uwo.ca).

## Abstract and Keywords

This dissertation examines the colonial experience in the Islamic Philippines between 1899 and 1942. Occupying Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago in 1899, U.S. Army officials assumed sovereignty over a series of Muslim populations collectively referred to as ‘Moros.’ Beholden to pre-existing notions of Moro ungovernability, for two decades military and civilian administrators ruled the Southern Philippines separately from the Christian regions of the North. In the 1920s, Islamic areas of Mindanao and Sulu were ‘normalized’ and haphazardly assimilated into the emergent Philippine nation-state. Never fully integrated, the Muslim South persisted as an exotic frontier zone in the American and Filipino colonial imaginaries.

The following chapters argue that Americans acting in both official and non-official capacities undertook a project of cultural reconfiguration among the Moros. Essentializing Moro ‘characteristics,’ American colonial actors implemented a variety of programs aimed at transforming Muslim social, legal, commercial, medical, and educational practices. These complex and imperfect processes often met with resistance from Moro populations, and American authorities used violence as a means of ‘correcting’ recalcitrant behaviours. A second seam of argumentation asserts the centrality of inter-imperial dialogue and transfer to the colonial experience in the Southern Philippines. Americans borrowed and modified European imperial antecedents in myriad ways, from carceral technologies to the creation of racially demarcated leisure spaces. As a region, the Muslim South was shaped during the period under study by transcolonial flows of personnel, ideas, and commercial products. This involved transfers not only between Americans and Europeans, but also between Moros and the Islamic world.

Emphasizing understudied and unstoried histories, this project contributes to a growing body of work that situates American colonial encounters in a global context. Overlooked in much of the literature on American colonialism in the Philippines, the Muslim South was an important site for the development of American civilizational imperatives.

These imperatives, and the colonial project writ large, were shaped and reshaped by pervasive supraregional connectivities and inter-imperial exchanges. Far from being mere colonial backwaters, Mindanao and Sulu are critical to understanding the character of American empire in the early twentieth-century.

Keywords: American colonial empire, U.S. imperialism, Moros, Philippines, 1904 Louisiana Purchase Exposition, Islam, colonialism in Southeast Asia, empire, colonial culture, colonial education, transcolonial, transnational, inter-imperial, missionaries, religion, race, colonial violence, civilizing missions

For my mother and father.



## Acknowledgements

In the preceding five years, my spare moments have been given over to pacing, stressing, and staring vacantly at the walls of my home office. Writing a dissertation is a simultaneously hellish and exhilarating conversation with oneself. Days are spent cycling through peculiar manifestations of self-doubt, confidence, defeat, indifference, and euphoria. In these final months, I have marvelled at my mind's ability to ratchet its stress levels to Olympian heights. Visualize a cartoon of an overworked nineteenth-century steam engine, its screws popping in and out as it convulses, and a generously mustachioed train conductor yelling, "Everybody off, it's about to blow!" My next work will be written while living in an ashram and listening to "Sounds of the Pacific" on a twenty-four hour loop. Although this current project was created in solitude, it could not (and would not) have been completed without the support of others. Language fails me in expressing the depth of my gratitude towards these people, but I will make an attempt anyways.

As a supervisor and mentor, Dr. Frank Schumacher has been superlative. He suggested I examine the relationship between American colonials and the Moros when I first approached him about doctoral work in 2010. Long before I began researching or writing, Professor Schumacher helped shape my understanding of the field. At each subsequent stage of the project he provided me with insights culled from his own impressive knowledge of history. Always willing to provide a reference or meet for lunch, Professor Schumacher was a testament to how important a good supervisor is to a successful dissertation. His generosity of spirit, analytical curiosity, and quick wit manifested themselves in each of our long talks, and I inevitably left these meetings with renewed focus. Whatever good is found in the subsequent pages can be largely attributed to Professor Schumacher's guidance. Any further attempt to convey my appreciation would inevitably feel inadequate, so I will simply say to him: thank you.

There are a number of people in the Department of History at Western who provided me with assistance and advice. Professor Carl Young not only supervised one of my

comprehensive fields, but also acted as second reader for this project. His observations and suggestions helped me situate my writing within broader histories of Southeast Asia. Our talks were a source of reassurance throughout this entire process. Also thanks are due to Professors Robert MacDougall, Maya Shatzmiller, William Turkel, Robert Ventresca, and Robert Wardaugh. In a variety of ways, each made life as a graduate student more pleasant for me. Thanks are also due to my dissertation committee. Drs. Francine McKenzie, Scott Schaffer, Ian Tyrrell, and (aforementioned) Carl Young all provided helpful commentary and criticism, and made my defence an enriching experience. Dr. Tyrrell's willingness to participate as the external reader despite being on the other side of the globe was incredibly gracious. I feel tremendous guilt about how early he had to wake up that day. The staff in the departmental office, in particular Chris Speed and Kara Brown, were reliable sources of support when I found myself puzzled by practical administrative issues. At Dalhousie University, Professor Sarah-Jane Corke introduced me to the historiography of American foreign relations and set me on the path I am now. Moving further back in time, Andrea Spriet at Assumption College School was the first educator who showed me that history was an ongoing conversation and not just rote factual chronology.

I appreciate the help I received from staff members at the Bentley Historical Library (University of Michigan), the Division of Rare and Manuscript Collections (Cornell University), the Manuscript Division at the Library of Congress, the Missouri History Museum Library and Research Center, the National Archives (College Park), the Special Collections Research Center (Syracuse University), the United States Army Heritage and Education Center (Carlisle), and the State Historical Society of Missouri (Columbia). Additionally, important financial support was provided by the Social Sciences and Humanities Research Council of Canada and the University of Western Ontario.

Tim Compeau and Marilla McCargar were my constant companions in academic joy and misery, providing me with hundreds, if not thousands, of hours of productive advice and (necessary) non-productive sociality. Nic Virtue, Dorotea Gucciardo, and their son Arlo welcomed me into their home countless times for great conversation and even better food (or does it make sense the other way around?). Rachael Griffin commiserated with me, also fed me fantastic meals, and was reliably enthusiastic when bad action movies were discussed or

viewed. Chris Schultz regularly exasperated me, but also generated many thought-provoking conversations. Bill Couchie and I drank a lot of beer and watched a lot of Blue Jays baseball together. Paris McCargar-Olivier's practical life philosophies have been a continuing inspiration. I am grateful to so many others I have met through the History Department, including Erin Pocock, Gregg French, Birgül Akgül, Brian Crowley, Claire Halstead, and Alex Souchen.

Outside campus, the list grows long. I would write an ode to each of you had I the luxury of infinite space. Sean Somerton, P. Ian Quinlan, Robert Leonard Cleaver, Lindsay Oliver, Dylan Worsell, Eric Parsons, and Holly Kingston have all tolerated my presence for years and enriched my life immeasurably. Nijole Kuzmickas, something between an aunt and a second mother to me, has been a constant source of love and encouragement since before I can recall. Tara (Charbonneau), Ralph, Aja, Alex, and John Sutton have been wonderful to me over the years. Robert Favetta is one of the funniest people I know, a consummate griller of meats, and an outstanding partner to my mother. Bert and Sheila Stubbs, not to mention their various offspring, are not only delightful people, but graciously allow my grumpy presence in their home week after week.

My father, Charles Aitkenhead, bequeathed me his obsessive desire to learn and collect. Looking at the piles of books around our apartment, I am reminded of sorting through his collection two decades ago and marvelling at all the 'stories.' At age six or seven, I recall peppering him with questions about the Eichmann trial and the fatwa against Salman Rushdie. In my teen years, he uncomplainingly allowed me to pilfer his novels and histories for my own precocious collection. As an adult, he has read every chapter of this dissertation and is still a reliable source of interesting (and frequently odd) information. My mother, Therese Charbonneau, sacrificed many years of her life making sure I grew from an irritating little boy, to a surly teenager, to a feckless twenty-something, to a decent adult male (hopefully). She is the most even-tempered, non-judgemental, and generous person I know. Her sense of adventure and endless curiosity have informed many of my own decisions in life, and without her constant support none of my successes would have been possible. Love you, Ma!

Our dogs, Augie and Lily, have seen more of my writing process than any human. They snored on our guest bed as I wrote, pestered me to play with them when I had been staring at my computer screen for too long, and were my companions on long walks around the neighbourhood where I mentally organized potential chapters. Thanking them here is slightly ridiculous, although I would not forgive myself if I neglected to mention their weird contributions to my work. Last, my partner, Victoria, who has shared in this ordeal and who enriches my life each day. It is no stretch to say that without her a completed product would not exist. Victoria read and edited every chapter, calmed me down during stressful periods, and tirelessly supported the project. Her intelligence and equilibrium were at times all that motivated me to continue. I am profoundly grateful to have her as my collaborator and companion, or, as Tommy Wiseau would have it, my “future wife.”

## Table of Contents

<b>Abstract and Keywords</b> .....	i
<b>Acknowledgements</b> .....	iv
<b>Table of Contents</b> .....	viii
<b>Terminology and Usage</b> .....	ix
<b>Introduction: American Empire and the Colonial Remote</b> .....	1
<b>Chapter One: Contact and Conquest</b>	
A Historical Survey of Mindanao and Sulu, 1300s-1900s.....	40
<b>Chapter Two: Imagining the Moro</b>	
Ethnographic and Geographic Fantasies on the Colonial Frontier.....	62
<b>Chapter Three: Civilizational Imperatives (I)</b>	
Courtrooms, Clinics, Markets, and Agricultural Colonies.....	113
<b>Chapter Four: Civilizational Imperatives (II)</b>	
The Classroom and the Mission House.....	158
<b>Chapter Five: Corrective Violence</b>	
On Fear, Resistance, Massacre, and Punishment.....	202
<b>Chapter Six: Tropical Idylls</b>	
Maintaining Colonial Spaces and Bodies.....	254
<b>Chapter Seven: Moros in America</b>	
Visiting the Metropole in Fact and Fiction.....	298
<b>Chapter Eight: Imperial Exchanges</b>	
The Southern Philippines in a Connected World.....	349
<b>Conclusion: “The Ambient Air of Americanism”</b> .....	408
<b>Appendix A: Maps</b> .....	426
<b>Appendix B: Glossary</b> .....	431
<b>Bibliography</b> .....	433
<b>Curriculum Vitae</b> .....	481

## Terminology and Usage

The term ‘Moro’ as a designation for Muslims in the Philippines originates from Spanish history. The fall of the last Islamic state in Granada in 1492 occurred mere decades before early Iberian incursions into Southeast Asia, and memories of the *Reconquista* resonated among Spain’s Catholic empire-builders. Encountering Muslim populations on the fringes of Southeast Asia, they narratively integrated them into their long conflict with North African Muslims by giving them the same name. By virtue of their Islamic faith, these people became ‘Moros’ in the Spanish colonial imagination (as Christianized natives of the Philippines became ‘*Indios*’). This term had no practical value other than denoting whether an ethnic group had undergone Islamization or not. An array of competing royal lineages existed in the Southern Philippines, as did differing cultural practices and adaptations of Islam. With some notable exceptions, Americans adopted these racial-religious taxonomies after 1898. Newspaper and magazine articles emphasized the unitary identity of Muslims, although sustained efforts to map the groups also occurred. Most Americans imagined ‘the Moro’ as a single body of Muslims, not as a willful misnomer for a collection of ethnicities. Civilian and military officials on the ground learned to appreciate the differences between Maguindanao and Maranao societies in their daily work, yet the notion of ‘the Moro’ remained. As we shall see, this reductionist thinking had powerful effects on colonial policy.

In compiling this project, I’ve struggled with the use of the term ‘Moro’ as shorthand. For many years, the designation was viewed as a slur, but in recent decades some Muslim groups have reclaimed the word and speak of the *Bangsamoro* (community or nation of Moro people) struggle against the hegemony of the Philippine nation-state. The term ‘Filipino Muslims’ is likewise imperfect, suggesting as it does that Islamic groups fit neatly into a national identity developed elsewhere in the archipelago. In the following pages, I use the term ‘Moro’ and ‘Muslim’ interchangeably for the sake of flow, but wherever possible identify specific ethnic groups. I do not simply use ‘Moro’ where ‘Tausūg’ is applicable, for example. Nevertheless, in some instances I discuss primary source documentation where the term is used uncritically. This is most prevalent in the second chapter, which explores how

Americans framed Moro identity. Reducing these identities was a strategy of colonial rule, and I make every attempt to avoid doing so myself. Thirteen Moro groups live in the Southern Philippines: the Badjao, Iranun, Jama Mapun, Kalagan, Kalibugan, Maguindanao, Maranao, Molbog, Samal, Sangil, Tausūg, and Yakan. The Muslims who inhabit this work hail primarily from the four largest of these groupings: the Maguindanao, Maranao, Tausūg, and Samal (also referred to as the Sama-Bajau). Wherever possible, I emphasize that these were and are distinct groups with a shared Muslim heritage. The term Lumad is similarly flattening, and refers to a diverse collection of peoples on Mindanao. These are groups American colonials referred to as ‘pagans,’ and in sum represent the indigenous peoples of the island. Included in the designation are the Manobo, Bukidnon, Subanon, Mandaya, Sangil, Tagabawa, and other peoples.

I also acknowledge my problematic use of ‘Americans’ to describe citizens of the United States. I use the term for stylistic reasons, but recognize that it improperly gives a transcontinental identity to men and women of European origin from limited areas of North America. In some instances, I use the shorthand ‘colonials’ to describe white inhabitants of the American Philippines. Here I take my lead from scholars writing on European colonies, particularly the example of the British Empire in India. In the American context, we find racially stratified environments and particular cultural rituals common to colonial settings. I have applied standard transliterations of the many place names, peoples, official titles, and regional products with Austronesian linguistic origins. In quoted material I have left alternate transliterations in place. Most Maguindanaon, Tausūg, and Maranao words used are italicized, however, the term ‘datu’ – denoting a local leader or chief – remains unitalicized due to its frequent appearance. There is a small glossary at the end of this project.

Unless otherwise noted, I use the place names common during the period under study. In some cases, I provide the present-day name if it has changed substantially. Readers unfamiliar with the geography of Muslim South should be aware that Jolo denotes both the name of the primary island in the Sulu Archipelago and its largest settlement. When possible, I try to distinguish the two by calling the latter ‘Jolo town’ or ‘the town of Jolo.’

“Italy in Tripoli, Spain in Morocco, France in Algeria, Austria in Herzegovina and Bosnia, England in Egypt, India, Borneo and the Straits Settlements, and the Dutch in the East Indies are in contact with the Mohammedan problem of government, in varying degrees of success, with probably the greatest advance having been realized, through a reasonable measure of paternalism, in the Dutch possessions. The United States has made its advent in the East as a new power for good, not alone for the island races that come under her care, but also in that great settlement of European spheres of influence in Asia, where exists the greatest world problems of our day. We must accept the responsibilities of the new situation as a providentially imposed task upon a progressive and powerful nation. We cannot shirk the trust imposed whether for the present or for posterity. From national birth to the present time our development has been westward. It is our destiny. Our industrial and commercial future is indissolubly linked with the destinies of the thousand millions of souls occupying today the oldest empires of the earth.”

- John P. Finley, District Governor of Zamboanga, 1913

“Just by saying that something was so, they believed that it was. I know now that these conquerors, like many others before them, and no doubt like others after, gave speeches not to voice the truth, but to create it.”

- Laila Lalami, *The Moor's Account*



## Introduction / **American Empire and the Colonial Remote**

In January 1842, the United States Exploring Expedition sailed into the azure waters of the Sulu Sea en route to the island of Jolo. The expedition's leader, a brilliant but difficult naval officer named Charles Wilkes, had spent his time in Manila collecting information on the Southern Philippines. In the colonial capital, he consulted with a Spanish naval captain, one Señor Halcon, who admitted that existing nautical maps were rife with errors.<sup>1</sup> This posed few problems for the men aboard the five remaining ships of the expedition, who were at the tail end of an epic four year and 87,000 mile long journey. During that time, they had charted coastlines, discovered new islands, and conducted scientific inquiries from the American Pacific Northwest to the desolate shores of Antarctica. Sailing through the Mindoro Strait, the squadron noticed the hills of Panay were riddled with strange “telegraphs of rude construction” that warned inhabitants “of the approach of piratical prahus from Sooloo, which formerly were in the habit of making attacks upon the defenceless inhabitants and carrying them off into slavery.”<sup>2</sup> Five decades hence, the descendants of these “pirates” became the colonial subjects of the United States.

The expedition laid anchor at La Caldera, northeast of the Spanish town of Samboangan. A colonial stronghold, the settlement was located at the southern tip of a peninsula that jutted outwards from the western side of Mindanao, the second largest island in the Philippine Archipelago. Wilkes and some of his men went ashore at La Caldera to survey the Spanish fort and its surroundings. Several of the expedition's scientists joined the shore party so they could examine the flora and fauna of the unknown land. Here they observed a small sampling of Mindanao's incredible biodiversity: trees of 150 feet or more feet whose trunks shot up “remarkably straight”; dense tropical forest swarming with monkeys and cacophonous birds; and native villages growing an abundance of vegetables and fruits – “all of a fine and of large size.” Wilkes and his crew had no time to travel down the coast to

---

<sup>1</sup> Charles Wilkes, *Synopsis of the Cruise of the U.S. Exploring Expedition* (Washington: Peter Force, 1842), 39.

<sup>2</sup> Charles Wilkes, *Narrative of the U.S. Exploring Expedition, Volume 5* (Philadelphia: n.p., 1849), 325.

Samboangan, but the commander related afterwards that it was a place where *deportados* – “native rogues” – were sent for punishment. Wilkes commented upon the fearsomeness of Mindanao’s interior: “wild beasts, serpents, and hostile natives” meant that Spanish inland exploration was done rarely and only in numbers. The inhabitants of the island were “very cruel and a bad set” who had “hitherto bid defiance to all attempts to subjugate them.” After surveying the bay, charting its geographic position, recording the flood tides, and making observations about the magnetism of the location, the expedition set sail for Jolo.<sup>3</sup>

The squadron reached Soung, later known as the town of Jolo, on the morning of February 2<sup>nd</sup>. Approaching the island, Wilkes was awed:

As we were brought nearer and nearer, we came to the conclusion that in our many wanderings we had seen nothing to be compared to this enchanting spot. It appeared to be well cultivated, with gentle slopes rising here and there into eminences from one to two thousand feet high...much of the island was under cultivation, yet it had all the freshness of a forest region. The many smokes on the hills, buildings of large size, cottages, and cultivated spots, together with the moving crowds on the land, the prahus, canoes, and fishing-boats on the water, gave the whole a civilized appearance.<sup>4</sup>

Unfortunately, the serene effects of the environment were “destroyed in part by the knowledge that this beautiful archipelago was the abode of a cruel and barbarous race of pirates.” The following morning the Sultan of Sulu gave Wilkes and his men permission to disembark and, with the expedition’s naturalists in tow, they went ashore. On land, the group studied the bamboo dwellings, elevated on poles to escape tidal damage, and marvelled at

---

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., 330-331.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., 332.

how the men all wore a huge knife, called a *kris*, on their waists. As on Mindanao, tropical produce – yams, camotes, cocoanuts – flourished.<sup>5</sup>

As head of the expedition, Wilkes received an audience with Datu Mulu, the Sultan's chief representative, at the latter's home. The captain was taken aback by the accumulated curios, which included weapons, clothing, and instruments of all types. He wrote later that "the whole [scene] was a strange mixture of tragedy and farce." The commander claimed the house "might justly be termed nasty" yet in his accounts the reader intuits a peculiar sense of awe at the variety and exoticism of Datu Mulu's possessions.<sup>6</sup> Next, the datu took the American to meet the Sultan himself, whom Wilkes believed to be "under the effects of opium" and whose teeth were stained "black as ebony" from chewing betel nut.<sup>7</sup> Despite his misgivings, Wilkes and the Sultan concluded a modest treaty promising protection for American commercial vessels sailing in the waters of the Sulu Sea and offering favourable terms of trade within the Sultanate. It also gave an assurance that shipwrecked American vessels in the region would have their officers and crews returned to Spanish settlements and their property safeguarded.<sup>8</sup> Shortly afterwards, treaty in hand, Wilkes departed Soung with his ships en route to Singapore.

In the five-volume narrative he compiled upon returning to the United States, Charles Wilkes devoted only thirty pages to his brief visit to Jolo. While some of this account simply retold the events of the three-day stopover, the commander devoted most of it to cataloguing the peoples of the Sulu Archipelago and the environments they lived in. As Wilkes met with the Sultan and toured the markets of Jolo, the expedition's scholars – two naturalists, a geologist, a linguist, a botanist, a horticulturalist, and a conchologist – fanned out to surrounding islands to collect and observe.<sup>9</sup> Wilkes and philologist Horatio Hale provided

---

<sup>5</sup> John S. Jenkins, *Voyage of the U.S. Exploring Squadron* (Auburn and Rochester: Alden and Beardsley, 1855), 454-455.

<sup>6</sup> Wilkes, *Narrative of the U.S. Exploring Expedition*, 334.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, 336.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, 532.

<sup>9</sup> A description of the assembly of the scientific corps is found in Nathaniel Philbrick, *Sea of Glory: America's Voyage of Discovery, The U.S. Exploring Expedition, 1838-1842* (New York: Penguin, 2003), 49-50.

descriptions of the natives, writing in the popular physiognomical style to morally assess what they witnessed. The inhabitants of Sulu were “tall, thin, and effeminate-looking” and had “faces...peculiar for length, particularly in the lower jaw and chin, with high cheek-bones, sunken lack-lustre eyes, and narrow foreheads.” They had “but few qualities to redeem their treachery, cruelty, and revengeful dispositions” and possessed “an inordinate lust for power.” However, Wilkes observed, they were also cowards, a “trait of character” attributed to them “among the Spaniards of the Philippines, who ought to be well acquainted with them.”<sup>10</sup>

Wilkes’ narrative was one of frenzied observation and accumulation. He jumped between topics in an attempt to give American readers a summation of society in the remote islands, frequently deploying casual racism and lazy generalizations. Topics included, but were not limited to: the habits of fishermen, the sartorial styles of the women, the social rituals of the elite, notions of law and governance, population estimates, the native penchant for piracy, the Chinese presence in the islands, astronomical observations, the history of the Sulu Sultanate, methods of pearl diving, the lack of hygienic practices, and the native’s imperfect interpretation of Islam. Perhaps inadvertently, Wilkes also illustrated the high degree of connectivity the maritime society of the Sulu Archipelago had to the outside world. The accounts of Datu Mulu were kept in Dutch, indicating links with European colonial commercial networks, and when Wilkes considered the matter of suppressing piracy he did so by assessing the efforts of the British in Maritime Southeast Asia.<sup>11</sup>

The United States Exploring Expedition represented an important attempt to create and claim knowledge of the Pacific for an ascendant nation. Considering this, the brief stopover in Jolo can be interpreted as a minor event. Indeed, what Wilkes wrote on other regions after returning to the United States dwarfs the thirty pages of material on the Southern Philippines. Yet as Brigadier General John Bates drafted another treaty with the Sultanate in 1899, this one defining the contours of American sovereignty in the island group, he looked back at Wilkes’ brief time in Sulu and deemed it the foundation of “the friendly relations

---

<sup>10</sup> Wilkes, *Narrative of the U.S. Exploring Expedition*, 342-343.

<sup>11</sup> *Ibid.*, 355.

which have so long existed between the Sultan's people and the people of the United States."<sup>12</sup> Although he had no way of knowing, Wilkes was the first of many Americans who interacted with and wrote about the Muslims of the Southern Philippines. While his encounter was that of an explorer making contact fleeting contact on the Asian fringe, later writers approached the topic as colonial officials, soldiers, businesspeople, journalists, travellers, engineers, missionaries, teachers, and academics.<sup>13</sup> Writers during the American colonial period shared many of the same preoccupations Charles Wilkes did. They attempted to reduce the Muslims of the Southern Philippines to a set of essential qualities, and were frustrated when their colonial subjects operated outside of these notional limitations. They serially categorized the living and non-living matter around them, compiling their findings at ponderous length in journals and letters to family. They accessed transcolonial concepts to explain and control their surroundings. They fetishized and feared the cultures they attempted to transform, compulsively collecting the foreign items they disparaged as savage. They accessed and acted upon models of racial hierarchy drawn from their own personal histories, and from that of their nation.<sup>14</sup>

This project is an exploration of how imperial, national, and local histories interwove in a specific region of America's Pacific empire: the island of Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago. Situated between the American arrival in the Southern Philippines in 1899 and the Japanese invasion of Mindanao in 1942, the following chapters are thematic reckonings with the texture of colonial culture in the region, and, taken as a whole, ruminations on the character and legacies of the American civilizing mission. I approached this task with a

---

<sup>12</sup> Memorandum II – Concerning the Political History of the Sultanate Since the 1840s, 1899, Box 2, Folder 9. John C. Bates Papers, 1807-1922, United States Army Heritage and Education Center, Carlisle, Pennsylvania (Henceforth referenced as USAHEC).

<sup>13</sup> For further information on Charles Wilkes, the context of the journey, and its place in Southeast Asian and American history, see William Ragan Stanton, *The Great United States Exploring Expedition of 1838-1842* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1975); James Francis Warren, *The Sulu Zone: The Dynamics of External Trade, Slavery, and Ethnicity in the Transformation of a Southeast-Asian Maritime State* (Singapore: National University of Singapore Press, 2007); L.R. Wright, *The Origins of British Borneo* (Hong Kong: Hong Kong University Press, 1970).

<sup>14</sup> The ethnographical implications of the United States Exploring Expedition, especially in relation to notions of civilization and savagery that existed within America, are explored at length in Barry Alan Joyce, *The Shaping of American Ethnography: The Wilkes Exploring Expedition, 1838-1842* (Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2001).

variety of questions. How was the concept of ‘the Moro’ constructed in American minds? How were civilizing projects generated and in what ways, intentional or not, did they reconfigure the colonized, the colonizers, and the landscapes each inhabited? What role did the history of the United States and the personal histories of American colonials play in shaping colonial culture? How and why did instances of violence occur between Americans, Muslims, and Christian Filipinos? How did American colonials live in a profoundly foreign environment and what anxieties did their experiences generate? What forms of cultural exchange occurred between the colonial metropole and Muslim populations? And, finally, how was the colonial experience in the Southern Philippines influenced and altered by global connectivities?

This introductory chapter reflects upon the challenges of writing a regional history that balances specificity with broader notions of supraregional transfer. In the first section, I consider questions of terminology and explore historiographical trends placing American foreign relations within a global context. I also examine works specifically focused on the colonial occupation of Mindanao and Sulu. The second section is a rumination on issues of theory and methodology, including how to use transnational / transcolonial frameworks to move past the ‘colonial remote’ towards decentered histories; the complications of writing about colonial *cultures*; and the utility of casting a wide net when sourcing. I conclude by briefly summarizing each body chapter.

## **Liminal Spaces in the American Pacific**

The complications of studying American colonial culture in the Southern Philippines are manifold. The Sulu and Maguindanao Sultanates shared cultural and commercial connections with the Malay States, China, Indochina, Siam, and a variety of other Southeast Asian actors. Further, in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries Mindanao and Sulu existed at the intersection of empires. Spanish, German, British, Dutch, Portuguese, and American colonial entities were all linked to the region at different (and overlapping) points. When the Americans arrived in Zamboanga in 1899, they inherited a state and people, the Christianized majorities of Luzon and the Visayas, whose nationalist imaginary included Mindanao and Sulu as a vital part of an independent Philippines. The Americans themselves grappled with the domestic and international implications of acquiring overseas territories – ones with little

chance of incorporation into the union. After a century of ferocious territorial and commercial expansion, the United States was positioned on the cusp of world power, simultaneously foreswearing and emulating European antecedents as it spread into foreign spaces. In Mindanao and Sulu, once-thriving maritime Muslim societies responded to their circumscribed roles in the new colonial order by accessing connections they shared with Mecca, Constantinople, and the Malay States in attempts to create bulwarks of spiritual and temporal authority.<sup>15</sup>

These tangled histories force us to reconceive our notions of the colonial remote. The frontiers of the imperial body were at once places of isolation and connectivity. The linkages between maritime trading centers like Zamboanga and Jolo and the outside world did not simply vanish after the establishment of American colonial rule. Rather, they flourished. Moros used shipping lines based out of Singapore to travel to Mecca for the *hajj*. Officials in the Moro Province encouraged more vigorous links with Australia, Hong Kong, Shanghai, and Batavia. Cruise ships stopped in Zamboanga and their passengers enjoyed the nightlife there. The largest Japanese diaspora in Southeast Asia before the Second World War was located in Davao Province. British banking representatives looked after the finances of the

---

<sup>15</sup> A number of magisterial surveys on empire have appeared in recent years. Comparative in nature, these works present differing takes on the nature of imperial power. Each is useful for placing the United States within global patterns of rule. Collectively, they run the gamut from traditional (Parsons), to thematic (McCoy), to multi-disciplinary (Calhoun). See David B. Abernathy, *The Dynamics of Global Dominance: European Overseas Empires, 1415-1980* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2002); Robert Aldrich, ed., *The Age of Empires* (London: Thames and Hudson, 2007); David Armitage, ed., *Theories of Empire, 1450-1800* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 1998); Thomas Bender, *A Nation Among Nations: America's Place in World History* (New York: Hill and Wang, 2006); Jane Burbank and Frederick Cooper, *Empires in World History: Power and the Politics of Difference* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011); Craig Calhoun et al., eds., *Lessons of Empire: Imperial Histories and American Power* (New York: The New Press, 2006); Frederick Cooper and Ann Laura Stoler, eds., *Tensions of Empire: Colonial Cultures in a Bourgeois World* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1997); John Darwin, *After Tamerlane: The Rise and Fall of Global Empires, 1400-2000* (New York: Bloomsbury Press, 2007); Dominic Lieven, *Empire: The Russian Empire and its Rivals* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2002); Charles S. Maier, *Among Empires: American Ascendancy and its Predecessors* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2007); Charles S. Maier, *Leviathan 2.0: Inventing Modern Statehood* (Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2014); Alfred W. McCoy et al., eds., *Endless Empire: Spain's Retreat, Europe's Eclipse, America's Decline* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2012); Anthony Pagden, *The Burdens of Empire, 1539 to the Present* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2015); Timothy H. Parsons, *The Rule of Empires: Those Who Built Them, Those Who Endured Them, and Why They Always Fall* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2010); Bernard Porter, *Empire and Superempire: Britain, America and the World* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2006); Balachandra Rajan and Elizabeth Sauer, eds., *Imperialisms: Historical and Literary Investigations, 1500-1900* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2004).

American colonials they drank with at the Zamboanga Golf and Country Club. International corporations like Goodyear established plantations in the Mindanao interior. Ottoman dignitaries visited in hopes of instructing the Moros on ‘modern’ Islamic practices. Journalists and academics travelled through the region collecting information on its peoples to transmit back to the United States and Europe. German merchant families intermarried with the Tausūg elite on Jolo and were involved in political and commercial affairs from Singapore to Zamboanga. American military officers travelled through European colonial possessions and observed how Europeans administered their empires. These examples, all drawn from the following chapters, suggest a space that, while often conceptualized as a frontier, was intrinsically linked to a variety of national and imperial histories.<sup>16</sup>

This study heeds Paul Kramer’s call to use “the imperial” as a category of analysis.<sup>17</sup> Here, ‘imperial’ and ‘empire’ are used interchangeably to suggest unequal iterations of power generated by states and their non-state allies (corporations, academic institutions, religious organizations, so forth). Imperial actors access or create hierarchies that employ race, gender, religion, commerce, sexuality, education, and hygiene to assess and discipline subject populations. Historically, the imperial finds its generative power when a polity aggrandizes beyond its commonly held territories. These processes inevitably feature coercive elements, although degrees of severity vary based on myriad factors from national-ideological disposition to native collaboration. Built upon unstable formations of exceptionalized difference and exploitative processes of extraction, imperial power needs active maintenance by its agents lest native resistance or infiltration comprise it. Not limited to direct territorial control, the imperial exists in the structuring of regional or global orders through commercial and cultural regimes. Such regimes attempt to standardize cultural norms in the societies they dominate as a means of entrenching and codifying power differentials there. Manifestations

---

<sup>16</sup> As it happens, ‘domestic’ and global frontiers often intertwined in the narratives of American travel writers during the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, complicating notional demarcations and suggesting the presence of a ‘Global West’ in the national imaginary. See David M. Wrobel, *Global West, American Frontier: Travel, Empire, and Exceptionalism from Manifest Destiny to the Great Depression* (Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press, 2013).

<sup>17</sup> Paul Kramer, “Power and Connection: Imperial Histories of the United States in the World,” *The American Historical Review* 116.5 (2011): 1349-1350.



of this phenomenon range from racial ordering and exclusion to promoting standards of consumer desire.<sup>18</sup> Following Kramer, this project is more invested in analyzing how Americans acted within the context of the imperial rather than rehashing well-worn debates about whether the United States was or is an empire.<sup>19</sup>

For the sake of specificity, I contrast the broad and inclusive contours of ‘the imperial’ with a narrower definition of ‘the colonial.’ The colonial is an extension of imperial impulses, wherein a state conquers and exercises direct territorial rule over a foreign body of people. Within this definition there are gradations. The frontier settler colonialism practiced by the expanding American nation in the nineteenth-century differed from the military conquest and subsequent administration of overseas possessions after the Spanish-American War. Nevertheless, the colonial or practice of colonialism denotes acknowledged sovereignty over a geographic space. It also serves our purposes by way of periodization. If the imperial is an analytical tool strengthened by its broad applicability and malleability, the colonial excels at articulating, in terms of the historical record and the academic imagination, a method of rule that began with the ‘discovery’ of the Americas in 1492 and receded nearly five centuries later in the long aftermath of the Second World War.<sup>20</sup> In traditional accounts

---

<sup>18</sup> In the past three decades, there has been an enormous increase in literature charting the various iterations of American imperial power. The “absence of empire in the study of American culture” that Amy Kaplan critiqued in her seminal 1993 essay has been met with a vigorous response from scholars in a variety of disciplines. Kaplan’s essay is found in Amy Kaplan and Donald E. Pease, eds., *Cultures of United States Imperialism* (Durham: Duke University Press, 1993).

<sup>19</sup> Kramer, “Power and Connection,” 1350. Despite the overwhelming volume of scholarship arguing the necessity of analyzing American power through the lens of empire and hegemony, the concept remains unpopular in mainstream U.S. culture. Among historians, there are those who evade or deny the experience of empire, most recently: Elizabeth Cobbs Hoffman, *American Umpire* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2013). Other writers accept the notion of American global hegemony but argue that it should be embraced as the best possible option for international ordering. The *bête noire* for scholars writing critical histories of American power is inevitably Niall Ferguson, *Colossus: The Rise and Fall of the American Empire* (New York: Penguin, 2004). Variations of this enthusiastic embrace of America’s role in the world can be found in Max Boot, *Savage Wars of Peace: Small Wars and the Rise of American Power* (New York: Basic Books, 2002); Robert Kagan, *Dangerous Nation: America’s Foreign Policy from its Earliest Days to the Dawn of the Twentieth Century* (New York: Alfred P. Knopf, 2006); Robert Kagan, *The World America Made* (New York: Alfred P. Knopf, 2012).

<sup>20</sup> Jürgen Osterhammel’s definition of colonialism is useful: “Colonialism is a relationship of domination between an indigenous (or forcibly imported) majority and a minority of foreign invaders. The fundamental decisions affecting the lives of the colonized people are made and implemented by the colonial rulers in pursuit of interests that are often defined in a distant metropolis. Rejecting cultural compromises with the colonized

and the public consciousness, the United States is linked to European colonial empires primarily through its disavowal of them. The republic was, after all, formed in response to the coercive dynamics of British colonial dominance. Yet, as a recent collection of essays skillfully demonstrates, American rejections, acceptances, and modifications of European expansionist models were diverse.<sup>21</sup> Further, integrating America's global reach into histories of colonial empire allows the writer to use comparative and integrative strategies in their work. When I call Americans living in the Southern Philippines 'colonials' or speak of 'colonial' governance, violence, business practices, or society, I am acknowledging U.S. adaptations of established European practices in the colonies, as well as my own debt to the rich literature on European colonial empires.<sup>22</sup>

Alongside works investigating the imperial-colonial dimensions of American power, my work is informed by two related developments in the historiography of U.S. foreign relations: the so-called cultural and transnational turns. The former has diffuse origins. Critiques of American foreign policy took shape in the late 1950s when revisionists, led by William Appleman Williams, began interrogating the political and economic ramifications of

population, the colonizers are convinced of their own superiority and of their ordained mandate to rule.” – Jürgen Osterhammel, *Colonialism: A Theoretical Overview* (Princeton: Markus Wiener Publishers, 2005). As demonstrated later in this study, relations between the colonizers and colonized unsettled conventional understandings of the colonial encounter in the Southern Philippines. Osterhammel's major survey of the nineteenth-century is also helpful in conceptualizing the imperial world America operated within Jürgen Osterhammel, *The Transformation of the World: A Global History of the Nineteenth Century* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2014). Other useful surveys of colonialism and colonialisms include: Frederick Cooper, *Colonialism in Question: Theory, Knowledge, History* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2005); John Darwin, *Unfinished Empire: The Global Expansion of Britain* (New York: Penguin, 2013); Jonathan Hart, *Comparing Empires: European Colonialism from Portuguese Expansion to the Spanish-American War* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2003); James R. Leaning, *European Colonialism Since 1700* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2013); James Mahoney, *Colonialism and Postcolonial Development: Spanish America in Comparative Perspective* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2010); Wolfgang Reinhard, *A Short History of Colonialism* (Manchester: Manchester University Press, 2011).

<sup>21</sup> Ian Tyrrell and Jay Sexton, eds., *Empire's Twin: U.S. Anti-Imperialism from the Founding Era to the Age of Terrorism* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2015).

<sup>22</sup> Given the extent and temporal scope of the European colonial empires, the literature on them is much more developed than that on the United States. In subsequent chapters, I often situate insights on issues like hygiene, urban planning, human exhibitions, state violence, and the colonial imagination within the historiographies of other empires. This acknowledges that Americans were participating in modifications of phenomena occurring elsewhere.

America's ascent as a world power.<sup>23</sup> This distinctly anti-nationalist strain of historiography posited the basic idea that U.S. actions around the globe were perhaps not as benign as orthodox narratives suggested. This observation, banal as it appears now, spurred work by New Left scholars looking to challenge status quo histories. In the 1980s, the trend towards critical historiography converged with an increased awareness amongst historians that methods of cultural analysis developed by critical theorists, sociologists, linguists, and anthropologists could be adapted to provide more thickly descriptive reckonings with U.S. history. Working within this emergent subfield, historians and social scientists wrote accounts of American empire that emphasized how imperial actors employed unequal taxonomies of race, class, gender, and sexuality to shape metropolitan rule over colonies.<sup>24</sup>

---

<sup>23</sup> The classic revisionist text is Williams' response to George Kennan's *American Diplomacy*: William Appleman Williams, *The Tragedy of American Diplomacy* (Cleveland: World Publishing Company, 1959). Williams and the Wisconsin school of diplomatic history conceived of American power within the crucible of the Cold War, arguing that the nation's expansionism was elite-driven and often harmful to global stability. Subsequently, revisionist historians began addressing the flaws of international monetary systems, considering the role of colonialism and anti-colonial movements, and how culture "[spread] the American dream" abroad. Influential examples include: David Green, *The Containment of Latin America: A History of the Myths and Realities of the Good Neighbor Policy* (Chicago: Quadrangle Books, 1971); Walter LaFeber, *America, Russia, and the Cold War, 1945-2006 – Tenth Edition* (Boston: McGraw-Hill, 2008); Walter LaFeber, *The New Empire: An Interpretation of American Expansion, 1860-1898* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1963); Thomas J. McCormick, *America's Half-Century: United States Foreign Policy in the Cold War* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989); Robert J. McMahon, *Colonialism and Cold War: The United States and the Struggle for Indonesian Independence, 1945-1949* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1981); Thomas G. Paterson, *Soviet-American Confrontation: Postwar Reconstruction and the Origins of the Cold War* (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 1973). Products of their era, both orthodox and revisionist diplomatic historians dwelled heavily on assignments of blame in the Cold War. In the early 1980s, John Lewis Gaddis famously argued for a post-revisionist synthesis, claiming that both the United States and Russia bore responsibility for the decades-long international standoff. See John Lewis Gaddis, *Strategies of Containment: A Critical Appraisal of Postwar American National Security Policy* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1982). For our purposes, Bruce Cumings' seminal 1993 essay in *Diplomatic History* marks a convergence point between diplomatic historians and cultural theorists from other disciplines. While my project is certainly not a diplomatic history in any conventional sense, it does use many of the same state-generated documents as that subfield. As such, I follow Cumings' advice "'to think otherwise,' while living in the imperfect tense of history." See Bruce Cumings, "'Revising Postrevisionism,' or, The Poverty of Theory in Diplomatic History," *Diplomatic History* 17.4 (1993): 539-570.

<sup>24</sup> This project heeds Emily Rosenberg's call for historians of international relations to ponder the spaces where different systems of organization and meaning coalesce. See Emily S. Rosenberg, "Considering Borders," in *Explaining the History of American Foreign Relations*, ed. Michael J. Hogan and Thomas J. Paterson (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2004): 176-193; Emily S. Rosenberg, "Turning to Culture," in *Close Encounters of Empire: Writing the Cultural History of U.S.-Latin American Relations*, ed. Gilbert M. Joseph et al. (Durham: Duke University Press, 1998), 497-514; Frank Schumacher, "Cultural Turn in the History of US Foreign Relations," in *The Oxford Encyclopedia of American Military and Diplomatic History*, ed. Timothy J. Lynch (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2013), 281-286. Culturally oriented historians of American empire (and historically oriented scholars from other disciplines) have used analyses of race, religion, gender, sexuality,

The adoption and refinement of methods used by cultural historians and social scientists studying other imperial contexts has been an important development in the study of U.S. foreign relations. This study shares those debts, particularly in relation to the work done by scholars who emphasize how the intimate intrudes upon colonial configurations. The ways in which the “tactile and unseen” insist themselves, refuting simple domination-subordination narratives, provides an entry point beyond traditional historiographical accounts of American

---

class relations, tourism, consumer culture, surveillance, technology, and modernization (among other things) to probe overlooked histories and problematize once-familiar topics. A necessarily partial sampling of works includes: Michael Adas, *Dominance by Design: Technological Imperatives in America's Civilizing Mission* (Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2007); Daniel E. Bender, *American Abyss: Savagery and Civilization in the Age of Industry* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2009); Bruce Cumings, *Dominion from Sea to Sea: Pacific Ascendancy and American Power* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2010); David Ekbladh, *The Great American Mission: Modernization and the Construction of an American World Order* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011); Vivian Green Frydt, *Art and Empire: The Politics of Ethnicity in the United States Capital, 1815-1960* (Columbus: Ohio State University Press, 2001); Robert D. Dean, *Imperial Brotherhood: Gender and the Making of Cold War Foreign Policy* (Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 2003); Victoria De Grazia, *Irresistible Empire: America's Advance through Twentieth-Century Europe* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2005); Amy S. Greenberg, *Manifest Manhood and the Antebellum American Empire* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005); John Dower, *War Without Mercy: Race and Power in the Pacific War* (New York: Pantheon Books, 1986); Jessica Gienow-Hecht, *Transmission Impossible: American Journalism as Cultural Diplomacy in Postwar Germany, 1945-1955* (Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1999); Jessica Gienow-Hecht and Frank Schumacher, eds., *Culture and International History* (New York: Berghahn Books, 2003); Michel Gobat, *Confronting the American Dream: Nicaragua Under U.S. Imperial Rule* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2005); Matthew Frye Jacobson, *Barbarian Virtues: The United States Encounters Foreign Peoples at Home and Abroad* (New York: Hill and Wang, 2001); Amy Kaplan, *The Anarchy of Empire in the Making of U.S. Culture* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2002); Kristin L. Hoganson, *Fighting for American Manhood: How Gender Politics Provoked the Spanish-American and Philippine-American Wars* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1998); Jane C. Loeffler, *The Architecture of Diplomacy: Building America's Embassies* (Princeton: Princeton Architectural Press, 2011); Eric T. Love, *Race Over Empire: Racism and U.S. Imperialism, 1865-1900* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2004); Ussama Makdisi, *Artillery of Heaven: American Missionaries and the Failed Conversion of the Middle East* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2007); Timothy Marr, *The Cultural Roots of American Islamism* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006); Alfred W. McCoy, *Policing America's Empire: The United States, the Philippines, and the Rise of the Surveillance State* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009); Dennis Merrill, *Negotiating Paradise: U.S. Tourism and Empire in Twentieth-Century Europe* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2009); Andrew Preston, *Sword of the Spirit, Shield of the Faith: Religion in American War and Diplomacy* (New York: Knopf, 2012); Mary A. Renda, *Taking Haiti: Military Occupation and the Culture of U.S. Imperialism, 1915-1940* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2001); Emily S. Rosenberg and Shanon Fitzpatrick, eds., *Body and Nation: The Global Realms of U.S. Body Politics in the Twentieth Century* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2015); Allison L. Sneider, *Suffragists in an Imperial Age: U.S. Expansion and the Woman Question, 1870-1929* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2008); Shelley S. Streeby, *American Sensations: Class, Empire, and the Production of Popular Culture* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002); Ian Tyrrell, *Woman's World / Woman's Empire: the Woman's Christian Temperance Union in International Perspective, 1880-1930* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1991); Laura Wexler, *Tender Violence: Domestic Visions in an Age of U.S. Imperialism* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2000).

colonial expansion.<sup>25</sup> U.S. officials tapped into circuits of imperial knowledge production to fashion and refashion regulatory regimes that monitored and policed the bodies of imperial and indigenous actors alike. Preoccupations with the maintenance of personal hygiene, sexual relations, sociality, public sanitation, and gender norms blurred the binary of “colonizer” and “colonized” in the American Philippines, as all bodies became the terrain of biopolitical modes of ordering.<sup>26</sup> This cultural turn in the study of American foreign relations has also delved into the roles of indeterminacy and ambiguity in the formation and operation of imperial polities. Rather than coherent entities, colonial empires were stitched together piecemeal from a variety of contingent and contextual zones that often functioned alongside but not in tandem with one another. This “provinciality of American empire” was evident not just between colonies, but also within them.<sup>27</sup>

Interdisciplinary approaches to American colonial empire also provide the cultural historian with alternative paths beyond the collection and aggregation of state documents. Novels, travel writing, poetry, song, advertisements, diaries, marginalia, and photographic captions all appear in later chapters. In particular, this work is beholden to evasive but crucial notions of the mental landscapes of colonials. Templates for viewing the environment of the Southern Philippines and its inhabitants informed strategies of rule and control among officials, but also patterned the daily rituals and fleeting social interactions that were the fabric of the colonial encounter. Administrators, soldiers, teachers, missionaries, and businessmen drew on the ethnographic and territorial ‘expertise’ of Spanish colonial progenitors, migratory journalists, popular fictions, and their own limited dialogues with the

---

<sup>25</sup> I borrow this phrase from Ann Laura Stoler, “Intimidations of Empire: Predicaments of the Tactile and Unseen,” in *Haunted by Empire: Geographies of Intimacy in Colonial North America*, ed. Ann Laura Stoler (Durham: Duke University Press, 2006): 1-22.

<sup>26</sup> For specific examples from the Philippines, see Paul Kramer, “The Darkness that Enters the Home: The Politics of Prostitution During the Philippine-American War,” in *Haunted by Empire: Geographies of Intimacy in Colonial North America*, ed. Ann Laura Stoler (Durham: Duke University Press, 2006): 366-404; Warwick Anderson, *Colonial Pathologies: American Tropical Medicine, Race, and Hygiene in the Philippines* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2006), 104-129.

<sup>27</sup> Julian Go suggests this idea in his essay of the same name, which argues that “American authorities in all the colonies crafted their forms of rule to fit local conditions as they perceived them.” This fragmentation occurred not just between colonies but also within them. See Julian Go, “The Provinciality of American Empire: ‘Liberal Exceptionalism’ and U.S. Colonial Rule, 1898-1912,” *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 49.1 (2007): 100.

natives to create racial-pedagogical legitimations of dominance. Imperfect understandings and, at times, pure fantasy shaped the American colonial imagination in the Southern Philippines. These fantasies were given further shape by European notions of the tropical and by America's brutal frontier expansionism during the prior century. They also derived from the visual and material pleasures and agonies colonial agents encountered in Mindanao and Sulu. My insights on this subject derive from a substantial body of work investigating interactivities between imagination, environment, race, and governance.<sup>28</sup>

Culturally minded historians of American foreign relations have borrowed, translated, and transformed methodological insights from other fields, including postcolonial studies, borderlands studies, and subaltern studies.<sup>29</sup> In doing so, they have identified how geopolitical concerns are often driven by more nebulous cultural constructions, and how manifold iterations of American culture shape the imperial ideologies that underpin phenomena like free market proselytism and liberal internationalism.<sup>30</sup> "The sharing and

---

<sup>28</sup> The connections between colonial empire, race, and the imaginary are discussed in the introductory section of Chapter Two.

<sup>29</sup> Insights from scholars in these fields have caused historians to question the positivist and historicist orientation of much of the historiography of American foreign relations. Among other things, theorists writing on colonial cultures and subaltern identities encourage reconceiving how we approach racial hierarchies, spatial logics, gender relations, and the very act of writing colonial histories. Some important examples include: Benedict Anderson, *Imagined Communities: Reflections of the Origins and Spread of Nationalism* (New York: Verso, 1991); Dipesh Chakrabarty, *Provincializing Europe: Postcolonial Thought and Historical Difference* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2007); Homi K. Bhabha, *The Location of Culture* (New York: Routledge, 1994); Gyan Prakash, *After Colonialism: Imperial Histories and Postcolonial Displacements* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1995); Anne McClintock, *Imperial Leather: Race, Gender, and Sexuality in the Colonial Contest* (London: Routledge, 1995); Edward Said, *Culture and Imperialism* (New York: Vintage, 1993); Ann Laura Stoler, *Carnal Knowledge and Imperial Power: Race and the Intimate in Colonial Rule* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002); Ann Laura Stoler, *Race and the Education of Desire: Foucault's History of Sexuality and the Colonial Order of Things* (Durham: Duke University Press, 1995); Nicolas Thomas, *Colonialism's Culture: Anthropology, Travel, and Government* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1994).

<sup>30</sup> On economic expansion, propaganda, and American consumer culture abroad, see Susan Brewer, *Why America Fights: Patriotism and War Propaganda from the Philippines to Iraq* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2008); Mona Domosh, *American Commodities in the Age of Empire* (New York: Routledge, 2006); Inderpal Grewal, *Transnational America: Feminisms, Diasporas, Neoliberalisms* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2009); Walter L. Hixson, *Parting the Curtain: Propaganda, Culture, and the Cold War, 1945-61* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1997); Kristin L. Hoganson, *Consumer's Imperium: The Global Production of American Domesticity, 1865-1920* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2007); Frank Ninkovich, *Global Dawn: The Cultural Foundation of American Internationalism, 1865-1900* (Harvard: Harvard University Press, 2009); Emily S. Rosenberg, *Financial Missionaries to the World: The Politics and Culture of Dollar Diplomacy, 1900-1930* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1999); Emily S. Rosenberg, *Spreading the*

transmitting of consciousness within and across national boundaries,” as Akira Iriye defines the study of culture within the field of international relations, does not merely allow us to rethink the foundations of the imperial state, but also illustrates how that state is itself permeated and reshaped by the experience of empire.<sup>31</sup> The editors of a recent collection that exhaustively explores the interpenetration of the imperial and the domestic observe that American colonial empire “needs to be made visible in the skein of twentieth-century American history if we are to understand matters of elemental import such as state formation or conceptions of race and national identity.”<sup>32</sup> The experience of the imperial is vital to conceptualizing the development of the American state, as the coercive and malleable atmospheres of the colonial possessions allowed administrators, educators, prison wardens, intelligence operatives, engineers, soldiers, and academics to experiment and refine techniques they then imported to the metropole.<sup>33</sup>

If concepts of identity and difference are inherently unstable, so too are the imperial formations that generate them. The permeability of borders, imperfect and contested inscriptions of hierarchy, intra-imperial divisions, and the fluidity of global power ensured that empires were and are constantly in flux. The spaces between conceptual ‘civilizing missions’ and ground-level practice show empire as “a form of limited rule, limited both in relation to the exercise of totalizing power and to the will and ability to transform

---

*American Dream* (New York: Hill and Wang, 1982); and Emily S. Rosenberg, “U.S. Mass Consumerism in Transnational Perspective,” in *America in the World: The Historiography of American Foreign Relations Since 1941, Second Edition*, ed. Frank Costigliola and Michael J. Hogan (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2013), 307-337.

<sup>31</sup> Akira Iriye, “Cultural and International History,” in *Explaining the History of American Foreign Relations*, ed. Michael J. Hogan and Thomas J. Paterson (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2004), 242.

<sup>32</sup> Alfred W. McCoy et al., “On the Tropic of Cancer: Transitions and Transformation in the U.S. Imperial State,” in *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, ed. Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009), 33.

<sup>33</sup> For instance, Daniel Bender suggests that notions of racial fitness or degeneracy transferred between metropole and colony, shaping hierarchies in the Philippines and industrial America alike. See Bender, *American Abyss*, 40-98.

societies.”<sup>34</sup> Frictions between desires to transform, the contingencies of rule, and modes of indigenous resistance propel these narratives. Imperial transformations were often unintentional and deviational – natives recasted themselves as metropolitans, imperial agents adopted native habits, encounters in the intimate sphere redefined boundaries. The instability of bodies and cultural projects is a microcosm of larger fault lines running through empire. The transitory and finite nature of imperial power is detailed by Alfred McCoy, who observes that on a macro-level empires are destabilized by a loss of support among subordinate native elites, economic instability, and military overreach, among other factors.<sup>35</sup> The insecurities of empire, it turns out, are evident in both close textual readings and comparative surveys.

The historian Ian Tyrrell proposed the internationalization of American history in 1991 in the pages of the *American Historical Review*.<sup>36</sup> This is not to say that the study of the United States existed outside of academic trends addressing ‘global’ or ‘world’ history, but that the nationalist lodestone of exceptionalism coloured both the popular imagination and many scholarly accounts of the American past. While still persistent in the mainstream, the concept of exceptionalism has since been challenged in the academy, particularly in the work of Julian Go, who attacks the notion with tremendous analytical precision.<sup>37</sup> When one moves past critiques of exceptionalism, there is a need in the historiography for accounts of U.S. history *within* the world. The undercutting of the exceptionalist narrative comes not only out of comparative analysis, but also through exploring the connected histories America shares with other empires, nations, regions, localities, and even individuals. The discipline of history, a perennial late adopter of innovative theoretical approaches, has only recently begun

---

<sup>34</sup> Frederick Cooper, “Modernizing Colonialism and the Limits of Empire,” in *Lessons of Empire: Imperial Histories and American Power*, ed. Craig Calhoun et al. (New York: The New Press, 2006), 64.

<sup>35</sup> Alfred W. McCoy, “Fatal Florescence: Europe’s Decolonization and America’s Decline,” in *Endless Empire: Spain’s Retreat, Europe’s Eclipse, America’s Decline*, ed. Alfred W. McCoy et al. (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2012), 3-42. In addition to the essays featured in the aforementioned, another important collection that interrogates American global power is: Andrew J. Bacevich, ed., *The Short American Century: A Postmortem* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2012).

<sup>36</sup> Ian Tyrrell, “American Exceptionalism in an Age of International History,” *American Historical Review* 96.4 (1991): 1031-1055.

<sup>37</sup> Alongside work already cited, Go critiques exceptionalism through comparisons with the British Empire. See Julian Go, *Patterns of Empire: The British and American Empires, 1688 to the Present* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011), 206-234.



to move beyond constraining methodological nationalism and explore the diffuse connective tissue that links and reshapes seemingly disparate societies. In the case of empire in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, there are dense webs of transference that are only now receiving their due attention. For historians of empire, the task remains to parse archival records to locate the original sites of these connections.<sup>38</sup>

The transnational (or, in this study, transcolonial) turn in the study of American imperial formations is evident in articles, monographs, and collections published in the past decade and a half.<sup>39</sup> Ian Tyrrell has written a broad survey of United States history through the lens of transnationalism, and has also done more focused work on the importance of transnational reform movements in promoting American cultural values at home and abroad.<sup>40</sup> Ann Foster's monograph on the United States and European colonialism in Southeast Asia proved enormously helpful in the crafting of this project, emphasizing as it does America's collaborations and competitions with the British, French, and Dutch empires during the interwar period. America's crafting of an "empire of the mind" in the Philippines, according to Foster, was done in ways that consciously mimicked and rejected European colonial models, a task aided by the persistent circulation of people and ideas throughout

---

<sup>38</sup> For a succinct summarization of future prospects for transnational historians, see Pierre-Yves Saunier, *Transnational History* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2013), 135-141.

<sup>39</sup> Two asides: i.) In the following, I mainly use the term 'transcolonial' for greater specificity (the actors in this work are often acting between colonies rather than nations), although at other times I merely refer to 'connected spaces' or 'webs of transference.' The main point about the importance of studying connectivities remains unchanged, regardless of terminology; ii.) I am not suggesting here that recent work with a transnational / transcolonial slant arose from nowhere. In the historiography of American foreign relations, there are a number of cultural historians who have pioneered globally oriented approaches. Preeminent among these is Akira Iriye, whose insights on cultural internationalism developed out of his early work on Japanese-American relations in the twentieth-century. His most recent contributions, editing and contributing to the massive six-volume series *The History of the World*, suggest new avenues for how to think beyond national histories. For our purposes, some of his more useful published material includes: Akira Iriye, *Cultural Internationalism and World Order* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997); Akira Iriye, *Global Community: The Role of International Organizations in the Making of the Contemporary World* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002); Akira Iriye, ed., *Global Interdependence: The World After 1945* (Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2013); Akira Iriye, *The Cambridge History of American Foreign Relations, Volume III: The Globalizing of America, 1913-1945* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993); Akira Iriye, "The Internationalization of History," *American Historical Review* 94.1 (1989): 1-10.

<sup>40</sup> See Ian Tyrrell, *Crisis of the Wasteful Nation: Empire and Conservation in Theodore Roosevelt's America* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2015); Ian Tyrrell, *Reforming the World: The Creation of America's Moral Empire* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2010); Ian Tyrrell, *Transnational Nation: United States History in Global Perspective Since 1789* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007).

colonial Southeast Asia.<sup>41</sup> On America's other oceanic border, Frank Schumacher and Paul Kramer have both explored the deep connections between elites in the British and American colonial empires, and the mutual identifications and disidentifications that generated imperial policy.<sup>42</sup> Andrew Zimmerman's *Alabama in Africa* highlights the truly innovative scholarship possible through transnationally oriented research as it charts the surprising relationships between fin-de-siècle continental sociology, African-American labour in the post-Reconstruction South, and German colonial empire in West Africa.<sup>43</sup> In their own unique ways, these works all demonstrate why emphasizing interactivity and interconnection enriches our understanding of how American imperial formations operated and continue to operate.

Moving from these broad questions of empire and connection, our focus narrows as we draw closer to our subject. In the past several decades, a voluminous body of literature has developed examining the cultural aspects of the colonial experience in the Philippines. Beyond mere battlefield or political histories, these monographs and articles delve into the granular experiences of colonial empire. The role of Protestant missionaries as informal agents of empire, for example, is a perennial topic – and one that I expand upon in later chapters.<sup>44</sup> Templates for colonial education, some based on methods used with the Native

---

<sup>41</sup> Ann Foster, *Projections of Power: The United States and Europe in Southeast Asia, 1919-1939* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2010), 177.

<sup>42</sup> See Paul Kramer, "Empires, Exceptions, and Anglo-Saxons: Race and Rule Between the British and United States Empires, 1880-1910," *Journal of American History* 88.4 (2002): 1315-1353; Paul Kramer, "Race, Empire, and Transnational History," in *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, ed. Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009), 199-209; Frank Schumacher, "The American Way of Empire: National Tradition and Transatlantic Adaptation in America's Search for Imperial Identity, 1898-1910," *GHI Bulletin* 31 (2002): 35-50; Frank Schumacher, "Kulturtransfer und Empire: Britisches Vorbild und US-Amerikanische Kolonialherrschaft auf den Philippinen im fruehen 20 Jahrhundert," in *Kolonialgeschichten: Regionale Perspektiven auf ein globales Phaenomen*, ed. Claudia Kraft et al. (Frankfurt: Campus Verlag, 2010), 306-327.

<sup>43</sup> See Andrew Zimmerman, *Alabama in Africa: Booker T. Washington, the German Empire, and the Globalization of the New South* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2010).

<sup>44</sup> The most comprehensive text is: Kenton J. Clymer, *Protestant Missionaries in the Philippines, 1898-1916: An Inquiry into the American Colonial Mentality* (Chicago, University of Illinois Press, 1986). Other works include: Kenton J. Clymer, "Religion and American Imperialism: Methodist Missionaries in the Philippine Islands, 1899-1913," *Pacific Historical Review* 49.1 (1980): 29-50; Matthew T. Herbst, "Regime Change, Occupation, and Aggressive Christianity: The Detroit Annual Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church and the U.S. Occupation of the Philippines, 1898-1903," *Methodist History* 43.4 (2005): 297-308; Arun W.

Americans, have also been a germane area of study for historians.<sup>45</sup> Scholars have examined the ideological orientations of American empire in the Philippines,<sup>46</sup> the deployment of race

Jones, "Pragmatic Anti-Imperialists? Episcopal Missionaries in the Philippines, 1933-1935," *Anglican and Episcopal History* 82.1 (2013): 1-28; Anne C. Kwantes, *Presbyterian Missionaries in the Philippines: Conduits of Social Change, 1899-1910* (Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1989).

<sup>45</sup> Material on colonial education in the Philippines began appearing in peer-reviewed journals in the early twentieth-century, usually written by colonial agents. For an example, see David Prescott Barrows, "Education and Social Progress in the Philippines," *Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Science* 30 (1907): 69-82. Contemporary work has taken a more critical approach to the topic. See Kimberly Alidio, "Between Civilizing Mission and Ethnic Assimilation: Racial Discourse, U.S. Colonial Education and Filipino Ethnicity, 1901-1946" (PhD diss., University of Michigan, 2001); Roland Sintos Colomo, "Empire and Education: Filipino Schooling Under United States Rule, 1900-1910" (PhD diss., Ohio State University, 2004); Funie Hsu, "Colonial Articulations: English Instruction and the 'Benevolence' of U.S. Overseas Expansion in the Philippines, 1898-1916" (PhD diss., University of California, Berkeley, 2013); Anne Paulet, "To Change the World: The Use of American Indian Education in the Philippines," *History of Education Quarterly* 47.2 (2007): 173-202; Vincente L. Rafael, "The War of Translation: Colonial Education, American English, and Tagalog Slang in the Philippines," *Journal of Asian Studies* 74.2 (2015): 283-302; Malini Johar Schueller, "Colonial Management, Collaborative Dissent: English Readers in the Philippines and Camilo Osias, 1905-1932," *Journal of Asian American Studies* 17.2 (2014): 161-198; Meg Wesling, *Empire's Proxy: American Literature and U.S. Imperialism in the Philippines* (New York: New York University Press, 2011).

<sup>46</sup> The literature on American colonialism in the Philippines extends far beyond the purview of this project. In the past quarter-century in particular, scholars have dissected the American colonial period in the Christian regions with great skill, and collectively illustrated the complex expanse of the colonial state. Below is a sampling of such writings. Others appear in individual chapters. For broad studies, see H.W. Brands, *Bound to Empire: The United States and the Philippines, 1890-1990* (Oxford: Oxford University, 1990); Luis H Francia, *Vestiges of War: The Philippine-American War and the Aftermath of an Imperial Dream, 1899-1999* (New York: New York University Press, 2002); Stanley Karnow, *In Our Image: America's Empire in the Philippines* (New York: Random House, 1989); Paul Kramer, *The Blood of Government: Race, Empire, the United States, and the Philippines* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2006); Glenn A. May, *Social Engineering and the Philippines: The Aims, Execution, and Impact of American Colonial Policy, 1900-1913* (Westport: Greenwood Press, 1980). On the ideological character of American colonial power in the Philippines, see Michael Adas, "Improving on the Civilizing Mission? Assumptions of United States Exceptionalism in the Colonization of the Philippines," *Itinerario* 22.4 (1998): 44-66; Kenton J. Clymer, "Humanitarian Imperialism: David Prescott Barrows and the White Man's Burden in the Philippines," *Pacific Historical Review* 45.4 (1976): 495-518; Max Paul Friedman, "From Manila to Baghdad: Empire and the American 'Mission Civilisatrice' at the Beginning and End of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century," *Revue Francaise d'Etudes Americaines* 113 (2009): 26-38; Joseph Fry, "Imperialism, American Style, 1890-1916," in *American Foreign Relations Reconsidered, 1890-1993*, ed. Gordon Martel (London: Routledge, 1994), 52-70. For more specific studies on American colonial bureaucracy and governance, see Lewis E. Gleck, *American Institutions in the Philippines, 1898-1941* (Manila: Historical Conservation Society, 1976); Lewis E. Gleck, *The American Governors-General and High Commissioners in the Philippines: Proconsuls, Nation-Builders and Politicians* (Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1987); Paul D. Hutchcroft, "Colonial Masters, National Politicos, and Provincial Lords: Central Authority and Local Autonomy in the American Philippines, 1900-1913," *Journal of Asian Studies* 59.2 (2000): 277-306; Frank L. Jenista, *The White Apos: American Governors in the Cordillera Central* (Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1987).

as a means of categorizing and controlling Filipinos,<sup>47</sup> the use of violence and torture to crush indigenous opposition to the state,<sup>48</sup> the development of colonial medical models as a means of social control,<sup>49</sup> the gendered dimensions of domesticity and sexual relations in the

---

<sup>47</sup> The racial dimensions of the American Philippines are explored in Barbara S. Gaerlan, "In the Court of the Sultan: Orientalism, Nationalism, and Modernity in Philippine and Filipino American Dance," *Journal of Asian American Studies* 3.2 (1999): 251-287; Willard B. Gatewood, *Black Americans and the White Man's Burden, 1898-1903* (Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1975); Daniel Goh, "States of Ethnography: Colonialism, Resistance, and Cultural Transcription in Malaya and the Philippines, 1890s-1930s," *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 49.1 (2007): 109-142; Servando D. Halili Jr., *Iconography of the New Empire: Race and Gender Images and the American Colonization of the Philippines* (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007); Paul Kramer, "The Pragmatic Empire: U.S. Anthropology and Colonial Politics in the Occupied Philippines, 1898-1916" (PhD diss., Princeton University, 1998); Scot Ngozi-Brown, "African-American Soldiers and Filipinos: Racial Imperialism, Jim Crow and Social Relations," *Journal of Negro History* 82.1 (1997): 42-53; Vincente L. Rafael, *White Love and Other Events in Filipino History* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2000); Michael Salman, *The Embarrassment of Slavery: Controversies over Bondage and Nationalism in the American Colonial Philippines* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2001); Christopher A. Vaughan, "Ogling Igorots: The Politics and Commerce of Exhibiting Cultural Otherness, 1898-1913," in *Freakery: Cultural Spectacles of the Extraordinary Body*, ed. Rosemarie Garland Thomson (New York: New York University Press, 1996), 219-233.

<sup>48</sup> On militarism and colonial violence, see Patricio Abinales, "The Good Imperialists? American Military Presence in the Southern Philippines in Historical Perspective," *Philippine Studies* 52.2 (2004): 179-207; Louise K. Barnett, *Atrocity and American Military Justice in Southeast Asia: Trial By Army* (New York: Routledge, 2010), 9-120; James Grant Crawford, "'Civilize 'Em With a Krag!' Punitive Violence and the American Mission of Uplift," *Journal of the North Carolina Association of Historians* 17 (2009): 135-167; Michael Cullinane, "Bringing in the Brigands: The Politics of Pacification in the Colonial Philippines, 1902-1907," *Philippine Studies* 57.1 (2009): 49-76; Paul Kramer, "Race-Making and Colonial Violence in the U.S. Empire: the Philippine-American War as Race War," *Diplomatic History* 30.2 (2006): 169-210; Clayton Laurie, "The Philippine Scouts: America's Colonial Army, 1899-1913," *Philippine Studies* 37.2 (1989): 174-191; Brian M. Linn, *The U.S. Army and Counterinsurgency in the Philippine War, 1899-1902* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1989); Frank Schumacher, "'Marked Severities': The Debate Over Torture During America's Conquest of the Philippines, 1899-1902," *Amerikastudien* 51.4 (2006): 475-498; Richard E. Welch Jr., "American Atrocities in the Philippines: The Indictment and the Response," *Pacific Historical Review* 43.2 (1974): 233-253.

<sup>49</sup> For intersecting histories of medicine and colonial empire in the Philippines, see Anderson, *Colonial Pathologies*; Warwick Anderson, "Immunization and Hygiene in the Colonial Philippines," *Journal of the History of Medicine and Allied Sciences* 62.1 (2007): 1-20; Ken De Bevoise, *Agents of Apocalypse: Epidemic Disease in the Colonial Philippines* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1995); Ken De Bevoise, "Until God Knows When: Smallpox in the Late-Colonial Philippines," *Pacific Historical Review* 59.2 (1990): 149-185; Reynaldo Clemeña Ito, "Cholera and the Origins of the American Sanitary Order in the Philippines," in *Imperial Medicine and Indigenous Societies*, ed. David Arnold (Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1988), 125-148; Matthew Smallman-Raynor and Andrew Cliff, "The Philippines Insurrection and the 1902-4 Cholera Epidemic, Part I: Epidemiological Diffusion Processes in War," *Journal of Historical Geography* 24.1 (1998): 69-80; Matthew Smallman-Raynor and Andrew Cliff, "The Philippines Insurrection and the 1902-4 Cholera Epidemic, Part II: Diffusion Patterns in War and Peace," *Journal of Historical Geography* 24.2 (1998): 188-210.

colony,<sup>50</sup> the promotion of American architecture and urban planning as modes of societal transformation,<sup>51</sup> and the rationalization and management of the colonial environment.<sup>52</sup> Curiously, most of these books and articles are partially or completely silent on Mindanao and Sulu.

Why does this silence exist? One can posit numerous reasons. For one, large swathes of Mindanao and all of Sulu were only part of the Philippines inasmuch as the Spanish imagined them to be colonial possessions. Muslim regions were never Christianized and their elite never Hispanicized, although some did speak Spanish for the purposes of commerce. The cultures of Christian Luzon and the Visayas developed apart from those in the Sultanates of the South. If Mindanao and Sulu were part of the Philippines, it was only because of geographic demarcation and the colonial imagination, and not because of a shared culture or

---

<sup>50</sup> On gender, sexuality, and domesticity: Nerissa S. Balce, "The Filipina's Breast: Savagery, Docility, and the Erotics of the American Empire," *Social Text* 87 (2006): 89-110; Catherine Ceniza Choy, *Empire of Care: Nursing and Migration in Filipino American History* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2003); Elizabeth Mary Holt, *Colonizing Filipinas: Nineteenth-Century Representations of the Philippines in Western Historiography* (Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2002); David Keoni Lawrimore, "Imperial Ambivalence: Gender, Discourse and Empire in Early Twentieth-Century Women's Travel Narratives of the Philippines," *Interventions* 17.4 (2015): 585-602; Alfred W. McCoy, ed., *An Anarchy of Families: State and Family in the Philippines* (Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 1998); Victor Roman Reyes Mendoza, "The Erotics of 'White Love': Or, Queering Philippine-U.S. Imperial Relations" (PhD diss., University of California, Berkeley, 2007); Vincente L. Rafael, "Colonial Domesticity: White Women and the United States Rule in the Philippines," *American Literature* 67.4 (1995): 639-666.

<sup>51</sup> Texts on the spatial legacies of colonialism in the Philippines include: Jonathan Best, "Empire Builders: American City Planning in the Philippines," *Bulletin of the American Historical Collection* 37.1 (2009): 23-34; David Brody, "Building Empire: Architecture and American Imperialism in the Philippines," *Journal of Asian American Studies* 4.2 (2006): 123-145; David Brody, *Visualizing American Empire: Orientalism and Imperialism in the Philippines* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2010); Daniel F. Doeppers, *Manila, 1900-1941: Social Change in a Late Colonial Metropolis* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1984); Estela Duque, "Modern Tropical Architecture: Medicalization of Space in Early Twentieth-Century Philippines," *Architectural Research Quarterly* 13.3/4 (2009): 261-271; Robert Ronald Reed, *City of Pines: The Origins of Baguio as Colonial Hill Station and Regional Capital* (Berkeley: Center for South and Southeast Asian Studies, University of California, 1976); Ron Theodore Robin, *Enclaves of America: The Rhetoric of American Political Architecture Abroad, 1900-1965* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1992), 15-88.

<sup>52</sup> On technology, the use of science to legitimate colonial projects, and environmental change, see Adas, *Dominance by Design*, 129-184; Greg Bankoff, "Breaking New Ground? Gifford Pinchot and the Birth of 'Empire Forestry' in the Philippines, 1900-1905," *Environment and History* 15.3 (2008): 369-393; Greg Bankoff, *Cultures of Disaster: Society and Natural Hazards in the Philippines* (London: Routledge Curzon, 2003), 31-60; Greg Bankoff, "One Island Too Many: Reappraising the Extent of Deforestation in the Philippines prior to 1946," *Journal of Historical Geography* 33.2 (2007): 314-334; Babette P. Resurrección, "Engineering the Philippine Uplands: Gender, Ethnicity, and Scientific Forestry in the American Colonial Period," *Critical Asian Studies* 31.1 (1999): 13-30.

kinship. The Americans, recognizing this, bifurcated the Spanish colonial state and ruled Mindanao and Sulu as separate entities for two decades. Even as it began its slow integration into the national fold during the 1920s and 1930s, the South remained outside of the Christian Filipino mainstream (as areas of the Autonomous Region in Muslim Mindanao do to this day). The Filipino political and cultural grandees during the American colonial period did not reside in Mindanao and Sulu, nor did they originate from there. Many of these *ilustrado* nationalists adopted similar racialized views to the Spanish and Americans when they talked about the non-Christians of the Southern Philippines.<sup>53</sup>

Mindanao and Sulu's role as a colony-within-a-colony - first as a separately governed entity and later as a politically and culturally subordinate region in a national body - helps explain its historiographical absence. Swamped demographically by larger Christian populations and living outside of the northern centers of power, Muslims did not produce the litany of political and cultural documents that populate the archives and, consequently, colonial histories. To illustrate this phenomenon, one need not look further than some of the best work on Philippine colonial encounter, including that of Paul Kramer and Alfred McCoy. When Moros warrant mention, it is in passing. Perhaps the massacre of Bud Dajo is discussed in brief, or a paragraph is included noting the establishment of the Moro Province. The reader does not get a sense from these texts that a concurrent and related experiment in colonial tutelage, one with implications for colonized and colonizer alike, was occurring in the South at the same time that the Insular authorities were clashing with nationalist politicians in Manila.<sup>54</sup> Here, historiography mimics political history, with Muslims marginalized or entirely absent from dominant narratives.

---

<sup>53</sup> Filomeno V. Aguilar Jr., "Tracing Origins: *Ilustrado* Nationalism and the Racial Science of Migration Waves," *Journal of Asian Studies* 64.3 (2005): 605-637; Megan C. Thomas, *Orientalists, Propagandists, and Ilustrados: Filipino Scholarship and the End of Spanish Colonialism* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2012), 1-22.

<sup>54</sup> For example, in Kramer's monograph, the Moros are mainly lumped in with the other 'non-Christian tribes.' They are given more attention in his chapter on the 1904 Louisiana Purchase Exposition, but the book remains almost entirely focused on the Christian North. See Kramer, *Blood of Government*, 280-288 (on Muslims at the World's Fair).

Writing focusing specifically on the Southern Philippines by American historians has primarily emphasized the bureaucratic and military aspects of colonial rule. These accounts build upon the pioneering work of Peter Gowing, an American missionary turned academic who spent most of his later life in the Philippines. Although he died in 1983, Gowing left behind an impressive corpus on the first two decades of American rule in Mindanao and Sulu. Most significant is *Mandate in Moroland: The American Government of Muslim Filipinos, 1899-1920*, a revision of his doctoral dissertation originally published in 1977. Drawing its conclusions mainly from official documents produced by the Moro Province and the Department of Mindanao and Sulu, the book depicted American rule as a period of progress occasionally marred by violence stemming from the racial intolerance of officials like Leonard Wood. In the conclusion, Gowing wrote that “the Americans genuinely sought to help the Moros. There was a real concern for political, economic, and social development so that the Moros could fulfill their potential as human beings.”<sup>55</sup> Reifying the paternal assumptions of American colonials, Gowing claimed that Filipinization in the 1920s and 1930s was a “betrayal of trust” by the Americans, whose humanist tendencies the Moros came to love. This is a gross oversimplification of the complexities faced by Muslim societies witnessing, and sometimes participating in, the dismantling of traditional power structures. While imperfect and insufficiently critical as a piece of analysis, Gowing’s book remains the single best compendium of American political, military, and social policies in the Southern Philippines for new arrivals to the topic. In the years before his death, Gowing produced a fascinating article on “commonalities” between Moros and Native Americans, as well as two collections that considered the role of Muslims within the Filipino nation-state.<sup>56</sup>

---

<sup>55</sup> Peter G. Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland: The American Government of Muslim Filipinos, 1899-1920* (Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1983), 335.

<sup>56</sup> On Indian policy in the United States and the Moros: Peter G. Gowing, “Moros and Indians: Commonalities of Purpose, Policy and Practice in American Government of Two Hostile Subject Peoples,” *Philippine Quarterly of Culture & Society* 8.2/3 (1980): 125-149. Gowing also studied “common themes” among Filipino Muslim communities in a revision of his 1964 work *Mosque and Moro*: Peter G. Gowing, *Muslim Filipinos: Heritage and Horizon* (Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1979). The scope of Gowing’s scholarship, covering Muslim history in the Philippine Archipelago across generations, is foundational for those who have written on the topic since his death. Other articles and edited collections include: Peter G. Gowing, “Of Different Minds: Christian and Muslim Ways of Looking at their Relations in the Philippines,” *International Review of Mission* 67 (1978): 74-85; Peter G. Gowing, “Muslim-American Relations in the Philippines, 1899-1920,” in *The*

Andrew Bacevich, Charles Byler, and James Arnold have all studied various aspects of military rule in Mindanao and Sulu, with a particular emphasis on the massacre at Bud Dajo. Drawing on Gowing's writings, archival materials, and biographies, these texts critique elements of the military state in the Muslim South but largely direct their attentions towards pacification campaigns led by the likes of Leonard Wood and John Pershing.<sup>57</sup> Interestingly, the most sustained engagement with archival material available in the United States is by a historian outside of the academy, Robert Fulton. Fulton's *Moroland* is a comprehensive account of the Southern Philippines between 1899 and 1920 and is rich in primary source detail to a degree not found in the other works. Specifically, Fulton is adept at using a combination of reports, diaries, and letters to illustrate the brutality of encounters between Americans, Filipinos, and Moros. His second book, *Honor for the Flag*, focuses entirely on the Bud Dajo massacre and the domestic response to it in the United States. More critical of U.S. policy, it shares *Moroland*'s textural and archival richness but also its occasionally slipshod formatting.<sup>58</sup> Taken in sum, the texts emphasizing the American military experience are strong when assessing the challenges of counterinsurgency and military government in a difficult environment, but provide us with little information on the transformational dimensions of colonial rule.

---

*Muslim Filipinos: Their History, Society and Contemporary Problems*, ed. Peter G. Gowing and Robert D. McAmis (Manila: Solidaridad Publishing House, 1976), 372-382; Peter G. Gowing, "Muslim Filipinos Today," *The Muslim World* 54.1 (1964): 39-48; Peter G. Gowing, ed., *Understanding Islam and Muslims in the Philippines* (Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1988).

<sup>57</sup> Works that analyze conflicts in Mindanao and Sulu through the lens of military history include: James R. Arnold, *The Moro War: How America Battled a Muslim Insurgency in the Philippine Jungle, 1902-1913* (New York: Bloomsbury Press, 2011); Andrew Bacevich, "Disagreeable Work: Pacifying the Moros, 1903-1906," *Military Review* 62.6 (1982): 49-61; Charles Byler, "Pacifying the Moros: American Military Government in the Southern Philippines, 1899-1913," *Military Review* 85.3 (2005): 41-45; George William Jornacion, "The Time of the Eagles: United States Army Officers and the Pacification of the Philippine Moros, 1899-1913" (PhD diss., University of Maine, 1973); Wayne Wray Thompson, "Governors of the Moro Province: Wood, Bliss, and Pershing in the Southern Philippines, 1903-1913" (PhD diss., University of California, San Diego, 1975).

<sup>58</sup> Robert Fulton, *Honor for the Flag: The Battle for Bud Dajo – 1906 and the Moro Massacre* (Bend, Oregon: Tumalo Creek Press, 2011); Robert Fulton, *Moroland: The History of Uncle Sam and the Moros, 1899-1920* (Bend, Oregon: Tumalo Creek Press, 2009).



A number of scholars have conducted fruitful explorations of the cultural dimensions of American power in the Southern Philippines. Jeffrey Ayala Milligan, a specialist in the philosophy and history of education, has written an enormously insightful monograph and series of articles on the attempts of successive colonial regimes in the Muslim South to use education as a mode of cultural control and integration. Milligan's reflections on American "pedagogical imperialism" were crucial for this project, particularly his contention that by redefining the 'Moro Problem' as a "pedagogical problem...the American colonial regime was able to soften both its own and the world's perception of its occupation of Mindanao." This calculated position recast coercive policies and "cultural and religious bigotry" as benevolent acts of tutelage.<sup>59</sup> The anthropologist Thomas McKenna's writings on Maguindanao history and identity in Cotabato are similarly useful. Charting Islamic identities and state impositions on them across centuries, McKenna devotes one chapter in his monograph to considering the ways in which the Americans co-opted Maguindanao elites in an effort to create a "Mohammedan" Filipino leadership.<sup>60</sup> Vivienne Angeles examines representations of Muslims in the colonial and postcolonial Philippines, demonstrating how media was used to shape the notion of 'the Moro' in Spanish, American, and Christian Filipino imaginaries.<sup>61</sup>

---

<sup>59</sup> Jeffrey Ayala Milligan, *Islamic Identity, Postcoloniality, and Educational Policy: Schooling and Ethno-Religious Conflict in the Southern Philippines* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2005), 82. Milligan's numerous articles on educational issues in the Southern Philippines provide important insights into the tensions between Muslim communities and state educational plans. Relevant writings: Jeffrey Ayala Milligan, "Democratization or Neocolonialism? The Education of Muslims Under US Military Occupation, 1903-1920," *History of Education* 33.4 (2004): 451-467; Jeffrey Ayala Milligan, "Faith in School: Educational Policy Responses to Ethno-Religious Conflict in the Southern Philippines, 1935-1985," *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 36.1 (2005): 67-86; Jeffrey Ayala Milligan, "The Prophet and the Engineer Meet Under the Mango Tree: Leadership, Education, and Conflict in the Southern Philippines," *Educational Policy* 24.1 (2010): 28-51.

<sup>60</sup> Thomas M. McKenna, *Muslim Rulers and Rebels: Everyday Politics and Philippines* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1998), 86-112. Other writings that focus on the role Islamic faith and ethnic kinship networks played in the American colonial era include: Howard M. Federspiel, "Islam and Muslims in the Southern Territories of the Philippine Islands during the Colonial Period (1898 to 1946)," *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 29.2 (1998): 340-356; Howard M. Federspiel, *Sultans, Shamans, and Saints: Islam and Muslims in Southeast Asia* (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007), 117-125; Shinzō Hayase, *Mindanao Ethnohistory Beyond Nations: Maguindanao, Sangir, and Bagobo Societies in East Maritime Southeast Asia* (Manila: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2007); Renato T. Oliveros, "Islam in the Moro-American War (1899-1913)" (PhD diss., Temple University, 2005).

<sup>61</sup> Vivienne SM. Angeles, "Moros in the Media and Beyond: Representations of Philippine Muslims," *Contemporary Islam* 4.1. (2010): 29-53. Angeles has also studied the role of women in Moro societies. See

The most expansive scholarship on the American period originates not from the United States but from Filipino social scientists. These regional studies situate the experience of American colonialism within the longue durée of Muslim history in Mindanao and Sulu. As such, they are excellent reflections on the patchwork origins of modern Filipino identity and reminders that studies of American rule cannot be historically isolated or decontextualized. The turbulent 1960s and 1970s in the Philippines gave rise to a brand of progressive historicism that at once emphasized the distinctiveness of Muslim societies in the Southern Philippines but also sought to integrate them into an evolving history of the Philippine nation-state. The writings of Samuel K. Tan are notable in this respect. Tan's work in the 1970s and 1980s argued that Muslim responses to outside rule were best understood as a series of semi-isolated local developments. To suggest "unitarism" in patterns of resistance was a reification of Spanish and American colonial histories, which "assumed that the 'Moros' were a fierce group of people, strongly influenced by 'Mohammedanism,' bound by a common Malay culture, and intensely antagonistic to Christianity."<sup>62</sup>

Such flattening notions, which homogenized complex and variable local histories in the Muslim South into a single fanatical or mythic (depending on the writer) struggle, retained their currency in the post-independence Philippines. In opposition to this trend, Tan suggested that Muslim resistance to colonialism was "circumstantial or incidental" and "lacked the essence of unity which could come only from a realistic integration of experiences and meaningful communications and relationships which were not present in Muslim societies."<sup>63</sup> An alternative to this, Tan argued, were deep histories of individual Muslim societies and their relations with the outside world. His writings were strengthened by an extensive understanding of the transformations of local and imported cultural traditions

---

Vivienne SM. Angeles, "Philippine Muslim Women: Tradition and Change," in *Islam, Gender, and Social Change*, ed. Yvonne Yazbeck Hadda and John L. Esposito (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1998): 209-234.

<sup>62</sup> Samuel K. Tan, "Unity and Disunity in the Muslim Struggle," in *Selected Essays on the Filipino Muslims* (Marawi City: Mindanao State University Research Center, 1982), 61. (Adapted from an essay of the same name which appeared in *Asian Studies* in 1973)

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., 73.

in the region, especially regarding the Tausūg of the Sulu Archipelago. In his history of American military rule in Sulu, Tan used class-based analysis to argue that “the benefits of economic progress and reforms seeped only to the native bourgeoisie or middle class” during the American period.<sup>64</sup> His 1977 book *The Filipino Muslim Armed Struggle* included reflections on Islamic models of resistance in the Philippines and the role of American weapons systems in forcing submission in the Muslim South.<sup>65</sup>

Samuel Tan’s writings coincided with a historiographic interest in exploring the regional histories of the Southern Philippines. In Cotabato, the historian Michael O. Mastura wrote in compelling detail about the rise and fall of Islamic rule along Mindanao’s western coast.<sup>66</sup> These projects, forged in the tumult of the Marcos era, were admirable in their assertion of the importance of local histories, but sometimes contained troubling undercurrents. Tan argued in one essay that Filipinos should look to pre-Christian and pre-Islamic Malay antecedents for “a distinct geo-historical process which resists geo-political fragmentation” and that “the imperatives of Christian and Islamic traditions in Filipino culture are not as crucial to unity as the indigenous foundations of Filipino heritage.”<sup>67</sup> As is apparent elsewhere in the essay, Tan wrote with the intention of acknowledging local variance while gently encouraging integration. Nevertheless, his approach was to cast the insecure nation backwards through history, creating a pre-European and pre-Islamic

---

<sup>64</sup> Samuel K. Tan, *Sulu Under American Military Rule, 1899-1913* (Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 1968), 155.

<sup>65</sup> Samuel K. Tan, *The Filipino Muslim Armed Struggle, 1900-1972* (Manila: Filipinas Foundation Inc., 1977), 1-87.

<sup>66</sup> Michael Mastura, “A Short History of Cotabato City and its Historic Places,” in *Cotabato City Guidebook*, ed. Simeon F. Millan (General Santos City: Simeon F. Millan, 1979), 5-25. See also: Michael O. Mastura, *Muslim-Filipino Experience: A Collection of Essays* (Marawi City: Mindanao State University Research Center, 1982).

<sup>67</sup> Samuel K. Tan, “Understanding Philippine Culture Through the Filipino Muslims and Other National Minorities,” in *Selected Essays on the Filipino Muslims* (Marawi City: Mindanao State University Research Center, 1982), 154. Tan’s body of work over four decades is gigantic. Other useful titles include: Samuel K. Tan, *Decolonization and Filipino Muslim Identity* (Quezon City: University of the Philippines Department of History, 1989); Samuel K. Tan, *The Critical Decade, 1921-1930* (Quezon City: College of Social Science and Philosophy, University of the Philippines, 1993); Samuel K. Tan, *The Muslim South and Beyond* (Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 2010).

cohesiveness. In this light, the unified Philippine nation-state is not a construct arising from the variability of history, but simply a natural recurrence of a mythologized past.<sup>68</sup>

Amendments to this nationalist imaginary are found in the work of Patricio Abinales, who for the past two decades has critically engaged the notion that state formation in the Philippines was a unitary process. Important for the purposes of this study are Abinales' observations about how the Americans inherited from the Spanish a series of societies that they then attempted to reform. This was hardly a linear, untroubled march towards a single national entity, but instead a fraught, contested, and decades-long argument over what the archipelago should look like at the end of American rule (if American rule should terminate at all, that is).<sup>69</sup> In examining the Muslim elite in Cotabato during the interwar years, Abinales demonstrates how strategies of accommodation and resistance to *both* Filipino and American imperatives arose not from the *inevitability* of integration into an independent national body, but from the *uncertainty* of integration.<sup>70</sup> Such uncertainty arose not only from uneven manifestations of local power but also the colonial state itself, which Abinales claims was "a patchwork apparatus of agencies and offices that mixed patronage, corruption, and compromises with isles of administrative efficiency and autonomy."<sup>71</sup>

In his studies of the Muslim South, Abinales explores how colonial and national imaginaries conceived of these spaces as ecological and sociological frontiers. To the American settlers intent on growing cash crops in Davao, the colonial hinterlands represented an allure similar to the U.S. western and southern frontiers in the previous century. White civilization in the districts of the Moro Province would, officials believed, bring untold

---

<sup>68</sup> I would be remiss to forego the important works of Cesar Majul in this section. See Cesar Adib Majul, *Muslims in the Philippines* (Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 1973); Cesar Adib Majul, "Islam and Philippine Society: The Writings of Cesar Abid Majul," *Asian Studies: Retrospective Issue 1* 46.1/2 (2010).

<sup>69</sup> Patricio N. Abinales, *Making Mindanao: Cotabato and Lanao in the Formation of the Philippine Nation-State* (Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2000), 178-179.

<sup>70</sup> Patricio N. Abinales, "From *Orang Besar* to Colonial Big Man: Datu Piang of Cotabato and the American Colonial State," in *Lives at the Margin: Biography of Filipinos Obscure, Ordinary, and Heroic*, ed. Alfred W. McCoy (Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2000), 210-227.

<sup>71</sup> Patricio N. Abinales, *Orthodoxy and History in the Muslim-Mindanao Narrative* (Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2010), 3.

economic and cultural benefits to both settlers and natives alike.<sup>72</sup> In the years after Filipinization and into the postcolonial era, northerners and those living in the increasingly urbanized settlements along the Mindanao littoral perpetuated the idea that the remote and marginal spaces of the South were “zone[s] of darkness, savagery, and instability.”<sup>73</sup> Several sections of this project expand upon Abinales’ observations about the South-as-frontier, while simultaneously avoiding the danger of reifying those notions by exploring the region in a wider Southeast Asian context.

Where Abinales is concerned with Muslim identity formation in relation to the Philippine state, Michael Hawkins focuses on epistemologies of rule amongst American colonial administrators during the military period (1899-1913). Men like Leonard Wood and John Pershing operated according to the discursive contours of what Hawkins calls “imperial historicism” – an evolutionary schematic that standardized and ordered models of progress then deduced “the best possible means for enabling indigenous development into modernity.”<sup>74</sup> Predictably, the ideal iteration of modernity was manifest in the patrician East Coast culture of the very men who defined and promoted the discourse. Imperial historicism was, according to Hawkins, “the fundamental philosophy of American colonialism in the Philippines [and] represents a coherent and reliable discourse informing and underwriting the essential logic of the United States’ colonial project in Mindanao and Sulu.”<sup>75</sup> Hawkins’ concept finds its antecedents in the work of scholars like Anne McClintock, Dipesh Chakrabarty, and Homi K. Bhabha, who explore of the secularization of time and European master narratives of progress. In particular, we can read imperial historicism as an adaptation of McClintock’s notions of “panoptical time” and “anachronistic space,” which explain how European colonials deployed teleological images of racial progress and world history to explain and legitimate systems of cultural power. In the imaginary of the American imperial

---

<sup>72</sup> Abinales, *Making Mindanao*, 69-78.

<sup>73</sup> Abinales, *Orthodoxy and History*, 185.

<sup>74</sup> Hawkins, *Making Moros: Imperial Historicism and American Military Rule in the Philippines’ Muslim South* (Dekalb: Northern Illinois University Press, 2013), 4.

<sup>75</sup> *Ibid.*, 5.

historicist, the “family tree of man” that Europeans used to map civilizational fitness was altered ever so slightly, with U.S. capitalist modernity now at its apex and terminus.<sup>76</sup>

In his monograph, *Making Moros*, and several journal articles, Hawkins promotes imperial historicism as a novel way of understanding American empire in the Southern Philippines. Within this broader concept, he interrogates how gender informed responses to violence in Mindanao and Sulu, particularly after the Bud Dajo massacre in 1906.<sup>77</sup> In *Making Moros*’ most fascinating chapter, Hawkins charts the anxieties inherent in American colonials at the turn of the twentieth-century, observing that the homogenizing tendencies of industrial capitalism and the loss of the divine in daily life led some to argue American masculinity was in crisis. Vanishing continental frontiers exacerbated this sense, and the overseas empire presented itself as a balm. The Moro Province was “an exotic frontier filled with adventure and unknown possibilities” and Hawkins argues that “colonial explorers felt they were entering a spatial realm beyond the surveying gaze of technical modernity.”<sup>78</sup> Romantic notions of the Muslims as vigorous peoples unsullied by the modern world gave way to feelings of guilt at the necessary implementation of the historicist vision.

Imperial historicism is a seductive analytical tool when attempting to understand the Muslim South under American military rule, yet has its drawbacks. In championing the concept as “a foundational rationale for virtually every policy and project in Moro Province between 1899 and 1913” Hawkins risks reproducing the flattening qualities of imperial historicism in his own work.<sup>79</sup> When one looks closer, the notion of coherence begins to deteriorate. Ideals of governance featured in annual reports and newspapers often masked the ad hoc nature of local rule, where degrees of compromise and force varied alongside the

---

<sup>76</sup> Anne McClintock, *Imperial Leather*, 1-74.

<sup>77</sup> Michael C. Hawkins, “Managing a Massacre: Savagery, Civility, and Gender in Moro Province in the Wake of Bud Dajo,” *Philippine Studies* 59.1 (2011): 83-105. See also: Michael C. Hawkins, “David Barrows and Perceptions of Historical Consciousness in the Colonial Philippines,” *Journal of Social Issues in Southeast Asia* 27.1 (2012): 153-167; Michael C. Hawkins, “Imperial Historicism and American Military Rule in the Philippines’ Muslim South,” *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 39.3 (2008), 411-429; Michael C. Hawkins, “Masculinity Reborn: Chivalry, Misogyny, Potency and Violence in the Philippines’ Muslim South, 1899-1913,” *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 44.2 (2013): 250-265.

<sup>78</sup> Hawkins, *Making Moros*, 114.

<sup>79</sup> *Ibid.*, 131.

ability to introduce state structures. Added to this were the disparate personalities of the colonials themselves. Some, like Leonard Wood and John Pershing, were dismissive of native forms of governance, law, and education. Others, like Najeeb Saleeby and Charles Cameron, advocated the use of Islam and the datuship in colonial rule. While overarching civilizational prerogatives certainly existed, they were often modified, altered, or overlooked by unanticipated vagaries of rule. Thus, translating the imperial historicist worldview in Cotabato, under the firm rule of Datu Piang, was a very different experience than in Sulu, where a shifting cast of datus vied for power against the ‘leadership’ of a weak Sultan.

Hewing so closely to his concept, Hawkins occasionally overlooks important details. Muslim populations are differentiated in the opening section of his monograph, but these important distinctions and their roles in colonial relations during the military period are repeatedly glossed over in subsequent chapters. One develops the sense that ‘the Moro’ is precisely as the American envisioned him, a product of civilizational fantasy rather than a panoply of ethnic and religious identities. In neglecting to look at Spanish antecedents, regional links between the sultanates and other maritime states, and contacts between American and European colonials, Hawkins foregoes important instances of transcolonial exchange. “Historicism at its roots is an exclusive product of the metropole,” Hawkins writes, yet this same historicism was itself an adaptation of European concepts, and when it arrived in the Southern Philippines it was diluted and transformed by insistent connectivities.<sup>80</sup>

Karine V. Walther’s *Sacred Interests* takes a broader approach to Moro-American relations, placing them within an Orientalist cultural discourse stretching back to the early nineteenth-century. Recentering religion as a driving force in American foreign relations, Walther argues there has “been a long-standing tendency in the United States...to overemphasize the significance of religious belief in shaping the actions of historical agents who happen to be Muslim and underemphasize that of Europeans and Americans.”<sup>81</sup> Her

---

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., 14. Objections aside, Hawkins’ writings are given so much space here because of their elegant argumentative construction and importance. My criticisms of them derive from a place of admiration and desire to deepen the scholarly conversation.

<sup>81</sup> Karine V. Walther, *Sacred Interests: The United States and the Islamic World, 1821-1921* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2015), 26.

scholarship also stresses the importance of inter-imperial relationships during the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. “We must reinsert the United States within the larger global history of nineteenth-century imperial expansion,” she writes, “and the exchange of transnational discourses about Islam and Muslims while recognizing the domestic particularities that distinguished American discourses from those of European powers.”<sup>82</sup> This project shares Walther’s focus on the coalescences and divergences in Euro-American imperial histories.

While much of *Sacred Interests* centers on America’s role in the Ottoman world, one section of the monograph pertains to events in the Southern Philippines between 1899 and 1920. Walther is strongest when analyzing the transcolonial adventures of Leonard Wood and his coterie in the early 1900s, a topic which figures into Chapter Eight of this work. Stopping in Istanbul, Wood and his deputies saw nothing of value, yet were impressed with Evelyn Baring (popularly known as Lord Cromer) and his transformation of Egypt.<sup>83</sup> Elsewhere, Walther provides a sound chronology of the first twenty years of American colonialism in the Southern Philippines and references important topics (missionaries, violence, colonial imaginaries) that I explore at greater length in the coming chapters. The book’s most important contribution to the literature, however, is integrating the Southern Philippines into a much larger relational history of Americans and the Islamic world, and illustrating the damage caused by “simplistic understandings of Islam and Muslims” across centuries.<sup>84</sup>

Drawing on a variety of historical subfields and scholarly disciplines, my intention is to demonstrate that the history of U.S. colonialism in Mindanao and Sulu cannot be understood only through reading material on American empire in the Philippines. In many of these accounts, the Muslim South is a peripheral space that never fully enters focus. It is only through scouring the historiographies of the Philippines as a nation-state, Islam in Southeast Asia, and European colonial empire in Asia, that we find appropriate resonances. With this in mind, the following chapters draw from a range of literatures. Vast histories of imperial

---

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., 27.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., 199-200.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., 331.



power and small regional studies are equally important in demarcating the parameters of this project, which is at once a history of a specific time and place *and* a rumination on how a supposed periphery connected in expected and unexpected ways to the world around it.

## Connectivities and Complications

A week after Leonard Wood's death in August 1927, Governor of the Mountain Province John C. Early eulogized him before an assembled crowd at the Baguio Auditorium. Early recalled the intra-colonial legacy of the famed soldier. Wood battled the Apache Indians and "cleared the way for a million peaceful homes." As a "man of science," he fought against yellow fever and malaria, saving Cuba and aiding in the "great engineering works" of "tropical America...like the Panama Canal." Transferred to Mindanao from Cuba, Wood "conquered the Moros...and extended to them the right hand of friendship when they laid their arms down and has treated them as men ever since." Returning to the Philippines in the early 1920s, Wood propped up a faltering financial system, rooted out corruption in government and the judiciary, and expanded public works. In Early's estimation, Wood's years as Governor General were his "last supreme service to humanity...he died rendering service and his death is a supreme service fixing as it does the eyes of the world upon the Philippines."<sup>85</sup>

Governor Early believed there was "no one in American history" who solved similar problems to those faced by Wood. Looking across the imperial landscape, he saw Wood's "parallel" in Lord Cromer, the British diplomat and administrator famed for the colonial management of Egypt in the closing decades of the nineteenth-century. "[Lord Cromer] was Britain's last great Colonial Administrator," Early declared. "Leonard Wood is our first. We may learn in time to appreciate such service."<sup>86</sup> Far from evading comparisons to European empire, the American official embraced them in his commemoration of Wood. The late military man's achievements stretched across the arc of America's expanding global presence

---

<sup>85</sup> "Address of Governor J.C. Early at the Necrological Services in Commemoration of the Death of Governor-General Leonard Wood," 13 August 1927, Box 1. John C. Early Papers, 1878-1932, Bentley Historical Library, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan (Henceforth referenced as BHL).

<sup>86</sup> Ibid.

at the meeting point of two centuries. Giving them context and credit meant fixing one's gaze not just upon national histories, but also looking outwards onto a world saturated by imperial power.

Infusing an already complex regional story with all the descriptors developed by globally oriented scholars means contesting isolated histories. The lack of attention given to the Southern Philippines in the historiography of American foreign relations is a continuation of trends originating in the American and Filipino colonial imaginaries. Mindanao and Sulu were frontier spaces, depicted alternately as foreboding and dangerous or else virginal and exploitable. These narratives of what I deem the 'colonial remote' are often used to explain regions viewed as peripheral by imperial and national centers, particularly if the inhabitants are minority populations alienated from the status quo. Unlike frontiers, which vanish with conquest or settlement, the colonial remote has a remarkable resiliency in national imaginaries long after questions of possession are deemed settled. We find examples of this throughout the Islamic world and elsewhere: the North Caucasus in Russia, the Kurdish regions of Eastern Anatolia / Northern Kurdistan, the Xinjiang Uighur Autonomous Region in Northwestern China, Naxalite areas in Jharkhand and West Bengal in India, and so on.

In the case of the Philippines, the reification of the South as a colonial remote in the historiography perpetuates myths of isolation and disconnection. Part of writing connected histories is challenging the belief that so-called peripheries exist in mere relation to an imperial or national center. The inhabitants of the Southern Philippines – Muslims, Lumads, Americans, Christian Filipinos, Chinese, Japanese, and Europeans alike – were undoubtedly shaped by reciprocal flows of information, personnel, policies, and cultural ephemera to and from Manila and Washington, but also by what Julian Go calls "horizontal" circuits of exchange.<sup>87</sup> This meant transfers between American and European colonies, but also between colonized peoples themselves. In this narrative, people and ideas travel in surprising ways. British colonial agricultural schemes reach the Southern Philippines by way of London and

---

<sup>87</sup> Julian Go, "Global Perspectives on the U.S. Colonial State in the Philippines," in *The American Colonial State in the Philippines: Global Perspectives*, ed. Julian Go and Anne L. Foster (Durham: Duke University Press, 2003), 21.

Cairo; racial segregationists in the U.S. Senate suggest a mass migration of African-Americans to Mindanao; German botany arrives in Jolo by way of Argentina and Philadelphia; Ottoman emissaries offer their services to the Samal Moros of the Zamboanga Peninsula; Tausūg princesses study in Illinois and date NCAA football players; Sultans visit Central Park in New York City; Dutch and American authorities collaborate to track down pirates in the Sulu Sea. These and other incidents give anecdotal life to my refutation of histories that reproduce imperialist and nationalist orderings. In uncovering and probing instances of permeability and exchange, this study does not renounce the nation-state or territoriality as crucial tools of inquiry. Instead, it recognizes their utility while also acknowledging their limitations.

A second major thematic concern regards the complications of rule in a colonial state. Between 1899 and 1942, authorities reorganized Mindanao and Sulu multiple times. Pure military government gave way to the Moro Province in 1903, a civil-military hybrid administered by U.S. Army officers. The Moro Province itself transitioned to the civilian-led Department of Mindanao and Sulu in 1914, which brought with it a Filipinization of the colonial administrative class. From 1920 until its abolishment in 1936, the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes in Manila oversaw the provinces of the Southern Philippines. Manuel Quezon's government 'normalized' provinces like Cotabato, Lanao, and Sulu in 1936, although their relationship to the national center remained strained. The various permutations of rule in the Southern Philippines began with American military men in 1899 and concluded with Christian Filipino politicians and bureaucrats in the late 1930s. Within these administrative variations, the inhabitants of the Southern Philippines – colonials, natives, and those in between – carved out representative spaces that gave the region its polyrhythmic cultural character.

If the colonial rulers changed from military officers to American civilians to Filipino politicians during this period, there remained a constant emphasis on the need to pacify and transform 'savage' and 'warlike' Moros into modern national subjects. These civilizational imperatives – called 'benevolent assimilation' in some circles, 'democratic tutelage' in others – pervaded colonial encounters, colouring government discourse and legitimating state violence. Within these overarching desires to reform and recreate, however, there were

variations. Among Americans, strategies of governing and interacting with Muslim populations depended on everything from personal beliefs about race and religion to whether one was a Democrat or Republican. Christian Filipinos from the North ranged from staunch Catholic chauvinists to Moro sympathizers, which in turn dictated their actions when they arrived in Mindanao and Sulu. Most importantly, Muslims themselves developed strategies of resistance, accommodation, and collaboration. Some, like the ruling Piang family in Cotabato, politicked with American and Filipino leaders throughout the colonial period in an attempt to maintain their status. Others, such as Panglima Hassan of Sulu and Dimakaling of Lanao, violently opposed and paid with their lives. The following chapters acknowledge that any study of a colonial culture is really a study of interactive and shifting colonial *cultures*.

The stories told in this project present a portrait of peoples and spaces caught between and within an ascendant global power and a nation-in-the-making. If Muslim responses to the civilizing mission and the Filipinization of the Southern Philippines were schismatic and inconsistent, so too were American applications of power. Moving past general chronology requires acknowledging contradictions and occasional irreducible complexities. Well beyond the pat narrative of how America's 'Moro Problem' became the Philippines' 'Moro Problem' lies a rich history of how an understudied region and its peoples were the target of colonial reformation schemes. Mindanao and Sulu between the Spanish-American conflict and the Second World War remain marginally examined and understood in histories of American empire, the Philippine nation-state, and colonialism in Southeast Asia. My intention from the first has been to cover the subjects in each chapter comprehensively, although I dispute the idea that any single authorial voice can create *the comprehensive account* of so large a topic. To use a tired phrase: many gaps still exist in the historiography. What were the experiences of Christian settler and Lumad groups in Muslim majority areas? How extensive was foreign commercial penetration of Mindanao during the colonial period and what were its ramifications? How did Muslim women experience American colonial rule? How did American colonials use visual mediums to 'capture' Muslim subjects? Many questions and areas of study remain. I present my own work in a contributory spirit and acknowledge its shortcomings.

My methodological approach is that of a cultural historian. In state-generated documentation I have attempted to find idiosyncratic moments where colonial agents abandon mechanistic government-speak and provide brief glimpses into their worldviews and the spaces they managed. In an effort to bring a human element to the proceedings, I contextualize abstract colonial processes through individual narrative. The stories of Tarhata Kiram, Frank Laubach, John Finley, or Caroline Spencer are fascinating in isolation, but also illustrative of larger stories of contact, control, and transformation. Wherever possible, I have tried to include non-Western voices, although admittedly Americans themselves are the primary inhabitants of the colonial archives. In parsing these fragmentary histories, my focus is on: i) translating the thematic and textural resonances of American colonial culture in the Muslim regions of Mindanao and Sulu; and ii) establishing arcs of connectivity between the Southern Philippines and the outside world. The relative elasticity of ‘culture’ allows me to work in the spaces between political, economic, and military histories, and I have supplemented official histories with a variety of materials. Dime novels, children’s radio programs, motion pictures, advertisements, yellow journalism, speeches, songs, poetry, diary entries, marginalia, captions scrawled on timeworn photographs, fair pamphlets, student journals, petitions to the powerful, cablegrams, and dinner menus all make appearances in these pages. While it is tempting to dismiss such documents as ephemeral detritus, I believe they are powerful tools in acts of historical reconstruction.

The body of this project is split into eight parts. Chapter One, “Contact and Conquest,” chronologically examines the history of the Southern Philippines from Islamization in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, through the Spanish colonial period, and into the American era, terminating with the Japanese invasion. In narrative fashion, it introduces the peoples, places, and events referred to in later thematically structured chapters. Chapter Two, “Imagining the Moro,” focuses on how a variety of Western actors generated notions of ‘the Moro’ to fit within prevalent notions of savagery and civility, consulting Spanish colonial knowledge and reaching back into America’s violent history with indigenous populations to do so. It also connects fantasies about the civilizational potential of ‘lesser’ peoples with notions that the sparsely cultivated land they inhabited presented unique developmental opportunities for the state and private enterprise.

Chapters Three and Four, “Civilizational Imperatives,” examine the civilizing agendas of American colonials and their methods of implementation. Chapter Three centers on tensions between Moro customary practices and a variety of governmental initiatives. This included the creation of new legal structures to replace traditional ones, the application of modern hygiene and sanitary measures, the establishment of a system of marketplaces designed to win Moros over to capitalism, and the promulgation of Mindanao as a settler space. Chapter Four looks at education as a vehicle for the reform and reconfiguration of Muslim children. The public school system in the South was a source of constant friction between state authorities and natives who feared it was drawing youth away from Islam and community social practices. Alongside state schooling were private efforts to educate the Moros. Most prominent of these was the Bishop Brent Moro School on Jolo, funded by a network of wealthy patrons in the Eastern United States. In Lanao, the missionary and literacy specialist Frank Laubach ran a variety of programs aimed at rescuing Maranao Moros from irrelevance in the ‘new’ Philippines. While all of these programs attempted to reorient the Moros towards Western civilizational models, they were often applied ineptly or unevenly, making outcomes questionable. Chapter Five, “Corrective Violence,” assesses the violence inherent in colonial state-building. Beset by paranoia about the *juramentado* (Moro religious warriors), American and Christian Filipinos responded viciously to Muslim resistance. Opposition to taxation, land surveys, mandatory public schooling, and other colonial initiatives elicited disproportionate responses from the state, creating an atmosphere of ambient violence throughout the period under discussion. For the imprisoned, Americans devised new carceral strategies that attempted to combine moral reform with profit.

Chapter Six, “Tropical Idylls,” investigates the relationship between Americans and the environment of the Southern Philippines. Eager to create suitable living spaces, Westerners adopted and adapted insights on architecture, urban planning, and comfort from other colonial contexts. Americans established racially segregated clubs, built golf courses, organized baseball teams, and shipped in modern luxuries from Europe and the United States. In spare moments, they explored their surroundings, and compulsively collected, catalogued, and photographed their findings. Underpinning this frivolity, however, were deep anxieties about how the environment and inhabitants of the Muslim South destabilized Western masculinity. Neurasthenia, ‘Philippinitis,’ and fears of deracination instilled a sense of

constant threat in Americans. Chapter Seven, “Moros in America,” moves across the Pacific to explore how America’s Muslim subjects entered the metropolitan consciousness. Initially, this occurred through the display of Samal and Maranao groups at the Louisiana Purchase Exposition in 1904. Part of the massive Philippine Reservation, these stage-managed Moros were shown to paying visitors in their ‘natural’ environments. Organizers of the spectacle simultaneously assumed roles as moral-minded ethnologists and carnival ringleaders. Members of the Maguindanao and Tausūg aristocracy later visited the United States independently. Some, like Tarhata Kiram, received schooling at American universities and later questioned their subordinate status. Americans also learned about their new ‘wards’ through popular entertainments: dime novels, radio programs, and motion pictures.

The final chapter, “Imperial Exchanges,” contemplates linkages between the Southern Philippines and the outside world. Despite its portrayal as a backwater, the Muslim South maintained, by virtue of its long independence from Spanish colonial authority, numerous links with external actors. This included not only spatially obvious connections with North Borneo and other polities in Maritime Southeast Asia, but also real and imagined exchanges with the wider Muslim world. A place where people came to start anew, the region hosted a variety of characters whose hybrid identities allowed them to act as intermediaries between local populations and the state. For their part, Americans collected and assessed strategies of rule from a variety of European colonies. Travelling within Europe and in European colonial possessions, U.S. officials swapped notes with their imperial counterparts. In speeches and correspondence, men like Leonard Wood consciously framed their endeavours within global histories of empire. Engineers and professional soldiers circulated through the Southern Philippines, using skills honed in other colonies to benefit the American project. Our story closes with two vignettes and a consideration of the legacies of American colonial empire in Mindanao and Sulu.

## Chapter One / **Contact and Conquest**

### *A Historical Survey of Mindanao and Sulu, 1300s-1900s*

## **Islamic Sultanates and Spanish Colonial Empire**

Islam arrived in the Southern Philippines during the fourteenth-century. Arab and Indian trader-missionaries sojourning in Southeast Asia developed networks of commercial and cultural exchange, facilitating the faith's rapid growth in the region. Malacca (Melaka), the Malayan commercial hub and strategic entry point to Maritime Southeast Asia, was an initial conversion point. One hundred and fifty kilometers south of present-day Kuala Lumpur, this early sultanate was key in disseminating Islam along the coastal regions of Java, Sumatra, Borneo, and, eventually, the Southern Philippines. According to Patricio Abinales and Donna Amoroso, the fusing of Hindu-Buddhist court traditions with centralizing Islamic notions of governance in Malacca helped accelerate Islam's spread. "As Melaka's power and commercial success grew," they write, "so did the moral, military, and commercial momentum of the new faith among port rulers seeking advantage against rivals."<sup>1</sup> Leaders in the littoral societies of the region quickly realized that adopting Islam meant tapping into webs of economic, political, and religious authority. Interweaving the temporal and spiritual, Islam provided rulers with a unified framework for governance while simultaneously increasing its credibility by adapting to indigenous cultural particularities. After gaining traction among elites, the faith soon spread to the lowland peasantries of coastal Southeast Asia.

Islam entered the Sulu Archipelago by way of Borneo during this period of rapid Islamization. Some 2,300 kilometers from the Strait of Malacca, the nearly nine hundred islands in the chain stretched between the eastern coast of the Bruneian Empire in North

---

<sup>1</sup> Patricio N. Abinales and Donna J. Amoroso, *State and Society in the Philippines* (New York and Oxford: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers, 2005), 43. Regarding trade and global integration before the early modern period, see Philippe Beaujard, "The Indian Ocean in Eurasian and African World-Systems Before the Sixteenth Century," *Journal of World History* 16.4 (2005): 411-465.



Borneo and Mindanao, the southernmost major island in the Philippine Archipelago. In the fourteenth-century, the islands were already integrating into commercial and cultural systems generated by larger Asian states. Developments in the region during the previous three centuries created deeper links between societies. These included: population growth and the expansion of urban centers; increased political influence of the regionally powerful China; religio-cultural importations from the Indian subcontinent; enlarged trade networks and an amplified desire for luxury goods throughout the Indian Ocean world system; and the rise of port cities as administrative and economic centers.<sup>2</sup> Makhdum Ibrahim Al-Akbar, an Arabic trader-missionary, landed at Siminul in 1380. On the island, part of the Tawi-Tawi group near the Borneo coast, he encountered peoples in contact with the trading cultures of China, the Malay States, and Siam. Islam became a political force in the Southern Philippines a half-century later with the appearance of Sayyed Abu Bakr Abirin (also known as Sharif ul-Hashim), a Meccan Arab who travelled to the Sulu Archipelago from Brunei. Bakr married Paramisuli, one of the daughters of Raja Baginda, a Sumatran leader whose arrival in Sulu in 1390 marked the beginning of the centralization of power there. Assuming leadership after Baginda's death, Bakr leveraged his father-in-law's political clout to create a Sultanate modeled on the Turkish example. The effects on Sulu, and eventually other parts of the Philippines, were profound:

The thirty-year influence and rule of Abu Bak'r until his death in 1480 was characterized by important reforms which included the teaching of Arabic and the Koran, the building of mosques, the organization of the archipelago into districts under *Panglimas*, the introduction of an equitable system of taxation, the initiation of legal forms, the establishment of the first Sulu Code, and the inauguration of a system of courts. In effect, Abu Bak'r assumed the role of a religious, social, and political potentate and succeeded in establishing a truly strong Sultanate throughout the archipelago with

---

<sup>2</sup> Geoff Wade, "An Early Age of Commerce in Southeast Asia, 900-1300 CE," *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 40.2 (2009): 258-265; Reinhard Wendt and Jürgen G. Nagel, "Southeast Asia and Oceania," in *Empires and Encounters, 1350-1750*, ed. Wolfgang Reinhard (Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2015), 609-643.

influence radiating to the Visayas, Luzon, Celebes, Palawan, and North Borneo. He established trade between Sulu and China, Japan, Malacca, Sumatra, and Java.<sup>3</sup>

In other words, when Spanish incursions began, the Sulu Sultanate was already a state with well-developed systems of governance, legal structures, and commercial institutions.<sup>4</sup>

Spain's colonization of the Philippines occurred in a piecemeal fashion throughout the sixteenth-century. After the 'discovery' of the islands by Magellan in 1521, the Spanish Crown sent successive military expeditions to conquer territory. One led by the *conquistador* Barbosa landed on Mindanao in 1523, only to be slaughtered en masse by natives shortly thereafter.<sup>5</sup> From the mid to late sixteenth-century, the power of Islamic rulers in the central and northern Philippines was progressively eroded by Spanish incursions. Miguel Lopez de Legazpi founded the first permanent Spanish settlement in 1565. Six years later, the Islamic stronghold of Manila was overrun. In 1578, Captain Esteban Rodriguez de Figueroa, a companion of Legazpi, was ordered by Governor General Francisco de Sande to attack Jolo and force the Sultanate to accept Spanish sovereignty and convert to Roman Catholicism. "You shall order them that there be not among them any more preachers of the sect of Muhammad, since it is evil and that of the Christians alone is good," Sande instructed Figueroa. "And because for a short time since the Lord of Mindanao has been deceived by preachers of Borneo, and the people have become Moros, you shall tell them that our object is that he be converted to Christianity...and the natives may hear preaching and be converted without risk or harm from the chiefs."<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup> Tan, *Sulu Under American Military Rule*, 3.

<sup>4</sup> The colonial scholar-official Najeeb Saleeby, who appears in later chapters, was the first to compile English language genealogical histories of Moro populations in Mindanao and Sulu. See Najeeb M. Saleeby, *Studies in Moro History, Law, and Religion* (Manila: Bureau of Public Printing, 1905); Najeeb M. Saleeby, *The History of Sulu*. (Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1908).

<sup>5</sup> Vic Hurley, *The Swish of the Kris: The Story of the Moros* (New York: E.P. Dutton & Co., 1936), 39.

<sup>6</sup> "Juramentados," *Mindanao Herald*, 17 January 1914, 3. The problematic history of the ethnic designation 'Moro' is discussed in the introductory note to this project.

Rather than accept their role as a vassal state and pay tribute to their new colonial masters, the Muslims of the Sulu Archipelago actively resisted. This marked the beginning of a state of intermittent conflict between Spanish colonial forces and the peoples of the Southern Philippines lasting over three centuries. Establishing forts along the northern coast of Mindanao and adjacent islands, the Spanish launched assaults against the Sulu Archipelago while simultaneously attempting to consolidate their rule in Mindanao's uncharted interior. Spanish authorities bestowed the title "Governor of Mindanao" upon Captain Figueroa in 1596, and he launched a punitive venture up in the Rio Grande River in Maguindanao, only to be killed in battle near Tampacan.<sup>7</sup> Maguindanao and the other Muslim societies on Mindanao developed simultaneously but separately from the Sulu Sultanate. Islam reached Maguindanao (known as Cotabato during the American period) in 1460, and a ruling dynasty formed there in the early sixteenth-century under Sultan Muhammad Kabungsuwan. However, it was not until the seventeenth-century, during the long reign of Sultan Dipituan Kudarat, that the Maguindanao Sultanate consolidated its power. A maritime society like their neighbours in Sulu, the Maguindanao people lived in a state of uneasy truce with the Spanish for much of the colonial period and earned their livelihood trading with Manila and other commercial centers in Southeast Asia.<sup>8</sup> A third center of Islamic society was located around Lake Lanao, northeast of Maguindanao, where the Maranao people lived. Living inland, this group remained almost entirely independent until the late nineteenth-century.

By the mid seventeenth-century, a discernable pattern emerged in Spanish-Muslim relations. Small Spanish coastal outposts materialized and vanished based on the intensity of conflict. During times of truce, Spanish traders or Jesuit missionaries appeared in the trading ports of Maguindanao, but actual control over the South was more the fantasy of crusading colonial administrators in Manila and Madrid than it was a practical reality. For example, Samboangan (later called Zamboanga) was established in 1634, abandoned in 1662, and only

---

<sup>7</sup> Tan, *Sulu Under American Military Rule*, 6.

<sup>8</sup> Michael O. Mastura, "A Short History of Cotabato City," 9.

completed in 1718.<sup>9</sup> Muslim raids on ships and coastal communities plagued the Spanish and Christianized native populations of the Philippines. A vigorous slave trade emanating from the Dutch East Indies in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries meant that the capture and sale of Muslims and non-Muslims alike was a profitable, if dangerous, enterprise for generations of young men in Sulu, Mindanao, and Borneo. Although slavers themselves, Spanish colonials were outraged by the actions of these ‘pirates.’<sup>10</sup> With bombastic prose, they wrote of indignities committed against the faithful by the hated Moros. Chroniclers described Muslim leaders as heathen blasphemers, and when the Spanish were victorious their successes were attributed to the divine.<sup>11</sup>

At the height of the Muslim raids in the 1750s, communities from Northern Mindanao to Luzon were sacked regularly. At times, more than a thousand Muslims participated in these attacks, some of which ended in sieges. When Tandag was invaded in 1754, villagers fled to the nearby fort only to be blockaded by the pirates for four and a half months. After surrendering, the half-starved survivors were enslaved and the town’s possessions looted.<sup>12</sup> Those involved in piracy saw the Spanish and their Filipino subjects as both an economic threat and a source of income, and further resented state-sanctioned missionary efforts to convert them. Maritime Southeast Asia in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries was home to myriad competing states and colonial entities, which meant that the plunder of Tausūg (Sulu) and Maguindanao pirates easily found markets. Additionally, slaves played a pivotal

---

<sup>9</sup> Domingo M. Non, “Moro Piracy During the Spanish Period and its Impact,” *Southeast Asian Studies* 30.4 (1993): 413.

<sup>10</sup> I use the term here with the understanding that in European accounts from the period who was or was not a ‘pirate’ was often contingent on how groups of Asian seafarers operated relative to colonial prerogatives. Think here of the muddled contemporary distinctions between ‘resistance fighter,’ ‘insurgent,’ and ‘terrorist.’

<sup>11</sup> For an example, see “Defeat of Moro Pirates,” in Emma Helen Blair and James Alexander Robertson, eds., *The Philippine Islands 1493-1803, Volume XXVII – 1636-1637* (Cleveland: The Arthur H. Clark Company, 1903), 215-226. Blair and Robertson’s sprawling 55-volume survey of Spanish colonial documents was compiled with help from Dean Worcester’s private secretary, James A. LeRoy, and has been criticized by Gloria Cano for constructing “stereotyped images of the Spanish regime by abusing the sources.” Cano’s history of Blair and Robertson’s contentious series is worth reading for insights into how American colonials reworked imperial histories to their own satisfaction. See Gloria Cano, “Evidence for the Deliberate Distortion of the Spanish Philippine Colonial Historical Record in *The Philippine Islands 1493-1898*,” *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 39.1 (2008): 1-30.

<sup>12</sup> Non, “Moro Piracy,” 408.

role within Muslim societies. James Francis Warren writes that in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries the “labour of slaves made global-regional trade possible” and was the “dominant mode of production” for the Sulu Sultanate.<sup>13</sup> Warren calls this an “open” slavery system, wherein captured slaves eventually assimilated into the Tausūg identity through their labours and length of service.<sup>14</sup>

Spain’s faltering position in Europe and the peripheral role the Philippines played in its empire benefitted the thriving Muslim societies of Mindanao and Sulu. In 1762, the British East India Company, keen on access to the China trade, used its forces to occupy Manila and remained there for two years. The effects of this were limited in the Muslim South, as the Sultan of Sulu had previously concluded a treaty with a young representative of the East India Company, the Scottish geographer Alexander Dalrymple.<sup>15</sup> In late eighteenth-century, the power of the Maguindanao Sultanate was reduced by the Spanish blockade of Cotabato, making Sulu the dominant entity in the Southern Philippines. Patricio Abinales and Donna Amoroso describe the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries as a period of “stalemate,” where the “Muslim south represented a space *inside* the territory claimed by the Spanish that was *outside* the control of the state.”<sup>16</sup> This stasis ended only in the mid nineteenth-century, when advances in military technology (particularly the advent of military steamships) allowed the Spanish navy to erode the power of the sultanates. The concurrent marginalization of small states across Southeast Asia in the face of European colonial aggrandizement limited the movement of goods and people, further eroding political and economic resources.<sup>17</sup>

A series of military encounters with the Spanish between 1850 and 1877 marked the end of the Sulu Sultanate as an independent entity. The island of Jolo was repeatedly attacked

---

<sup>13</sup> James Francis Warren, “The Structure of Slavery in the Sulu Zone in the Late Eighteenth and Nineteenth Centuries,” *Slavery and Abolition* 24.2 (2003): 112.

<sup>14</sup> *Ibid.*, 124.

<sup>15</sup> Nicholas Tarling, “The Establishment of Colonial Regimes,” in *The Cambridge History of Southeast Asia, Volume Two: The Nineteenth and Twentieth Centuries*, ed. Nicholas Tarling (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992), 27.

<sup>16</sup> Abinales and Amoroso, *State and Society*, 70.

<sup>17</sup> Abinales, “From *Orang Besar* to Colonial Big Man,” 200-210.

by Spain, culminating in an invasion in 1876 where Jolo town was captured. The Spanish also removed outside threats to their control of the archipelago by negotiating a free trade protocol with the British and Germans, whose primary interest was unfettered economic access to the area. In July 1878 at Licup, Sultan Jamalul Alam signed a treaty with Spain recognizing their sovereignty in Sulu. The situation on Jolo remained unstable, however, and Spanish troops garrisoned there were routinely attacked by *juramentados* – religiously-motivated warriors committed to killing as many colonials as possible in an act of ritual suicide. In addition, the sultan’s new residence at Maibun functioned as a space of resistance.<sup>18</sup> Najeeb Saleeby, writing in the early 1900s, was unimpressed with the exercise of Spanish power at this juncture. “Apparently the worthy cause of peace and Sulu welfare were completely overlooked,” he wrote, “Governor Arolas trampled on the treaty, assumed arbitrary and absolute authority, and treated noncompliance with his wishes as disloyalty and insurrection...The result of such coercion is hatred, and the effect of abuse is enmity.”<sup>19</sup> Unrest in the 1880s and 1890s partially arose from Spain’s installation of the unpopular Harun Ar-Rashid as Sultan of Sulu. This approach was abandoned in 1894, when the Spanish recognized the young Jamalul Kiram II as Sultan of the Sulu Archipelago. Kiram outlasted Spanish colonial rule, and was a fixture in the Muslim South throughout the American colonial period.

Elsewhere, the *arriviste* Datu Piang collaborated with Spain to supplant his mentor, the capricious and unpopular Datu Uto, in Maguindanao. Like Kiram, Piang outlasted the

---

<sup>18</sup> Tan, *Sulu Under American Military Rule*, 18-19.

<sup>19</sup> Saleeby, *History of Sulu*, 243-244. The Spanish wrote their own histories of Mindanao and Sulu, often emphasizing the violence and savagery of the inhabitants. For examples, see José Nieto Aguilar, *Mindanao – Su Historia y Geografía* (Madrid: Imprenta Del Cuerpo Administrativo Del Ejército, 1894). Many of the writers were Jesuit missionaries who accompanied military forces into the interior and were shocked by the resilience of Islamic resistance. The writings of the Jesuit Francisco Combés, originally published in 1667, were reprinted in 1897 as Christian Filipinos mobilized against the Spanish colonial state. In a new prologue, the civil servant and ‘Filipinologist’ Wenceslao Retana urged readers to heed the words of Combés. “If the dominance of Spain in Mindanao was [then] a legitimate aspiration, we must now regard it as an urgent need,” he wrote – Francisco Combés, *Historia de Mindanao y Jolo* (Madrid: n.p., 1897). In 1862, the colonial administrator Agustin Santayana wrestled with the history of Mindanao and the question of administering the region separately from the rest of the Philippines: Agustin Santayana, *Le Isla de Mindanao su Historia y su Estado Presente* (Madrid: Imprenta De Alhambra Y.Comp, 1862).

Spanish colonial presence and continued to exercise power during the American era.<sup>20</sup> Lanao remained problematic for the Spanish until the very end. Campaigns led by Governor General Valeriano Weyler, later infamous for his *reconcentración* policy in Cuba, made some inroads. In 1895 Governor General Ramon Blanco sent gunboats with mounted machine guns to attack Maranao fortifications around the lake. English engineers, using Chinese coolie labour, built a military road from Iligan to Marawi, at the northern end of Lake Lanao. Still, when the Spanish forfeited the Philippines in 1898 the Maranao remained almost entirely outside of their control.<sup>21</sup>

## The American Colonial Period

Spain ceded the Philippines to the United States after their defeat in the Spanish-American War, formally signing over the territories in December 1898 at the Treaty of Paris. America's colonial inheritance included sovereignty over the Sulu Archipelago and Mindanao, only small sections of which were under Spanish control at the time of transfer. Left behind were public works that did not extend far past the fortified coastal towns, a Spanish educational system partially present among Christian populations but almost entirely absent in Muslim areas, fragmented indigenous power structures (especially in Lanao and Sulu), and a legacy of incursion and warfare. This project focuses on manifestations of American colonial culture in the Southern Philippines in the period between the Spanish-American War and the Japanese invasion of Mindanao four and a half decades later. The remainder of this brief narrative is intended to compliment the thematically structured chapters of this text, situating their cultural insights alongside linear military and political histories.

Preoccupied with matters in Luzon and the Visayas, the Americans did not relieve the Spanish garrisons in Mindanao and Sulu until the spring of 1899, nearly a year after their arrival in the Philippines. The rapid surrender of the Spanish gave way to fighting against the forces of the Filipino nationalist movement, which by 1900 had devolved into guerilla warfare throughout the northern and central islands of the archipelago. U.S. military

---

<sup>20</sup> Jeremy Beckett, "The Datus of the Rio Grande de Cotabato Under Colonial Rule," *Asian Studies* 5 (1977): 55.

<sup>21</sup> A.B. Feuer, *America at War: The Philippines, 1898-1913* (Westport: Praeger Publishers, 2002), 214.

commanders feared hostilities with the Muslims of the South could further complicate their position, causing a depletion of manpower and resources. As such, they oriented their policies towards détente with Muslim leaders in Mindanao and Sulu, with the understanding that any necessary pacification would take place once the troubles ceased in the North. In July 1899, Eighth Army Corps commander (soon after, military governor of the islands) Elwell S. Otis sent Brigadier General John Bates to Sulu and tasked him with negotiating a written agreement between the Sultan of Sulu and the United States government.<sup>22</sup>

The resulting treaty – named after Bates – became the basis for American-Tausūg cooperation during the next five years. While modeling the agreement, Bates looked back to Spanish agreements with the Sultanate as well as British methods for managing native elites and suppressing piracy in Malaya.<sup>23</sup> In Cotabato, the Americans found a native ally in Datu Piang, the Maguindanao-Chinese ruler who replaced Datu Uto a decade prior with the aid of the Spanish. Understanding that the colonial order of things had shifted, Piang quickly

---

<sup>22</sup> Memo from Elwell Otis to John Bates, 3 July 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>23</sup> Bates' reflections on establishing colonial rule are worth quoting at length here: "The English remedy for this state of things has been a subsidy to the Chiefs and their councils and their retention in authority under the supervision of a resident British magistrate, all fines going into the Colonial Treasury. This policy was supplemented by the establishment of industrial schools. The first step in Jolo should be the assurance to the Sultan of an income sufficient to support his prestige as the head of an ancient line and a descendent of the Prophet. This, together with duties on imports landed at his capital, (Miambung) and tribute from other islands and tithes on shells and pearls, etc., might be sufficient. It is said that the Sultan's income is notoriously deficient and his desire for American protection is to attract planters to the islands, sell lands and increase internal trade and imports. The presence of a few American white planters might be desirable but any wholesale alienation of lands would not be beneficial to the people. The Sultan holds the land as trustee for the people and any free subject can enclose any unoccupied patch, and as long as he can cultivate it can claim it as his own. Cultivation, however, is limited to raising a bare subsistence. Slavery of every degree known to feudal service exists and the free man does work not for wages either in agriculture or in the fisheries. They are averse to taking wages and placing themselves on a level with the slaves. They might be made the landed proprietors. Slavery might be considered and its remedy found in the free birth of all children born after a certain date. The Sultan and his Dattos can be approached by arguments showing that increased revenues will follow industry and improvements and if they are promised a good share of the increased revenue would be amenable to such influences. Under the protection and assistance which the United States will give to them, they might permit representatives of the United States Government to assist them to build up revenue and harbor regulations which would tend greatly to increase their trade with all the world. By right and judicious conduct on the part of the United States Government it might be possible to build up these islands into flourishing and self-supporting communities, beneficial to the United States and doubly beneficial to the inhabitants of the islands. In so doing the religion and customs of the inhabitants must not be interfered with. A treaty formulated on these lines would undoubtedly maintain peace." – Memorandum II – Concerning the Political History of the Sultanate Since the 1840s, 1899, Box 2, Folder 9. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.



pledged his support to the U.S. military authorities.<sup>24</sup> Around Zamboanga, the Americans acquired the support of the Samal Moro leader Datu Mandi. Born to poor parents, Mandi fashioned an unusual career as an interpreter of dialects for the Spanish on the island of Bongao. In 1877, he travelled to the Amsterdam Exposition as a colonial subject of Spain and was awarded a gold medal for his participation there. He received numerous other recognitions of merit from the Spanish for his work in suppressing *juramentado* attacks, participating in vaccination campaigns, and doing relief work in the wake of the 1897 earthquake. Remaining neutral in the conflict between Filipino nationalists and the Spanish, Mandi recognized the American arrival in 1899 as an opportunity. Mandi's elevated status among his people was partially the result of his facility with languages and ability to work effectively with foreign occupiers. He quickly became a favourite of the Americans and the Zamboanga Peninsula under Mandi's leadership proved one of the least problematic areas to control.<sup>25</sup>

In contrast to what came later, the military authorities in these first years generally permitted local leaders to continue governing daily affairs. This hands-off approach was an expedient one, as the army had little interest in fighting an Islamic uprising in the South as they tried to quell nationalist guerillas in the North. Nevertheless, prevalent social and economic practices among the Muslims clashed with the transformative visions of military administrators. Military governors William A. Kobbé and George W. Davis objected to the persistence of the slave trade, polygamy, and local legal traditions that appeared draconian to them. Repeated intelligence-gathering and surveying missions by the army caused unrest, and in 1901 on Jolo there were a series of running battles between Tausūg leader Panglima Hassan and the Americans.<sup>26</sup>

---

<sup>24</sup> Abinales, "From *Orang Besar* to Colonial Big Man," 200-210. While Americans eventually viewed Piang as one of their most reliable allies, early opinions varied. For example, General George Davis thought his execution of the Spanish-installed *presidente* was an act of barbarity. See George W. Davis, *Annual Report of Major General George W. Davis, United States Army, Commanding Division of the Philippines, from October 1, 1902 to July 26, 1903* (Manila: n.p., 1903), 124-126.

<sup>25</sup> Biographical Note from Datu Mandi to William Kobbé, 10 September 1900, Box 3, Folder 12. William A. Kobbé Papers, 1840-1931, USAHEC.

<sup>26</sup> Moshe Yegar, *Between Integration and Secession: The Muslim Communities of the Southern Philippines, Southern Thailand, and Western Burma / Myanmar* (Oxford: Lexington Books, 2002), 214. For a narrative of

Major military operations occurred around Lake Lanao in 1902 and 1903. Led by Captain John Pershing, later Governor of the Moro Province, these punitive expeditions were designed to bring the Maranao datus under colonial control. The Battle of Bayan, fought in May 1902, marked the first of many violent encounters between American military forces and resistant Muslim populations. Characterized by an asymmetry of firepower and resources, the clashes ended predictably. After Bayan, Adna R. Chaffee, military governor of the Philippines, reported to Washington that “the trenches [were] lined with Moro dead from rifle fire” and that it was “impossible to state [the] number [of] Moros killed.” Violent action, Chaffee stated, was the “only kind of lesson these wild Moros seem to be able to profit by.”<sup>27</sup> Pershing and his men spent the next year stationed at Camp Vicars, a remote outpost on the southern tip of Lake Lanao, meeting with Maranao dignitaries and insisting on their submission. Holdouts at Bacolod, Maciu, and Taraka shared Bayan’s fate. Pershing’s men also surveyed the land around Lanao and conducted a census. The conquest of the Maranaos represented the last major hurdle in the consolidation of U.S. military rule in the Muslim South. While resistance continued, there were no longer any major areas completely outside of colonial control.<sup>28</sup>

Direct rule came with the establishment of the Moro Province on 1 June 1903. Spurred on by the Philippine Bill of 1902 and Filipino nationalist calls to integrate the South into the nation, military officials reoriented themselves towards long-term tutelage and state-building projects aimed at refashioning the cultural fabric of Muslim regions.<sup>29</sup> In September 1903, the government was reorganized into districts, each with its own governor (generally an

---

the final years of Spanish rule and early years of the American period in Mindanao and Sulu, see David Prescott Barrows, *A Decade of American Government in the Philippines, 1903-1913* (New York: World Book Co., 1914), 54-59.

<sup>27</sup> Cable from Adna Chaffee to Henry Corbin, 4 May 1902, Box 11. Hugh A. Drum Papers, 1898-1951, USAHEC.

<sup>28</sup> Interrogations and Conversations with Moros, 1902, Box 319. John J. Pershing Papers, 1882-1971. Manuscript Division, Library of Congress, Washington, D.C. (Henceforth referenced as LOC-MD); “Pershing Will Count the Moros He Has Left,” *Manila Times*, 14 February 1903.

<sup>29</sup> Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 320.

American military officer) and district board. The system was further refined in 1904, when districts were separated into ‘municipalities’ and ‘tribal wards.’ Within the latter, ‘uncivilized’ groups of peoples (shorthand for Moros and Lumads) were supervised by a local leader chosen by the district governor and given limited legal powers. This method, officials believed, would smoothly transition datus and their subjects into modern structures of governance.<sup>30</sup>

The districts themselves were under the overall supervision of the Legislative Council of the Moro Province, headed by Governor Leonard Wood. A Harvard-trained physician, Wood cultivated friendships with powerful figures in the years prior to the Spanish-American War. He rose to prominence through his regimental command duties in the 1<sup>st</sup> Volunteer Cavalry Regiment – more famously known as Theodore Roosevelt’s Rough Riders. Wood served as Military Governor of Cuba until 1902, at which point he transferred to the Philippines. Joining him on the council were others who will become familiar later in this narrative, including Najeeb Saleeby and Frank McCoy. As provincial head, Wood massively expanded government involvement in Muslim life. Dismissive of local custom – and Islam as a whole – the governor implemented a series of legislative acts aimed at transforming the region into a model colonial state. Drawing from information they had gathered while visiting European colonies, Wood and his team created systems of taxation, made public education mandatory, devised forced labour schemes, planned ambitious public works projects, and attempted to reorient Muslims towards Western legal models.<sup>31</sup>

The abrogation of the Bates Treaty in 1904 and the invasiveness of new government initiatives, in particular the cedula poll tax, caused unrest among Moro populations. Violent confrontations occurred between American forces and local leaders unwilling to submit to the

---

<sup>30</sup> Gowing explains the structure government in the Moro Province in greater detail, providing illustrative charts. See *Ibid.*, 112-117.

<sup>31</sup> A comprehensive collection of governmental legislation during Wood’s tenure can be found in the folder “Legislative Acts of the Moro Province, 1903-1906,” Box 216, Leonard Wood Papers, 1825-1942, LOC-MD. On transcolonial connections see Chapter Eight, or see Donna J. Amoroso, “Inheriting the ‘Moro Problem’: Muslim Authority and Colonial Rule in British Malaya and the Philippines,” in *The American Colonial State in the Philippines: Global Perspectives*, ed. Julian Go and Anne L. Foster (Durham: Duke University Press, 2003), 118-119.

new realities imposed upon them. In Cotabato, the Maguindanao royal Datu Ali revolted and played hit-and-run with the Americans for months in the tall grass and dense forest of Southwestern Mindanao. American newspapers followed the story, describing Ali as being “cunning as an Indian” and describing his men as “merciless, implacable, and in deadly earnest.”<sup>32</sup> An expedition led by Frank McCoy, Wood’s aide, killed Ali in October 1905. On Jolo, disturbances to colonial order occurred frequently and were suppressed ruthlessly. District Governor Hugh Scott led men against Panglima Hassan in late 1903, destroying *cottas* and settlements in the area around Lake Siet. Hassan was eventually cornered and killed in March 1904 near Bud Bagsak.<sup>33</sup> The violence of the Moro Province’s early years peaked at Bud Dajo, an extinct volcano southeast of Jolo town. Here, hundreds of Tausūg peasants unhappy with taxation and other colonial impositions fortified themselves and prepared for confrontation with the Americans. The resulting battle left between seven hundred and nine hundred Muslim men, women, and children dead.<sup>34</sup>

Leonard Wood left the Moro Province in 1906 and was replaced by Brigadier General Tasker Bliss, a more conciliatory figure. The Bliss years were marked by a variety of initiatives aimed at bringing Muslims into the colonial fold. Authorities toyed with the idea of using preexisting educational structures to meet their goals, and placed greater emphasis on commerce as a civilizing agent. This coincided with a push to settle Mindanao and develop its resources. Districts like Cotabato and Davao advertised themselves in the Northern Philippines and elsewhere as areas of great abundance, where the enterprising capitalist could make his fortune. In Davao and the Zamboanga Peninsula, a class of American planters began growing *abaca* and other products, a development viewed favourably by the authorities.<sup>35</sup> Bliss’ diplomatic approach, alongside battle exhaustion from the Wood years, caused a decrease in violence, although some feared Muslim depredations would go

---

<sup>32</sup> “Writ for Man’s Head,” *Washington Post*, 17 September 1905, E1.

<sup>33</sup> Letter from Frank McCoy to his Mother, 5 December 1903, Box 15, Folder 4. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, 1912-1933, LOC-MD.

<sup>34</sup> The role of violence in the colonial state is discussed in Chapter Five. For a prejudiced but lengthy description of the events at Dajo, see John R. White, *Bullets and Bolos: Fifteen Years in the Philippine Islands* (New York and London: The Century Co., 1928), 299-313.

<sup>35</sup> Abinales, *Making Mindanao*, 69-77.

unpunished.<sup>36</sup> Both Leonard Wood and W. Cameron Forbes, the Governor General of the Philippines from 1909 to 1913, were critical of Bliss' performance, with Forbes calling him a "misfit."<sup>37</sup>

The final head of the Moro Province was John Pershing, who, after a meteoric rise through the ranks, had gone from captain to brigadier general. His tenure lasted from November 1909 until the transition to civilian rule in December 1913. Pershing hired more civilian officials, increased public works spending, and pushed the expansion of public schooling in Mindanao and Sulu. Beginning in 1911, Pershing oversaw a contentious disarmament campaign. Residents were required to turn in unlicensed firearms to the authorities by December of that year, and were prohibited from publicly carrying a *barong* or *kris*. Firearms licenses being notoriously difficult to obtain, in effect this meant that nearly all Moros in possession of guns had to turn them over.<sup>38</sup> Pershing believed disarmament was one of the final roadblocks to pacifying the Southern Philippines. "The long list of murders and assassinations committed by armed Moros since the establishment of provincial government [has] brought discredit upon the Province," he wrote in 1913, "The possession of arms by these wanton villains [has] nullified the most earnest efforts towards civil rule, and...left the peaceably inclined inhabitants at their mercy."<sup>39</sup>

The climax of the disarmament campaign occurred in June 1913 at Bud Bagsak on Jolo, where a group of defiant Tausūg Moros retreated after opposing the new laws. Ten kilometers from Bud Dajo, Bagsak was a natural fortification for Tausūg peasants resisting colonial rule. The group's leader, Datu Amil, refused surrender and during a four-day battle

---

<sup>36</sup> "Moro Murderers Free by Official Laxity," *Washington Post*, 19 September 1906, 3.

<sup>37</sup> Diary of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 3, 7 July 1909. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, 1904-1946, LOC-MD.

<sup>38</sup> Permits were occasionally given to white planters working in remote areas. Generally, if a native possessed a firearm it meant he was a member of the Philippine Constabulary or Scouts. I have yet to encounter a case where a Muslim private citizen was licensed to carry a gun, although the possibility exists that a very limited number of Westernized elites were afforded this privilege.

<sup>39</sup> John J. Pershing, *The Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province, for the Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1913* (Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Co., 1913), 65. Samuel Tan provides a long list of violent encounters between Muslims and Moro Province authorities. See Tan, *The Filipino Muslim Armed Struggle*, 21-27.

around five hundred Moros were killed.<sup>40</sup> With major resistance movements destroyed and disarmament completed, Pershing recommended to Major General J. Franklin Bell, military commander of the Philippines, that army rule conclude in Mindanao and Sulu. Cotabato was under the firm rule of Datu Piang and had had no serious disturbances since Datu Ali's death; Lanao was further pacified in a series of campaigns between 1908 and 1912; the Zamboanga Peninsula experienced only the occasional millenarian uprising amongst the Lumad population; and Pershing's actions on Jolo had ended the threat there. In addition, Pershing told Bell, "schools have been established; villages have been located and settled hitherto nomadic families; roads, bridges, and wharves have been built; markets and trading stations opened up; and a general advancement has been made that surpasses in many respects the boasted progress of more civilized provinces."<sup>41</sup>

In Manila, the recently appointed Governor General Francis Burton Harrison was receptive to Pershing and Bell's recommendations and during his first months as head of the Philippines he pushed through the suggested changes. Harrison was an appointee of the new Wilson Administration – the first time the Democratic Party had secured the presidency since Grover Cleveland in the 1890s. Anticipating eventual independence, Harrison shared the Democrat inclination to scale-down the American presence in the Philippines. After an inspection tour of the South in 1913, he wrote to Secretary of War Lindley Garrison that "wonderful progress" had been made there and that he agreed with Pershing's assessment that American troops could be replaced with Philippine Constabulary companies.<sup>42</sup> On December 15<sup>th</sup> that year, Frank W. Carpenter replaced John Pershing as governor. In the Philippines since America's arrival, Carpenter had served in a variety of governmental roles culminating in a posting as Executive Secretary of the Insular Bureau. Admired by Republicans and

---

<sup>40</sup> Vic Hurley, *The Swish of the Kris*, 121-123.

<sup>41</sup> Memorandum from John Pershing to J. Franklin Bell, 1 November 1913, Box 41. Burton Norvell Harrison Family Papers, 1812-1926, LOC-MD. (Collection henceforth referenced as BNHF Papers)

<sup>42</sup> Memorandum from Francis Burton Harrison to Lindley Garrison, 25 November 1913, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD. The Philippine Constabulary were a paramilitary police force that quelled unrest in the countryside. In the Southern Philippines during the military era, they sometimes had a tempestuous relationship with U.S. Army authorities. An account of their important role in the American Philippines is found in McCoy, *Policing America's Empire*, 59-230.

Democrats alike, he was, according to Bell, “by long odds better qualified than anyone else...to assume the important obligations of Governor of the Moro Province.”<sup>43</sup>

The Moro Province officially became the Department of Mindanao and Sulu on 23 July 1914. Although Carpenter had been in office for over half a year, the name change and subsequent reorganization marked the terminal point of military rule in the Southern Philippines. Old districts like Cotabato, Zamboanga, and Lanao became provinces, and Act. No. 2408 of the Philippine Commission, put into effect on 1 September 1914, brought with it extensive administrative reform. The Organic Act, as it was referred to, aimed to move Mindanao and Sulu towards rapid integration into the rest of the Philippines. Provincial boards were restructured, and limited democratic structures implemented. By 1915, Christian-majority provinces were electing their provincial board members through popular vote, although in Muslim regions these appointments were made through the votes of political elites only. The municipal district replaced the tribal ward system, and in 1915 there were twenty-one municipalities and 178 municipal districts across Mindanao and Sulu. Finally, state bureaucracies merged with Insular Government departments in Manila. Tax collection, the court system, prisons, public works, and education were all increasingly integrated into the national center between 1914 and 1920. Created as a transitional entity, the Department of Mindanao and Sulu was designed to synchronize the new provinces with the rest of the country. In conception and practice, the Department was a nation-building exercise.<sup>44</sup>

The reordering of Mindanao and Sulu coincided with the larger process of ‘Filipinization.’ Governor General Harrison and his administration undertook the gigantic task of moving Americans out of government bureaus and replacing them with Christian Filipinos. Aiding the process was the First World War, which increased prospects in the private sector, and voluntary retirement packages offered by the government. There remained, however, a strong contingent in Washington and Manila who felt that the Americans who helped build up the colonial Philippines were being treated unfairly, and that the Filipinos

---

<sup>43</sup> Letter from J. Franklin Bell to Francis Burton Harrison, 20 November 1913, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>44</sup> For a more comprehensive breakdown of state authority in the Department of Mindanao and Sulu, see Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 260-269.

themselves were unfit for leadership. The Jones Law of 1916, which created a fully elected Filipino legislature, further entrenched the changes. By the end of Harrison's tenure in 1921, Filipinos directed nearly all the government bureaus, although there were some notable exceptions where Americans remained in charge.<sup>45</sup>

In the South, Filipinization meant an influx of Christian Filipinos in government positions, even in predominantly Muslim areas. Inevitably, there was tension. Many Moros detested the Filipinos, viewing them as martially incapable yet also fearing the imposition of a monolithic national culture that would dissolve existing bonds of ethnic and religious kinship in their communities. Harrison and Carpenter, supporters of the Filipinos, described the period as one of increasing "good-will and confidence" between Christians and Muslims. However, Moro petitions disseminated in the 1920s and 1930s pleading with the Americans not to be incorporated into an independent Philippines suggest more complex realities.<sup>46</sup> Nationalist Filipino politicians like Sergio Osmeña attempted to frame the "separation and differences" between Christians and non-Christians as political. The problem, he wrote, was that "the non-Christian peoples think that the Christians are allied with the foreign dominators and anxious to pervert them by a change of religious beliefs."<sup>47</sup> Willful or not, this was a misreading of Muslim anxieties about cultural subsumption in an independent Philippines.

The Carpenter years also marked the end of the Sultanate of Sulu as an acknowledged political entity. In March 1915, Carpenter negotiated an updated treaty with Sultan Jamalul Kiram II wherein the ruler forfeited his "pretensions of sovereignty." Kiram was recognized as the "titular spiritual head of the Mohammedan Church in the Sulu Archipelago," a designation that granted him the comparably limited powers of an ecclesiastical authority in

---

<sup>45</sup> Francis Burton Harrison, *The Corner-Stone of Philippine Independence: A Narrative of Seven Years* (New York: The Century Co., 1922), 75-91; Peter Gowing, "Mandate in Moroland: The American Government of Muslim Filipinos, 1899-1920" (PhD diss., Syracuse University, 1968), 693-704. On economic development during this period, see Douglas Thompson Kellie Hartley, "American Participation in the Economic Development of Mindanao and Sulu, 1899-1930" (PhD diss., James Cook University of North Queensland, 1983).

<sup>46</sup> Harrison, *Corner-Stone of Philippine Independence*, 121.

<sup>47</sup> Memorandum from Sergio Osmeña of the Nationalist Party, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, 1907-1957. The Division of Rare and Manuscript Collections. Cornell University Library, Ithaca, New York. (Henceforth referenced as DRMC)



the United States. In the Carpenter Treaty, the Sultan acknowledged the sovereignty of the United States “without reservation or limitation whatsoever” and gave up any right to adjudicate legal matters.<sup>48</sup> Carpenter’s administration was also instrumental in continuing the development work begun by the military authorities, increasing commercial trade links between the Southern Philippines and Southeast Asia, and expanding lumber and mining operations. The teaching staff of the region increased sevenfold between 1913 and 1919, and many new hospitals and dispensaries opened.<sup>49</sup> Notably, authorities began aggressively promoting the South as a settler zone and established subsidized agricultural colonies to incentivize potential homesteaders from the populous north. “Mindanao-Sulu no longer is a frontier attractive only to the adventurous, but has now progressed to a state warranting the favorable attention of the capitalist and the home seeker,” Carpenter proclaimed in his 1916 annual report.<sup>50</sup>

The Jones Law reconstituted the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes in 1916 to “continue the work for advancement and liberty in favor of the regions inhabited by non-Christian Filipinos and foster by all adequate means and in a systematical, rapid, and complete manner the moral, material, economic, social and political development of those regions.”<sup>51</sup> Frank Carpenter was appointed as bureau chief in 1918 and continued in the position until his retirement from government service in 1920. His deputy, the jurist and politician Teopisto Guingona, was acting head of the Department of Mindanao and Sulu during these years and replaced Carpenter after his departure. The Department itself was abolished on 5 February 1920, with ultimate authority over non-Christian areas handed to the Bureau.

The road to Philippine independence was disrupted by American domestic politics. In March 1921, newly elected President Warren G. Harding, a Republican, sent a group led by

---

<sup>48</sup> Memorandum Agreement Between the Governor General of the Philippine Islands and the Sultan of Sulu, 22 March 1915, Box 1. Frank W. Carpenter Papers, 1884-1938, LOC-MD.

<sup>49</sup> Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 289-308.

<sup>50</sup> Carpenter quoted in Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 291; Yegar, *Between Integration and Secession*, 222-224.

<sup>51</sup> “Act Making Certain Provisions Relating to the Operation of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes,” 20 February 1917, Box 1. Frank Carpenter Papers, LOC-MD. The Bureau was a creation of the Philippine Commission and was led by the anthropologist David Prescott Barrows in the early 1900s.

Leonard Wood and W. Cameron Forbes on a fact-finding mission to assess the effects of Filipinization on the colonial state. Both Wood and Forbes were acknowledged Anglo-Saxon supremacists who questioned the Filipino capacity for self-government. In the report of the Wood-Forbes Mission, the authors lambasted transfers of power during the Harrison years. The document was a compendious accounting of how the colonial government had failed since 1913 and a sustained critique of both Democratic appointees and the Filipino political class. Wood and Forbes concluded by stating that they were “convinced that it would be a betrayal of the Philippine people, a misfortune to the American people, a distinct step backward in the path of progress, and a discreditable neglect of our national duty were we to withdraw from the islands and terminate our relationship there without giving the Filipinos the best chance possible to have an orderly and permanently stable government.”<sup>52</sup> In other words, Filipinization needed slowing. Harding and his cabinet agreed with the conclusions, and subsequently appointed Wood as the Governor General of the Philippines.

Leonard Wood’s return to the Philippines lasted from October 1921 until his death in 1927. During this time, he was deeply unpopular with pro-independence Filipino politicians who found his crusading outlook and paternalistic attitude jarring after the comparatively amiable relations of the Harrison period.<sup>53</sup> In the Muslim South, communities continued to resist education and taxation schemes. Lanao and Cotabato witnessed an ongoing series of

---

<sup>52</sup> Report of the Special Mission on Investigation to the Philippine Islands, 8 October 1921, Box 1. Dean C. Worcester Papers, 1887-1925, BHL.

<sup>53</sup> This is not an understatement. Take for example, this quote from Wood during his time as Governor General: “We cannot think of this Philippine question without thinking of civilization as a whole. And civilization, to us, is Christian civilization. We are a stone, if not the keystone, of the arch of Christian civilization in the Pacific. Filipinos, as to all but a tenth of the population, are Christians. Christianity’s humanizing influence shows in their faces and is recorded in their steady moral advance. Paganism and non-Christianity can be broken down only by the impact of spiritual and cultural influences, and these will be projected from the base of a highly-developed Christian Philippines as they cannot be projected from the distant bases of America and Europe. America in the Philippines, in other words, insures the effective deployment of Christianity for the regeneration of the world. These are solemn obligations and great opportunities. We can be false to them only at the cost of treason to that faith which we believe to be essential to the highest human development. Let us go out of the Philippines only when we can leave the force of that faith in strong hands. If we and those who believe as we believe can Christianize the world, in the full psychic and ethical sense of that phrase, we shall rid it of injustice, of human degradation, of social cleavage and conflict, and of international slaughter. I attach immense importance to developing the Philippines as Christianity’s great peaceful outpost in the Pacific.” From “Conversation with Major-General Leonard Wood, Governor-General of the Philippine Islands,” Box 217, Folder 1. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

disturbances over compulsory public schooling in 1923. Constabulary forces repeatedly killed scores of Maranao and Maguindanao holdouts in violent encounters. In the late 1920s, more than twenty schools in Lanao were burned to the ground in protest, and public education in the province ceased almost entirely.<sup>54</sup> In the Sulu Archipelago there were similar clashes. One occurring on the small island of Pata in late 1920 left more than thirty Tausūg dead.<sup>55</sup> In 1927, a local leader on Jolo named Datu Tahil rebelled against taxation carried out by Governor Carl Moore.<sup>56</sup> Outlaw bands, especially in Lanao, were a reoccurring issue for the Constabulary.

For their part, the Muslim political elite courted both pro- and anti-independence supporters. Westernized leaders like Gulamu Rasul, Hadji Butu, and Arolas Tulawie worked inside government to agitate for Muslim rights, and advocated for the American presence as a solution to the problems facing the Southern Philippines. In the 1920s and 1930s, Moros sent numerous petitions to American political figures in Manila and Washington imploring intervention against political domination by the Christian Filipinos. Prominent figures in Lanao, Sulu, and Cotabato all warned of strife should the Americans leave, playing into the “myth of Muslim ungovernability.”<sup>57</sup> In this dynamic, American colonial authority was considered less objectionable than Filipino colonial authority. A 1934 petition to Governor General Frank Murphy from a group of datos in Lanao read: “We would request you to separate Mindanao and Sulu from the Independent Philippines because we do not want to leave sway from the rule of the Americans until we become educated.”<sup>58</sup> Another group of datos, gathering in Dansalan in 1935, wrote directly to President Franklin D. Roosevelt, stating that they feared for the future of Islam in the Philippines from ever-increasing Christian Filipino cultural hegemony. They too requested partition.<sup>59</sup> The obsequiousness of

---

<sup>54</sup> Yegar, *Between Integration and Secession*, 227.

<sup>55</sup> See Chapter Five.

<sup>56</sup> Yegar, *Between Integration and Secession*, 227.

<sup>57</sup> Abinales, *Making Mindanao*, 56.

<sup>58</sup> Petition to Frank Murphy from Lanao Datus, 13 July 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. Joseph Ralston Hayden Papers, 1899-1945, BHL. (Collection henceforth referenced as J.R. Hayden Papers)

<sup>59</sup> Yegar, *Between Integration and Secession*, 229.

this tactic played into the paternal concerns of Americans who believed the Moros needed continued foreign patronage to thrive. Patricio Abinales observes that the actions of Muslim elites during this uncertain period were rarely consistent. Hadji Butu and Datu Piang, for example, played both sides of the independence debate. These vagaries of allegiance, writes Abinales, “were less the actions of slick operators or small-time conspirators than of a local elite unsure of its fate.”<sup>60</sup>

A bill tabled in the United States Senate by Representative Robert Bacon in 1926 suggested that the Philippines be partitioned and the South governed separately under direct American rule. While Leonard Wood and others advocated for it, the bill failed and after Wood’s death the notion was cast aside as the colonial state moved inexorably towards an independent Philippines that included Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>61</sup> The penultimate step in this direction was the Tydings-McDuffie Act of 1934, which set the terms for independence. A transitional commonwealth period of ten years began with the drafting of a national constitution and the election of the country’s first president, Manuel Quezon, in 1935.<sup>62</sup> In the South, a younger generation of Muslim leaders trained in the schools and institutions of the colonial state reconciled themselves to the realities of Filipinization and began identifying as ‘Muslim Filipinos.’ They swore fealty to the Philippine state yet retained their religious identity as a means of promoting themselves as a specific interest group within a diffuse political landscape.<sup>63</sup>

A small but influential number of Americans remained in Mindanao and Sulu after 1935. In 1936, a parliamentary committee seeking the normalization of Muslim regions within the nation-state abolished the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes. Manuel Quezon replaced the Bureau with a special commissioner for Mindanao and Sulu. That same year, the

---

<sup>60</sup> Abinales, *Making Mindanao*, 58.

<sup>61</sup> Howard T. Fry, “The Bacon Bill of 1926: New Light on an Exercise in Divide-and-Rule,” *Philippine Studies* 26.3 (1978): 257-273.

<sup>62</sup> Paul Kratoska and Ben Batson, “Nationalism and Modernist Reform,” in *The Cambridge History of Southeast Asia, Volume II – The Nineteenth and Twentieth Centuries*, ed. Nicholas Tarling (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992), 264.

<sup>63</sup> Abinales, *Making Mindanao*, 62-63.

death of Sultan Jamalul Kiram II in Sulu created an opportunity for the government to end all recognition of customary titles in the South. Thus, “the ranks of sultan and dato were cancelled according to the principle that all Filipinos were equal before the law and in their treatment by government agencies.”<sup>64</sup> Christian settlers, enticed by state promotion of Mindanao as a fertile utopia, increasingly moved south, changing the demography of the region. The government responded enthusiastically, beginning large infrastructural projects. Trans-provincial highways, hydroelectric dams, airfields, and rail lines became physical manifestations of the new connectivity between north and south.<sup>65</sup> These developments, eagerly covered by the Manila press, masked lingering conflicts. Lanao remained a hotbed of resentment and when the Constabulary proved ineffective in quelling resistance, the Philippine Army was brought in. This occurred repeatedly throughout the 1930s, with Moro *cottas* subjected to aerial bombing, artillery barrage, and even the use of chemical weapons.<sup>66</sup> The Japanese invasion of the Philippines in late 1941 temporarily halted the tense integration process, forcing Christian Filipinos and Muslims alike to decide how to negotiate the rule of yet another colonial power.

---

<sup>64</sup> Yegar, *Between Integration and Secession*, 231.

<sup>65</sup> On settlement and infrastructure, see Chapter Three.

<sup>66</sup> H.S. Ruth, “Chemical Warfare Against a Semi-Civilized Enemy with Particular Reference to Its Use Against the Moros.” *Chemical Warfare* 16 (1930): 12-13.

## Chapter Two / **Imagining the Moro**

### *Ethnographic and Geographic Fantasies on the Colonial Frontier*

A sense of mission imbued the speeches and writings of American colonials in the Southern Philippines. “Let not the future historian say that the American nation has travelled half-way around the earth in order to degrade and debase a people instead of exalting it,” proclaimed Tasker Bliss, Governor of the Moro Province, at the 1907 Zamboanga Fair. He explained to the assembled crowd that Mindanao and Sulu could only be transformed “under the guiding hand of a nation strong enough and just and wise enough to now impose upon all what in the remote future an intelligent majority of all will impose of its own free will.” To the Americans and Europeans present, he urged that they “always remember that you are in the position of exemplars and mentors of the people among whom you live. What you say and do will be considered by them as more or less authoritative, and you thus have in your hands an immense power for good and evil.”<sup>1</sup> The people Bliss spoke of mentoring were Muslims and Lumads, and it was they who a variety of American actors described – sometimes for an audience, as in newspaper reports or published travelogues, and other times privately, in letters or journal entries. Such descriptions, categorizations, and fantasies comprise the backbone of this chapter.

There is a large body of work on the connections between fantasy and practical knowledge in the construction of colonial regimes. Famously, Edward Said demonstrated that occidental ethnographic knowledge production was beholden to a wide variety of sources – novels, travel diaries, poems, paintings – in its attempts to create composite sketches of the world’s peoples.<sup>2</sup> Susanne Zantop and George Steinmetz have illustrated how precolonial fantasies, with all of their concomitant desires, helped condition Germans for empire in the late nineteenth-century through everything from popular fiction to advertisements. Like the

---

<sup>1</sup> Speech at Zamboanga Fair, February 1907, Box 43, Folder 5. Tasker H. Bliss Collection, 1829-1956, USAHEC.

<sup>2</sup> Edward Said, *Orientalism* (London: Penguin Press, 1977), 50.

Germans, Americans also entered the colonial arena late and as such came “equipped with well-wrought images of the colonized cultures, images that were derived from earlier writers and artists.”<sup>3</sup> Writers have also examined how inscribing landscapes with unitary identities was a way for colonizer and colonized alike to make sense of unfamiliar and alienating environments.<sup>4</sup> Many of the Americans in Mindanao and Sulu were travelling abroad for the first time, and a creative ordering of the space and peoples they encountered was a simple method of explaining away the fearful and unknown.

Through the popular press, adventure novels, lecture tours, and other cultural products, Americans participated in a transcolonial economy of ideas even before they acquired colonial empire,<sup>5</sup> and were enthusiastic participants in “racial-cultural mappings and classifications” when they arrived in the Southern Philippines.<sup>6</sup> As we shall see, the majority of commentators on the peoples and landscapes of Mindanao and Sulu were hardly describing what they saw in a rigorous, empirical manner (although there were exceptions), but rather

---

<sup>3</sup> George Steinmetz, *The Devil's Handwriting: Precoloniality and the German Colonial State in Qingdao, Samoa, and Southwest Africa* (Chicago and London: University of Chicago Press, 2007), 25. The past two decades have seen a rich body of literature that links the ways in which perception and fantasy helped chart the development of colonial policy. Examples of this from a variety of colonial contexts can be found in Mark Bassin, *Imperial Visions: Nationalist Imagination and Geographic Expansion in the Russian Far East, 1840-1865* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999); Jeffrey Geiger, *Facing the Pacific: Polynesia and the U.S. Imperial Imagination* (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007); Christa Knellwolf, “The Exotic Frontier of the Imperial Imagination,” *Eighteenth-Century Life* 26.3 (2002): 10-30; Nancy L. Paxton, *Writing Under the Raj: Gender, Race, and Rape in the British Colonial Imagination, 1830-1947* (New Brunswick: Rutgers University Press, 1999); Edward Watts, *In this Remote Country: French Colonial Culture in the Anglo-American Imagination, 1780-1860* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2006); Aaron Worth, *Imperial Media: Colonial Networks and Information Technologies in the British Literary Imagination, 1857-1918* (Columbus: The Ohio State University Press, 2014); Susanne Zantop, *Colonial Fantasies: Conquest, Family, and Nation in Precolonial Germany, 1770-1870* (Durham: Duke University Press, 1997). The development of anti-colonial or anti-imperial imaginations among subject populations – namely, in the maintenance of alternative societal narratives – are another consideration. This study explores Moro responses to U.S. and Filipino colonialism in later chapters. For more on the anti-colonial imagination, see Benedict Anderson, *Under Three Flags: Anarchism and the Anti-Colonial Imagination* (New York: Verso, 2005); Fouad Makki, “Culture and Agency in a Colonial Public Sphere: Religion and the Anti-Colonial Imagination in 1940s Eritrea,” *Social History* 36.4 (2011): 418-442.

<sup>4</sup> Michel Gobat, “The Invention of Latin America: A Transnational History of Anti-Imperialism, Democracy, and Race,” *American Historical Review* 118.5 (2013): 1345-1348. See also: Sugata Bose, *A Hundred Horizons: The Indian Ocean in the Age of Global Empire* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2011), 1-36; Wang Hui, *The Politics of Imagining Asia* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2011), 10-63.

<sup>5</sup> For an exploration of how global culture entered into American domestic life through the marketplace during the Gilded Age and Progressive Era, see Hoganson, *Consumers' Imperium*, 1-56.

<sup>6</sup> Zantop, *Colonial Fantasies*, 15.

drew upon well-worn tropes about ‘uncivilized’ peoples in the United States and elsewhere. Perception met practice in the idea of transformation. Depending on the writer, savage peoples could either be civilized or else justifiably put to the sword; likewise, unoccupied or underutilized land was free to be developed according to Western standards. The result of this work in the world’s far-flung regions, according to evangelizers like Josiah Strong, would be a nation infused with greatness, and one ready to take a place of preeminent global leadership.<sup>7</sup>

‘Experts’ like the academic Dean Worcester were a bridge between the precolonial and the colonial for a fascinated American public. Worcester, trained as a zoologist at the University of Michigan, made two extended research trips to the Philippines, one in 1887-88 and the other from 1890 until 1893. While Worcester’s travels in the Philippines mainly focused on the zoological aspects of the archipelago, he became known as an expert on the peoples there.<sup>8</sup> With war looming in 1898, Worcester published newspaper articles attacking Spanish colonial rule in Asia, and describing unfair taxation, the destruction of property, and senseless warfare against the Moros.<sup>9</sup> The publishing of *The Philippine Islands and Their People* cemented his authoritative status, and the book was “reprinted four times between October 1898 and January 1899.”<sup>10</sup> An enthusiastic supporter of the American mission in the Pacific, the McKinley Administration considered Worcester invaluable as it established colonial government in the Philippines.

---

<sup>7</sup> Michael H. Hunt, *Ideology and U.S. Foreign Policy* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1987), 37.

<sup>8</sup> Mark Rice, *Dean Worcester’s Fantasy Islands: Photography, Film, and the Colonial Philippines* (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2014), 5. For a thorough account of Worcester’s time in the Philippines, see Rodney J. Sullivan, *Exemplar of Americanism: The Philippine Career of Dean C. Worcester* (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1991). Expressing domination through photography was commonplace in U.S. colonial possessions. See Lanny Thompson, *Imperial Archipelago: Representation and Rule in the Insular Territories Under U.S. Dominion after 1898* (Honolulu: University of Hawai’i Press, 2010).

<sup>9</sup> “Spain in the Philippines,” *New York Times*, 18 March 1898, 3. On Spanish corruption, see Dean Worcester, “Spain in the Philippine Islands,” *The Independent*, 14 April 1898, 5. Wrote Worcester in the piece, “If the enormous sum thus raised expended even in part in the improvement of the colony there might be some justification for its collection. While the laws in regard to its disposition are not entirely bad, in actual practice it for the most part finds its way into the pockets of the Spanish officials, an annual surplus amount to not more than eight or nine millions.”

<sup>10</sup> Rice, *Fantasy Islands*, 5-6.



While Worcester's work on the archipelago would assume a broader significance in the following years, his early observations on the Moros and other inhabitants of the Southern Philippines set the tone for American colonial visitors to the islands. Worcester worked in the tradition of the German ethnographer Ferdinand Blumentritt, who also attempted to map the various peoples of the Philippines in the late 1800s, and much of the zoologist's book was taken up with basic accounts of what he observed when he was travelling.<sup>11</sup> Yet he also had a flair for the dramatic in his writing, something evident in his descriptions of the Moros. In *The Philippine Islands*, Worcester often used his literary license to sensationalize stories for his audience, especially when they related to the history of Muslim-Spanish relations. The book described the "fanatical passions of the fierce Moro warriors," who attacked the Christian Filipinos in "hordes," carrying off women and having the men "butchered in cold blood." Worcester noted that the "special delight of the grim Moslem warriors was to capture the Spanish priests and friars toward whom they displayed the bitterest hatred."<sup>12</sup> Elsewhere in his account, the "typical" Moro was described as being "inordinately fond of bright colours" and "a very bad marksman" with firearms. Muslim cuisine was so repugnant to Worcester's party that he claimed, "never were stomachs or morals more severely tried."<sup>13</sup> The zoologist's blending of travel narrative, ethnographic description, and editorial commentary under the umbrella of dispassionate academic study would not dull with age, and after over a decade of government service in the Philippines he still spoke of the Moros in near-mythological terms. "I have known one of these indomitable fighters, with both legs broken and his body pierced repeatedly by rifle bullets, to drag himself forward by his hands,

---

<sup>11</sup> Ferdinand Blumentritt (1853-1913) was a Prague-born professor of ethnology at the University of Leitmeritz. He maintained a long correspondence with José Rizal and, despite never visiting the islands, published extensively on the ethnographic composition of Philippines. His classificatory schemes were taken up and modified by American officials like Worcester and David P. Barrows. For a brief summary of some of Blumentritt's work, including his views on the Moros, see Ferdinand Blumentritt, *The Philippines: A Summary Account of their Ethnographical, Historical and Political Conditions* (Chicago: Donohue Brothers, 1900). For biographical information on Blumentritt: Harry Sichrovsky, *Ferdinand Blumentritt: An Austrian Life for the Philippines* (Manila: National Historical Institute, 1987). For an analysis of Blumentritt and nineteenth-century racial science's role in the creation of Filipino national identity, see Aguilar Jr., "Tracing Origins," 605-37.

<sup>12</sup> Dean Worcester, *The Philippine Islands and their People* (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1898), 151-152.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., 156, 164.

holding his kriss between his teeth, in the hope of getting near enough to the enemy to strike one more blow for the Prophet,” Worcester wrote in 1913.<sup>14</sup>

At the same time as they were disparaging Spanish colonial rule as decadent and decayed, the American military personnel responsible for the occupation and pacification of the Southern Philippines also drew upon Spanish accounts of the Muslim character. General John Pershing’s personal papers include an untitled translation of a Spanish book that attempted to map the human and physical geography of the Southern Philippines, much as the Americans would during the four decades they were there. Spanish descriptions of the Moros as “rebels of the worst character” and possessors of a “ferocious barbarism” by Jesuit missionaries found their successors in the writings of the Americans who replaced them.<sup>15</sup> Pvt. Walter Cutter, a soldier and amateur reporter in the early years of the military occupation, kept with him a translation of the Jesuit priest Francisco X. Baranera’s *Compendio De La Historia de Filipinas*, which systematically described Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>16</sup> American writings on the Moros looked to Spanish colonial antecedents consciously and unconsciously, and, taking direction from men like Dean Worcester, mixed observation, praise, and moral condemnation freely in their attempts to understand the nation’s new wards.

The bedrock upon which colonial empire was legitimized in Mindanao and Sulu was a series of descriptions, comparisons, and imaginings about the Moros and the landscapes they inhabited. Almost all extant writings on the topic use the apparent barbarism of the natives or the untapped potential of the land (or both) as justification for control. Behind these concerns were potent imaginative linkages between the Muslims and the Native Americans, and U.S. colonials in Mindanao and Sulu debated the capacity of the Moros by drawing from previous national – and often personal – experiences on America’s frontier. For some, mistakes made with the Natives could be redeemed through work among the Moros. Others had bleaker outlooks, like that of Frederick Palmer, who thought “the Moro we can never educate to

---

<sup>14</sup> “Says Square Deal Will Win Moros,” *New York Times*, 26 December 1913, 7.

<sup>15</sup> Unmarked Spanish history of the Southern Philippines, Box 319. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>16</sup> Francisco X. Baranera and Alexander Laist, *Handbook of the Philippine Islands* (Manila: William Partier, 1890), 111-122. The translation of Baranera’s work derives from his earlier text *Compendio de La Historia de Filipinas* (Manila: Establecimiento Tipo-Litográfico de M. Perez, 1884).

work, any more than we did the American Indian.”<sup>17</sup> The land itself, especially the vast Mindanao interior, was envisioned as a frontier space and an area, according to the anthropologist Carl Eugen Guthe, of “romantic potentialities.”<sup>18</sup> The Americans self-identified as reluctant imperialists forced to assume the mantle of empire by the irresponsibility of the Spanish, and felt that their “practical tendency” and “keenness of intellect” could be used to raise benighted peoples to levels of civilization previously unknown in the European colonies.<sup>19</sup> Like all colonial powers, they saw in themselves an exceptional ability to understand and transform subject populations.

## Describing “The Moro”

When the missionary socialite Caroline Spencer arrived on Jolo in early 1914 she felt she was “entering into the realm of imaginative fiction.” Living amongst the “descendants of pirates and even pirates themselves,” Spencer saw the Moros as something out of a colonial adventure story. The danger of primitive racial exoticism comingled with the romance of the unknown and the perilous duty of the Anglo-Saxon Protestant to spread civilization.<sup>20</sup> Her reactions to the Moros encapsulated a range of American perceptions about them, which ran the gambit from roguishly picaresque to criminally and racially vile. Wherever imperial visitors fell on this spectrum, they tended to describe the Moros in literary terms and in sum, as one might lyrically describe the essential qualities of a particular breed of animal. Even sympathetic writers resorted to blanket reductions of the Moro ‘character’, an act in keeping with common manifestations of race-thinking.

First impressions were important and lasting. Many colonials arriving in Mindanao and Sulu were experiencing a foreign culture for the first time, and were awestruck. To process their impressions for audiences in the United States, they tended to blend pseudo-

---

<sup>17</sup> Frederick Palmer, “Americanizing the Southern Philippines,” *Collier’s Weekly*, 1 September 1900.

<sup>18</sup> Untitled Draft on Mindanao, Box 1. Carl Eugen Guthe Papers, 1919-1943, BHL.

<sup>19</sup> Henry O. Dwight, “Our Mohammedan Wards,” *The Forum*, March 1900, 16.

<sup>20</sup> The quote is pulled from Walter Cutter’s scrapbook, which features a poorly cut out newspaper article on Caroline Spencer sub-titled “Mrs. Lorillard Spencer Seeks to Become Missionary in Philippines.” The full title of the paper is obscured, Box 1. Walter L. Cutter Papers, 1898-1950, USAHEC.

anthropological observation with the sensationalism of the dime novel narrative. Pvt. Walter Cutter, serving with the 17<sup>th</sup> Infantry in Jolo in 1901-02, adopted a decidedly low view of the island's inhabitants after surveying the island. The Tausūg Moros were "religious fanatics, and it would be hard to find a more ignorant and filthy set of savages anywhere."<sup>21</sup> Cutter viewed them as "filthy in their habits and dress, and the odor of decaying fish and other refuse around their houses would put the average white man to instant flight."<sup>22</sup> Still, they were fearsome warriors who would "fight to the last gasp, secure in the belief that they will go straight to the arms of the Prophet." To Cutter, the Moros were "fanatics" of the same stripe as those who "composed the Mad Mullah's forces, and in the Soudan the gallant Gordon met his fate at their hands."<sup>23</sup> Using Charles Gordon's stand against the Sudanese Mahdi army at Khartoum, Cutter collapsed space and time to draw direct comparisons with a well-publicized imperial encounter. Facing the Moro at the fringes of empire was, in Cutter's estimation, in the grand tradition of the colonial army as a bulwark against savagery.

Similarly grandiose terms were used to describe settlements. The 6<sup>th</sup> Cavalry officer Charles Rhodes reminisced in his diaries about encountering the environs of Jolo for the first time in a style mimicking Western orientalist fiction:

JOLO, fabled in song and story with the glamour of romance and adventure! JOLO, where American soldiers momentarily courted death at the hands of crazed fanatics, and fired fruitless shots in mystic darkness at shadowy forms, consecrated on the KORAN and seeking the GATES OF PARADISE over the gory bodies of unbelievers. JOLO, where swaggering dattos, colorful in red fezzes and gold tinsel, rattled jeweled daggers in the face of the American governor, and where, betimes, innocent farmers, denied admission to the twice-guarded gates of the miniature walled-city, drew forth the bloody heads of hunted criminal outlaws as guarantees of good-faith and loyalty...But the 'STARS AND STRIPES' of American

---

<sup>21</sup> "Wearing the Khaki: Diary of a High Private," 1901-1902, Box 1. Walter Cutter Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., 210.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., 209.

authority were kept a-flying, and in the end that symbol of justice to all peoples, triumphed!<sup>24</sup>

The Moros, in Rhodes' telling, were templates of literary savagery, colourful yet exceedingly dangerous barbarians who served as excellent adversaries for those brave Americans risking their lives for liberty in the Southern Philippines. At points, Rhodes slipped into the non-corporeal in his descriptions of them. They were "shadowy forms" in the "mystic darkness," vague and unknowable in their foreignness. Within a single paragraph the Moros are colourful and immediate, yet infinitely distant. Captain Matthew F. Steele Jolo in similarly fantastical terms, noting that it was home to "60,000 of the most hostile, unconquerable, dangerous savages the American army has ever met" and observing the habit of every boy above the age of twelve to carry a *barong*, which he deemed "the most deadly hand weapon since the Roman short sword."<sup>25</sup>

Resistance to colonial occupation during these early years was often explained via the cataloguing of imagined racial characteristics. Military officers spoke with a grudging respect for the fighting prowess of Moro men, yet were also exasperated that these same qualities made them bullheaded and resistant to the developmental prerogatives of the state. Serving as Leonard Wood's aid, Frank McCoy noted the general unruliness of the Moros. In an interview with Wood's biographer Hermann Hagedorn, he claimed that most Moros were friendly but "in each tribal region was a handful of chiefs who wouldn't obey any orders except for their own." McCoy compared the Moro leadership with the "fierce individualism of chiefs of the highlands of Scotland" and marveled at how the Lake Lanao region alone had an estimated 219 sultans during the pacification campaigns of 1902-03.<sup>26</sup> The perceived willfulness of the Moros was considered both a virtue and a weakness, depending on the context.

---

<sup>24</sup> "Diary of Pirate-Hunting in the Sulu Archipelago," 1 March 1940, Box 1. Charles D. Rhodes Papers, 1940-1949, USAHEC.

<sup>25</sup> "Talk Made at Lunch of Fargo Rotary Club," 18 June 1941, Box 1, Folder 2. Matthew F. Steele Papers, 1880-1953, USAHEC.

<sup>26</sup> Interview with Frank McCoy, 7 June 1929, Box 15, Folders 2 and 4. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

The unruly nature of America's Islamic wards was most evident in their supposed addictions to piracy and the slave trade. As evidenced in the work of Michael Salman, the slavery question – and the role of piracy in facilitating slaving – was integrated into broader ideological and religious debates. The United States, less than forty years removed from chattel slavery when it acquired Spain's colonies, sent its agents forth with designs to remap labour and social relations in the Southern Philippines. The colonially generated 'Moro' did not have his own constellation of societal structures, and primarily existed as a degenerate slaver, pirate, and polygamist. Slavery under the American flag was, to borrow from Salman, an "embarrassment" and one that needed challenging. Eliminating the slave trade and 'piracy', the latter often used to describe any form of maritime commerce existing outside of colonial regulatory networks, was seen as a national duty by a variety of military officials, politicians, religious figures, and antislavery activists.<sup>27</sup>

In his popular history of the Southern Philippines, Vic Hurley placed special emphasis on the role of piracy in Muslim cultures. Hurley's book, *The Swish of the Kris*, trafficked in common stereotypes about the Moros, yet also pitied them. While they engaged in "murder and rapine" as "lighter amusement," the "bloodthirsty pirates were not lacking in sympathy. They waged a just war according to their lights and they were beset upon all sides by land grabbing aggressors."<sup>28</sup> The Moro pirates fought with fanaticism against a similarly fanatical foe – Spanish Catholicism. In Hurley's rendering, the Moro resisted in "defense of the religion and customs of Islam against the militant priests of Spain" and as a result his culture survived. This contrasted with the South American indigenous civilizations, whose cities "remain desolated sepulchers of an ancient civilization which melted before the fanaticism of the *conquistadores*."<sup>29</sup> So the Moros were cruel and warlike, but this strong martial character allowed them to stave off the cultural and religious obliteration of an Iberian colonial regime.

---

<sup>27</sup> Salman, *The Embarrassment of Slavery*, 1-99. Salman's study remains the most comprehensive examination of the slavery question during the American period. Slavery in the Southern Philippines was considerably more complex than it was in the United States, and slaves were often integrated into extended kin networks in ways unheard of in more racialized chattel slave societies. Unfree labour also played an important role in trade in what James Francis Warren calls 'The Sulu Zone' during the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. See Warren, "Structure of Slavery," 111-128; Non, "Moro Piracy," 401-419.

<sup>28</sup> Vic Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 7.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid.

Their piracy – considered a “profession of gentlemen,” according to Hurley<sup>30</sup> – was legitimated by their religious traditions and the threats they faced.

As the first military commander of the Tawi-Tawi island group near Borneo, Sydney Cloman claimed he recognized the “ancestral microbe” of piracy in the Moros.<sup>31</sup> In *Myself and a Few Moros*, Cloman devoted a chapter to recounting his tense standoff with a local datu who was sheltering the pirate Selungan on the island of Siminul. After backing down the natives, Cloman met Selungan, whom he declared was “certainly the finest specimen of the Malay race that I had seen. Tall, well-built, dignified, and fearless, he either spoke the truth or remained silent.”<sup>32</sup> Like Hurley, Sydney Cloman admired the “fierce and reckless” Moros for their virile independence, yet also saw the need to tame their wildness through carrot-and-stick measures that often relied on the firepower of the U.S. military to change “the rules of the game.”<sup>33</sup> If piracy could be suppressed through sheer force, slavery was more difficult because of how it was “concealed under all sorts of guises,” and far less systematized than it was in the Americas.<sup>34</sup>

For longtime Constabulary officer John R. White, the Moros were steeped in “piracy, slavery, and superstition.”<sup>35</sup> White saw them as unwilling to bend to “any form of government that curbed piracy and slavery and operated for the rights of man as opposed to the privileges of petty chiefs.”<sup>36</sup> The Constabulary, operating as a roving guarantor of American and Filipino rule in Mindanao and Sulu, was the wedge with which to displace these unfortunate tendencies. Writers like White, Cloman, and Hurley admitted that the Moros practiced a milder form of slavery than what had existed in the American South, but all noted that resistance to its abolition was a constant. In the case of the Maguindanaos of

---

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., 44.

<sup>31</sup> Sydney A. Cloman, *Myself and a Few Moros* (New York: Doubleday, Page & Co., 1923), 6.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., 96.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., 2.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid. 70.

<sup>35</sup> White, *Bullets and Bolos*, 189.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., 202.

Southwestern Mindanao, where White had extensive experience, tendencies towards piracy were less pronounced, yet the datus there still “held almost as tightly to their ancient privileges of slavery and control of the pagan tribes.”<sup>37</sup> White viewed these practices as “a necessary outlet of individual and racial emotions” and compared them to resistance against Prohibition on America’s Eastern Seaboard. His solution was to channel the violent energies of the Moros in other directions, namely by enlisting them in the Constabulary and having them suppress disorder in the South.<sup>38</sup> If the spirited nature of the Moro could not be eliminated, it could at least be redirected.

Islam presented a challenge to the Americans attempting to understand Moro groups, and often created contradictory portrayals. In the florid descriptions of men like Walter Cutter, religious practices were parceled together with the Moros’ supposed savagery as a character that amplified their deadly and fanatical natures. This was most vividly displayed, chroniclers argued, when a Moro decided to ‘go *juramentado*,’ an act of publicly executing non-believers in the name of the faith.<sup>39</sup> In popular accounts, the monotheism of Islam simultaneously raised the Moros above their animist neighbours in the Southern Philippines yet also relegated them to a state of retarded civilization. The *Boston Globe* summed up this view, observing that “the questions of religious fanaticism are here added to those of barbarism, for the Moros, although they are Mahometans, are little better than savages.”<sup>40</sup> To some Americans, the Moros were not even properly Islamic, and the religion’s syncretism with preexisting indigenous beliefs was interpreted not as an explanation for why it was so successful but as evidence of incomplete Islamization. A government report from 1914 noted the “inclination of mysticism and pretense to magic” in the local *pandita* schools,<sup>41</sup> and Philippine Scouts officer Charles Ivins estimated that “the veneer of Mohammedanism lays

---

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., 215.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., 297-298.

<sup>39</sup> See Chapter Five.

<sup>40</sup> “Moros Do Not Drink,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 13 May 1900, 40.

<sup>41</sup> Frank W. Carpenter, *Report of the Governor of the Department Mindanao and Sulu (Philippine Islands) 1914* (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1916), 354.



only lightly over a base of animism and superstition.”<sup>42</sup> On an expedition in the Mindanao interior, Constabulary officer Sterling Larrabee commented on local Moro belief in the spiritual qualities of “trees, stones, and wood spirits,” and compared them with the Lumad tribes of the region.<sup>43</sup>

To others, religious affiliation implicated Moro groups in broader struggles between the Christian and Muslim worlds. Charles Brent, the longtime Episcopal Bishop of the Philippines, saw the fight against the “semi-savagery and mad fanaticism” of the Moros in terms of the moral mission to bring the civilizing influences of Christianity to them. In Brent’s eyes, the Moros were the inheritors of the worst elements of global Islam, and the *juramentado* was heir to the “fatalism” of the Sudanese Mahdi army that fought the British (a recurring point of reference for Americans). The Muslim world was a “unified and sensitive organ” and through the perfidious influence of the “Arab priests” present in Mindanao and Sulu, the Moros were acquiring a deep-seated hatred of the Americans. Brent claimed he advocated freedom of religion, but thought the government should draw the line at “polygamous or murderous cults,” and suggested that all Arab immigration to the Philippines be restricted.<sup>44</sup>

Henry O. Dwight, a long-time journalist in Turkey, lacked the heated pulpit rhetoric of Brent, but also saw the question of the Moros as intimately connected to global Islam. Citing long passages from the Qur’an on *jihad*, Dwight thought that the real danger of the Moros arose from the “pan-Islamic revival” of the era. That the Moros were “imperfect and ignorant Mohammedans” made them easier prey for foreign religious teachers. Dwight suggested that counteracting the militant attitude Islam instilled in the Moros would require Americans to take lessons from past instances of colonial exterminism, and from the Moros themselves: “It is to look at your enemy as untamable...to have an overwhelming force, and

---

<sup>42</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 40, Box 1. Charles F. Ivins Papers, 1933-1934, USAHEC.

<sup>43</sup> Letter from Sterling Larrabee to Parents, 18 June 1912, Box 1. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, 1909-1949, USAHEC.

<sup>44</sup> Sermon given by Charles Henry Brent at American Cathedral, Manila, 22 December 1912, Box 42. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

then to strike without conscience; literally killing every living thing when the battle occurs, and destroying everything that cannot be carried away after the victory is won. The expense of such a policy will be great, the bloodshed terrible; but a few successful encounters conducted on this principle will secure abject submission and peace for a generation.”<sup>45</sup> The forthrightness of these passages is jarring, but they stemmed from Dwight’s sincere belief that the fanaticism of the Muslim Moro could only be met in kind. In his outlook, disproportionate displays of violence ensured future stability in the region.

Americans were also fond of contrasting the Moros with the Christian Filipinos. The latter were depicted as both blessed and burdened by the legacy of Spanish colonialism. The Filipinos had Christianity, but it was of a degraded Catholic variety looked down upon by the American Protestant elite. They were also passingly familiar with Western modernity, although the Spanish iteration of this was viewed as inadequate when compared to feats of development found in Northern Europe and the United States. Alternately, the Moros had no such baggage. Although savage and premodern, they had long maintained their independence in the face of Spanish colonial conquest – making them, in the eyes of the Americans, nobler than the Filipinos. According to Vic Hurley, it was the Moros who had bested the Spanish in only allowing them small footholds in the Southern Philippines. “The conquistadores met their masters,” he wrote.<sup>46</sup>

Christian Filipinos were seen as typically ‘Oriental’ by the Americans, at once more servile and sensuous than the Moros. A 1911 article in *Outlook* magazine used music as an entry point for comparing the peoples. In the North, the music was “in a minor strain, soft, plaintive appealing, and pathetic.” In the South, “the major note is struck...dominant and thrilling and characteristic of the people.” To the writer, the music was an extension of the Moro’s martial masculinity. The Moro male “towers physically on a level with the American, meets him squarely in the eye, and gives a curious sense of brute force as his smile reveals

---

<sup>45</sup> Henry O. Dwight, “Our Mohammedan Wards,” 27-28.

<sup>46</sup> Vic Hurley, *The Swish of the Kris*, 75-78.

teeth filed to sharp points” while the Filipino “beats his pony, but cringes to his superiors.”<sup>47</sup> General J. Franklin Bell, then military commander in the Philippines, reiterated this dichotomy, wondering how the Filipinos thought “that a brave, proud, warlike, independent, non-submissive people like the Moros [were] going to voluntarily submit to domination by a race which they [held] in contempt and against which they [were] antagonistic for centuries.”<sup>48</sup>

The Moro had more natural honesty than the Filipino, according to the botanist H.H. Bartlett, and there was “much to be said” for him. While the “Christian politico and cacique” would “conceal his antisocial behaviour,” the Moro would at least be “openly bad.”<sup>49</sup> John Pershing was also unfavourable in his comparisons, claiming that the Filipinos had “neither the cunning, the fanatical courage, nor the morale” that the Moros did.<sup>50</sup> The Filipinos, wrote Pershing, regarded the Moros as savages, “while the Moro thinks the Filipino an inferior, fit only to be his slave. They are in no sense brothers, but are irreconcilable strangers and enemies in every sense.”<sup>51</sup> Pershing was unequivocal in his view that the Moros, being the stronger of the two peoples, “would make short work of local Filipino government” were it to exist without America’s guiding hand.<sup>52</sup> H.H. Bartlett even made the proposition that the

---

<sup>47</sup> Atherton Brownell, “Turning Savages Into Citizens,” *Outlook*, January 1911, 925.

<sup>48</sup> Letter from J. Franklin Bell to Francis Burton Harrison, 28 January 1914, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD. The journalist Katherine Mayo, in her sensationalist account of the colonial Philippines, emphasized these differences even more forcefully: “Between the Moros and the ‘Indians,’ as the Spaniards called the tribes of the northern Archipelago, the newcomers found a wide difference, both in character and in status. The ‘Indian’ was a docile, light-brained child-savage, cribbed in his own small jungle range, without well-formed religious beliefs, without law or organized government, without books or written records, without any art save the most rudimentary. The ‘Moro,’ on the other hand, was a fighter, a sea-rover, a reader of the Koran and a devotee of the Prophet. His civil laws, like those of his religion, with which they inseparably interlocked, were fixed and clear. His scheme of government and of official control, though simple, was mature. His better classes read and wrote their own languages, using the Hindu syllabaries and the Arabic alphabet. He had a definite system of education. His written records, histories, genealogies and religious works had been preserved for many hundreds of years, and the pride of a chief was in his collection of manuscripts.” – Katharine Mayo, *The Islands of Fear: The Truth About the Philippines* (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1925), 283.

<sup>49</sup> “Diary of a Twelve-Day Tour with Vice-Governor Hayden From Manila to Sulu and Back,” 10 September 1935, Box 8. Harley Harris Bartlett Papers, 1909-1960, BHL.

<sup>50</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 65.

<sup>51</sup> *Ibid.*, 64.

<sup>52</sup> *Ibid.*, 65.

Moros were more progressive when it came to gender relations, citing a Moro village *presidenta* as evidence of their being “more advanced and open-minded than the majority of Christian Filipinos, who have made the astoundingly reactionary step of disenfranchising women.”<sup>53</sup>

Moro women were alluringly foreign, repugnant, threatening, or some combination of all three. Their perceived role in Muslim society varied dependent on who was writing about them, with some observers apt to describe the women in a state of slave-like dependence and others as dangerous warriors. William A. Kobbé, briefly military governor of Mindanao and Sulu, made special mention of the women who danced for him while he was a guest of Datus Piang and Ali in the Cotabato Valley, commenting in his diary that the women at the banquet held in his honour all had on “a simple serong passing under the arm-pits and displaying breasts and a good deal of their legs and many of them were very comely.”<sup>54</sup> At a later event held by Datu Mandi in Zamboanga, Kobbé also remarked on there being “an uncommonly fine looking lot of native women.”<sup>55</sup> A reporter for the *Atlanta Constitution* found the Moro women equally captivating during his visit to meet the Sultan of Mindanao in 1900. Writing in a suggestive manner, he noted how “most of the women were basically naked with exception of one strip of cloth which each had tied about her chest...some of the women merely held up the cloth with their hand. Now and then one would give her clothing a twitch, and I several times feared it would slip to the ground.”<sup>56</sup> Often found in the pages of respected magazines like *National Geographic*, this blurring of lines between ethnographic description and the fetishization of ‘primitive’ sexuality was common.

Aside from being objectified, the women of the Southern Philippines were also depicted as debased due to their physical appearance, habits, and dress – often in the same article. The teeth of the Sultan’s younger wife, stained black from chewing betel nuts,

---

<sup>53</sup> “Diary of a Twelve-Day Tour with Vice-Governor Hayden From Manila to Sulu and Back,” 10 September 1935, Box 8. Harley Harris Bartlett Papers, BHL.

<sup>54</sup> Diary of Field Service in the Philippines 1898-1901, 20 August 1900, Box 1. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., 20 July 1901.

<sup>56</sup> “The Sultan of Mindanao,” *Atlanta Constitution*, 17 June 1900, 3.

repulsed the *Atlanta Constitution* reporter.<sup>57</sup> Americans thought the habit made Moro men appear fiercer but were repulsed when females partook. Jokes about American women coming to the tropics and ruining themselves with the habit even cropped up in popular military songs like “My Yankee Girl in the Tropics,” which included the lines: “Wait till my girl comes out to these isles / to be a ‘Philippine Belle’ / To eat betel nuts and stain her white teeth / My goodness – but won’t she look swell?”<sup>58</sup> The tendency to denigrate the Moro women occasionally extended to their clothes. Florence Kimball Russel commented on how difficult it was to differentiate them from men in a crowd because both sexes wore similar clothes. When Russell did manage to get a closer look at the women she disparagingly noted that they were “much less attractive than the men, being quite as unprepossessing in appearance, and lacking the redeeming strength and symmetry which gave beauty to the masculine figure.”<sup>59</sup> Another female American traveller to the Southern Philippines, the writer Anna Benjamin, described the garb of the Moro women in detail and perceptively noted how strange she, a white woman, must look to them.<sup>60</sup> The newsman Carl Taylor reported Moro women fighting alongside their men, and dubiously suggested that when dying they were known to “seize their babies and hurl them upon advancing bayonets,” such was their antipathy towards subjugation.<sup>61</sup>

Attempts to describe and categorize the Moros went far beyond sensational accounts of their supposed warrior prowess or barbarism, however. Inspired by men like Dean Worcester, a variety of American colonials took it upon themselves to study the Muslim

---

<sup>57</sup> Ibid.

<sup>58</sup> *Eighth Army War Corps. Songs* (Manila: Freedom Publishing Co., 1899), 21.

<sup>59</sup> Florence Kimball Russel, *A Woman’s Journey Through the Philippines* (Boston: L.C. Page & Co., 1907), 97-98.

<sup>60</sup> Anna N. Benjamin, “Our Mohammedan Wards in Sulu,” *Outlook*, 18 November 1899.

<sup>61</sup> Carl N. Taylor, “Powder Keg in Mindanao,” *Today Magazine*, 7 March 1936, 19. The first article of a two-part series found in the papers of J.R. Hayden (Box 29, Folder 1, BHL). Taylor spent time teaching at the University of the Philippines, and travelled the archipelago extensively before moving to New Mexico. His houseboy murdered him there in February 1936. Because of his oft-exaggerated stories about brushes with danger and life among exotic peoples, many of his colleagues believed a cultish offshoot of the *Los Penitentes*, a lay confraternity famous for being flagellants, had killed him. His stories on Mindanao were published after his death. For more information, see A. Gabriel Meléndez, *Hidden Chicano Cinema: Film Dramas in the Borderlands* (New Brunswick: Rutgers University Press, 2013), 60-65.

tribes and document their findings. This was done for a variety of reasons that ranged from casual interest to the collection of military intelligence. The urge to know the peoples of America's colonial empire was present in the popular press from the earliest days of the Spanish-American War. In April 1899, the *Chicago Daily Tribune* ran an article entitled "All the Facts Concerning Our New Empire" that sketched out a heterogeneous ethnographic portrait of the Philippine Islands, from the "warlike, active, intelligent" Moros to the "diseased and dying" Negritos.<sup>62</sup> Combining descriptions of the natural wealth of the lands with the characteristics of the native inhabitants, the *Tribune* provided early evidence that colonial fascinations with study, discovery, and collection would be hallmarks of the American project in the Philippines.

An extraordinarily detailed report prepared by Lieutenant Edwin L. Smith, a West Point graduate and intelligence officer for the 4<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, shows the depth of American anthropological interest in the Moros. Written in 1908 about the Tausūg people of the Sulu Archipelago, Smith's report ran over one hundred pages in length and covered nearly every conceivable topic. Genealogies of the leadership of the Sultanate of Sulu dating back to 800 C.E. appeared alongside detailed descriptions of the games played by Moro children. Smith had the Sulu code of law transcribed in its entirety, and also gave an extensive political history of the islands. Titles for Tausūg royal, religious, and tribal officialdom were transcribed, as were popular superstitions ranging from monsters who ate the stomachs of children to the best way for a divorced woman to bewitch her husband if she wished to have him back. Smith inserted numerous drawings and photographs in his report showing how the Tausūg dressed, how they were buried after they died, the mechanics of their games, and the designs of their weapons, jewelry, agricultural tools, and housing.<sup>63</sup>

The sexual practices of the Tausūg Moros were detailed in near-voyeuristic detail. The rituals surrounding intercourse, including which day was most auspicious to have sex

---

<sup>62</sup> "All the Facts Concerning Our New Empire," *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 2 April 1899, E1.

<sup>63</sup> E.L. Smith, *Report on Sulu Moros* (Manila: E.C. McCullough & Co., 1908). The report is an incredible resource for those looking in more detail on the state of colonial ethnography in the Sulu Archipelago during the early 1900s. Considering that it is a military report and not the product of years of academic research, the amount of information gathered by Smith is impressive.

(Friday), and the ablutions performed after the act had occurred.<sup>64</sup> The tract included considerations of incest, “sexual perversions,” premarital sex, and abortion. Smith even went so far as describe how the specifically prepared tree root was used to terminate unwanted pregnancies.<sup>65</sup> Prostitutes were rare, but those who were caught were painted “half black and half white” and then placed backwards on a horse, paraded through the streets and markets, and stoned to death.<sup>66</sup> In the chapter covering manners and customs, Smith listed dozens of social practices, ranging from who a Tausūg woman could speak with to when, where, how often, and with whom the Tausūg bathed.<sup>67</sup> While heavy in specifics, Smith’s report avoided the usual moralism and alarm present in average American descriptions of the Moros. Aside from a few small examples, the Tausūg and their societal mores were documented with uncommon scholarly dispassion.

The intelligence-gathering schematic employed by Smith was also used in other parts of the Moro Province. J.M Cullion, a lieutenant with the 2<sup>nd</sup> Infantry, copied out phonetic versions of words used by the Tausūg, while E.V. Sumner Jr., stationed at Zamboanga, did the same for the Maranao people of the Lake Lanao region.<sup>68</sup> Stanley Koch, intelligence officer with the 6<sup>th</sup> Cavalry, came closest to replicating Smith’s extensive study, providing his superiors with a large volume of information on the Maranaos. As in Smith’s report, there was a fixation on sex and sexuality. Koch, for example, observed that masturbation was “often practiced by men and boys but, whenever detected, punished by one hundred lashes with a *bejuco* stick on the bare back. As marriage is undertaken so early and by so many this demoralizing vice is largely reduced.” Abortion, infanticide, and punishments for sexual deviance also appeared in the document, suggesting, alongside other reports, a fascination with intimate areas of Muslim life.<sup>69</sup>

---

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., 33.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., 32.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., 55-64.

<sup>68</sup> Report by J.M. Cullison on Sulu Dialect, 25 March 1907, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC; Report by E.V. Sumner Jr. on Moro Words, 5 September 1910, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>69</sup> Report by Stanley Koch on Moros, 1 September 1908, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

While the intelligence reports of Smith and Koch were thorough (at times bizarrely so), the most systematic attempts to describe and understand the various Moro tribes came from Najeeb Mitry Saleeby.<sup>70</sup> Born in Beirut (then part of Ottoman Syria), the Protestant army surgeon joined the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes as Assistant Chief and Agent for Moro Affairs after his discharge from the military. He spent extensive time in nearly all parts of the Moro Province as Superintendent of Schools. Saleeby, who also served under Leonard Wood on the Provincial Board of the Moro Province, was fluent in Arabic and the various Moro dialects, thus having a distinct advantage over other officials in the region. His writing and translation work on the Moros of the Cotabato region (the Maguindanaos) and the Sulu Archipelago (the Tausūg, Samal, and others) survives in two books, each commissioned by governmental agencies studying ethnology – first the Ethnological Survey under the Department of the Interior, and then the Division of Ethnology under the Bureau of Science.<sup>71</sup>

Unlike many other chroniclers, Saleeby was not interested in using the Moros as a vessel for the portrayal of Oriental adventure and danger. Both books were sober affairs. In 1905's *Studies in Moro History, Law, and Religion*, Saleeby discussed matters of transliteration, considered the mythologies of Mindanao, and translated numerous manuscripts into English. Many of these were genealogies, and, along with translating the original text, Saleeby considered questions of authorship, dialect, history, and the textual alteration over the centuries. He noted in his translation of the "Genealogy of Magindanao and the Iranun Datus," for example, that the reliability of the text changed from manuscript to manuscript, but that his version still threw "considerable light upon the nature and tribal characteristics of the datuships or Moro communities."<sup>72</sup> Saleeby's *The History of Sulu*, published three years later, contained an extensive history of the archipelago from the pre-Islamic period until the Spanish evacuation in 1899. Written to "throw light on the actual conditions of life among the Moros," Saleeby wanted to write history "without prejudice or

---

<sup>70</sup> A transliteration of the Arabic 'Naguib' adopted by the Anglicized Saleeby.

<sup>71</sup> Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 68.

<sup>72</sup> Saleeby, *Studies in Moro History*, 32-33.



bias, and events are related as they appear in the light of facts, and by one capable of seeing things from the standpoint of a Sulu as well as of a Spaniard.”<sup>73</sup> *The History of Sulu*, while containing far more of a narrative than his first book, was likewise appended with a wealth of translated letters, reports, protocols, and decrees related to the topic.<sup>74</sup> In these books and his other published work, Najeeb Saleeby offered a sophisticated consideration of the Moros that was backed by deep research.<sup>75</sup> Both books were published by the Department of the Interior’s Ethnological Survey Publications, suggesting governmental interest in disseminating information about Moro groups. Their nuance stood in stark contrast to later swashbuckling narratives that reduced Muslims to mere savages.

The desire to describe and catalogue Islamic cultures extended beyond monographs and military reports, and scattered throughout Mindanao and Sulu were Americans seeking to understand their surroundings through rudimentary ethnographic study. Spurred on in the early years by officials like the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes’ David Prescott Barrows, these part-time ethnographers came to know the Moros through what they observed and collected. In the early 1900s, Robert Lee Bullard, then a major in the 28<sup>th</sup> Infantry, accumulated genealogical lists of datus in the Lake Lanao regions that dated back hundreds of years.<sup>76</sup> He also compiled a Maranao vocabulary and took oral testimonies on slavery and terror.<sup>77</sup> Major Guy O. Fort, who ran the Constabulary headquarters in Zamboanga during the 1920s, was also “something of an amateur ethnographer,” and at one point composed a

---

<sup>73</sup> Saleeby, *The History of Sulu*, 10-11.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., 317-385. The appendices in *The History of Sulu* give extensive insight into Spanish policy regarding the Moros, including expedition reports, directives relative to commerce in the Southern Philippines, and military operational histories.

<sup>75</sup> Saleeby would summarize his thoughts about the Moros in 1913 in a more opinionated article that arose from a speech he gave in Manila. In it he advocated that U.S. administrators not think of the Moros as savages, and gave examples of their “well-defined governmental organization and a well recognized knowledge of written law.” Najeeb M. Saleeby, *The Moro Problem: An Academic Discussion of the History and Solution of the Problem of the Government of the Moros of the Philippine Islands* (Manila: E.C. McCullough & Co., 1913), 3.

<sup>76</sup> “Genealogy of Moros by Priest Hadji Moro Mohammad,” 30 October 1903, Box 10. Robert Lee Bullard Papers, 1881-1955, LOC-MD.

<sup>77</sup> Undated Oral Testimonies on Moro Slavery, Box 10. Robert Lee Bullard Papers, LOC-MD. We can assume this document originates from the early 1900s, as this was when Bullard served in the Philippines. The testimony of one girl enslaved by the Moros makes reference to the Spanish presence. Her testimony also gives fascinating (and troubling) detail about the treatment of female slaves.

manuscript over fifty pages long comprised of “questions of an ethnological nature” that he intended to distribute to Constabulary posts around the Southern Philippines. Visiting with Fort, the anthropologist Carl Eugen Guthe noted with approval that “both the questions and his attitude seem very scientific.”<sup>78</sup>

Several works cataloguing the dialects and vocabularies of Muslim populations appeared in print. Charles Winslow Elliot, a quartermaster with the 6<sup>th</sup> Infantry, published a Maranao “vocabulary and phrase book.” Learning Maranao did not soften his opinion of it, and he wrote in his introduction that the language was “a barbarous and incomplete dialect, replete with inconsistencies, absurdities, and primitive modes of expression.”<sup>79</sup> The military surgeon Ralph S. Porter compiled a vocabulary list used by the Maguindanaos of Cotabato which generated enough interest to be printed in Washington.<sup>80</sup> Elsewhere, schoolteachers were important conduits. At Zamboanga, Frances E. Bartter assembled and published a small primer on the Samal dialect, and on Jolo Katharine G. Buffum did the same for the Tausūg.<sup>81</sup> Interest in native language and culture was, however, limited among the Americans and Europeans. While certain military men and schoolteachers attempted to bridge communication gaps, most were content to limit their interactions with the Moros, particularly when off-duty.

Descriptions of the Moros by civilian officials and observers during the civilian period featured many of the tendencies of earlier accounts. Francis Burton Harrison, Governor General of the Philippines from 1914 until 1921, thought the Moro were “men of great personal valor” and so skilled in combat that they had “made as much trouble in the past as ten times their numbers of more peaceful and tractable people could have made.” Their

---

<sup>78</sup> Diary of Carl Eugen Guthe, 19 May 1924, Box 5. Carl Eugen Guthe Papers, BHL.

<sup>79</sup> Charles Winslow Elliot, *A Vocabulary and Phrase Book of the Lanao Moro Dialect* (Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1913), 7.

<sup>80</sup> Ralph S. Porter, *A Primer and Vocabulary of the Moro Dialect (Magindanao)* (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1903).

<sup>81</sup> Frances E. Bartter, *English-Samal Vocabulary* (Zamboanga: The Sulu Press, 1921); Katharine G. Buffum and Charles Lynch, *Joloano Moro* (Manila: E.C. McCullough & Co., 1914). Americans also translated Spanish language texts on Muslim dialects. See, for example, C.C. Smith, trans., *A Grammar of the Maguindanao Tongue According to the Manner of Speaking it in the Interior of the South Coast of the Island of Mindanao* (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1906).

adherence to “Mohammedanism,” Harrison believed, rendered them “difficult to deal with,” even if their understanding of the religion was limited. Like others, the colonial politician used gendered language in his descriptions of the Muslims, observing that the men and women were “often indistinguishable; the men have no beards nor mustaches, and both sexes wear the hair long. Many of their fiercest warriors are slender men with a feline or feminine countenance.” With this in mind, he took at face value Leonard Wood’s claim that the death of women during the Bud Dajo massacre was due to an easy confusion between the sexes.<sup>82</sup>

The University of Michigan political scientist J.R. Hayden, who became the Vice Governor of the Philippines in the 1930s, wrote in a 1928 article for *Foreign Affairs* that “Mohammedan and pagan Filipinos” living in Mindanao and Sulu “lack completely the social and political organization upon which modern life rests.”<sup>83</sup> The Moros had a “backward civilization...sustained by religious fanaticism, fierce racial pride, and stubborn adherence to ancient custom.” Despite the best attempts of the Spanish and Americans, “the old Moro civilization” was “still deeply rooted among this proud, ignorant, stubborn and highly courageous people.”<sup>84</sup> That Hayden represented the liberal end of the spectrum gives the reader an indication of how steeped Western thinkers were in notions of race and civilizational capacity. The Filipinos who replaced American officials shared similar concerns about the Moros. The writings of Sixto Y. Orosa, district health officer for the Sulu Archipelago in the 1920s and early 1930s, featured long descriptions of the appearance of the Tausūg Moros, their tendencies towards piracy, and the “fanatical” nature of their adherence to Islam.<sup>85</sup> The *Manila Daily Bulletin* regularly reprinted American editorials that questioned the ability of the Filipinos to “civilize” the Moros, although one noted that the Christians now had an advantage because the Moro “qualities of personal bravery” were of no use when met with “high explosives.”<sup>86</sup>

---

<sup>82</sup> Harrison, *Corner-Stone of Philippine Independence*, 98-99.

<sup>83</sup> Joseph Ralston Hayden, “What Next for the Moro?” *Foreign Affairs* 6.4 (1928): 634.

<sup>84</sup> *Ibid.*, 637.

<sup>85</sup> Sixto Y. Orosa, *The Sulu Archipelago and Its People* (Yonkers, N.Y.: World Book Company, 1931), 72-78.

<sup>86</sup> “As American Editors See Us: ‘Civilizing Moro Outlaws’,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 12 June 1937.

Edward M. Kuder, an education official who fought alongside the Moros against the Japanese on Mindanao, wrote on the eve of Philippine Independence of the heterogeneity of the Moro tribes and educational efforts by Americans on their behalf, and ended with a plea that the world not pass over “one of earth’s little peoples.”<sup>87</sup> The sympathetic views of Kuder were indicative of how the language of the civilizing mission had softened. It retained, however, the same convictions about the characteristic merits and shortcomings of the Moros, which were coloured by prevailing ideas on topics ranging from the anthropological qualities of the Malay race, to the role of Islam in Moro culture, to how women figured into Moro society. However, imagining the Moro also involved situating them against the backdrop of American history.

## Racial Comparatives Across Empire

In a 1906 article for *Collier’s Weekly*, the journalist Richard Barry wrote about the killing of Datu Ali, a member of Maguindanao royalty in the Cotabato Valley who fought against American rule. “It marked all but the last phase of that war of extermination which the American race has waged for nearly three centuries against first the red and then the brown race,” Barry wrote, “which has taken our arms from the rock-bound roar of Penobscot across ten thousand miles to the soft lull of the Pacific within five degrees of the equator, and which has added to the long list of dusky heroes beginning with King Philip a name worthy of rank with the bravest and shrewdest – Datto Ali!”<sup>88</sup> The passage is rich with allusion. In Barry’s estimation, the battles waged against the Moros could be placed on the same continuum as those fought on the Atlantic littoral during early European settler colonialism in North America. The “dusky heroes” found among the Native Americans who held out against westward expansionism were kin to the Ali, despite being separated by language, culture, religion, and an ocean.

Richard Barry’s description of how the U.S. Army stalked and killed Datu Ali was written in a curious manner that at once venerated the savage nobility of Ali while

---

<sup>87</sup> Edward M. Kuder, “The Moros in the Philippines,” *Far Eastern Quarterly* 4.2 (1945): 126.

<sup>88</sup> Richard Barry, “The End of Datto Ali,” *Collier’s Weekly*, 9 June 1906, 17.

simultaneously arguing that his very existence impeded development on Mindanao. Ali was described in terms of his supposed Arab heritage – “audacious, indolent, royal, supreme” – and the tale of his downfall was a fantastical tribal romance (betrayed by a lesser datu whose wife he stole!) straight from popular fiction. Ali’s resistance to American rule was brave, but ultimately futile, and for all Barry’s admiration for the fallen leader he still ends his piece with a toast given by an American judge in Zamboanga after his death: “A royal good fellow that unfortunately got in the way of progress, and had to have a hypodermic injection of gray matter.”<sup>89</sup>

Americans arriving in the Southern Philippines at the turn of the twentieth-century were familiar with the references Barry made in *Collier’s*. His comingling of savagery, futile heroism, and inevitable white racial dominance were the narrative touchstones of reportage on the previous century’s warfare against Native American populations on the Western and Southern frontiers. While paternalist condescension towards the Natives predated the formation of the republic, their integration (or lack thereof) into the nascent state was a concern from the founding onwards. Thomas Jefferson, embracing the grand Enlightenment narratives, saw the Natives as savages whose only redemption was through the guiding hand of a more developed civilization. Since the European empires had failed in this task, it stood that “the only hope for the individual Indians was that they follow the arduous path toward republican civilization; they must abandon political pretensions that made them dependent on corrupt imperial patrons and retarded their moral development.”<sup>90</sup> In this worldview, the Natives could become ideal American citizens if they adopted Anglo-American landholding, farming, and gender norms. Once this occurred, the ‘savage’ would be freed civilizational darkness and become a primitive subject of the state, ready to imbibe the fruits of Western modernity.<sup>91</sup>

---

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., 19.

<sup>90</sup> Peter S. Onuf, *Jefferson’s Empire: The Language of American Nationhood* (Charlottesville and London: University of Virginia Press, 2000), 46.

<sup>91</sup> Alex Hinton, “Savages, Subjects, and Sovereigns: Conjunctions of Modernity, Genocide, and Colonialism,” in *Empire, Colony, Genocide: Conquest, Occupation, and Subaltern Resistance in World History*, ed. A. Dirk Moses (Oxford and New York: Berghahn Books, 2008), 440-446.

The tragic practical outcome of this racial idealism was patterns of frontier violence, epidemic, coordinated deracination, and mass dislocation. Emergent discourses in the mid nineteenth-century essentialized races and gave ‘scientific’ impetus to colonial regimes, including that on the American frontier, to carry out projects of conquest against ‘lesser’ races.<sup>92</sup> Instances of ethnic cleansing like the Indian Removal Act of 1830 were justified, in more punitive calculations, as the necessary marginalization of cultures scientifically-marked for extinction, or, for more religiously-inclined Americans, as examples of divine will and opportunities to save heathen souls.<sup>93</sup> Slogans like “Kill the Indian, Save the Man” stemmed from ambitious projects of deracination, typified at sites like the Carlisle Indian Industrial School in Pennsylvania, which utilized Christian education to remake Native youth into model Americans.<sup>94</sup> Punctuating all of this was “prolonged and brutal fighting” in frontier spaces “that led to dehumanization of the enemy and ample opportunity for atrocities directed at a population of ‘savages’ in which civilians were indistinguishable from combatants.”<sup>95</sup> Sporadic colonial massacres, such as that occurring at Wounded Knee in 1890, became the backdrop against which the United States expanded in the nineteenth-century.

For most white Americans in the latter half of the nineteenth-century, frontier encounters represented the most immediate experience of alien cultures. After the Civil War,

---

<sup>92</sup> George C. Herring, *From Colony to Superpower: U.S. Foreign Relations since 1776* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2008), 181. The most thorough accounting of how this type of race-thinking drove expansionism can be found in Ned Blackhawk, *Violence Over the Land: Indians and Empires in the Early American West* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2006); Richard Drinnon, *Facing West: The Metaphysics of Indian-Hating and Empire-Building* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1980); Reginald Horsman, *Race and Manifest Destiny: The Origins of American Racial Anglo-Saxonism* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1981); Gregory H. Nobles, *American Frontiers: Cultural Encounters and Continental Conquest*. New York: Hill & Wang, 1997); Richard Slotkin, *The Fatal Environment: The Myth of the Frontier in the Age of Industrialization, 1800-1890* (Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Press, 1985); Andrew Woldford et al., eds., *Colonial Genocide in Indigenous North America* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2014).

<sup>93</sup> Andrew Preston, *Sword of the Spirit*, 138.

<sup>94</sup> Joshua Gedacht, “‘Mohammedan Religion Made It Necessary to Fire’: Massacres on the American Imperial Frontier from South Dakota to the Southern Philippines,” in *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, ed. Alfred W. McCoy et al. (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009), 398-399; On Carlisle and North American ‘Indian education’ programs, see Frank Schumacher, “Colonization through Education: A Comparative Exploration of Ideologies, Practices, and Cultural Memories of ‘Aboriginal Schools’ in the United States and Canada,” *Zeitschrift für Kanada-Studien* 26.2 (2006): 97-117.

<sup>95</sup> Michael H. Hunt and Steven I. Levine, *Arc of Empire: America’s Wars in Asia from the Philippines to Vietnam* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2012), 11-12.

it was on the frontier where American masculinity was proven and where newspaper correspondents wrote of the strange repugnance and allure of indigenous customs for their audiences back east. Indigenous peoples were paradoxically vilified for their savagery yet held up as examples of peoples who had resisted the coercive force of European imperialism, and whose primitive warrior cultures were “pure” or “noble” in their freedom from the complications of modernity. These contradictory impulses – exterminationist, assimilationist, and fetishist – were manifest in popular culture, where the “dime novels and stage shows of the late nineteenth century” anticipated and inspired later cinematic expressions of the frontier myth, and in the ethnographic kitsch that reduced the cultural history of North American peoples to a series of flattening visual tropes (the teepee, the headdress, the peace pipe, and so forth).<sup>96</sup> As Ter Ellingson demonstrates in his study of the discursive construct of the “Noble Savage,” the “negativizing forces of Enlightenment sociocultural evolutionary progressivism and nineteenth-century racism” alongside the “dialectic of vices and virtues” generated a complex of approaches to Native Americans that were sentimental and curious, yet rooted in an epistemology of violence.<sup>97</sup>

It is unsurprising then that U.S. servicemen and civilians carried this cultural baggage to the Southern Philippines.<sup>98</sup> Many of the leading American military figures in Mindanao and Sulu had significant experience during the Indian Wars of the late nineteenth-century, pacifying indigenous populations and ensuring the safety of white settler populations.

---

<sup>96</sup> Matthew Carter, *Myth of the Western: New Perspectives on Hollywood's Frontier Narrative* (Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2014), 1-2.

<sup>97</sup> Ter Ellingson, *The Myth of the Noble Savage* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2001), 375. Ellingson ties the myth to the “racist anthropology movement” in the nineteenth-century. In this section, I am more interested in the concept as a demonstration of the linkages between essentialized views of the Indian and the Moro in the popular imagination. The specialists and quasi-specialists who studied Moros during the American colonial period (detailed in a previous part of this chapter) were beholden to ideas of savage nobility, although not nearly to the degree that soldier and civilian non-specialists were.

<sup>98</sup> In his work, Walter L. Williams attempts to show how policy in the Philippines was directly influenced by the wars against the Native Americans in the nineteenth-century. According to Williams, men like Theodore Roosevelt likened the savagery of the Filipinos with that of the Native Americans, and believed that their transformation would come through similar means. Williams states that because of the frontier wars, “United States Army leaders were probably better equipped to fight a guerilla war than at any subsequent time in the twentieth century,” – Walter L. Williams, “United States Indian Policy and the Debate over Philippine Annexation: Implications for the Origins of American Imperialism,” *The Journal of American History* 66.4 (1980): 828.

Leonard Wood, the first Governor of the Moro Province, served as a surgeon and line officer in the U.S. Cavalry and saw action against Geronimo and the Chiricahua Apaches. John Pershing likewise served in the cavalry, participating in campaigns in the American Southwest against the Apaches and in North Dakota against the Sioux. Hugh Scott, the most influential military governor of Sulu, “served with distinction as a cavalry lieutenant in expeditions against the Sioux, Nez Percé and Cheyenne peoples. He was also an avid student of Native American lore and authored the most authoritative book on Native sign language.”<sup>99</sup> While U.S. military historians have yet to provide us with any definitive figures, it can be safely assumed that in the early campaigns against the Moros many lower-ranking officers and enlisted men had had previous experience fighting on the American frontier.<sup>100</sup> Exploring the lives of some of these men is a salient reminder that transfer points between the American West and the Mindanao interior were not only by way of comparable rhetoric, but also through the lived experiences of those serving.

The career of the military surgeon Charles MacDonald is a useful example of how personnel developed their skills through intra-imperial transit. Born in New York City in 1873 to a prominent family, MacDonald ran away at fifteen to join the Navy, but was discharged after six months at his father’s request. At eighteen, he enlisted with the 22<sup>nd</sup> Regiment of the New York National Guard, and over seven years of service helped suppress the Brooklyn streetcar riots and quell labour unrest in Buffalo. After qualifying as a surgeon, MacDonald served in Puerto Rico at the tail end of the Spanish-American War, where his regiment suffered the depredations of the environment and “tenacious resistance by the Spaniards.” He was then transferred to Fort Yates in North Dakota, where service “had been of the old-time frontier character, with much riding of the plains and more adjusting of Indian outlaw tangles and efforts to keep them on the Agency Reservation.” Moving on to the

---

<sup>99</sup> Gowing, “Moros and Indians,” 126-127. This article represents the most systematic attempt to compare the two peoples and their experiences with the Americans. It does, however, suffer from a lack of theoretical framing. Gowing’s focus is not so much on the cultural or imaginary linkages between the Moros and Native Americans as it is on policies.

<sup>100</sup> Other military officials who appear in this project also participated in actions against the Native Americans, these include: John C. Bates, J. Franklin Bell, Adna R. Chaffee, George W. Davis, William August Kobbé, Elwell S. Otis, and Nelson Miles. See Williams, “United States Indian Policy,” 828.



Philippines, MacDonald served a stint as Sanitary Inspector of Manila before being sent to Mindanao, where he fought the Moros under Leonard Wood. His brief biography described his time there in unpleasant terms, noting that “the command had many deaths occur as the result of combat service against the enemy, from deadly tropical diseases...for nine months the forces with which the lieutenant was serving lived in mud, ruin, and water holes, and endured hardships that destroyed even their animals.”<sup>101</sup> Charles MacDonald never rose to national prominence like John Pershing or Leonard Wood, but in many ways he was a typical American colonial in how he shuttled between conflicts, foreign and domestic alike. Along with those he served with, MacDonald filled a wide range of coercive roles – quelling strikes at the Buffalo rail yards, mopping up resistance after the conquest of Puerto Rico, managing a regime of surveillance and control over the indigenous peoples of the Black Hills, supervising everything from water quality to prostitution in Manila, and seeing active duty against the Moros in Mindanao. His was a truly imperial career that blurred lines between metropolitan and colonial service.

The civilians who took over Mindanao and Sulu were also liable to have had experience with Native American populations, as was the case with Governor Frank Carpenter. Writing to the U.S. Army Adjutant General in 1932, Carpenter mentioned that his service to the country had included work on the American frontier. “I participated in the ‘Cattle War’ in Johnson County, Wyoming, which was the result of efforts of the Stock Association to drive out homesteaders and others in the winter of 1891-92; Operations at Butte and other points in Montana on account of labor troubles; And believe I am entitled to notation in my record in connection with operations against hostile Indians on the Pine Ridge Reservation in South Dakota, during which the Wounded Knee fight occurred.”<sup>102</sup> Carpenter directly linked his later work in the Philippines, which was non-military, with previous service in the American West.

---

<sup>101</sup> “Outline of the Life of Charles Everett MacDonald, New York University, Medical Class of 1896,” 10 March 1936, Box 1, Folder 9. Charles E. MacDonald Papers, 1873-1936, USAHEC.

<sup>102</sup> Letter from Frank Carpenter to Adjutant General, 17 September 1932, Box 1. Frank Carpenter Papers, LOC-MD.

Connections between the Moros and the Native Americans were a constant in letters, diaries, government reports, and news reports originating from Mindanao and Sulu. En route to Lanao, the army surgeon Charles Hack wondered about the Moros. “They are said to be something like the Sioux Indians,” he wrote. Commenting on the inhabitants of the Philippine Islands, Hack believed that “such complete ignorance and superstition is only equaled in our lower types of American Indians.”<sup>103</sup> Hugh Drum, who served as an aide-de-camp to General Frank Baldwin in 1901, likewise described the Moros by way of familiar enemies. In his unpublished memoirs, he said of the Moros: “With an ancestry tracing to the 13<sup>th</sup> century they have the characteristics of a combination of Malay and Arab and even in some ways the American Navajo Indian.” Further on, he discussed how “as a warrior the Moro resembled the Apache Indian, fleet, courageous with a fatalistic spirit, physically strong and with a confidence resulting from past victories over the Spaniards and Filipino,” and noted that “Baldwin quickly perceived the Indian characteristics and methods in the Moro mode of warfare.”<sup>104</sup>

Attributing Native characteristics to the Moros made them knowable to incoming Americans, with racial comparison giving those fighting the Moros a frame of reference for what they could expect. It also likely provided some comfort. To colonials, the Native Americans were fierce warriors, but ones who ultimately submitted to the moral and material superiority of the expanding nation-state. Speaking at a dinner given by the Harmony Club in late 1913, Dean Worcester emphasized the importance of this colonial knowledge base, using Major Hugh Scott as an example. “He has had wide experience in dealing with the Indian in our own country,” Worcester noted, “and knew just how to attack the Moro problem.”<sup>105</sup> During his time on Jolo, Scott not only utilized his previous experiences with the Apaches but also kept abreast of occurrences with Native populations back in the United States, corresponding with the future Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Francis E. Leupp, about

---

<sup>103</sup> Journal of Charles W. Hack, 22 March 1902, Box 1, Folder 7. Charles W. Hack Papers, 1800-1926, LOC-MD; Journal of Charles W. Hack, 21 December 1901, Box 1, Folder 7. Charles Hack Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>104</sup> “Chapter 1: The Dato of the Malanos,” Unpublished Memoirs, Box 11, Folder 3. Hugh Drum Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>105</sup> “Says Square Deal Will Win Moros,” *New York Times*, 26 December 1913, 7.

Geronimo and the Bedonkohe Apaches under his leadership in the area of Fort Sill, Oklahoma.<sup>106</sup>

Comparisons were also raised when Moro or Lumad groups organized resistance movements. As Omar Dphrepaulezz observes, when John Pershing noticed the millenarian tendencies of the Lanao Moros he conflated them “with the Ghost Dance phenomenon of the Plains Indians whom he had fought in the continental United States more than a decade earlier.”<sup>107</sup> Likewise, when Edward Bolton, Governor of Davao district, was murdered by Manobo tribesmen in 1906, Tasker Bliss attributed it to unrest inspired by a movement “not unlike in principle the Ghost Dance craze among the American Indians.”<sup>108</sup> American officials chose not to view this sporadic millenarianism as expressions of “feelings of deprivation and a sense of disorientation” brought on by colonial rule, but instead used familiar cultural references as a means of explanation.<sup>109</sup>

Even in the later years of the American period, the press was eager to equate the Moros with Native Americans. In Luzon, the *Manila Daily Bulletin* reported in 1933 how the Solicitor General, Serafin Hillado, referenced American precedents for dealing with tribal marriages when adjudicating on the trial of a Moro woman accused of bigamy.<sup>110</sup> The *New*

---

<sup>106</sup> Letter from Francis E. Leupp to Hugh Scott, 5 November 1903, Box 55, Folder 4. Hugh Lenox Scott Papers, 1582-1981, LOC-MD. Leupp himself was a great advocate of the paternal uplift of the Native peoples of North America, going on to publish a book on the topic which complained about those “scientists” who criticized governmental schemes enacted by the Bureau – see Francis E. Leupp, *The Indian and His Problem* (New York: Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1910), 326-327.

<sup>107</sup> Omar Dphrepaulezz, “‘The Right Sort of White Men’: General Leonard Wood and the U.S. Army in the Southern Philippines, 1898-1906” (PhD diss., University of Connecticut, 2013), 116.

<sup>108</sup> Leonard Wood and Tasker Bliss, *Annual Report Department of Mindanao - July 1, 1905 to June 30, 1906* (Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1906), 44.

<sup>109</sup> Michael Adas, *Prophets of Rebellion: Millenarian Protest Movement Against the European Colonial Order* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1979), 183.

<sup>110</sup> “Case of Divorced Moro Woman Found Guilty of Bigamy Sent to Murphy,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 18 October 1933. Bitdu’s case was interesting in that she was convicted of bigamy and jailed for entering into a second marriage without formerly dissolving her first. At no point did she live with multiple spouses, as was the case with the Moro male elite, who often had multiple wives. Bitdu, who was convicted by the Court of Instance at Zamboanga, later had her conviction overturned as a result of a petition for clemency by Teopisto Guingona, head of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes. Christian Filipino authorities were harsher on women found in violation of marriage laws (often as a result of the simple mistake of going through divorce procedures only through the local religious authorities and not contacting the appropriate government offices) than they were on

*York Times* was even more explicit in their comparisons, and in an article entitled “Fighting Moros Are Like Our Indians” commented on the “strange and not very kind prank of fortune” that saw America acquire the Moros as wards. Reordering the colonial hierarchy, the *Times* reporter saw it as America’s mission to protect the Moros from the Filipinos, and described the former in terms of “noble savages,” stating that “the Moros are in many respects like the American Indians – fine, upstanding, self-respecting people, courageous unto ferocity, fearless and relentless enemies...and yet they face a sad end.”<sup>111</sup> No reference was made of the role the United States played in shaping the power structures at play in the archipelago.

The pervasiveness of the idea of Moro-as-Indian was bequeathed to the Filipino *ilustrado* class in cosmopolitan Manila. In his column “Common Sense,” Juan F. Hilario argued for a punitive solution to the ‘Moro Problem’, claiming that “Moros who defy the government and murder its duly appointed representatives deserve no conciliation or condescension...to me, the fate and lot of the Moro are the same as those of the American Indian. Whatever may be the outcome of the present agitation for Philippine independence, steps must be taken right now toward the solution of the Moro problem.”<sup>112</sup> Even among pro-independence Filipinos, the non-Christians of the archipelago were equated with the Native Americans. In a pamphlet printed in the United States and distributed to American politicians and journalists, the journalist José P. Melencio railed against arguments using non-Christian populations as justification for continued American rule. “It is not fair to predicate Filipino capacity for self-government on the looks, attire and backwardness of those mountain people,” he wrote. “They are to the Philippines what the Indians are to America – no more, no less.”<sup>113</sup> Melencio even got in a subtle shot at the Americans, claiming that Filipinos were

---

men. See also: “New Doctrine on Mohammedan Marriages is Written by Recto,” *Mindanao Herald*, 2 October 1935.

<sup>111</sup> Nicholas Roosevelt, “Fighting Moros Are Like Our Indians,” *New York Times*, 12 September 1926, 8.

<sup>112</sup> Juan F. Hilario, “Common Sense: A Filipino’s View,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 20 October 1932.

<sup>113</sup> José P. Melencio, *Arguments Against Philippine Independence and their Answers* (Washington: The Philippines Press Bureau, 1919), 27.

doing their best to civilize the non-Christians while not relegating them to reservations.<sup>114</sup>

Questions of Filipino independence aside, what is fascinating here is how the experience of the American frontier, brought to the Philippines by way of American colonial personnel in the early 1900s, still served as a salient point of comparison decades later.

The experiences of John Park Finley provide further linkages between the Moros and Native Americans in the colonial imagination. Finley is best remembered for his contributions to climatology, which derived from studying extreme weather patterns in remote outposts on the Great Plains for the U.S. Army Signal Corps. He wrote a pioneering book on how one should observe tornados.<sup>115</sup> Finley transferred to the Southern Philippines later in his career, and was the longest-serving district governor in the Moro Province, running Zamboanga and its environs from 1903 until 1913. During his time on Mindanao and after, Finley was preoccupied with the development of the Moros and their civilizational capabilities. Perhaps taking the advice of David P. Barrows, Finley dabbled in ethnography, publishing a study of the Subanon people after leaving Mindanao.<sup>116</sup>

Like Barrows, Finley saw nineteenth-century policies towards the Native Americans as gravely flawed, and believed that “administrative and social engineering policies in Mindanao would require a much more nuanced and tactical approach to colonial tutelage than the austere requisites of crude submission.”<sup>117</sup> Writing for the *Army and Navy Weekly*, Finley gave a third-person account of a trip he took to Constantinople as an emissary of the Moros of the Zamboanga Peninsula. Editorializing towards the end of the article, Finley claimed “we have a history connected with the American Indian that has been rightly called ‘A Century of Dishonor,’ at which every American should bow his head in shame.” He asked the reader rhetorically: “Are we going to repeat that dishonor upon a people who worship the same

---

<sup>114</sup> Ibid.

<sup>115</sup> Marlene Bradford, *Scanning the Skies: A History of Tornado Forecasting* (Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 2001), 17-18.

<sup>116</sup> John Park Finley and William Churchill, *The Subanu: Studies of a Sub-Visayan Mountain Folk of Mindanao* (Washington: The Carnegie Institution of Washington, 1913).

<sup>117</sup> Hawkins, *Making Moros*, 20.

omnipotent God that we do, simply because they fail to salaam in our particular manner?”<sup>118</sup> The comparative between the Moros and the Native Americans still stood, but colonial rule over the former, in Finley’s view, was a chance to correct the mistakes made when ‘civilizing’ the latter.

Finley further elaborated his ideas in an essay he wrote for the *Journal of Race Development* in 1913, where he claimed that developmental failures in the “great Northwest” of the United States resulted from the “control of elements” who exploited the situation for “the maximum of immediate personal benefit, regardless of either the general welfare or the rights of others.”<sup>119</sup> His comparisons were most forcefully expressed in his belief that “the lack of true appreciation of the science and art of cooperation, influenced by the adverse elements of speculation, has greatly retarded the industrial and commercial development of our Indian wards in the states, and under similar conditions is experienced as an unreasonable restraint upon *a like development of our Indian wards in the Philippines*.”<sup>120</sup> By studying the data the Indian Bureau accumulated about the problems in the Western United States, colonial administrators could avoid “serious errors...in conducting the regeneration of our Indian wards in the Southern Philippines.”<sup>121</sup> When compared to others, Finley’s views on the Moros and other non-Christians were progressive, yet he viewed them almost entirely as a corrective to the imperfect administration of Native American populations. The conflation of the term “Indian wards” was purposeful. If managed correctly, the Moros could escape the fate of the Native Americans and become “self-supportive productive agents rather than continue as vagrant parasitic nomads.”<sup>122</sup>

---

<sup>118</sup> “Colonel Finley Gives Interesting Account of his Trip on Behalf of the Mohammedan Moros,” *Army and Navy Weekly*, 11 July 1914. The inter-imperial dimensions of Finley’s trip to late Ottoman Turkey are further discussed in Chapter Eight.

<sup>119</sup> John Park Finley, “Race Development by Industrial Means among the Moros and Pagans of the Southern Philippines,” *The Journal of Race Development* 3.3 (1913): 352.

<sup>120</sup> *Ibid.*, 354 (emphasis added).

<sup>121</sup> *Ibid.*, 360.

<sup>122</sup> *Ibid.*, 364.

Finley also participated in intra-colonial discussions on how to ideally manage ‘dependent peoples.’ At the annual Lake Mohonk Conference of Friends of the Indian and Other Dependent Peoples, held at an expansive Victorian castle ninety miles upstate from New York City, the Anglo-Saxon doyens of American colonialism avidly debated civilizational imperatives. The conference was started in 1883 by the resort’s owner, the Quaker philanthropist Albert K. Smiley, as a means for those men designing and implementing Indian policy to discuss pertinent topics that affected its formulation.<sup>123</sup> After America’s acquisition of overseas colonial empire, it expanded to include the “other Dependent Peoples” found in its title. Thus, at the same conference one could hear Leonard Wood speaking on the Philippines, the associate editor of the *Manila Daily Bulletin* giving his “observations on race contact,” the prominent eugenicist Charles B. Davenport reflecting upon “good and bad heredity in relation to dependent races,” a multi-denominational panel considering missionary work among the Native Americans, and the climactic determinist Ellsworth Huntington speaking on “climate as a factor in colonial administration.”<sup>124</sup>

Discussions about the Philippines and the Moros at Lake Mohonk were of a self-satisfied sort. Hugh Scott, reflecting on his time as the Governor of Sulu, told those assembled that “the United States [has] had a much more altruistic purpose than any other colonizing nation in the Orient and has held consistently to the purpose of governing the Islands in the interest of their inhabitants.” The “fearful condition of anarchy” found in Mindanao and Sulu when the Americans arrived was ameliorated by teaching the Moros “the meaning of justice.”<sup>125</sup> Bishop Charles Brent spoke similarly of the “magnificent” work done by the British in India and Egypt, the Dutch in Java, and placed the American occupation of

---

<sup>123</sup> Paul Kramer, *The Blood of Government*, 285.

<sup>124</sup> *Report of the Thirty-Fourth Annual Lake Mohonk Conference on the Indian and Other Dependent Peoples* (Lake Mohonk, N.Y.: Lake Mohonk Conference on the Indian and Other Dependent Peoples, 1916), 4-6. The reports produced by each conference make for interesting reading on intra-imperial strategies of rule, focusing as they do on all peoples considered ‘dependents’ by the American ruling elite of the time. As such, the Muslims of the Southern Philippines are given only minor notice alongside Hawaiians, Christian Filipinos, Puerto Ricans, and Native Americans.

<sup>125</sup> Hugh L. Scott, “A Soldier’s View of the Philippine Question,” in *Proceedings of the Twenty-Fifth Annual Meeting of the Lake Mohonk Conference of Friends of the Indian and Other Dependent Peoples*, ed. Lilian D. Powers (Lake Mohonk, N.Y.: Lake Mohonk Conference, 1907), 121.

the Philippines alongside these noble colonial projects.<sup>126</sup> Portraying American colonial acquisition passively, Brent stated he was “of the opinion that our nation would never have been shaken out of its placid self-conceit and serene ignorance of the Orient if a direct responsibility in the Far East had not been thrust upon us.”<sup>127</sup> The speeches of Scott and Brent, both of whom had extensive experience in the Moro Province, were presented to audiences of officials devising policy for the Native Americans, the Puerto Ricans, and the Hawaiians, and those men likewise spoke of their experiences to Scott and Brent. These discussions represented a dense interplay of intra-imperial knowledge that travelled in multiple directions: from metropole to colony and vice-versa, and between the colonies themselves.

John Finley made direct comparisons between the Moros and the Native Americans during his speech at Lake Mohonk. The role of the U.S. Army in the Southern Philippines was analogous to “that which it has long performed in relation to the Indian tribes in the western part of the United States.” This “close general analogy” indicated “a duty, for the present at least, of limited supervision and control, operating upon the tribal governments of the Moros, rather than an attempt to substitute an American or Philippine government acting directly upon the individual Moros.”<sup>128</sup> Citing a speech by William McKinley to the Philippine Commission in 1900, Finley noted that “in dealing with the uncivilized of the islands” Americans should “adopt the same course followed by Congress, in permitting the tribes of our North American Indians to maintain their tribal organization and government...such tribal governments should, however, be subjected to wise and firm regulation, and without undue or petty interference, constant and active effort should be exercised to prevent barbarous practices and introduce civilized customs.”<sup>129</sup> To Finley, the

---

<sup>126</sup> Charles H. Brent, *The Inspiration of Responsibility and Other Papers* (New York and London: Longmans, Green and Co., 1915), 154-55. The book is a collection of Brent’s sermons and speeches. The one quoted above is called “Progress and Problems in the Philippines” and was presented at Mohonk in 1910.

<sup>127</sup> *Ibid.*, 156.

<sup>128</sup> John Park Finley, “The Non-Christians of the Southern Islands of the Philippines – Their Self-Government and Industrial Development,” Paper Given at Lake Mohonk, 24 October 1912, Box 38. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>129</sup> *Ibid.*



Moro ought to be raised up not through direct missionary efforts but rather “industrial proselytizing,” a belief in alignment with the aims of the Carlisle Indian Industrial School and other institutions created to recast Native Americans as U.S. citizens. This belief in transformation through Western modes of education and commerce underpinned civilizing efforts in the Southern Philippines.

The linkages white Americans made between the Moros and Native Americans were byproducts of a century of continental conquest. Not only were many of the personal biographies of those serving in the Southern Philippines linked to frontier warfare against the Natives, but dominant Anglo-Saxon ideas about Native savagery and their capability of attaining civilization were easily transferred across the Pacific to the Moros, another problematic group who, by virtue of their centuries-long resistance to Spanish rule, shared no common cultural touchstones with the Americans. The rhetorical framing of Moros-as-Indians was not idle comparison, but represented a strong current in intra-imperial discourse that captured the imaginations of American officials and helped guide policy in the Southern Philippines.

## **The South as *Tabula Rasa***

In its triumphal celebration of a decade of American rule, the editors of the *Mindanao Herald* described the Southern Philippines as a vast unexploited space. Rich in resources, the land was ready for brave captains of industry to develop it and become fabulously wealthy in the process. “The world is growing older and unexplored lands are becoming fewer each year,” the *Herald* proclaimed. “The heart of Africa and other interior lands will still hold out their attractive uncertainties to capital, but Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago lie out in the open.”<sup>130</sup> Conjuring visions of the “ancient glory of the spice markets of Mindanao,” the editors urged the American people to establish “Mindanao’s industrial supremacy” through development of nearly every sort, from the extraction of gold and oil to the establishment of vast agricultural estates.<sup>131</sup> The entire issue reads as an advertisement for would-be American

---

<sup>130</sup> J.A. Hackett and J.H. Sutherland, “A Decennium,” *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 2.

<sup>131</sup> *Ibid.*, 1.

settlers, and cites the benefits of plantation labour for children, how “the necessity of better food inculcates a spirit of good house-keeping” in women, and how sound colonial government leads to profit for the American patriarch.<sup>132</sup>

A section on the Lake Lanao region in the same paper is even more explicit about the transformations brought by the colonial regime: “The lamented fate of the noble red man has long since ceased to inspire our bards. The forces that set to work on the bleak Atlantic coast have slowly worked their way around the world. They are here, and it is only a question of how long, until the map is re-made.”<sup>133</sup> Situating Mindanao within a colonial process that started with the settlement of Eastern North America Atlantic by European settlers, the *Herald* linked the occupation of the Southern Philippines to the larger projects of mapping, settlement, and economic exploitation that came to define the late colonial period. In the American colonial imaginary, the inhabitants of Mindanao and Sulu had forfeited their rights to the land through under-utilization. The *Herald* briefly lamented this certainty, pausing “long enough to record a lingering regret for the vanishing point of ancient customs and laws, wholly inconsistent with our method of thought, but fraught with much of the simple joy of living.”<sup>134</sup>

If the Moros and other non-Christians were objects of fantasy and comparison, so too was their land. For American officials, missionaries, and businessmen, the South was a place of economic and human potential left largely untouched by a Spanish colonial culture unable or unwilling to develop them. The disappeared frontier that Frederick Jackson Turner so famously said marked the end of “the first period of American history” simply shifted across the Pacific, and rugged individuals looking to sate desires for new ventures in virgin territories just needed to travel a little further now.<sup>135</sup> In this formulation, the uncivilized inhabitants of the Southern Philippines posed little problem. Their lands were “seen as fertile

---

<sup>132</sup> Ibid.

<sup>133</sup> “District of Lanao,” *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 79.

<sup>134</sup> Ibid.

<sup>135</sup> Frederick Jackson Turner, *The Frontier in American History* (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1921), 42.

and rich in natural resources but woefully underdeveloped, with vast tracts of rain forest wild and uncharted and inhabited only by ‘savage’ peoples whose slash-and-burn agricultural patterns were deemed primitive and destructive.”<sup>136</sup> As with the Native Americans before them, the Muslims and Lumad tribes forfeited their right to the land by virtue of their inability to settle and develop it. This was hardly a novel development in the global colonial landscape, as European empires were likewise using the idea of *tabula rasa* – the blank slate – to describe away indigenous development and culture.<sup>137</sup>

To reshape the colonial spaces of Mindanao and Sulu, American officials and their collaborators first needed to map the territory. As Thongchai Winichakul notes in his study of the creation of the Thai geo-body, for this to happen there needs to be a suppression or suspension of the “premodern hierarchical polity and the nonbounded realm.”<sup>138</sup> In other words, preexisting forms of cultural and geographic knowledge and organization need to be overlooked or actively ignored, replaced by the panoptic gaze of the modern map and its territorial demarcations. Beginning with the purchase of Jesuit maps and the formation of government organizations like the Geodetic Survey, American officials in the Philippines

---

<sup>136</sup> Michael Adas, *Dominance by Design*, 153.

<sup>137</sup> See, for example, John Marriot’s description of James Mill and *The History of British India*. Mill positioned India “in a particular scale of civilization. The scale may have been distinct in that it was calibrated by the pursuit of utility demonstrated by individual nations, but the outcome was the same – India was a paternal despotism, positioned in a hierarchy of progress between societies of savage independence and those of Europe. Indeed, Mill went as far as to deny the claims of orientalist that Indian culture had ancient roots of great sophistication. To the contrary, since ancient times India, because of lack of liberty and individuality, had not advanced. It was immature, weak and primitive – a *tabula rasa* upon which British rule could write advantageously to reform and progress India along the path of enlightened civilization.” John Marriott, *The Other Empire: Metropolis, India and Progress in the Colonial Imagination* (Manchester and New York: Manchester University Press, 2003), 133. The intersection of colonial thinking and the management of space is found in Liora Bigon, “Urban Planning, Colonial Doctrines and Street Naming in French Dakar and British Lagos, c. 1850-1930,” *Urban History* 36.3 (2009): 426-448. The cartographic imagination figured heavily in colonial discourse around the world. To be a successful world power, it was popularly believed, a nation needed to acquire and reshape the destinies of colonial possessions. Mapping or remapping physical geography was often an initial, and continuing, feature of control. See Raymond B. Craib, “Relocating Cartography,” *Postcolonial Studies* 12.4 (2009): 481-490; Dana Leibsohn, “*Dentro y Fuera de los Muros*: Manila, Ethnicity, and Colonial Cartography,” *Ethnohistory* 61.2 (2014): 229-251; Masayuki Sato, “Imagined Peripheries: The World and its Peoples in Japanese Cartographic Imagination,” *Diogenes* 44.173 (1996): 119-145; Pierre Singaravelou, “The Institutionalisation of ‘Colonial Geography’ in France, 1880-1940,” *Journal of Historical Geography* 37.2 (2011): 149-157; Emma Jinhua Teng, *Taiwan’s Imagined Geography: Chinese Colonial Travel Writing and Pictures, 1683-1895* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2006).

<sup>138</sup> Thongchai Winichakul, *Siam Mapped: A History of the Geo-Body of a Nation* (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 1994), 99.

engaged in a sustained campaign of mapping, which helped direct the “territorial knowledge construction” used to transform the Philippines.<sup>139</sup> Concerns about the inhabitants of the lands under scrutiny were pushed aside, as the guiding hand of colonial science would rescue them from their primitive state of non-productivity.<sup>140</sup>

From 1899 onwards, American officials and scholars, in the words of Michael Hawkins, “took great care not only to explore and survey the land technically but also to seek out opportunities to penetrate the mysterious, demythologize the terrifying, and scientifically secularize the various mythological aspects of Mindanao’s geography.”<sup>141</sup> The documents left to men like John Pershing by the Spanish described the Moros as incapable of mastering their surroundings and the Americans viewed the Spanish themselves as only slightly better in their own attempts on the edges of the Mindanao vastness.<sup>142</sup> The intelligence-gathering trip of Lieutenant G. Souard Turner in the spring of 1903 was typical of early American efforts. Sent out from Cotabato, Turner conducted a vigorous survey of the physical geography along the coast to Lebak, describing in detail water sources, edible vegetation, the density of forests, and the quality of the trails he traversed. Turner also gathered information on the composition of local Moro and Tiruray villages, taking notes on population figures, local politics, recent outbreaks of cholera, and the relative disposition of the inhabitants towards the Americans. Appended to the report were Turner’s extensive observations on the Tiruray people, whom he thought were “good and generous” but “physically inferior to the Moros.”<sup>143</sup> Combining the work of military intelligence gathering with geographic survey,

---

<sup>139</sup> Even still, not all Americans were impressed with the quality of Spanish cartography. John R. White called Mindanao “a land unknown” and remarked that its “gloomy forests and its glorious sunlit grassy plateaus were mapped only in outline or by Spanish draftsmen with vivid imagination. Here and there a Jesuit priest or a captain with some flickering flame of conquistador spirit had journeyed into the interior to return with tales of magnificently retined Moro chiefs or tribes of man-eating savages.” – White, *Bullets and Bolos*, 190.

<sup>140</sup> Scott Kirsch, “Insular Territories: U.S. Colonial Science, Geopolitics, and the (Re)Mapping of the Philippines,” *The Geographical Journal* doi. 10.1111/geoj.12072 (2014): 9-10.

<sup>141</sup> Hawkins, *Making Moros*, 41.

<sup>142</sup> Unmarked Spanish history of the Southern Philippines. Box 319. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>143</sup> Report on Intelligence-Gathering Trip from Cotabato to Lebak, 20 April 1903, Box 1, Folder 1. G. Souard Turner Papers, 20 April – 13 May 1903, USAHEC.

demography, and ethnography, Turner's journey encapsulated the broad imperatives of Americans in their quest to know the landscape.

During the military period, acquiring cartographic knowledge was of preeminent concern in spaces like Jolo, where knowing the land meant easier suppression of resistance to American rule. Writing to Hugh Scott in 1903, Edward Davis, adjutant general at Zamboanga, ordered that as soon as the punitive expedition against the Moro leader Panglima Hassan concluded, Scott should "resume the topographical survey of the central section of the island, seeing to it that the surveying party consist of at least 200 men."<sup>144</sup> At this time, clearing trails and mapping the spaces of greatest Moro resistance was of primary importance to the authorities in Jolo.<sup>145</sup> Elsewhere, the need to establish lines of communication between posts necessitated hard surveying trips into the Mindanao backcountry, such as that taken by Lieutenant Roderick Dew of the 23<sup>rd</sup> Infantry in 1909. Travelling overland on previously unknown (to the Americans) trails from Davao to Fort Pikit, Dew and his men faced the indignities of leeches, blistered feet, and treacherous paths in order to ascertain whether a telegraph line could be placed between the two places and whether mounted travel between them was possible.<sup>146</sup>

When American troops were not fighting they were often on expeditions. "The work of exploring and mapping the area included in the Department of Mindanao is proceeding as rapidly as the limited number of suitable and available officers will permit," wrote Tasker Bliss in 1906. "It is a work of very great difficulty and to accomplish it properly requires a regularly organized bureau, the detail of a large number of officers and liberal expenditure."<sup>147</sup> Bliss also boasted of work done in the "little known Mt. Malindang region," where a party that included a U.S. Army surgeon and an official from the Philippine Bureau

---

<sup>144</sup> Letter from Edward Davis to Hugh Scott, 1 December 1903, Box 55, Folder 4. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>145</sup> Letter from Leonard Wood to Hugh Scott, 16 October 1903, Box 55, Folder 3. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>146</sup> Letter from Roderick Dew to Commanding Officer, Davao, 13 October 1909, Box 320. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>147</sup> Wood and Bliss, *Annual Report 1906*, 44.

of Forestry summited the nine thousand foot peak and took “photographs... topographical drawings, clinometer sightings, altitudes of peaks, barometric and thermometric readings” as well as discovered “a number of new genera and species of birds and mammals...together with a botanical collection of 1,000 specimens.”<sup>148</sup> Understanding the Southern Philippines through scientific observation was of great concern. In his 1907 annual report, Bliss cited the need for three companies of engineers to create a progressive military map. With these men, he claimed the entirety of the Moro Province could be mapped within a few years, something necessary if development of the region was to proceed at optimal speed.<sup>149</sup>

At the end of 1913, Frank W. Carpenter took over as the first civilian governor in the soon-to-be Department of Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>150</sup> He viewed the region in terms of its developmental potential. Its unknown spaces had been mapped under the direction of Wood, Bliss, and Pershing, and were now ready to be rationalized by civilian experts. Carpenter reflected expansively that “this vast territory, greater than many of the kingdoms and republics of Europe and the Americas” was “capable of supporting fifty millions of people.” It also contained “the great undeveloped natural resources of the Philippines” that would serve as the engine for the development of the national body.<sup>151</sup> The maps were made, but there was still much hard work to be done harnessing the land’s productivity. Mindanao in particular was thought to hold “practically all first-class agricultural land remaining in the public domain of the Philippine Islands.” In a 1914 report, Carpenter described it in grandiose terms:

One may travel directly from north to south or from east to west, on foot or even on horseback, for days together traversing such areas which are obviously capable of irrigation for which an abundance of water would

---

<sup>148</sup> Ibid.

<sup>149</sup> Tasker Bliss, *Annual Report – Department of Mindanao* (Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1907) 31-32. This version of the Annual Report, as opposed to the lengthier one published in Manila, appears to have been for distribution mainly in the Southern Philippines, and was not as rigorous in its reporting.

<sup>150</sup> Carpenter became provincial governor on 15 December 1913, but the Moro Province did not officially become the Department of Mindanao and Sulu until 23 July 1914.

<sup>151</sup> Memorandum from Frank Carpenter to Rafael Palma, 24 February 1920, Box 1. Frank Carpenter Papers, LOC-MD.

seem to be easily obtainable from near-by rivers. When the practically uninhabited areas are cultivated at all the soil is rarely plowed or more seriously disturbed than by the point of the sharpened stick or jungle knife with which the seed is planted between the grass roots after the grass itself has been cut closely to the ground by these same knives. With even this very primitive method of planting and practically without subsequent cultivation, rice yields a hundredfold under ordinary climactic conditions.<sup>152</sup>

In the American view, any problems were not with the quality of the land – thought to be unbelievably fertile and nearly limitless in its potential – but with the natives themselves, mired as they were in a state of unproductivity. If the Moros could be convinced to settle in model agricultural colonies then they would evolve “from their present state of almost non-productiveness to one of great economic value to this country, this aside from the beginning of a great forward movement toward their general betterment and civilization, with the certainty that the next generation would compare favourably with any producing community in the Islands of the Orient.”<sup>153</sup> The transformation of the land and the transformation of the people were inextricably connected, and each needed study and reconfiguration. As we will see, settling and resettling Moro, Filipino, and Lumad populations was an issue that occupied the minds of American policymakers throughout the colonial period.

Surveys were a constant source of tension, with Moro villagers often fearing (correctly) that they portended the appropriation and re-purposing of their lands. In 1914, the annual report for the Department of Mindanao and Sulu claimed that survey parties in the Mindanao interior were facing widespread opposition from Moros. The report gave no indication of why such opposition existed, but did note that the surveying parties were to be commended as they had used “amicable discussion” and “the patient demonstration of moral

---

<sup>152</sup> Frank Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 370.

<sup>153</sup> Letter from Frank Carpenter to Dean Worcester, 13 May 1914, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL. The letter is from a larger exchange between Carpenter and Worcester about the viability of agricultural colonization schemes, Filipinization, and colonial politics in the region. Worcester, the exiting grandee, advises Carpenter to be cautious about playing politics or upsetting the status quo during his time in office.

force” to persuade the Moros to allow them to continue their work and thus saved the government from embarrassment.<sup>154</sup> James Fugate, Governor of Sulu in the 1920s and 1930s, was less complimentary of the surveyors, complaining to the district engineer that the parties were too readily given permits for firearms (which they then used recklessly), cut down plants with impunity, and planned roads haphazardly. Such recklessness encouraged Moros “to the hazard of their life in the protection of their property,” while the presence of so many firearms “provokes attitudes inviting attack rather than protection.”<sup>155</sup> Fugate, who sympathized deeply with the Moros (often to the chagrin of Americans and Filipinos), saw the drive for development taking place with its own frenzied logic – one that could not or would not take into account those already living in these supposedly empty lands.

Opening up the Southern Philippines became a prerogative of the entire colonial polity, and from 1914 onwards Mindanao and Sulu were advertised enthusiastically as sites for settlement and business. The Department of Mindanao and Sulu had a booklet printed for the Second Annual Philippine Exposition which acted as an extended pitch aimed at potential homesteaders and investors. “The Department of Mindanao and Sulu, with its unoccupied areas suitable for agricultural investments, eagerly welcomes immigrants and capitalists,” it read. “There is an abundance of work for such labor as may choose to immigrate from the more crowded provinces of the north...If you are a prospective investor, if you wish to establish an agricultural enterprise in the most prospective, most salubrious portion of the tropics, it will be well for you to communicate with the authorities of the Department at Zamboanga.”<sup>156</sup> When not reporting sensational stories of Moro banditry, Manila newspapers advertised the South as a place where Filipinos could make a better life, simultaneously aiding national unity by settling the Southern Philippines with productive Christians who would integrate far-flung areas and tap into the wealth of the region’s resources.<sup>157</sup>

---

<sup>154</sup> Frank Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 372.

<sup>155</sup> Letter from James Fugate to N.J. Hollis, 15 June 1929, Box 29, Folder 28. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>156</sup> *The Department of Mindanao and Sulu at the Second Philippine Exposition* (Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Co., 1914), 17-19.

<sup>157</sup> Roberto Villanueva, “Chain of Roads Luring Settlers to Mindanao to be Finished Next June,” *Manila Tribune*, 2 August 1936. The article claimed that massive infrastructural programs taking place would “tap all



American-approved Muslim leaders like the Sultan of Sulu and Datu Piang of Cotabato were featured in news stories advocating these goals as a way to show that Muslim inhabitants of the South were on board with the intended transformations,<sup>158</sup> and the spread of air travel and other new technologies were heralded as means to develop the land more rapidly.<sup>159</sup>

The new provinces (formerly districts) of the Department of Mindanao and Sulu actively promoted themselves to settlers. In a 1920 pamphlet, Cotabato advertised itself as the “largest and most fertile province in the Philippine Islands.” It was “the paradise of the homeseeker from over-crowded Luzon and Visayas.”<sup>160</sup> The pamphlet further claimed that any crop would thrive in Cotabato, and that low population density (18 inhabitants per square mile) made the province excellent for settlement. The Maguindanao population was depicted as ignorant yet harmless. When a Moro evaded the orders of the government and was caught “he meekly [submitted]” and considered it “a joke on himself when punished.”<sup>161</sup> The valley surrounding the Rio Grande was praised at length, and the writers of the pamphlet claimed that “the great agricultural possibilities of this magnificent valley which if only partially cultivated would not only prove the granary of the Philippine Islands but would produce sufficient rice, corn and other food crops to create a large export trade.”<sup>162</sup> For American and Filipino colonial elites in Cotabato, advertising the benefits of the unsullied land meant an increase in settlers from the North, who were thought to be more amenable to agricultural labour than the Muslims. The crowded North, with its over-tilled and pestilence-stricken lands, would be forgotten once they moved south where “thousands of acres in the great

---

the natural resources of Mindanao in ten years. So that at the minimum expense of the Commonwealth government, the present administration expects to see Mindanao fully developed and wealth-producing land by the end of the Commonwealth transition period, when the Filipino nation finally acquires its complete and absolute independence.”

<sup>158</sup> “Sulu Sultan Urges Roads for Mindanao,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 3 August 1931.

<sup>159</sup> “Gov’t to Push Development of Mindanao,” *Manila Tribune*, 25 March 1936.

<sup>160</sup> Advertising Pamphlet: “Cotabato: Largest and Most Fertile Province in the Philippine Islands,” 26711-4, Box 1123. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), Record Group 350.3 – Entry 5. National Archives Building, College Park, Maryland. (Henceforth referenced as RG 350.3, NA-CP)

<sup>161</sup> *Ibid.*, 3.

<sup>162</sup> *Ibid.*, 8.

province of Cotabato were lying idle waiting, even begging for but a little attention to make thousands of happy and prosperous homes.”<sup>163</sup>

For some Americans, the interior of Mindanao was also a potential dumping ground for unwanted peoples closer to home. John Tyler Morgan, a six-term U.S. senator and one-time Grand Dragon in the Ku Klux Klan, viewed America’s colonial possessions as ideal spaces for the relocation of Southern blacks. In 1902, he went so far as to propose this idea to Secretary of War Elihu Root, who dutifully passed it on to General Adna R. Chaffee, then commander of the Department of the East. The idea was taken seriously enough that Chaffee forwarded it to General George W. Davis, the military commander of the Southern Philippines, who considered the plan in a remarkable twenty-three-page response. Senator Morgan believed that the “easily controlled surplus blacks” of the American South could be induced to resettle in “three or four islands remote from Luzon.” The benefits of this would be two-fold: racial tensions in the continental United States would be eased, and domestic opposition to colonial empire would dissipate as white troops would no longer bear the brunt of maintaining the far-flung possessions.<sup>164</sup>

Black regiments served effectively in the Philippine-American War, and some officers like Hugh Drum, who commanded a Negro Company in the 25<sup>th</sup> Infantry, commented favourably on the “racial harmony” between the black troops and the Filipinos.<sup>165</sup> Morgan also predicted that race relations between the natives and the permanent African American settlers would be harmonious.<sup>166</sup> In his response, Davis agreed that Mindanao was in need of settlement, stating that in its undeveloped state “the world would not be poorer if the ocean waves rolled where now are those unoccupied and savage islands.” He compared the

---

<sup>163</sup> Ibid., 7.

<sup>164</sup> Letter from George W. Davis to Adna R. Chaffee, 17 April 1902, Box 1, Folder 1. George W. Davis Papers, 1896-1902, USAHEC.

<sup>165</sup> “Chapter 1: The Dato of the Malanos,” Unpublished Memoirs, Box 11, Folder 3. Hugh Drum Papers, LOC-MD. Drum’s experiences speak to broader issues of race that arose from the conquest of the Philippines, and the conflicted feelings of many African American soldiers who fought there because of their own histories with racism and racial violence in the American South. See Brian G. Shellum, *Black Officer in a Buffalo Soldier Regiment* (Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2010).

<sup>166</sup> Letter from George W. Davis to Adna R. Chaffee, 17 April 1902. George Davis Papers, USAHEC.

potentialities of Mindanao favourably to the British and Dutch colonies in Southeast Asia, and listed the various labour schemes used in the Dutch East Indies and Malaya.<sup>167</sup>

Davis' plan modeled labour contracts on those used by planters in the West Indies and the British authorities in Calcutta for Chinese coolie labourers. Louisiana sugarcane producers could relocate to the Southern Philippines, and sign African American men to contracts. They would bring their families, and once their contracts had expired "would have an opportunity of bettering themselves by engaging in *abaca*, coffee, cacao and rice culture." Davis was frank in his dismissal of using black troops in this scheme, and claimed that there was "no modern precedent now recalled of an attempt to utilize a regiment for a time as soldiers and then to transform them into tiller of the soil they have occupied and guarded." He viewed the "colored troops" as "aristocratic" and incapable of transitioning to tropical agriculture. The non-military black contract labourer or settler, Davis thought, would best populate the readily exploitable lands of Mindanao.<sup>168</sup>

The fantasies of men like Morgan and Davis were little more than frameworks for ethnic cleansing, although Davis saw his plans in keeping with the great migrations of Europeans to America in the nineteenth-century. However, because the Philippines was environmentally unsuitable for the white man, it would be American blacks who would take up the mantle of developing the archipelago – and conveniently leaving the United States. Davis saw Spanish, Portuguese, English, French and Dutch colonial success stories in the Caribbean and South America as the result of the importation of African slave labour, and the same successes could be had in the Philippines if African Americans could be induced to settle there. "When Mindanao is thus occupied with industrious immigrants from our southern states, when its sugar lands are in use, its hill and mountain slopes are in *abaca*, coffee, and cacao, when cultivation is as general as it is in Cebu, then there will be a population of several millions where are now found only the native aborigines and savage

---

<sup>167</sup> Ibid.

<sup>168</sup> Ibid.

Moros who would as soon think of suicide as of being without a rifle, *kris* or spear.”<sup>169</sup>

Morgan and Davis’ schemes for relocating the Southern blacks to Mindanao never came to fruition, but are evidence of the ways American domestic politico-racial prerogatives commingled with the idea of the Southern Philippines as an unsullied space where colonial empire could inscribe itself.

The possible migration of African-Americans to Mindanao was considered as late as 1909. That year, the *Mindanao Herald* ran an article claiming Booker T. Washington, the famed educator, was considering a proposition to bring a “large negro colony” from America to develop the resources of the Cotabato Valley. The newspaper believed that this was a “good proposition from Washington’s point of view” but pointed out that indigenous labour should be developed first. When these natives got “started right under the white man’s guidance” the entire province would flourish. The *Herald* also favoured a plan to bring in 50,000 Chinese labourers, noting that Datu Piang – “the brightest man the valley has produced in years” – was “half Chino.”<sup>170</sup>

In the waning years of the American presence in the Philippines, Mindanao was likewise seen as a space of settlement for another maligned population: Germany’s Jews. In the face of increasing persecution from the Nazi regime, Jewish refugee organizations scrambled to find countries willing to accept immigrants. The response from Western nations was lukewarm, and at times outright hostile. The United States adjusted their yearly quota of German and Austrian Jewish refugees to 27,000 but this was not enough. With no entry quotas, and as a territory run by the United States, the Philippines “represented a ‘back door’” to America.<sup>171</sup> After the failed Evian Conference, Presidents Roosevelt and Quezon both spoke positively of Jewish refugees settling in Mindanao. In early 1939, a team known as the

---

<sup>169</sup> Ibid.

<sup>170</sup> “The District of Cotabato,” *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 77. Washington’s ideas engaged with the global elsewhere. For examples, see Zimmerman, *Alabama in Africa*, 20-65.

<sup>171</sup> Frank Ephraim, “The Mindanao Plan: Political Obstacles to Jewish Refugee Settlement,” *Holocaust and Genocide Studies* 20.3 (2006): 411.

Mindanao Exploration Commission assembled to travel to the island and report on the possibility of Jewish settlement there.<sup>172</sup>

From the start, there was opposition to Jewish immigration. Before the committee had even reached the Philippines, the revolutionary hero General Emilio Aguinaldo spoke out against the plan, claiming that all the Filipinos who wanted to settle in Mindanao should be given priority before any foreign population. Underlying this relatively benign nativist argument was a deeper vein of anti-Semitism. Aguinaldo explicitly blamed the Jews for their problems in Germany. “If cultured, highly industrialized, strongly organized Germany could not stand the Jews,” he stated, “how can we expect primitive Mindanao to do so?”<sup>173</sup> The Boholano people, ten thousand of whom wished to settle in Mindanao, likewise used anti-Semitism in their opposition to Jewish migration. At the eighth annual Bohol Young People’s conference, board member Agapito T. Hontanosas claimed that Jews were “dangerous” to have around, and that they had “succeeded in predominating and absorbing the people in the places they settled because of their natural abilities [and] temperament.”<sup>174</sup> In Santo Thomas, La Union, the municipal council passed a resolution opposing Jewish migration to Mindanao, claiming that if they were allowed entry “very soon racial prejudice and other troubles similar to those arising from the Japanese problem would break out.”<sup>175</sup> The concerns of the Santo Thomas, and their racial tinting, were the same as those of the Boholanos and Emilio Aguinaldo: permanent colonization of the empty spaces of the Philippines should be reserved for Christian Filipinos first and foremost.

The Mindanao Exploration Commission’s impressions of the island were similar to those of Americans in decades prior. According to the Commission’s report, “the fertile soils, magnificent scenery, immense virgin forests and splendid climate of Mindanao” made it ideal for settlement. The commission was “greatly impressed with the possibilities of settling a

---

<sup>172</sup> Ibid., 418.

<sup>173</sup> “Gen. Aguinaldo Opposes Jews as Colonists,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 28 April 1939.

<sup>174</sup> “Boholanos Oppose Establishment of Jewish Colonies in Mindanao,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 5 June 1939.

<sup>175</sup> “Jews in P.I. to Create Grave Race Problems,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 15 May 1939.

large number of Jewish refugees in Mindanao”<sup>176</sup> The sparsely populated areas of Mindanao were, in the eyes of the commission, a space of refuge and potential transformation for the persecuted Jews of Germany. Philip Frieder, the Cincinnati businessman spearheading the plan, tried to assuage Filipino fears by claiming that only the most qualified immigrants would settle in the Philippines, with an emphasis placed on experts in fields that were underdeveloped to avoid labour competition with the natives.<sup>177</sup> Still, as Frank Ephraim emphasizes in his account of the settlement plan, native resistance and “lukewarm support” from the U.S. State Department meant that there was “little chance of success” for a large Jewish settlement in Mindanao.<sup>178</sup> Developments in Europe and the onset of the war with Japan crushed the plan altogether, leaving it as yet another incomplete attempt to settle the South.

The colonial fascination with intra-colonial comparison and the remaking of Mindanao’s ‘empty’ spaces continued well into the Commonwealth Period. In 1938, the missionary educator Frank Laubach described the island as the “Golden West” of the Philippines, and said it was “in exactly the same situation that America was in when settlers were flocking toward the western states and were taking up homesteads.” Laubach spoke with excitement about the massive settlement plans being developed in Manila. “I cannot think of any other colonization project in the world today that is being planned on such a grand scale,” he wrote to the contributors to his mission. Up until the final years of the colonial project, Mindanao remained a realm of fantasy projection.<sup>179</sup>

## What Was and What Could Be

“The Moros or Pagans who have come in close contact with our civilization in the public schools or otherwise, are frequently found to be anxious to improve their standards of living,”

---

<sup>176</sup> “Find Mindanao Ideal for Jews,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 3 July 1939.

<sup>177</sup> “N.Y. Colonization Experts to Survey Field for Jewish Immigrants,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 18 February 1939.

<sup>178</sup> Ephraim, “The Mindanao Plan,” 429.

<sup>179</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to Mission Contributors, 24 September 1938, Box 2, Folder 6. Frank Laubach Collection, Special Collections Research Center, Syracuse University, New York (Henceforth referred to as SCRC).

reflected John Pershing in 1913, “and, to a certain extent, are inclined also to adopt our manners.”<sup>180</sup> Pershing’s favourable opinion of these developments aligned with broader colonial ideas about potential and transformation. Americans who fought, administered, taught, and conducted business in the Southern Philippines imagined the Moros in a wide variety of ways: as irredeemable primitives, as religious zealots, as pirates and slavers, as exemplars of a formidable martial spirit, as picturesque survivals of a bygone era, as objects of curiosity and study, as victims in need of protection from Filipino predation, or as some combination of all these things. With some notable exceptions, the Moros were conjured as American writers saw fit, and their portrayal was at times paradoxical.<sup>181</sup> They were barely cognizant of Islam, yet fanatically religious; they had an admirable fighting spirit and compared favourably to cowardly Filipinos, yet were doomed to extinction if they did not completely transform; they managed their land well, or hardly at all.<sup>182</sup> While the more sensitive and curious among the Americans were able to differentiate between the various Muslim ethnic groups in the region, many adopted the Spanish custom of viewing the Moros as a monolithic religio-cultural entity.

When imagining the Moro, Americans in the Muslim South looked to their nation’s troubled relationship with the Native Americans. Many who served in Mindanao and Sulu had personal experience fighting and administering Natives in the United States. Even those who did not still used the American frontier and its peoples as a reference point when

---

<sup>180</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 33.

<sup>181</sup> Saleeby and Smith being representative of earnest attempts to catalogue Moro culture. American newspapers would also occasionally have a sober take on the Moros. An example from the *New York Times*: “Theirs is a tragic story, for they are fighting for their very existence, much as the American Indians of old. They ask only to be left alone to live their own lives and use their own land as they see fit. Fundamentally, the Filipino-American civilization is so different from their own that to accept it means to surrender their religion and tradition. On top of this they see the beginning of a wave of Filipino immigration which, so long as the Moros are kept disarmed, will gradually but surely overwhelm them. The datu who withdraws with his family to his *cotta* and defies the constabulary is apparently quarrelling about a trivial matter of law. But he is expressing the inner spirit of his people in a struggle to preserve his race, his religion and his customs. America’s disciples of the great Arabian prophet are unwilling to pass out of the picture without a fight.” – “Our Own Mohammedans,” *New York Times*, 18 May 1930, E6.

<sup>182</sup> Katherine Mayo, writing for the *Washington Post*, wrote favourably on the Moro’s cultivation of their land and the organization of their government, in sharp contrast with some of the other writers found in this chapter. See Katherine Mayo, “Wholesale Carnage in Moro Region is Prevented Only by Gen. Wood,” *Washington Post*, 3 January 1925, 5.

discussing the inhabitants of the Southern Philippines. For officials like John Finley, the “Mohammedan wards” of the nation presented the opportunity for a do-over – to succeed where nineteenth-century Indian policy had failed to develop the Moros with the most rigorously modern colonial methods available, with the eventual goal being their frictionless incorporation into the Filipino national body. When met with opposition from Moro groups, the colonials could likewise draw from histories of colonial violence against Native American groups.<sup>183</sup>

All of this played out on a landscape that, like the people, was viewed in terms of potential and transformation. The Spanish were unable to properly map or control the ‘empty’ spaces of Mindanao and Sulu, and the native Muslims and Lumads lacked the necessary Western models of private property, settlement, and industrial / agricultural development. As such, the Southern Philippines became a space for Americans to harness, first through cartography and surveying, and later through large colonization, infrastructural, and agricultural schemes. They bequeathed these tendencies to Christian Filipinos serving in state bureaucracies during the 1920s and 1930s. The land was also imagined as a dumping ground for African Americans, and, decades later, as a safe haven for Germany’s Jews. While neither of these plans came to fruition, they demonstrate the extent to which military and civilian officials viewed the South as a place of *possibility*. Perception, imagination, and fantasy met with ambitious plans for transformation. The colonial project in the Muslim South, from the beginnings of the military period until independence, was ambitious in its goals and sought to transition people and space into an idealized modernity. American and Filipino attempts to accomplish this goal are where we turn next.

---

<sup>183</sup> Gowing, “Moros and Indians,” 143.



## Chapter Three / **Civilizational Imperatives (I)**

### ***Courtrooms, Clinics, Markets, and Agricultural Colonies***

In Mindanao and Sulu, civilizational fantasies became civilizational imperatives through a spectrum of state-building projects aimed at refashioning the human fabric of the region. Muslim populations in Sulu, Zamboanga, Lanao, Cotabato, and Davao were oppressed, Americans thought, by their own societal constructs and needed guidance from ignorant darkness towards a state of material and moral productivity. Those who devised and facilitated these plans did not shy away from framing them as grand colonial endeavours. District Governor John Finley of Zamboanga was remarkably forthright in his descriptions, writing that “colonial work is rough and hard, and the results are necessarily slow, yet no work is more intensely interesting because of its creative possibilities for good to the human kind.” For Finley and others, labouring in the Southern Philippines was both a duty and a problem-solving exercise. “To colonize is to civilize races that need our protection and instruction,” he continued, “to bend our wills to the exigencies of new conditions and new surroundings, to exercise our mental strength on the complex problems of the infinite diversity and infinite possibilities of unknown life, affected by unknown physical conditions.”<sup>1</sup> The imperial metaphysics of men like Finley suggested that civilizing projects could master the “infinite” and “unknown” through discovery and reconfiguration. The minds and bodies of racially othered foreigners could be modernized, while colonized geography would become economically productive.

To American colonials, life for the average Moro was hellish. Almost nothing could be salvaged from what existed before the arrival of U.S. troops, and Muslim populations needed to have their objectionable traditions transformed by instruction, force, or both (depending on whom one asked). Governor Tasker Bliss gave the clearest expression of this mindset in 1909, when he described life for the pre-American Moro:

---

<sup>1</sup> John Finley, “The Development of the District of Zamboanga,” *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 63.

From the datu there was no appeal and in general the people were living in a state of bondage to their feudal lord, suffering from all the diseases that man in a tropical clime is heir to, and living in rude, squalid *nipa* huts with no property other than a few earthen cooking pots, a *buyo* box, and chest of striped sarongs to sometimes cover their nakedness. Add to this a group of small children, a few chickens and a camote patch, and you complete the sad picture of the average Moro home. Such a thing as public institutions were unknown among them. No roads or docks were ever built to promote intercourse and further trade, no schools or other public institutions to disseminate knowledge. An occasional mosque, hardly distinguishable from the other mean shacks, was now and then singled out by the presence of a huge tom-tom that called the Moslem worshipper to prayer.<sup>2</sup>

By reducing the heterogeneous cultures of the Southern Philippines into a single debased visual scape, Bliss gave rhetorical justification to the forced erasure of tradition that resulted from societal reorganization. As Michael Salman and others have observed, the Moros were viewed as inveterate pirates, slavers, polygamists, murderers, gamblers, religious extremists, and thieves who were averse to honest labour, disinclined to learn hygienic or sanitary practices, and uninterested in public initiatives.<sup>3</sup> What, then, was worth preserving? This was a convenient precolonial narrative. The Moros, too fierce to be dominated by the indolent Spanish yet unable to progress independently, could only be redeemed by the guiding hands of Americans and, later, their Christian Filipino protégés.

Consciously and unconsciously, those working to reshape the Southern Philippines tapped into the global logics of high imperialism. Racial progress, medical-hygienic morality, the linkage of colonial agriculture with world markets, the limits of education in the colonies, and the role of emergent technologies in facilitating state power were all considerations that stretched well past metropole-colony binaries and constituted transnational and transcolonial

---

<sup>2</sup> Tasker Bliss, "The Government of the Moro Province and its Problems," *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 5.

<sup>3</sup> On the slavery question, see Salman, *The Embarrassment of Slavery*, 59-70.

conversations about conquest and control.<sup>4</sup> In Asian colonies, British, Dutch, and French officials struggled with educating the natives in ways that did not encourage proto-nationalist independence movements.<sup>5</sup> Elsewhere in Asia and Africa, empires experimented with settlement and agricultural projects aimed at making their colonies more profitable.<sup>6</sup> Throughout the Global South, colonial elites grappled with medical issues and looked to climactic and racial determinist concepts for guidance on how to approach health in the tropics.<sup>7</sup> In every colonial state, conflicts arose over how to administer justice in

---

<sup>4</sup> Shaping culture and exercising cultural power saturated the global colonial experience. On European iterations of these phenomena, see Partha Chatterjee, *The Nation and its Fragments: Colonial and Postcolonial Histories* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1993), 14-34; Cooper, *Colonialism in Question*, 3-32; Michael S. Dodson, *Orientalism, Empire, and National Culture: India, 1770-1880* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007); Frances Gouda, *Dutch Culture Overseas: Colonial Practice in the Netherlands Indies, 1900-1942* (Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam Press, 1995), 11-38; Catherine Hall, *Civilizing Subjects: Metropole and Colony in the English Imagination, 1830-1867* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2002), 1-67; George R. Trumbull IV, *An Empire of Facts: Colonial Power, Cultural Knowledge, and Islam in Algeria, 1870-1914* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009), 11-48.

<sup>5</sup> On education, native intellectuals, and anticolonial movements: Tithi Bhattacharya, *The Sentinels of Culture: Class, Education, and the Colonial Intellectual in Bengal, 1848-85* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2005); Ming Govaars, *Dutch Colonial Education: The Chinese Experience in Indonesia, 1900-1942* (Singapore: Chinese Heritage Centre, 2005); Anne Ruth Hansen, *How to Behave: Buddhism and Modernity in Colonial Cambodia, 1860-1930* (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007); Gail P. Kelly, "The Presentation of Indigenous Society in the Schools of French West Africa and Indochina, 1918 to 1938," *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 26.3 (1984): 523-542; Rajesh Kochhar, "Seductive Orientalism: English Education and Modern Science in Colonial India," *Social Scientist* 36.3/4 (2008): 45-63; Emmanuelle Saada, *Empire's Children: Race, Filiation, and Citizenship in the French Colonies* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2012); Moses Samuel and Mahmud Hasan Khan, "Construction of Nationhood through Education in Malaya: Revisiting the Barnes and Fenn-Wu Reports," *Asia Pacific Journal of Education* 33.3 (2013): 249-260; Sanjay Seth, *Subject Lessons: The Western Education of Colonial India* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2007).

<sup>6</sup> A good primer on the colonial management of lands and peoples in a variety of contexts is Christina Folke Ax et al., eds., *Cultivating the Colonies: Colonial States and their Environmental Legacies* (Athens: Ohio University Press, 2011). For specific examples on environmental management and imagination, see Toyin Falola and Emily Brownell, eds., *Landscape, Environment, and Technology in Colonial and Postcolonial Africa* (New York: Routledge, 2013); Madhav Gadgil and Amachandra Guha, *This Fissured Land: An Ecological History of India* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1992), 113-145; Samuel Garrido, "Water Management, Spanish Irrigation, and Colonial Engineers," *Journal of Agrarian Change* 14.3 (2014): 400-418; Moses Ochonu, "African Colonial Economies: Land, Labor, and Livelihoods," *History Compass* 11.2 (2013): 91-103; Susie Protschky, *Images of the Tropics: Environment and Visual Culture in Colonial Indonesia* (Leiden: KITLV Press, 2011); Philippa Söldenwagner, *Spaces of Negotiation: European Settlement and Settlers in German East Africa, 1900-1914* (Munich: Martin Meidenbauer Verlag, 2006).

<sup>7</sup> The most recent comprehensive survey of this topic is Pratik Chakrabarti, *Medicine and Empire: 1600-1960* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2013). For specific colonial examples, see David Arnold, *Science, Technology, and Medicine in Colonial India* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000); Nandini Bhattacharya, *Contagion and Enclaves: Tropical Medicine in Colonial India* (Liverpool: Liverpool University Press, 2012); Harold J. Cook, *Matters of Exchange: Commerce, Medicine, and Science in the Dutch Golden Age* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2007), 339-377; Myron Echenberg, *Africa in the Time of Cholera: A*

environments that were characterized by vast power differentials.<sup>8</sup> The United States did not operate in isolation from these conversations, but rather contributed their own colonial models to them.

Whereas the previous chapter dealt with how and why Americans formed ideas about the Southern Philippines and its peoples, what follows concerns practical and impractical applications of those ideas in a colonized space. If the Moros were, like the Native Americans before them, uncivilized peoples who failed to utilize their own land, then how could Americans correct them? The ways that foreigners in the Southern Philippines, in and outside of colonial government, answered this question informs the following analysis. The term ‘civilizational imperatives’ refers to the underlying impulses of the colonial mission. The clearest expression of these impulses was found in the institutions established in the Southern Philippines. In the language of American power, civilization was best represented in the achievements of white Anglo-Saxons – specifically, in the patrician enclaves that many of the colonial elite hailed from. The colonial mind standardized notions of progress and modernity,

---

*History of Pandemics from 1817 to the Present* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011), 13-86; Mark Harrison, *Medicine in an Age of Commerce and Empire: Britain and its Tropical Colonies, 1660-1830* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2010); Richard Keller, *Colonial Madness: Psychiatry in French North Africa* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2007); Philippa Levine, “Modernity, Medicine, and Colonialism: The Contagious Diseases Ordinances in Hong Kong and the Straits Settlements,” *Positions* 6.3 (1998): 675-705; Todd L. Savitt, *Medicine and Slavery: The Diseases and Health Care of Blacks in Antebellum Virginia* (Champaign: University of Illinois Press, 1978).

<sup>8</sup> The body of literature on colonial law is vast. When writing about how indigenous and colonial notions of justice interacted, I found the following comparative study useful: Laura Benton, *Law and Colonial Cultures: Legal Regimes in World History, 1400-1900* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001). Additionally, these books and articles also informed my thinking on the topic, illustrating as they do some of the thematic trademarks (race-thinking, disparities in punishment, administrative confusion) of colonial legal bodies: Andrew Goss, “Decent Colonialism? Pure Science and Colonial Ideology in the Netherlands East Indies, 1910-1929,” *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 40.1 (2009): 187-214; Olivier Le Cour Grandmaison, “The Exception and the Rule: On French Colonial Law,” *Diogenes* 53.4 (2006): 34-53; James Jaffe, *Ironies of Colonial Governance: Law, Custom and Justice in Colonial India* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2015), 48-76; Elizabeth Kolsky, *Colonial Justice in British India* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2010); Sally Engle Merry, “Colonial Law and Its Uncertainties,” *Law and History Review* 28.4 (2010): 1067-1071; Christine Stewart, “Men Behaving Badly: Sodomy Cases in the Colonial Courts of Papua New Guinea,” *Journal of Pacific History* 43.1 (2008): 77-93; Martin J. Wiener, *An Empire on Trial: Race, Murder, and Justice Under British Rule, 1870-1935* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009).

mapping gradients of civilization across time and space.<sup>9</sup> Muslim inhabitants of the Southern Philippines, lagging somewhere behind the Christian Filipinos when Westerners ranked the inhabitants of the archipelago, could be partially or fully civilized only through the replication and dissemination of American institutions. In these two chapters, I explore how Americans operating in official and unofficial capacities conceived of their duties to transform the Moros, and the structures they created to do so.

This section of the project begins by examining American plans for implementing new legal structures in Mindanao and Sulu and the development of healthcare infrastructure. Next, it assesses efforts to train Moros in the basics of market capitalism, and attempts, through settlement schemes, to render Mindanao agriculturally productive. The next chapter focuses on the diverse array of educational projects started by government officials and missionaries in the Southern Philippines. All of these endeavours were driven by utopian notions of what vigorous stewardship could draw out of the Islamic ‘wards of the nation.’ “The United States Government guarantees to you protection from enemies without your borders, assures you peace within,” Governor Frank Carpenter told a crowd assembled to mark his inauguration in 1914. “It brings to you the greatest good that can be given to any people; opportunity to use your *krises* to harvest golden grain, to build towns where *cottas* have been, to make the trails through the forests of your mountains and valleys the highways of commerce and all that makes the civilization of today.”<sup>10</sup> As happened elsewhere, the stated intentions of civilizing agents entering the Southern Philippines collided with a range of cultural factors. These collisions inform much of what follows.

---

<sup>9</sup> On colonial notions of racial-civilizational progress and evolutionary time, see McClintock, *Imperial Leather*, 1-18. Similarly, Ann Laura Stoler’s tremendous body of work on the epistemological foundations of colonial empire helped shape this chapter and the next. Specifically, her writings on how European and Asian participants in the Dutch East Indies shaped imperial dispositions and knowledge production through mediated and complex processes: Ann Laura Stoler, *Along the Archival Grain: Epistemic Anxieties and Colonial Common Sense* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2009). The following works on cultural imagination and the creation of colonial identities also aided in my conceptualizations: Edmund Burke III, *The Ethnographic State: France and the Invention of Moroccan Islam* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2014); Ulrike Hillemann, *Asian Empire and British Knowledge: China and the Networks of British Imperial Expansion* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2009); Carey A. Watt and Michael Mann, eds., *Civilizing Missions in Colonial and Postcolonial Southeast Asia: From Improvement to Development* (London: Anthem Press, 2011); Gary Wilder, *The French Imperial Nation-State: Negritude and Colonial Humanism Between the Two World Wars* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2005).

<sup>10</sup> Speech of Frank W. Carpenter, 3 January 1914, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

## The Courtroom and the Dispensary

### *i.) Competing Systems of Justice*

In 1907, Governor Tasker Bliss summarized the dominant view of Americans towards Moro legal structures. “If anything was found that even a loose and superficial writer would call law,” he opined, “it rested upon no commonly accepted authority even among people of the same section and was accepted or rejected according to the will of him who applied it.” The average Muslim, he thought, had a “notion of government [that was] a dim reflection of theocracy as interpreted by the prophet and reinterpreted by ignorant, corrupt, and superstitious local teachers.” Crimes that “in civilized countries” would receive the harshest punishment were addressed with fines, and ones that “with [Americans] would be no crime” were punished “with ridiculous, degrading, and inhuman penalties.” Bliss believed that transforming Lumad groups merely required eliminating “certain vague, ill-defined notions out of which “their practices grew, but saw the Moros as a greater challenge. The tenacity with which they clung to “corrupt and degraded” manifestations of Islam, and the American promise of noninterference with religion, made overhauling their concepts of law and justice delicate work. Bliss’ solution to the problem faced by American colonials was partially explained through inter-colonial cultural comparisons. If the Moros could be raised to the standard of “the civilized Mohammedan of India or the civilized Hindoo” their opposition to colonial imperatives would ebb. The codification of “sensible and humane” laws representing a “civilized interpretation” of Islam was Bliss’ goal, although he admitted that even if his plan were accomplished it would still “in many aspects...be repugnant to Western ideas.”<sup>11</sup>

Major efforts to bring the Moros under a unified legal framework began three years before Bliss filed his report with the passing of Act No. 39 of the Legislative Council of the Moro Province in February 1904.<sup>12</sup> The act provided for the organization of the five districts

---

<sup>11</sup> Tasker Bliss, *The Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province – For the Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1907* (Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1907), 41-42.

<sup>12</sup> “Act No. 39: An Act Temporarily to Provide for the Government of the Moros and Other Non-Christian Tribes,” Legislative Acts Enacted by the Legislative Council of the Moro Province Council, 19 February 1904, Box 216. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

of the Moro Province into municipalities and tribal wards. Regional hubs like Zamboanga, Iligan, Cotabato, and Jolo were designated as municipalities, while the small indigenous communities of the hinterlands were folded into the tribal wards. There were fifty-one of these tribal wards – eighteen in Cotabato, thirteen in Lanao, nine in Sulu, six in Davao, and five in Zamboanga.<sup>13</sup> George Langhorne, Moro Province secretary, described the purpose of the wards as transitional. Ideally, colonial authorities would control non-Christian settlements through collaborating native elites, and these populations, slowly introduced to the benefits of modern governance, would in time decide to become “full citizens of a municipality.”<sup>14</sup>

In October 1905, the first tribal ward courts were established within larger governmental compounds. Tribal Ward No. 1, outside of Zamboanga, had a model farm, a court, a headquarters building, a jail, a Moro Exchange, a rest house, and a hospital.<sup>15</sup> The courts attempted to nudge non-Christians towards modernity without the appearance of completely discarding customary practices. The intended effect, of course, was just such an overhaul, but one that took place incrementally so as not to foment resistance. The sultans, *datus*, and local religious figures adjudicating criminal and civil matters, who often relied on the levying of fines for their income, would gradually see their powers erode as the government expanded. To do this, military officials at first co-opted many of these leaders to be representatives of the district governor in their respective wards. Moro headmen would in turn appoint their deputies to act as local policemen. The tribal ward courts tried civil and criminal cases between non-Christians, with the exception of first-degree murder. Attacks on Americans or Filipinos were tried in regular courts in the municipalities. Flaws in this system were soon evident. Tribal ward courts’ reliance on the very men whose revenue stream they were abolishing – the *datus* – meant cases often went unreported. Traditional processes for settling disputes remained prevalent. Tasker Bliss complained that the only way that the tribal ward courts system could be enforced was if every part of the country had a strong garrison.

---

<sup>13</sup> Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 116.

<sup>14</sup> George T. Langhorne, *Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province – September 1, 1903, to August 31, 1904* (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1904), 6.

<sup>15</sup> List of Photographs and other Records Pertaining to the Moros and Pagans of the Southern Philippines, 1912, Box 1, Folder 1. John P. Finley Papers, 1899-1912, USAHEC.

This undermined the entire reason for bringing Muslim leaders onside, which was done so that the province could avoid administering justice at the end of a barrel. He recommended giving limited legal powers back to native leaders, including the right to collect fines in certain cases (rather than having them go to the provincial treasury), and also to establish small native courts for judging non-violent crimes.<sup>16</sup>

Administering an American brand of justice in the tribal wards could be tedious. Coordinated resistance was addressed by military force, while high profile murder cases were sent to the municipalities. Still, those operating the tribal ward courts did so in the belief they were indispensable to the civilizing project. In Lanao, District Governor John McAuley Palmer oversaw courts at Marawi (soon-to-be Dansalan), Iligan, Camp Vicars, and Malabang. Problems brought before the courts often sprung from “the changing labor market” around the lake, which Palmer attributed to a slackening of traditional authority. The labour pool, mainly young and unmarried men, was increasingly mobile as the power of local *datus* waned. These itinerant labourers, moving between communities looking for the best pay, disrupted local rhythms and were unresponsive to threats from the *datus*. The related rise in property crimes and thefts, unwittingly facilitated by the tribal ward system’s remapping of economic and social relations, was evidenced in the courts. During 1906, tribal ward courts convicted Maranao Moros for theft, bootlegging, assault, resisting arrest, and trespass. During the same year, eight Maranao men were convicted of slave trading, with a further six cases awaiting trial.<sup>17</sup>

The Sulu Archipelago presented its own unique challenges for lawmakers. There were communities of various sizes spread throughout the nearly nine hundred islands, and maintaining a consistent governmental presence in all of them was nigh impossible. Successive district governors experimented with travelling officials – justices of the court, for example, who made scheduled trips to the outlying islands. On islands with permanent Constabulary stations, the officer in charge generally served as the justice of the courts.

---

<sup>16</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report 1907*, 42-46; Peter Gowing, “Mandate in Moroland,” 545-546.

<sup>17</sup> John McAuley Palmer, “Annual Report for Lanao District,” 30 June 1907, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, 1863-1977, LOC-MD.



Transferred from Lanao to the remote island of Cagayan de Sulu in 1911, Sterling Larrabee took on the combined role of head policeman and judge for the island. He worked to gain the population's trust, and met with chiefs to discuss disarmament. His men were mostly Christian Filipinos, some of whom married local women. Writing to his parents, Larrabee explained where Cagayan de Sulu was located and described his legal powers. "The power of the Tribal Ward Court justices has lately been increased so that in criminal cases, I can imprison a man for 20 years. I cannot give a death sentence, however." New to the job, Larrabee had only tried four cases when he wrote the letter. The most serious of these was a rape case where he sentenced the perpetrator to three months jail time. Living in a spacious tin-roofed house with plenty of books and good food to eat, Sterling Larrabee was content in his temporary role. "I am practically a king here," he told his parents, "and so like it very much!"<sup>18</sup>

The justice system as manifested in the tribal ward courts was problematic until the first years of civilian rule. The authority of the *datus* troubled Americans, yet they reluctantly understood that attempts to enforce the Philippine legal code and strip traditional leaders of their power had the potential to create violent unrest. Writing in 1913, John Pershing illustrated the tension between co-opting the *datus* and rejecting customary practices outright:

Naturally, the majority of *datus* have always been opposed to our criminal code, not only because it really punishes crime, but more especially because it removes the administration of justice from the arbitrary control of the mercenary *datus* and places it in the hands of a disinterested judiciary. As our criminal code replaces the Moro code the power of the *datu* is gradually being superseded. However, the unsettled condition of society produced by their low standards still remains and the Mohammedan sanction of their immoral practices still exists. The condition must be met, and we must endeavor to discover some path by which all classes may emerge. The unaided initiative of the individual can hardly be expected in the face of the

---

<sup>18</sup> Letter from Sterling Larrabee to Charles Larrabee, 29 November 1911, Box 2, Folder 5. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC.

authority of tribal law and custom reinforced as it is by the power of the Mohammedan hierarchy...In the development of the individual, control by datus whose authority is founded on Mohammedanism must eventually be abolished. Their system can never be successfully used as a basis of municipal organization, since government by datus accustomed to arbitrary action is inconsistent with enlightened consideration for personal rights. To attempt to restore datu rule would be to go backward a hundred years.<sup>19</sup>

Pershing's dismissal of Islam-inspired Moro legal traditions was an expression of a strongly held belief that pre-American cultural survivals needed to be rooted out and eliminated if civilization were to flourish.

Other military officials were not as extreme. General J. Franklin Bell thought the strength of the tribal ward courts lay in the fact that they helped maintain government control while enjoining "upon all that the customs of the people should be respected in so far as this could be done consistently with the dictates of humanity and well recognized principles of civilization. It is in the Tribal Ward courts and in the subordinate Kali courts that Moro customs have been permitted to enjoy the fullest opportunity for continuance." Allowing state rule to retain some local variances, Bell believed, would make governance easier as the Moro Province transitioned into the Department of Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>20</sup> The abolishment of the tribal ward courts in 1915 mooted this line of thinking. They were replaced with justice of the peace courts, which functioned in a similar capacity and included provisos about taking local customs into consideration. Importantly, these new courts also sought to integrate law and order in the Southern Philippines into the bureaucracies of the insular government in Manila.

To the chagrin of American, Filipino lawmakers, and Westernized Moros, traditional methods of settling legal disputes persisted. The Tausūgs of the Sulu Archipelago, for example, continued relying upon religious figures and members of the royal family to judge matters rather than going through secular channels. Law in the archipelago was enshrined in

---

<sup>19</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 73.

<sup>20</sup> Letter from J. Franklin Bell to Francis Burton Harrison, 27 January 1914, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

the Sulu Code, a series of articles that combined customary and Qur'anic laws to delimit punishments for lawbreakers. The code, transcribed in 1878 in the wake of the Spanish Treaty of Peace and updated in 1902, was a sophisticated document “promulgated with general consent of all the *datus*, *panglimas*, and subordinate officers of the state.” The code covered a wide range of offenses. The murderer of a free man, for example, was required to pay blood money as restitution to the victim's family, and if the murderers were unknown or hidden an entire village would be culpable. Fines were imposed for marriage by “abduction, elopement, marriage of slave, seduction” and women who committed adultery would become “a slave to her husband” except if she were raped. The 1902 version of the code was more extensive and covered in detail theft, murder, adultery, opprobrium, unwitnessed purchase, false claims, unlawful exactions, debt, and unjust decisions. Anyone not adhering to the articles of the Sulu Code was threatened with the “calamities” that befall those who swore falsely on the Qur'an. Although Sultan Jamalul Kiram II and the *datus* of the Sulu Archipelago were initially allowed to adjudicate legal matters between Moros, the abrogation of the Bates Treaty by Leonard Wood in 1904 marked the beginning of a progressive erosion of the legal authority of the *datus*.<sup>21</sup>

The so-called Carpenter Agreement resulted from a series of conferences between Governor Frank Carpenter and Sultan Kiram over the course of ten days in March 1915. In the document, Kiram foreswore any claim to legal authority and accepted his position as a mere spiritual and symbolic head of the Tausūg people. As such, he agreed to cease the operation of religious (*agama*) courts, and the collection of fines or taxes from the people to support the sultanate. In effect, the agreement enshrined the separation of church and state in Sulu and forced the Sultan to recognize “the sovereignty of the United States [in Sulu], and by His Excellency the Governor General and the representatives of that Government in Mindanao and Sulu of all the attributes of sovereign government that are exercised elsewhere in American territory and dependencies, including the adjudication by government courts...of

---

<sup>21</sup> “Exhibit VIII - Sulu Codes, 1878, 1902,” Box 29, Folder 28. J.R. Hayden Papers. BHL. James Francis Warren has explored the extensive trade relationships the Sulu Archipelago had with other Southeast Asian maritime states prior to American arrival, and also commented on how legal matters – especially concerning slavery – were settled. See Warren, *The Sulu Zone*, 215-251.

all civil and criminal causes falling within the laws and orders of the Government.”<sup>22</sup>

Governor General Francis Burton Harrison relayed news of the agreement to Secretary of War Lindley Garrison the following month, claiming that it was a victory for the United States. The troops had put an end to “organized resistance” to colonial rule in Sulu, and now the agreement marked “the extension of the peaceful functions of the Government” throughout the region.<sup>23</sup>

Customary law survived in Sulu despite the Carpenter Agreement. In the late 1920s and early 1930s, colonial officials struggled with the issue of the *agama* courts. Although legal matters were ostensibly the territory of the government, the operation of ecclesiastical courts by Kiram and his followers constantly tested what could acceptably be adjudicated outside of state institutions. Some governors were more tolerant of the *agama* courts, but the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes under Ludovicio Hidrosollo and later Teopisto Guingona viewed the arrangement as unsatisfactory. There was a fear that the Sultan and other leaders in Sulu were punishing residents for taking their issues to the government, and had instituted a thoroughly corrupt system of fines. A report on the problem that crossed the desk of Vice Governor J.R. Hayden claimed that the *agama* courts had “retarded the political progress of the people” of Sulu. The Tausūg were “trained in the belief that they can bring before the *agama* court even those cases covered by laws and regulations. Its effect upon the people is

---

<sup>22</sup> Agreement Between the Governor General of the Philippine Islands and the Sultan of Sulu, 22 March 1915, Box 1. Frank Carpenter Papers, LOC-MD. In June 1935, Najeeb Saleeby provided commentary on a cyclical letter the Sultan issued shortly after the 1915 agreement for Vice Governor Hayden, who at the time was receiving complaints about the *agama* courts from administrators in the Sulu Archipelago. The “curt and crude” letter of the Sultan, Saleeby made clear, laid out regulations and fines – suggesting a continuation of temporal authority prohibited under the agreement. Saleeby noted that the Sultan’s loss of “spiritual and temporal authority” after the organization of the Moro Province in 1903 had effectively terminated his rule. Therefore, the reign of the Sultan was nullified not only in an American legalistic sense but also within the context of Tausūg understandings of monarchical power – Letter from Najeeb Saleeby to J.R. Hayden, 17 June 1935, Box 30, Folder 2. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>23</sup> “Conference in my Office with Senator Hadji Butu,” 13 July 1929, Box 28, Folder 28. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

that the Government Court to their own thinking is not the only court where they can bring their cases for settlement or seek redress.”<sup>24</sup>

Kiram and his coterie denied running a parallel legal system, claiming that they were acting entirely within the purview of the 1915 agreement and only overseeing matters of a religious nature. Evidence suggests this was likely untrue, and that they were playing a double game. For their part, Americans and Filipinos failed to recognize that the spiritual and the legal were inseparable in the Islamic worldview. Representatives of the state were quick to accuse the *agama* courts of being a simple extortion racket, but these courts did provide a social function in areas where governmental presence was slight or nonexistent. Addressing disputes through traditional avenues allowed the average Tausūg to resolve their issues through culturally familiar processes, rather than taking them outside of the community to justice of the peace courts. Gulamu Rasul, a justice of the peace at large and staunch modernizer in Sulu, reported that by 1931 there were approximately thirty *agama* courts operating in the archipelago. These courts generated ₱3000 per month, of which between ₱1000 and ₱1500 went to Sultan Kiram. Rasul despised the courts, and called the Sultan’s agents “ignorant and unscrupulous,” saying they were “not interested in the welfare of the people” but rather simple profit. He bemoaned the resurgence of the *agama* courts in the 1920s, as during the Carpenter years they had been suppressed. The coexisting legal systems in Sulu, Rasul argued, were one of the “great stumbling blocks” to progress in the region, and created confusing situations where aggrieved parties bounced back and forth between the government and *agama* courts – racking up fine in the process. “Conditions here are like an open sore,” Rasul wrote.<sup>25</sup>

---

<sup>24</sup> “Agama Court Problem,” Undated, Box 30, Folder 4. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. J.C. Early, then advisor to the governor general on non-Christian affairs, commented that as justice of the peace courts were dispensing justice more impartially and at cheaper rates (in terms of fines) the influence of the *agama* courts was waning. He placed this at the feet of Kiram: “We may safely say the influence of the Sultanate in spiritual leadership is rapidly declining. Unless it be fanned by interested parties for the furtherance of their own ends, we may look forward in a short time to seeing it decline to nothingness.” – Memorandum from J.C. Early to Dwight Davis, 18 December 1930, Box 30, Folder 8. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>25</sup> Letter from Gulamu Rasul to Abad Santos, 5 August 1931, Box 30, Folder 8. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

A government memorandum from 1934 was more measured in its analysis, claiming that the *agama* courts gained prestige from the sluggish response of the state. When justice of the peace courts were “quick to act” and provided a “fair and public hearing” residents were more likely to utilize them. The conflicting legal structures sometimes created violent confrontations. On occasion a man who had committed a serious offense would be brought before the *agama* courts and forced to pay a fine. When he discovered there was a warrant for his arrest from the government, he would be incensed, as he believed the matter concluded. “He may then decide to defy the government and induce relatives and friends to sympathize and join him” in resistance. Inevitably, this led to clashes with the Philippine Constabulary and lives lost. The memorandum concluded that strengthening the justice system in Sulu was the only way to decrease such scenarios because it made *agama* courts less appealing.<sup>26</sup>

The issue was serious enough that the Governor General of the Philippines Frank Murphy wrote a stern letter to Sultan Kiram about it the same year. Murphy demanded that Kiram, by this time a senator in the Philippine Legislature, “refrain from infringing upon the rights of the civil authorities” in the Sulu Archipelago. The governor general cited the 1915 Carpenter Agreement as well as subsequent affirmations by the Sultan (with Teopisto Guingona in 1920 and Murphy himself in 1934) that “the supremacy of the government must be unquestioned.” Kiram, who had complained to Murphy that Governor Fugate and others were impinging upon his religious rights, was ordered to participate in a conference with the leading figures on Jolo to yet again demarcate spiritual and temporal authority. Murphy’s tone throughout the letter is exasperated, as he likely knew that the isolation of Sulu and the lack of government resources available for allocation there meant that the situation would persist.<sup>27</sup>

The death of Sultan Kiram in June 1936 temporarily solved the problem of the *agama* courts. A succession struggle ensued that monopolized the energies of the Tausūg elite. The recently established Philippine Commonwealth, in the meantime, used Kiram’s passing to

---

<sup>26</sup> Memorandum on Policy for the Province of Sulu, 8 September 1934, Box 30, Folder 4. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>27</sup> Letter from Frank Murphy to Jamalul Kiram, 17 October 1934, Box 30, Folder 3. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

further delegitimize the Sultanate. The tensions between indigenous sources of local authority and the state-building goals of American and Filipino colonials subsided in the years prior to the war, but reemerged violently afterwards. During the entire American colonial period, military and then civilian agents attempted to displace the authority of the *datus* and *sultans* through the implementation of a modern legal apparatus. At times they were successful, but overestimated the appeal of imported concepts of justice in spaces with their own long-established legal systems rooted in Islam and local tradition. The assumption that legal norms could be overhauled completely in the Southern Philippines within a generation was one of the more glaring examples of colonial hubris, and one that came to haunt the postcolonial Philippine state.<sup>28</sup>

ii.) *“The Moro Does Not Take Naturally to Cleanliness...”*

“I don’t think there is anything that we have on hand more important than to develop the Filipino physically,” Secretary of War William Howard Taft wrote to Dean Worcester in 1907. “I know it can be done if the improvements in the water supply, and in food, and in proper hygiene can be given proper application. The school therefore in spreading an evangel of decent, healthful living through its graduates is more of a sanitary than it is of an educational character.”<sup>29</sup> The marriage of education, physical development, and modern hygienic practices espoused by the secretary was mirrored in colonial policy. Taft voicing these concerns to Worcester was not by chance. Worcester was then Secretary of the Interior in Manila, and as such responsible for the Department of Sanitation and other health-oriented

---

<sup>28</sup> The preponderance of Filipino experts and officials dictating legal solutions to the ‘Moro Problem’ in the postwar period contributed to further alienation between Muslim societies and the central government. This, along with other failures, created the preconditions for armed revolt and the rise of organizations like the Moro National Liberation Front and Moro Islamic Liberation Front. See Patricio Abinales, “American Military Presence in the Southern Philippines: A Comparative Overview,” *East West Center Working Papers, Politics and Security Series* 7 (2004): 1-20; Carmen A. Abubakar, “Review of the Mindanao Peace Processes,” *Inter-Asia Cultural Studies* 5.3 (2004): 450-464; Zachary Abuza, “The Moro Islamic Liberation Front at 20: State of the Revolution,” *Studies in Conflict and Terrorism* 28 (2005): 453-479; T.J.S. George, *Revolt in Mindanao: The Rise of Islam in Philippine Politics* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1980).

<sup>29</sup> Letter from William Howard Taft to Dean Worcester, 30 November 1907, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

governmental bodies. Alongside tropical medical experts like Victor Heiser and Paul Freer, Worcester helped define a moral approach to medicine within the colonial state. This approach borrowed heavily from racialized discourses surrounding the ability of non-white populations to civilize themselves through the adoption of Western medical advances: proper personal hygiene, inoculation, the sanatorium and the leprosarium, and the suppression of epidemic disease. In creating moral-medical standards in the Philippines, men like Worcester positioned themselves within networks of medical knowledge that circulated throughout colonial empires.<sup>30</sup>

Even prior to Worcester's appointment as Secretary of Health in 1901, military officers in the Southern Philippines recognized the importance of medical infrastructures in cementing the nascent colonial body. In 1900, General William Kobbé and Major James Pettit worked to establish better sanitary conditions in Zamboanga. This was partially as a means to protect American troops from real and perceived tropical environmental threats, but also tied to state-building. Kobbé wrote about it in his diary alongside the opening of schools and hiring of civil officials.<sup>31</sup> District Governor of Jolo Hugh Scott maintained correspondence with the "sanitary engineer" George Barbour, who served Leonard Wood in Cuba and followed him to Manila. Heading the "sanitary part of the Board of Health," Barbour kept Scott abreast of the latest developments in the fight against "rotten *esteros*, filthy moats, and vacant spaces here and there throughout the city where filth is permitted to accumulate and generate disease."<sup>32</sup> Scott, fearing epidemiological crises on Jolo, read with interest Barbour's accounts of his struggles with the residents of Manila and native authorities

---

<sup>30</sup> Cristina Evangelista Torres. *The Americanization of Manila, 1898-192* (Quezon City: The University of the Philippines Press, 2010), 111-113. On networks of medical knowledge, see Chapter Five, "Imperialism and the Globalization of Disease," in Chakrabarti, *Medicine and Empire*, 73-100; Birdie Andrews and Mary P. Sutphen, eds., *Medicine and Colonial Identity* (New York: Routledge, 2003); Catharine Coleborne and Angela McCarthy, "Health and Place in Historical Perspective: Medicine, Ethnicity, and Colonial Identities," *Australian and New Zealand Society of the History of Medicine* 14.1 (2012): 1-11.

<sup>31</sup> Diary of Field Service in the Philippines 1898-1901, 16-19 April 1900, Box 1. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>32</sup> Letter from George Barbour to Hugh Scott, 14 October 1903, Box 55, Folder 5. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD. Barbour was an interesting character. He participated in battles against Native Americans in Nebraska, was partnered with Bill Cody in the Wild West show, and served as the Sanitary Commissioner of the city of Santiago in Cuba during the American occupation. See James Herman Pruitt, "Leonard Wood and the American Empire" (PhD diss., Texas A&M University, 2011), 22.



to instill new sanitary standards. Concerns about epidemics were real and constant in the Southern Philippines. A cholera epidemic in the Sulu Archipelago killed five thousand in 1902. The same year, several areas around Lake Lanao were affected, a situation exacerbated by the series of running battles between local sultans and John Pershing's troops. The following year, Cotabato was afflicted, and in 1905 parts of Davao were quarantined. Leonard Wood, visiting a Maranao leader soon after he arrived in the South, refused to eat any food given to him besides the yolks of hard-boiled eggs for fear of contamination.<sup>33</sup>

Allocating funds to public health initiatives during the military period was difficult. The provincial treasury ran on a tight budget, and efforts to establish boards of health in 1905 were frustrated by limited personnel and resources. Although authorities in Manila wished to incorporate the South into national health strategies, it was "the sense" of the Legislative Council of the Moro Province that finances "were not sufficient to support such an elaborate organization." Instead, the council recommended that officials already serving in other capacities be given the added task of staffing provincial health boards, and medical doctors be hired part-time as consultants to give recommendations.<sup>34</sup> During Tasker Bliss' first year as governor, his reports on medical issues focused mainly on the health conditions of troops stationed there. He fretted about incidences of venereal disease brought by soldiers previously stationed in the Visayas (where sexual contact with natives was more common) and the rise in cases of malarial fever despite the use of mosquito bars and quinine.<sup>35</sup> Writing to Bliss in 1906, the surgeon Charles Ewing also focused on the curing of venereal disease, the

---

<sup>33</sup> Sources on cholera in various parts of the Southern Philippines: Letter from Hugh Scott to Leonard Wood, 17 August 1903, Box 55, Folder 6. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD; "Moros Attacked by Cholera," *Manila Times*, 10 December 1903; Report on Intelligence-Gathering Trip from Cotabato to Lebac, 20 April 1903, Box 1, Folder 1, G. Souland Turner Papers, USAHEC; Letter from Orville Wood to Frank McCoy, 1 August 1905, Box 11, Folder 2. Frank R. McCoy Papers, 1847-1957, LOC-MD; Letter from Thomas Darrah to Hermann Hagedorn, 10 September 1929, Box 15, Folders 2-3. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>34</sup> Minutes of the Legislative Council of the Moro Province, 7 January 1905, Box 216, Folder 2. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>35</sup> Wood and Bliss, *Annual Report 1906*, 30-31.

destruction of mosquito breeding sites around army posts, and compiling statistics on “days lost” to sickness per month among the troops.<sup>36</sup>

In some areas, private endeavours outpaced those of the government. Episcopal Bishop Charles Brent opened up a hospital in Zamboanga with the intention of tending to Moro patients. Moro children lived “in huddled fashion in one or two-room shacks where filth and vermin abound,” Brent explained in a newspaper column some years later. He outlined a plan to first cure Muslim children of “physical ailments – hookworm, malaria, skin disease – which are common in tropical countries” and then educate them towards conversion, or, at minimum to “emulate Christian conduct, citizenship and virtue.” Among adults, Brent believed that “medical work [was] the most powerful avenue of approach...without whose confidence we shall never be allowed to handle the children.”<sup>37</sup> The conduit for this work was the Zamboanga Hospital, operated and financed by the Episcopal Church. Like government social projects, it often lacked funds, but remained steadfast in its objective of attracting Muslim patients. Contract surgeon C.H. Halliday, formerly posted elsewhere in Mindanao and at Augur Barracks on Jolo, was director of the hospital during the First World War. He expressed astonishment that Moro men were coming to the hospital of their “own free will” to request operations, and that Moro women had begun staying in the facility overnight.<sup>38</sup> Still, the Samal Moros populating the Zamboanga Peninsula remained skeptical of the hospital. In the second half of 1918, Moros represented only 38 of the 421 in-patient treatments. The following year the hospital reported that 11 percent of in-patients were Moros. Muslim communities were more receptive to the hospital’s dispensaries and in-home visits, and in 1918 Moros represented one-third of such treatments.<sup>39</sup>

---

<sup>36</sup> Letter from Charles Ewing to Tasker Bliss, 6 August 1906, Box 15, Folder 66. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

<sup>37</sup> Charles H. Brent, “Giving the Moro-Americans A Chance,” *The Independent*, 26 April 1915, 146.

<sup>38</sup> *Upbuilding of the Wards of the Nation: The Work of Charles H. Brent, of the Philippine Islands* (New York: Harmony Club of America, 1913). – Pamphlet in Box 44. Charles Henry Brent Papers, 1860-1991, LOC-MD.

<sup>39</sup> *The Sixteenth Annual Report of the Missionary District of the Philippine Islands* (Manila: The Printing Committee, 1920), 30.

During the military period, government health initiatives came primarily in the form of dispensaries. These small outposts provided basic medicines, limited treatments, and information to communities, and acted to “bring the government into closer contact with the people in a way that must impress them with its high motives.” By 1913, there were thirty-seven of them throughout the Moro Province. There were regional hospitals in Zamboanga and Jolo, and the following year two more opened in Dansalan and Cotabato. Programs to promote health and hygiene extended far beyond these modest facilities, however. The Board of Health distributed literature to expectant mothers on how to care for their newborns, aimed at “reducing the high rate of infant mortality among both civilized and uncivilized people of all classes.” In provincial schools, district health officers distributed instructions on how to treat and prevent communicable diseases. Reports were compiled on sanitary conditions of school buildings, the effects of light and heat, and “the relation between health and intellectual progress in the individual pupil.” Elsewhere, midwives were trained in “the most recent sanitation and birthing practices,” and in Zamboanga daily collection and disposal of human waste occurred.

In Jolo, residents used a special refuse pail designed by the Bureau of Health in Manila, with the result being, according to government officials, a town that was probably “the cleanest and most sanitary...in the Archipelago.” The government also began actively tracking, capturing, and deporting lepers. Those identified as having the chronic infection were quarantined at the San Ramon Penal Farm before being shipped to the Culion Leper Colony. “The Moro does not take naturally to cleanliness, but it must be thrust upon him,” declared John Pershing. “Recourse to arrest and even imprisonment is often necessary to enforce sanitary rules among the uncivilized population.” Indeed, apart from the leper population, the regime instituted medical surveillance schemes that occasionally led to martial measures. An outbreak of surra among horses in Zamboanga, and local refusal to abide by quarantine, caused the military to place guards in the affected district and forbid the movement of animals within the city “until the danger had passed.”<sup>40</sup>

---

<sup>40</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 37-43.

Government hospitals at Cotabato and Dansalan opened as planned in 1914, and that year treated 749 and 192 patients, respectively. Governor Frank Carpenter claimed that suspicious or hostile reactions to these facilities “rapidly changed to one of popular acceptance and appreciation of hospital facilities, even to the surprising degree that women of good families apply for admission.” Most medical work in Mindanao and Sulu, however, was still done at dispensary stations or by roving personnel in the hinterlands. Carpenter believed the work performed in these remote locations was important not only “from the standpoint of medical and surgical relief” but also because it established “amicable contact and control by the government over the Mohammedan and pagan communities within the department.”<sup>41</sup> Medical work was an extension of the larger societal reconfiguration effort, and although enforcement of sanitary regulations occasionally inspired resistance, in general the emphasis on expanding the number of hospitals and dispensaries was accepted – this in contrast to the oft violent responses to educational policies. Frank Carpenter, like the military officers preceding him, viewed medical imperatives as part of a holistic approach to civilizational transformation that included hospitals, schools, public works projects, sanitary measures, and “other governmental operations...carried as far as the meager financial resources would permit.”<sup>42</sup>

The ambitious medical and sanitary agendas of colonial administrators during the latter years of American rule were belied by the banal realities of governmental resource allocation. In 1921, newly elected President Warren Harding sent a fact-finding mission led by Leonard Wood and W. Cameron Forbes, two of the staunchest Republican colonials, to assess the effects of Filipinization on the state of the archipelago. Wood and Forbes from the outset sought to push back against what they viewed as a hasty transition towards independence implemented under outgoing Governor General Francis Burton Harrison. As such, the two were inclined to dismiss developments in the Philippines between 1913 and 1921. Nevertheless, they also compiled a forthright report on the real shortcomings of colonial projects. Citing statistics from the Philippine Health Service, they observed that

---

<sup>41</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 346.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., 325.

cases of preventable diseases like typhoid, malaria, and tuberculosis were rising, and that shortages of trained doctors, nurses, and sanitary personnel aggravated this. “Outside of the largest towns,” the report stated, “hospitals are so few and far between that they are a negligible quantity.” The Wood-Forbes Mission deemed care for the mentally ill (called “insane” in the report) to be at a “medieval” level, and noted that there were only around 930 nurses in a nation of 10.5 million people.<sup>43</sup>

Although Leonard Wood and W. Cameron Forbes had a proverbial axe to grind, reports on health conditions from Sulu and Lanao in the 1920s and 1930s confirm some of their claims. On Jolo, for example, vaccination campaigns progressed incrementally and a lack of medical surveys meant that a planned agricultural colony was placed in an area where rates of malaria were astronomical (448 cases out of a total population of 1831). Sanitary conditions at markets around the island had improved, but in places like Parang food was still displayed on the ground.<sup>44</sup> A powerful typhoon that swept through Sulu in 1932 exacerbated conditions, killing 175 people and leaving numerous families homeless.<sup>45</sup> The following year, a report on schools called the lack of medicine in Sulu “pathetic.” Skin diseases were rampant, and the only medical attention Tausūg youth received was when the division supervisor visited their village or if one of their teachers had first aid training.<sup>46</sup> George Dunham, a health advisor to the Governor General, toured the Sulu Archipelago in 1934 and noted that the sheer number of outlying islands made travel difficult and time-consuming for medical officers. He recommended that more female public nurses be hired to staff the dispensaries and make “house visits to women and instruct them on health matters.” Decades after Frank Carpenter wrote of using health measures in the pacification of non-Christian populations, Dunham stressed the same idea: “Good public health work could be made a very

---

<sup>43</sup> Leonard Wood and W. Cameron Forbes, *Report of the Special Mission on Investigation to the Philippine Islands* (Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1921), 18.

<sup>44</sup> Memorandum from George Lull to Dwight Davis, 16 December 1930, Box 28, Folder 29. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>45</sup> *The Sulu Archipelago Typhoon: Official Report of Relief Work in Jolo and Cagayan de Sulu* (Manila: Philippines Chapter - American Red Cross, 1932), 6.

<sup>46</sup> Report from J. Scott McCormick to Luther Bewley, 11 December 1933, Box 29, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

effective means of promoting the acceptance of government by the Moro people. The benefits accruing to the individual are direct and immediate and not conferred by force. Public health work, especially public health nursing, always promotes a sympathetic understanding between the people and a government.”<sup>47</sup>

In Lanao, public health work also moved slowly. The vast majority of doctors and nurses in the region, as elsewhere in the South, were Christian Filipinos, and this meant that the local Maranaos were frequently suspicious of their motives. The early 1930s saw successive campaigns against cholera, intestinal parasites, and malaria. The last of these was stymied by a lack of quinine. Officials also complained that a policy of “attraction” resulted in “slow attainment” of health objectives, but admitted that pursuing them by “force of law” was likely to backfire. Maranao children had high incidences of measles and many also developed bronchopneumonia from living in poorly ventilated spaces.<sup>48</sup> In 1933, the district health officer for Lanao reported that the Maranao population represented the “most discouraging difficulty” for medical personnel there. He claimed the Maranaos were “intolerant and conservative in their mode of living” and as such were slow to adopt the latest medical-sanitary technologies. Water contamination, resistance to the vaccination of children, and a lack of properly constructed toilets contributed to the incidences of illness among the Maranaos.<sup>49</sup>

The Congregationalist missionary Frank Laubach, living amidst the Maranaos during the 1930s, viewed health, hygiene, education, and morality in interactive terms. In 1933, he brought groups of Maranaos from the area surrounding Dansalan together to discuss “the filthy condition” of Lake Lanao. The people of the area had no toilets and used the lake, contaminating it in the process. They then bathed in the lake and contracted skin diseases. Laubach wanted them to begin using toilets, but understood that the process had to be

---

<sup>47</sup> Report from George Dunham to J.R. Hayden, 2 April 1934, Box 29, Folder 23. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>48</sup> J.J. Heffington, “Annual Report of Provincial Governor for Lanao, 1932,” 27 January 1933, Box 28, Folder 7. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>49</sup> J.J. Heffington, “Moro Problem: Excerpt from Annual Report of the Provincial Governor of Lanao for the Year 1933,” 1933, Box 28, Folder 9. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

“approached with tact” lest there be “revolt and trouble.”<sup>50</sup> He encouraged leading datos to install modern toilets, and published letters from the public health officer Juan Fernando in his newspaper. “As District Health Officer,” wrote Fernando in the *Lanao Progress*, “I wish to push on the work of my predecessors on vaccination and immunization against smallpox, cholera, typhoid and dysentery. I wish to diminish, if I can, the ravages of hookworm and other intestinal parasites. This problem cannot be solved without sanitary disposal of human waste. In other words, more sanitary toilets should be constructed throughout the province.”<sup>51</sup> Youth attendees of Laubach’s school in Dansalan began taking local doctors and nurses back to their communities to explain the “laws of health,” and Laubach arranged for the visit of a nurse-representative of the Nestlé and Anglo-Swiss Condensed Milk Company to demonstrate “how to use the various kinds of canned milk” to fifty nursing Maranao mothers.<sup>52</sup>

Spurred on by Laubach, a minor health panic broke out in 1933 over the proposed opening of a dancehall in Dansalan. The municipal council of the town voted to grant the business a cabaret license at the cost of ₱600. Town counselors told Laubach that they were embarrassed when they attended events at the home of the provincial governor or the Officers’ Club because they did not know how to dance, and thought the new hall would remedy this. For Laubach, the desire for a dancehall illustrated “the danger of misunderstanding what a high civilization is” and believed the Maranaos only wanted the establishment because it would help them “become acceptable members of the aristocracy of Dansalan.” The threat of the dancehall was moral and existential. Laubach saw Protestant ethics as a bulwark against the ethically bereft aspects of Western civilization. “If you take

---

<sup>50</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to John Laubach, 23 March 1933, Box 2, Folder 1. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>51</sup> “Letter,” *Lanao Progress*, 1 September 1933, 10.

<sup>52</sup> “Visiting Nurse,” *Lanao Progress*, 15 March 1935, 3. Nestlé marketed their products elsewhere in the Muslim world. The company’s work in the Ottoman Empire, for example, helped set future marketing strategies in non-European countries. Activists have criticized the company’s aggressive promotion of infant formula in developing world environments, and, since 1977, have organized an ongoing boycott against Nestlé. See Colin Boyd, “The Nestlé Infant Formula Controversy and a Strange Web of Subsequent Business Scandals,” *Journal of Business Ethics* 106.3 (2012): 283-293; Yavuz Koese, “Nestlé in the Ottoman Empire: Global Marketing with Local Flavor 1870-1927,” *Enterprise & Society* 9.4 (2008): 724-761.

missions out of the Orient and out of Africa,” he wrote to his father, “civilization is likely to be very much more of a curse than a blessing. The people are likely to be attracted by the clamor of its gaudy evil and to reject the more difficult aspects of civilization like education.”<sup>53</sup>

To counteract support for the dancehall, Laubach enlisted his “trusted” Maranao worker Hadji Pambayo to speak to municipal counselors and other supporters of the business. Laubach, his wife, and his employees used venereal disease as a scare tactic, claiming that “half of the girls” who visited cabarets were “immoral and that the diseases of vice spread quickly wherever they are.” Pambayo informed the counselors and local *panditas* that an “epidemic of venereal disease” would likely follow the opening of the dancehall, and that the establishment would bring in prostitutes. Lecturing to the Moros, Laubach and his wife warned that a certain sexually-transmitted infection (tellingly they did not specify which one) was “the most killing disease on earth, worse than tuberculosis, pneumonia, cholera, or smallpox or any other disease and that according to statistics, it claims more people...this disease has not yet gotten a start in Dansalan but this dance will bring it in.”<sup>54</sup> Speaking about the moral-medical effects of the dancehall, Laubach and his supporters drew from entrenched anxieties of the diseased and sexually licentious female corrupting morally weak men. Tapping into fears of difference and aberration from gender norms, Laubach spoke of “a woman dressed like a man, who has for many years been trafficking in girls and supplying them for cabarets” as being one of the principal parties behind the new dancehall. These tactics worked, and the *pandita* who was bankrolling the project withdrew his support. Laubach, in a subsequent letter to his father, expressed relief that “the evil thing” was banished.<sup>55</sup>

Colonial dialogues during the period folded public health measures, personal hygiene, municipal sanitation, moral and ethical considerations, and education into a larger narrative

---

<sup>53</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to John Laubach, 10 March 1933, Box 2, Folder 1. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid.

<sup>55</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to John Laubach, 23 March 1933, Box 2, Folder 1. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.



that defined a perceived unclean past against a present rigorously sanitized through the efforts of official and non-official Western actors.<sup>56</sup> For Frank McCoy, the years prior to the American arrival in the Southern Philippines were ones of cholera and bubonic plague epidemics, “roaming lepers,” malnutrition, and a general lack of public sanitation. Writing in 1925, he argued that “sanitary organization,” at first “bitterly opposed,” had succeeded in suppressing plague, smallpox, cholera, malaria, bubonic plague, dysentery, and “reduced the death rate, and greatly improved health conditions in which its rules have been respected and enforced.”<sup>57</sup> In Mindanao and Sulu, medical and sanitary infrastructures had developed by the early 1930s. Each province had at least one hospital under the supervision of the Philippine Health Service (PHS). Zamboanga, for example, had three PHS hospitals, one supervised by the Bureau of Prisons, one military hospital, two private hospitals, and twenty dispensaries scattered around the province. The Sulu Archipelago had a lone hospital, but nineteen small dispensaries throughout its islands.<sup>58</sup> As small as some of these facilities were, the above numbers still represented an impressive expansion of medical services and modern medicines into areas previously unreachable. The unpleasant grammar of colonial medicine, awash in notions of racial and civilizational capacity, was moderated by some of its objective practical benefits: the construction of small clinics in rural areas, increased access to medicine, decreased mortality rates from preventable disease, and the dissemination of useful health information.

## The Marketplace and the Field

### *i.) The Moro Exchange System*

On 14 June 1904, the Legislative Council of the Moro Province passed into law Act No. 55, bearing the comically ponderous title: “An Act Appropriating the Sum of One Thousand Eight Hundred and Fifty Pesos, Philippine Currency, or so Much Thereof as may be

---

<sup>56</sup> See Anne McClintock’s writing on the connections between imperial notions of racial hygiene and the development of a global consumer capitalist order in the late colonial period. See Chapter Five, “Soft-Soaping Empire: Commodity Racism and Imperial Advertising,” in Anne McClintock, *Imperial Leather*, 207-231.

<sup>57</sup> Report on the Philippines, 1925, Box 82. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>58</sup> Report from Teopisto Guingona to Frank Murphy, 23 February 1934, Box 29, Folder 8. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

Necessary, for the Construction in the Municipality of Zamboanga of a Public Market for the Especial Use of the Moro and Other Non-Christian Inhabitants of the District of Zamboanga, and Providing for the Administration Thereof.”<sup>59</sup> This piece of legislation marked the founding of what was soon called the Moro Exchange, an experiment in the moral effects of commerce on the non-Christian residents of the Southern Philippines. Ideologically aligned with industrial-educational projects aimed at transforming schooling in the region, the Moro Exchange system represented the victory of the modern marketplace over the stifling dictates of indigenous traditionalism. When combined with access to vocational training, officials believed the Moro Exchange would free the peasantry of Mindanao and Sulu from the oppressive yoke of the datanship and the exploitation of the Chinese merchant. By participating in the Moro Exchanges and other limited forms of market capitalism the Moros were, in the words of Michael Hawkins, “entering the universal narrative of progress from which they had been excluded for thousands of years.”<sup>60</sup> The Exchange at Zamboanga was opened in early September 1904 with a colourful inauguration ceremony. Visiting the Exchange two months later with Datu Mandi, Samal leader on the Zamboanga Peninsula, W. Cameron Forbes observed people flocking “to the place by thousands” and “delighted to find they can get good prices themselves...Datu Mandi told me they were contented, extending cultivation in all directions and well pleased generally.”<sup>61</sup>

The Moro Exchange system was a product of John Park Finley, the meteorologist turned civilizing agent whom we encountered at Lake Mohonk in Chapter Two. As District Governor of Zamboanga, Finley controlled the main hub of commercial activity in the Islamic Philippines. Zamboanga was also the seat of colonial power in the region, allowing for close monitoring of the initial Moro Exchange. The project’s first building was a tall thatched-roof structure, open at its ends and lined on either side with the booths and stalls of

---

<sup>59</sup> “Act No. 55: An Act Appropriating the Sum of One Thousand Eight Hundred and Fifty Pesos, Philippine Currency, or so Much Thereof as may be Necessary, for the Construction in the Municipality of Zamboanga of a Public Market for the Especial Use of the Moro and Other Non-Christian Inhabitants of the District of Zamboanga, Providing for the Administration Thereof,” Legislative Acts Enacted by the Legislative Council of the Moro Province, 14 June 1904, Box 216. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>60</sup> Hawkins, *Making Moros*, 88.

<sup>61</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol.1, 30 November 1904. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

vendors. Finley and his crew organized the space into sections for the different types of products sold. The fish department had forty stalls where local fisherman displayed their daily catch, small farmers and foragers sold “jungle produce” like coconuts and camotes, and local artisans peddled their brass work. A small restaurant staffed by Samal Moro women and children sold prepared foods. Adjacent to the Exchange’s main building was a lodging house where travelling vendors could spend the night for a small fee. The entire complex was surrounded by a wooden stockade, and had its own security officers. When journalist Atherton Brownell visited the Moro Exchange, he noted that trading methods “well known” to Americans were for the Moros “an absolute revelation.” Brownell, a staunch supporter of Finley in the press, praised the “civilizing influence” of the district governor’s “experiment.”<sup>62</sup>

The Exchange was run by an executive board, led by Finley and Zamboanga District Secretary John R. Proctor, whose officers included local leaders from the peninsula and the nearby island of Basilan. This included Datu Mandi, Datu Hadji Nuno, and Datu Pedro Cuevas. The board met regularly to deliberate over organizational matters and settle disputes arising from the operation of the Exchange complex, with a particular emphasis on matters involving Chinese traders.<sup>63</sup> Finley believed that if the Moros and Lumads of the Southern Philippines were to be uplifted they needed simultaneous discipline and protection. The punitive nature of military rule provided the former, while the latter was strictly enforced by “regulations in the conduct of Moro Exchanges as will protect the non-Christians against exploitation in the sale of their property, products of their labor, and in the purchase of such supplies as may be needful for them.” Here Finley had in mind the injurious debt relationships that local Samal Moros often had with the Chinese merchant class, who controlled commerce in the small communities of the Zamboanga Peninsula. To remedy this, he created strict guidelines that set fixed rates for market licenses, forbade bartering within the Exchange, prevented the undervaluation of native labour, provided for the construction of

---

<sup>62</sup> Atherton Brownell, “What Ideas of American Citizenship may do for Oriental Peoples: A Moro Experiment,” *Outlook*, January 1905, 979-981.

<sup>63</sup> *Ibid.*, 983.

new buildings should expansion occur, and assigned a series of superintendents and supervisory agents to carry out these measures.<sup>64</sup>

In 1905, Secretary of War William Howard Taft visited Zamboanga on an official tour. While there, Finley provided carriages for Taft and his delegation to travel to and from the Moro Exchange, where they were encouraged to buy local manufactures and shown how the marketplace had an inherently civilizing effect upon the colonial subjects.<sup>65</sup> Taft saw “the actual proof of what had been suggested and undertaken in the face of incredulity” and although the traders had some trouble breaking the large twenty-peso bills used by the delegates, Atherton Brownell reported that there was “little suggestion that these merchants were business infants of less than one year of age.” The Samal had “quickly learned the law of supply and demand” and doubled their prices when Taft and the congressmen of the delegation arrived.<sup>66</sup>

Finley became so convinced of the effectiveness of the Exchange that he started using it in conjunction with the suppression of anti-government movements. On Basilan Island, just off the coast of Zamboanga, a revolt broke out in late 1907, led by a local religious figure named Salip Agil. At issue, predictably, was the imposition of government taxes. After the killing of two American lumbermen and a Chinese merchant on the island, Finley led a force of six hundred U.S. Army and Philippine Constabulary troops to confront Agil. Cordoning off the island and conducting thorough searches, Finley’s men captured Agil and killed some of his followers.<sup>67</sup> To quell unrest, Finley and his men immediately setup Moro Exchanges at the *Rancherias* of Bojelebung, Amaluy, Cambingbing, Guiong, LeMut, Malusu, Lunpinigan, Lamitan, Panigayan, and Lahi Lahi. Many of these were tiny settlements and the Exchanges acted as the primary state presence in them. Finley claimed that they were opened by the express request of the Yakan Moros who inhabited Basilan’s interior. He boasted in a

---

<sup>64</sup> Report on the Moro Exchange System, 31 October 1910, Box 217, Folder 2. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>65</sup> Memorandum on Activities at Zamboanga During Taft Visit, 17-18 August 1905, Box 11, Folder 3. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>66</sup> Brownell, “Ideas of American Citizenship,” 983.

<sup>67</sup> This expedition was also connected with the outlaw Jikiri. See Chapter Five.

memorandum that the Yakan were now paying taxes and visiting Zamboanga. “All of this changed now,” Finley wrote, “and prosperity, peace and contentment reigns among these thousands of picturesque savages. The Moro Exchange is the industrial and commercial school that opens a hopeful future to these benighted people, once the ignorant and downtrodden slaves of a Mohammedan satrap.”<sup>68</sup>

At an estimated 110,000 residents in 1908, the Zamboanga district was one of the most populous in the Southern Philippines. By that time, twenty-five Exchanges had opened up around the peninsula and business was brisk. Figures from 1907-08 show total sales had grown to ₱573,875.05, up from ₱102,747.66 in the inaugural year of the Exchange. Although global decreases in the price of hemp and copra hurt profits in the year the report was compiled, the Exchanges had an admirable number of products on offer. Fish comprised the largest share of sales, at ₱134,319.00, with Moro-run restaurants coming second at a distant ₱31,848.26. Eggs, copra, dry fish, chickens, shellfish, rice, cattle, and fruits all sold well, and other items on the list included firewood, agricultural implements, mats, vegetables, calapia, palay, *bejuco*, and beeswax. In the same report, Finley commented that conducting a “righteous colonial policy” meant respecting “the beliefs, the customs, and the traditions of the subjugated or the protected peoples, so far as such consideration is not repugnant to the requirements of human good, as measured by the judgment of the Christian nations of the earth.”<sup>69</sup> In the Moro Exchange system, indigenous customs were respected so long as they coincided with the moral standards of Anglo-Saxon culture.

Atherton Brownell again reported on the Moro Exchanges in 1911 for *Outlook*, rehashing some of the material from six years prior but also adding new observations. A picture of the stalls at the main building in Zamboanga, now more solidly built, was captioned “The Market of Civilization” and Brownell praised Finley for channeling the skills of Moro tradespeople into a productive system. Property rights were respected, according to Brownell, and murder had ceased. This in a place where a “human life could be valued at six spittoons and where property rights never existed.” The Exchange complex at Zamboanga

---

<sup>68</sup> Brief Report of the Basilan Campaign, 1907-1908, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>69</sup> John P. Finley, “The Development of the District of Zamboanga,” *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 63.

expanded to ten buildings, with “cattle sheds, [a] tool-house, wood and lumber yards, chicken pens, goat pens, latrines, dormitory, and water supply.”<sup>70</sup> The number of Exchanges in the region rose to thirty-two, although the volume of business never again reached its 1906-07 high of ₱795,768.00, something Finley attributed to fluctuations in the demand for hemp and forest products.<sup>71</sup> Brownell observed these developments and declared to *Outlook’s* readership that the benefits of the Moro Exchanges could not “be estimated entirely in dollars and cents or in *pesos* and *centavos*. Its moral effect is the factor of greatest value.”<sup>72</sup>

Despite Finley’s incessant promotional efforts, opposition to the Moro Exchange system grew within the government of the Moro Province. Governor John Pershing personally disliked Finley and removed him from office in April 1912. Finley’s subsequent communications with representatives of the Sublime Porte in Constantinople and refusal to excuse himself from the politics of the Southern Philippines further strained relations between the two.<sup>73</sup> In his 1913 annual report, Pershing described a “full investigation” of the system of Exchanges that had taken place the previous year. The findings of the investigation, contrary to Finley and Brownell’s boosterism, reflected negatively upon the Moro Exchanges. “The people of Zamboanga district are decidedly opposed to the continuation or reestablishment of Moro markets or Moro exchanges as they were formerly conducted,” wrote Pershing. District Governor George A. Helfert, brought in to replace Finley, was quoted extensively, and believed that the Exchange system “did not bring forth beneficial results either for the non-Christian inhabitants of the District of Zamboanga or for the government, but even worked hardship on the farmer, and had the opposite effect upon the hill people from that which was desired.”<sup>74</sup>

---

<sup>70</sup> Brownell, “Savages Into Citizens,” 928.

<sup>71</sup> Record of Business Conducted at Moro Exchanges and Trading Stores in the District of Zamboanga, 30 June 1911, Box 1, Folder 1. John Finley Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>72</sup> Brownell, “Savages Into Citizens,” 929.

<sup>73</sup> See Chapter Eight, section: “Moros, Americans, and the Muslim World”

<sup>74</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 18.

At the beginning of 1913, the operation of the Exchanges was given to Charles R. Morales, the new head of the Industrial Office. Morales was even more emphatic than Helfert in his condemnation of Finley's development of the Exchanges:

The Moro exchange agents compelled the people of the surrounding country to take their products to such a market; even though they could sell such products elsewhere to better advantage than in the market where there was no demand or prospective buyers for their products. Such requirements, together with the fee of one per cent that was charged at these markets for every peso or part of a peso's worth of products that was sold at the Moro exchange, have made these institutions very unpopular among the Moro and Pagan people of this Province.<sup>75</sup>

A portion of this negative assessment undoubtedly arose from Finley's ignominious exit from the Moro Province, although the swift dissolution of the Exchange system after his departure suggests merit to the claims of Helfert and Morales that it was genuinely unpopular amongst those it was meant to serve. Convinced of the righteousness of his civilizing endeavour, Finley enforced, through his agents, a system of commerce that became coercive and unresponsive to local conditions.

John Finley's zealousness continued after his long term as District Governor of Zamboanga concluded. In September 1912, he had Leonard Wood, an early supporter of his work, pass along his observations about the industrial transformation of the Moros to President Taft. In his report to Taft, Finley credited the Exchanges for an array of beneficial effects. They had, he wrote, created a sense of civic duty among the Moros. More schools had been opened, public works projects completed, and contacts between communities facilitated because of the Exchange system. Modern "sanitary methods of living" and the use of Western medicines had increased, and on farms the latest agricultural techniques were adopted. Falling crime rates and the success of the disarmament campaign could likewise be attributed to the effects of the Exchanges. In the previous decade, the marketplace, as imagined by Finley, had

---

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., 17-18.

“developed a new idea of life among all classes, a spirit of toleration, a respect for the rights of others, opportunities for development, new relationships, new acquaintances and a broader field of view.”<sup>76</sup>

Excluded from a role in the government of the Southern Philippines, John Finley took his commercial evangelism to the pages of scholarly journals in the United States. Unlike Pershing and his subordinates, Finley believed the Exchanges were an unmitigated success – an “awakening” of peoples previously slumbering in primitivism. In the *North American Review*, he contrasted the religious proselytism of the Spanish with his own commercial-industrial proselytism. An “indefinite period of military control” was necessary to completely transform the region, Finley wrote, while in the meantime the Moro Province was already being transitioned to the civilian-led Department of Mindanao and Sulu. Likely unaware that his grand project was at that moment being dismantled, Finley provided his clearest statement of purpose in this article: “The Moro Exchange System has become the active agent for wakening the commercial spirit of the uncivilized tribes of the Philippines, has become a powerful instrument for peace and unity among Moros and Pagans, and is serving the public by materially aiding in the collection of public revenues, and thus providing for the general progress of the community.”<sup>77</sup>

Despite his exile, John Finley’s vision for the Moros and Lumads of the Southern Philippines remained the purest articulation of the missionary capitalist spirit that drove many of the colonials in the region. The concept of redemption and transformation through labour and the marketplace did not simply vanish when the Moro Exchange system was abolished in 1913. Industrial and agricultural education remained the linchpin in efforts to develop Muslim populations. Outside of the schoolhouse and marketplace, Americans and Christian Filipinos applied a similar moral outlook on commerce and development in their efforts to populate and render productive the interior of Mindanao.

---

<sup>76</sup> “The Subjugation of the Moros and Pagans of the Southern Philippines Through the Agency of their Moral and Industrial Development,” 11 September 1912, Box 1, Folder 1. John Finley Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>77</sup> John P. Finley, “The Commercial Awakening of the Moro and Pagan,” *The North American Review* 197 (1913): 332. The Exchanges received attention back in the United States. See “Teaching New York’s Trade Tactics to the Moros,” *Washington Post*, 9 June 1912, SM4.



ii.) “*Model Colonies*”

Writing to Tasker Bliss in early 1908, John McAuley Palmer outlined plans for a model agricultural colony on the northern side of Lake Lanao. Although his military tour was over and he had returned to Fort Douglas in Utah, the former District Governor of Lanao believed that his designs for turning the Maranao Moros into productive agriculturists could still be used by the colonial authorities. The proposed colony would have fifty Maranao Moro families, each with a forty-acre homestead where they would grow crops. An initial outlay of resources and funds by the government was necessary, but the colony would quickly become self-subsisting as each colonist family raised the crops required to feed themselves. Certain minimums would be allotted for export crops like coffee, cacao, and tobacco, which the families would grow to pay off their debts to the government and, later, make profit.

McAuley had planned the colony extensively enough to provide Bliss with monetary estimates for the costs to pay for seed, *carabao*, rice and food, plows, and small farming implements in the early stages of the experiment. He also provided a chart with estimated monetary results, which suggested that after five years the colony could be profitable, and that its successes would generate replications of the model elsewhere in the region. The “security and prosperity” of these government colonies would allow for the expansion of small industry like cloth and metalwork. Public works projects would likewise benefit, as settlers were assigned mandatory periods where they would labour for the government. “The greatest advantages of the colonies,” according to Palmer, “would be political. The success of the settlers in the colony would be an object lesson to other Moros.”<sup>78</sup>

Letters, reports, newspaper articles and other materials from this period illustrate the extent to which authorities believed that the colonial domestication of space in Mindanao was crucial to civilizing efforts. The experimental farms and agricultural colonies envisioned by officials like John McAuley Palmer were the final stage of an educational model oriented

---

<sup>78</sup> Letter from John McAuley Palmer to Tasker Bliss, 12 January 1908, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

towards creating small landholders. With fields to oversee and produce to sell, the non-Christians of the Southern Philippines would be rendering previously ‘useless’ territory productive and tying their own fates to the success or failure of the colonial project, thus lessening the likelihood of resistance. Mindanao was seen as so bountiful that its insufficient population needed supplementations of Christian settlers from Luzon and the Visayas. At the top of the settlement pyramid was a planter class of Americans and Europeans (and later Japanese) who oversaw vast commercial farming operations, many of which were located in the Davao region. Land and questions of economic productivity, so central to the American colonial imagination, became the crucible of the civilizing project and, later, the quest to create a coherent Filipino national identity.<sup>79</sup>

As illustrated in Chapter Two, Mindanao was subject to a variety of settlement plans in the early years of the American era. Most of these were fanciful – like one call in 1906 to populate the island with Italians and Greeks – and amounted to nothing.<sup>80</sup> However, Mindanao still drew a fair number of Westerners to it. Patricio Abinales and others have done excellent work on the American planter class in the Southern Philippines. These men and women represented a small but important presence in Mindanao throughout the first-half of the twentieth-century, although the Filipinization of the South and the influx of Japanese migrants gradually displaced them in the two decades prior to the Second World War.<sup>81</sup> Vic Hurley, author of several popular books on the region, spent time as a planter in Mindanao

---

<sup>79</sup> Peter Gowing has shown how administrators from the earliest days of the occupation used their experiences on the American frontier as a means of understanding, and planning for, settlement in the Muslim South. George W. Davis in particular was concerned about balancing the “opening up” of Mindanao with “sparing” the Moros the “destruction of savage aborigines elsewhere.” He wrote in 1902: “In those regions as everywhere in the United States’ Indian country the army has supplied the advance guard of civilization and all required protection until the people were able to protect themselves and to form those settlements into territories and States. If Cotabato, or Parang, or Jolo, or any other existing Christian settlement should develop into an orderly and prosperous community that manifestly possessed the elements of permanent self-sustained existence, the scheme of government sanctioned by the Philippine Commission should provide the means for a transformation from military control to civil self-governing rule, such as has been provided for Zamboanga.” Quoted in Gowing, “Moros and Indians,” 140.

<sup>80</sup> Tan, *The Filipino Muslim Armed Struggle*, 73-76.

<sup>81</sup> See the conclusion of Chapter Eight for a brief discussion on Japanese migration to Mindanao. Patricio Abinales has studied demographic shifts, and resulting cultural effects, in the Southern Philippines before and after the Second World War. See Patricio Abinales, “State Authority and Local Power in the Southern Philippines, 1900-1972” (PhD diss., Cornell University, 1997), 247-282.

during the 1920s and 1930s, and his memoirs provide insight into how he and other ambitious young Americans pursued wealth on the colonial frontier through the growth of hemp, coconuts, *abaca*, rubber trees, and other tropical products.<sup>82</sup> It was not uncommon for officials from the government, military, and Constabulary to transition into plantation work after their service ended. For example, Luther R. Stevens, one-time Governor of Lanao and a colonel in the Constabulary, became a manager of a sixty thousand hectare coconut plantation at Malabang.<sup>83</sup> The fortunes of the planter class, mentioned elsewhere in this dissertation, can be read alongside much larger attempts to repurpose land and peoples in the region through agricultural colonization.

Land reform and settlement were priorities during the period of American military rule, although large colonization schemes did not gather speed until Frank W. Carpenter became governor. Correspondence between Leonard Wood and Tasker Bliss from 1906 indicated an unease shared by both men about introducing non-Christian settlers into predominantly Muslim and Lumad areas, although Wood did discuss his attempts to induce Moros to claim up to sixteen hectares of land from the government for cultivation.<sup>84</sup> Bliss, writing in 1907, was skeptical of any expansion of white colonization in Mindanao, stating his belief that “the white man will never come here in such numbers as to make even a beginning of ousting the native from his occupation of the soil.” Bliss thought that in time the natives would “fully occupy the soil as to leave no room for the white man should the latter desire to come, except as he comes with the limited number and the limited purposes with which he has come to other Eastern countries.” First the “greater part of the Cotabato Valley” and later most of Mindanao was being designated as public land, and through its regulation and development the region would flourish.<sup>85</sup>

---

<sup>82</sup> Hurley, *Southeast of Zamboanga*, 1-60.

<sup>83</sup> Letter from Joseph Hayden to Betty Hayden, 7 September 1926, Box 28, Folder 26. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>84</sup> Letter from Leonard Wood to Tasker Bliss, 5 July 1906, Box 15, Folder 65. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC; Letter from Leonard Wood to Tasker Bliss, 1 December 1906, Box 15, Folder 68. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

<sup>85</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report – Fiscal Year 1907*, 35-36; Finley, “Race Development,” 364 – “In 1907 Governor Finley began to develop this scheme in practical form, in order to encourage the non-Christians to understand,

The civilian officials replacing the army men believed that the settlement of undeveloped or underutilized tracts of land was of preeminent importance. This sentiment grew as the colonial administrative class was Filipinized. Christian Filipino settlers from Luzon and the Visayas would be used to people Mindanao's virginal frontier spaces, while Muslim and Lumad populations could themselves be induced to enter into similar schemes, albeit semi-segregated from the influx of new migrants for security reasons. The first major settler colonies were located in the large valley running along the banks of the Rio Grande, about ninety kilometers upstream from the town of Cotabato. Two settlements began simultaneously, one for Christians and one for Maguindanao Moros - the latter group being settled near Datu Piang's homestead at his request.<sup>86</sup> Authorities transferred an additional five companies of the Philippine Constabulary to Mindanao to assist in the "protection and regulation" of the colonies.<sup>87</sup> The colonies, established by two separate governmental acts (2254 and 2280), were comprised of settlers vetted by colonial authorities for suitability before assignment. The colony itself was a "practical school of agriculture" where the settlers, under the tutelage of instructors, were trained in selecting the best land for certain crops, cultivating that land, planting and harvesting their crops, and marketing those crops. Colonists were encouraged to participate in the maintenance of public order, and their children attended local schools that focused exclusively on training future farmers.<sup>88</sup>

The small colonies in Cotabato were part of a larger scheme to draw the "partially nomadic inhabitants" of the South into sedentist lifestyles, and help ease population pressures in the Northern Philippines. Brought into proximity with one another through well-organized

---

appreciate and benefit by the homestead privileges of the Philippine public land act. The homestead of 16 hectares (40 acres) is open for free entry to every male adult non-Christian who is a citizen of the Philippines Islands, and cadastral system of surveys and titles inaugurated by Governor General Forbes has made it easy and safe for these people to become landholders under the law."

<sup>86</sup> Eventually there were five settlements in the Cotabato Valley, and one further south on Sarangani Bay. See Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 292.

<sup>87</sup> J. Franklin Bell, "Report on Military Situation - Moro Province and Department Philippines," 5 December 1913, Box 218. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>88</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 375.

colonies, planners hoped the two populations would blend “into a homogenous whole.” Agricultural colonies were the forge upon which formerly landless and culturally suspect groups could be reshaped into ideal Filipino citizens: land owning, economically productive, and politically quiescent. In 1914, Frank Carpenter observed that Christian and Muslim colonists were beginning to trade with one another, attend each other’s festivals, and compete in field sports. These displays of social harmony demonstrated, Carpenter believed, the wisdom of using the colonies to cement national identity. The Maguindanao Moros would “consciously emulate the higher type of civilization” and the “more constant and diligent directed labor” of their “more civilized Christian fellow colonist.”<sup>89</sup> As at Bishop Brent’s school or John Finley’s Moro Exchanges, proselytism occurred in the field and the marketplace rather than at the pulpit. Carpenter was careful to discourage active religious missionary work in the colonies lest the Muslims consider the missionaries government agents. In letters from the period, Carpenter stressed that the government should tread carefully on matters of religion, as he correctly assumed conversionary overtures would be met with hostility.<sup>90</sup>

In the colonization plans, Christian settlers were shipped from the “sterile mountain sides” of Cebu to the Cotabato Valley. Male settlers had to be married and willing to bring their families with them, and were required to stay for a minimum of five years. After signing a contract, the government helped colonists pay off their personal debts, and advanced them an interest-free loan to cover travel expenses to Mindanao. Upon arriving in Cotabato, the colonist was given basic survival tools, building materials, a *carabao*, and a plow for cultivation. The proceeds from the sale of his first year’s crops were kept entirely by the colonist, after which the government took 35 percent of income derived from agricultural products until the colonist’s debt amortization ended. Experts were brought in to speak with the colonists about land management practices, recent scientific advances in agricultural practices, the marketing of their products, and the establishment of schools and hospitals. Christian colonists were provided sixteen hectares of land per family, while the Moros

---

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., 377-378.

<sup>90</sup> Letter from Frank Carpenter to Pascual de la Serna, 20 March 1914, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

received eight hectares. At the time of Carpenter's report, there were forty Moro families living on the colony near Dulawan under the supervision of a *sherif*, although the governor claimed a further 1,500 were eager to be integrated into the program. "Had I the necessary funds with which to pay for surveys, and purchase work cattle and implements," wrote Carpenter, "I could place more than ninety-five percent of the Mohammedans and pagans of the Cotabato District on homesteads in the most fertile and easily cultivated portions of the district within the next twelve months, transferring them from their present state of almost non-productiveness to one of great economic value to this country." The "great forward movement" of the colonization scheme would contribute to the "general betterment and civilization" of non-Christians, and within a generation they would "compare favourably with any producing community in the Islands of the Orient."<sup>91</sup>

Life in these remote colonies was far from ideal. Although Carpenter and other officials had expansive plans, in 1914 they were still in their infancy. The headquarters of the Cotabato Agricultural Colony #1 was a solidly built two-storey structure, but all the homes of colonists were rudimentary nipa-thatched huts of one or two rooms. Mainly built along river flats, where there was easily cleared wild grass but little forest, they were prone to damage from flooding. Colonists relied upon the irregular visits of government steamers for supplies, and lived an isolated existence in a foreign environment.<sup>92</sup> The system of share tenancy and the reliance on purchasing supplies from the state led some critics of the program to argue that Carpenter was overseeing a system of peonage wherein colonists were trapped in a cycle of endless debt. Skeptics also claimed the settlement schemes stifled private investment in the region by limiting land sales and prohibiting individual merchants from operating in the colonies. Carpenter responded by saying he was protecting the colonists and native inhabitants of the region from predation, citing a case he encountered at Sarangani where an independent American trader was selling natives "six peso rice for seventeen pesos." The colony system, he claimed, would be more beneficial than any other tenancy system in Asia "or in fact anywhere in the United States of which I am informed." Colonists, quickly free of

---

<sup>91</sup> Letter from Frank Carpenter to Dean Worcester, 13 May 1914, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

<sup>92</sup> Photograph Collection, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

debt, would make Mindanao productive. If his plan were given a chance, Carpenter would stake his life “that the so-called ‘Moro Problem’ would not be one of public order, but of securing markets for our produce.”<sup>93</sup>

Many of Carpenter’s statements come from correspondence with Dean Worcester, the University of Michigan academic who shaped American notions of the peoples of the Philippine Archipelago. In 1913, Worcester bitterly resigned as Secretary of the Interior for the Insular Government to make way for Democrat-aligned administrators seeking to accelerate the process of Filipinization. Worcester, who railed loudly against Filipinization in the American press, went into private business in the Southern Philippines, focusing on coconut growing. He remained active in political intriguing, and wrote Frank Carpenter a long letter detailing his problems with the colonization scheme. Worcester’s criticisms derived from the deep racial-paternalist skepticism he and other old guard Republican colonials felt towards Philippine independence. Allowing Filipinos to run their agricultural colonies without strict long-term oversight, Worcester believed, guaranteed failure. The Filipinos would not pay their debts, and if they did they would mismanage their land to the point of collapse. Moving into even grimmer territory, Worcester argued there was also the possibility that “some Moro fanatic will break loose in one of your colonies some day and chop up the population.” The agricultural colonies were doomed to failure because they put too much faith in the Filipino. “This is a white man’s job, and it will take a mighty good white man to do it,” Worcester wrote. “I have tackled similar jobs and I know what I am talking about.” The Moros could only be controlled through decades of strong Anglo-Saxon tutelage, and failing this the agricultural colonies were doomed to failure. At the end of his letter, Worcester told Carpenter that he had the “opportunity to become a second Rajali Brooke,” citing the example of the British sovereign of Sarawak, if he managed the region properly.<sup>94</sup>

Contrary to expectation, the Maguindanao people of Cotabato did not clamor to leave their homes for the agricultural colony. Residents of Moro communities in the region were

---

<sup>93</sup> Letter from Frank Carpenter to Dean Worcester, 13 May 1914, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

<sup>94</sup> Letter from Dean Worcester to Frank Carpenter, 7 August 1914, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

settled among kin and already had livelihoods. Why should they uproot themselves and move to some lonely patch of land where their mode of living would be dictated by the ‘scientific methods’ of government administrators? During the first year of operation in 1914, the colonies had 774 families, and in 1915 this grew to 940 families. More than half of the residents in 1915 (2,682) were Moros, while the rest were Christians from the North. During the following five years, the colonies suffered a variety of misfortunes. According to Peter Gowing, in 1918-1919 “a great flood occurred in the Cotabato Valley, destroying most of the crops growing in the colonies. The plants which survived the flood were soon killed by a severe drought. Added to these calamities were smallpox and influenza epidemics among the colonists. The colony at Glan also suffered an earthquake in 1918 which was followed by a malaria epidemic.” Rinderpest-infected cattle and locust swarms further decimated the settlements. In 1919, the number of families (943) remained nearly unchanged from five years earlier, contradicting government projections that the colonies would expand rapidly.<sup>95</sup>

Moro settlement schemes fizzled, but settlers from Cebu and other islands in the North continued arriving independently, a trend that only increased as more Filipinos replaced American officials. Datu Piang, once an enthusiastic supporter of the colonization project, became disillusioned with it. In 1927, he wrote to President Calvin Coolidge to give “the great American people...a clear conception of our situation.” What followed were a series of fevered entreaties. The Americans, Piang asserted, had created a system wherein Moros fell victim to the predominantly Filipino officer class of the Constabulary. Moro homes were “violated,” their altars “desecrated,” entire families were “wiped out,” and “bribery, fraud, [and] chicanery” had “marked the whole period.” Moro lands had been “parceled out and granted to Filipinos” through colonization schemes, and places of worship converted into “pig walls or grog shops.”<sup>96</sup> The anti-Filipino vitriol of Piang’s letter was extreme to the point of race hatred, although also a clear indication of just how alarmed – and fearful – Muslims in the Southern Philippines were about Filipino migration to the region. Piang correctly saw the system as rigged. Administrators from state bureaucracies dominated

---

<sup>95</sup> Gowing, *Mandate in Moroland*, 292-293.

<sup>96</sup> Letter from Datu Piang to Calvin Coolidge, 26 August 1927, Box 28, Folder 33. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.



by Filipinos aided incoming settlers. When Muslim populations were considered, it was in terms of marginalizing the threat they posed to the settlers. Those Moros who gained a spot in government were expected to orient themselves towards nation-building, and an important part of that agenda involved settling the Southern Philippines.

Reports from Manila in the 1930s illustrate the importance of colonization schemes to the idea of Philippine nationhood. The Bureau of Lands worked alongside the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes to make the process as frictionless as possible. “Homeseekers” from Luzon and the Visayas entered into tenancy agreements with the government similar to the ones provided to the early settlers in Cotabato – travel and start-up costs covered by a small loan, a tract of land and agricultural guidance, and a short debt repayment window. The Bureau of Lands indicated to the settlers where they could settle, and once they arrived in Mindanao the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, then responsible for overseeing the Southern Philippines, steered them in the “right direction.” In terms of non-Christian populations, whose lands were being encroached upon by settlers and large corporations, a committee established to examine infrastructure in the South recommended they be settled onto reservations reserved exclusively for them.<sup>97</sup>

A separate report from the same period was even more proscriptive in its recommendations. Compiled by Inocencio Elayda, an agricultural specialist, and Director of Prisons Paulino Santos, formerly the District Governor of Lanao, the report claimed earlier settlements failed because of poor surveying, an underutilization of natural resources to furnish food and building materials, and a lack of proper guidance for incoming settlers. This inevitably led to crop failures, impoverished living conditions, and the abandonment of colonies. Through the selection of suitable colonists, sound agricultural training, and expedient town planning, the colonization of the South could expand rapidly. Elayda and Santos were convinced that there was a “need” for “Christian immigrants from the North to balance its Non-Christian population.” Achieving this manufactured notion of balance would be “highly effective in stimulating the Non-Christians to greater effort for their advancement

---

<sup>97</sup> Report from Governmental Committee on Infrastructure in Mindanao and Sulu, 1930, Box 29, Folder 7. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

in educational, social, and moral, as well as in material things.”<sup>98</sup> Teopisto Guingona, director of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, agreed with Elayda and Santos’ assessment. In his 1934 annual report, he stated that such “peaceful penetration of new settlers, their diligent industry and their good conduct [have] a great influence on the Mohammedans and Pagans of Mindanao-Sulu in the latter’s attitude towards their neighbors and towards the government.” Echoing Frank Carpenter two decades earlier, Guingona claimed that settlement and development in the Southern Philippines were “a great factor in the solution of the so-called Moro Problem.” New colonies were financed and supervised by government agencies in Cotabato, Sulu, and Zamboanga.<sup>99</sup>

Civilizing agendas continued to find expression through colonization plans during the transitional Commonwealth period. The Government of the Philippines enthusiastically promoted settlement and infrastructural advancement. In March 1936, the new President of the Commonwealth Manuel Quezon toured the “fertile unexplored lands” of the Cotabato Valley and urged Christians and non-Christians alike to “take advantage of the opportunity being offered them by the government for the development of the region.”<sup>100</sup> That same year, over eight thousand new vacant lots were created through the subdivision of lands in Cotabato, Lanao, and Davao. Secretary of Lands José P. Dans encouraged settlers from areas like Cebu and Bohol to move south.<sup>101</sup> Plans were made to settle six thousand families along the district boundary between Cotabato and Davao, facilitated by the massive expansion of second class roads on the island that stretched from Misamis in the North to the Davao Penal Colony in the South, and passing through Bukidnon, Lanao and Cotabato. Families would settle along these roads. Long-term goals included railroad lines, the harnessing of several

---

<sup>98</sup> Inocencio Elayda and Paulino Santos, “A Tentative Plan for the Development of Agricultural Colonies Under the New Colonization Law,” Undated, Box 29, Folder 6. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>99</sup> Teopisto Guingona, “Annual Report of the Director of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes for the Year 1934,” 11 March 1935, Box 28, Folder 22. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>100</sup> “Government to Push Development of Mindanao,” *Manila Tribune*, 25 March 1936, Box 29, Folder 1. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL (The following five newspaper articles are sourced from clippings in scrapbooks that J.R. Hayden assembled and will be referenced in shorthand: HS – Hayden Scrapbook – followed by the box and folder number)

<sup>101</sup> “Subdivision of Huge Tracts of Land in Mindanao Endorsed by Dans,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 6 June 1936. HS 29.09

waterfalls for power generation, and legislation to expedite access for agricultural, industrial and mining concerns looking to exploit the resources of Mindanao. “At the minimum expense to the Commonwealth government, the present administration expects to see Mindanao fully developed and wealth-producing land by the end of the Commonwealth transition period, when the Filipino nation finally acquires its complete and absolute independence,” reported the *Manila Tribune*.<sup>102</sup>

The Maranao, Samal, and Maguindanaon populations living in the vicinity of settlement colonies had little interest in uprooting their lives when they already had access to the benefits of the Mindanao environment by virtue of birth. Nevertheless, the rapid influx of Christian migrants and settlements in the Commonwealth period caused some Moros to apply for homesteads, fearing that “public lands in Mindanao [were] rapidly falling into Christian hands.”<sup>103</sup> The Moros could not combat the sheer scale of the migration from the North through land applications, however. Government officials in Manila saw Mindanao as a demographic steam valve that mitigated issues of overcrowding and resource allocation, and readily said as much. Secretary of Agriculture and Commerce Eulogio Rodriguez stated in 1937 that

in Japan, Italy and Germany, all densely populated and where, figuratively speaking, there is no elbow room to accommodate excess population, a fundamental reason exists for these social problems. But in this country there should be no such problems. We have excess lands and manpower and force to develop these lands. What we need are no philosophers but a practical grasp of the situation and actual migration work. We need strong pioneering spirit; strong will and the national-spirited decision to develop

---

<sup>102</sup> Roberto Villanueva, “Chain of Roads Luring Settlers to Mindanao to be Finished Next June,” *Manila Tribune*, 2 August 1936. HS 29.01; “Mindanao Land Surveys Will Open Region to 6,000 Families Next Year,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 8 September 1936. HS 29.09

<sup>103</sup> “Moros Ask for Homesteads,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 24 April 1939. HS 29.13

our country, to move from place to place, to spread out and occupy our own agricultural lands a patrimony which God has given us as a gift.<sup>104</sup>

Reminiscent of those who settled the American frontier, Rodriguez legitimated the project of internal colonization through religiously inspired rhetoric that envisioned the islands of the archipelago as a historically immutable national entity.

The colonization of Mindanao never became the bedrock of cultural harmony American colonial officials believed it would be when the settlement projects were first launched. Nevertheless, the settlement boom that engulfed Mindanao after the Second World War was made possible by the emphasis placed upon migration and transformation by the Americans and Filipinos responsible for allocating land and resources in the colonial state. Although the early agricultural settlements floundered, a reorganized settlement plan under the Interisland Migration Division of the Bureau of Labour, which operated from 1919 until 1939, managed to attract 30-35,000 people to agricultural colonies by the mid-1930s. More significant, the aggressive marketing of Mindanao in the press, first by Americans and later by Filipinos, intensified independent migration to the island. During the entire colonial period, Mindanao was “considerably above the national average” in population growth, and since there was little migration from outside of the country (apart from the Japanese in Davao, who constituted a small but important demographic) a “sizeable in-migration [was] indicated.”<sup>105</sup> Demographics shifted accordingly. In Cotabato, for example, 113,875 residents of a total 125,875 were Muslims and the remaining 12,000 were Lumads, according to the 1903 census. The 1939 census showed a total population of 298,935, of whom 162,996 were Muslim and 70,493 Lumad. This indicates a significant influx of Christian settlers into a region where previously none lived.<sup>106</sup> In Lanao, a province considered comparatively hostile to settlement by Christians, there was still a net migration of 163,990 people between the

---

<sup>104</sup> “Makes Appeal to Till Lands,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 6 July 1937. HS 29.12

<sup>105</sup> Frederick L. Wernstedt and Paul D. Simkins, “Migrations and the Settlement of Mindanao,” *Journal of Asian Studies* 25.1 (1965): 88.

<sup>106</sup> Jeremy Beckett, “Datus of the Rio Grande,” 50.

1903 and 1939, and in Christian-majority regions like Davao and Misamis the numbers were also statistically significant.<sup>107</sup>

If the agricultural colonies, with their dreams of integration, did not become the standard for settlement, the exaggerated success stories promulgated in the North instilled in many Christian Filipinos, especially in the Visayas, the idea that Mindanao was a place for personal reinvention and financial gain. This, alongside real population pressures and wealth disparities in Luzon and the Visayas, generated a natural migratory momentum. Between 1946 and 1960, there occurred what Patricio Abinales calls “the most massive movement of Filipinos in the history of the nation.” Mindanao’s annual growth rate, at 7.4 percent, was double that of the rest of the Philippines, and its population reached over five million by 1960.<sup>108</sup> At this time, one quarter of the residents of Mindanao (1,200,000 people) reported being born outside of the island, and a further 365,798 people had moved between provinces within Mindanao. Combined, this meant that one third of the inhabitants on the island could be considered migrants.<sup>109</sup> Settlement and commercial development throughout Mindanao were a lasting legacy of American colonialism, and were enthusiastically embraced by Christian Filipinos.<sup>110</sup>

---

<sup>107</sup> Wernstedt et al., “Migrations and the Settlement,” 92.

<sup>108</sup> Abinales, “State Authority and Local Power in Southern Philippines, 1900-1972,” 329.

<sup>109</sup> Wernstedt et al., “Migrations and Settlement,” 95.

<sup>110</sup> Frank Laubach spoke to the scale of the project in a letter to his mission donors. Relating a visit to a missionary conference in Pikit, he wrote: “We felt the zest of this mighty migration when we were among these people...the principal subject in this Conference was the question of meeting the rapidly growing opportunity in this great island. The government in Manila is making plans for the transportation of half a million to a million immigrants within the next few years. Roads are being opened in every direction. A program for adequate health measures is being started. In almost every newspaper from Manila we read some new development of this great migration project. I cannot think of any other colonization project in the world today that is being planned on such a grand scale.” – Letter from Frank Laubach to Mission Contributors, 24 September 1938, Box 2, Folder 6. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

## Chapter Four / **Civilizational Imperatives (II)**

### *The Classroom and the Mission House*

In the Islamic Philippines, U.S. colonials encountered forms of education divergent from those in the Christian North. In the Visayas and Luzon, Catholic religious orders had overseen a process of educational acculturation in line with Spanish colonial objectives. The partial and unstable colonization of Mindanao and Sulu by Spain meant that in the South preexisting indigenous educational structures were able to operate with little interference. This inability to conquer the Muslim regions of the Philippines led the Spanish to concentrate their resources on the military and political subjugation of these areas, when they were focusing on them at all. In short, the conditions necessary to develop and operate school systems on Mindanao and Sulu were not present. Jeffrey Ayala Milligan observes that nineteenth-century Spanish census records from Muslim areas showed either no school enrollment records or, as was the case in Zamboanga and Cotabato in 1866, enrollment as low as 4-5 percent of eligible youth.<sup>1</sup>

Islamic education came in the form of the *pandita* school, so-named after the religious figure in the community who administered it.<sup>2</sup> Here, the local youth learned the Arabic alphabet, studied the Qur'an and other Islamic texts, and gained knowledge of the complex genealogical histories that anchored their kinship networks. They were also instructed on general issues of comportment, such as the proper way to greet an elder and the rituals that accompanied prayer.<sup>3</sup> The *pandita* schools provided, in essence, a roadmap for ways of living within one's family, community, ethnic group, and Islam itself. Although the form and content of the schools varied between Moro groups, all focused on what Milligan describes as

---

<sup>1</sup> Milligan, *Islamic Identity*, 41-42. Milligan's work on education in Mindanao and Sulu connects the Spanish, American, and postcolonial periods of Philippine and Bangsamoro history. His thoughtful and compassionate analysis of the dissonance between local and national educational prerogatives represents the most comprehensive reflection on the topic.

<sup>2</sup> Milligan notes that it is "more appropriately called *makatib* – from the Arabic *kataba*, 'to read'" – Ibid., 33.

<sup>3</sup> E.L. Smith, *Report on Sulu Moros*, 48.

“cultural reproduction through the socialization of Muslim youth into the traditions and values of Muslim Filipino ethnic communities.”<sup>4</sup> Such were the structures that the Americans attempted to displace once they conquered the South.

## **The Tribulations of the Public School System**

Civilization by way of education was a priority from the first. Negotiating with the Sultan of Sulu in the summer of 1899, John Bates was given directives by General Elwell S. Otis, military governor of the islands, to emphasize to the Tausūg ruler the benefits of imported forms of education. Instructing “the rising generation of Moros in industrial and mechanical pursuits through the medium of schools” was to be “impressed upon the Sultan and his principal advisors.” Select Americans would be assigned to “go among and associate” with the Tausūg people and “impart constant valuable information” through practical instruction.<sup>5</sup> The emphasis on industrial and agricultural skills remained a constant through the entire American colonial period, as officials believed such training was the most expedient means of civilizing their wards. During his time in the Sulu Archipelago, John Bates studied regional histories and gave special attention to the British colonial presence in Malaya. He noted that the British were able to curb rampant piracy and slaving partially through the establishment of industrial schools, wherein promising Malays received training in a colonially mediated setting.<sup>6</sup>

Until the formation of the Moro Province in 1903, public schools operated in an ad hoc fashion. Although officially run by the Department of Public Instruction in Manila, the state of education varied by community. The operation of schools in areas with Catholic populations was initially left to the religious orders, as was the case in Zamboanga. When the army took over public education, they faced resistance from religious figures. William Kobbé, military governor in the South, disciplined a Catholic priest, Father Vitrian, for sermonizing against the secular school there. Kobbé also tried to assuage Vitrian’s fears by

---

<sup>4</sup> Milligan, *Islamic Identity*, 43.

<sup>5</sup> Memorandum from Elwell Otis to John Bates, 3 July 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>6</sup> Memorandum II – Concerning the Political History of the Sultanate Since the 1840s, 1899, Box 2, Folder 9. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

announcing that preexisting Spanish school laws allowed for the teaching of religion in public schools.<sup>7</sup> In some areas, providing education was left entirely to military men and their relatives. At Malabang, on the coast of Ilana Bay southwest of Lake Lanao, J.H. Sutherland, an army chaplain attached to the 23<sup>rd</sup> Infantry, established a school attended by forty pupils. The mother of an infantry lieutenant, one Mrs. White, volunteered her services as a teacher there alongside Sutherland. The two worked on a voluntary basis in a rented building, but forwarded requests to Zamboanga “begging that a school-house be built, that it be furnished with modern fixtures and that a teacher be sent [there] to direct the work along systematic lines.” Stephen O. Fuqua, the officer in charge of Moro Affairs at Malabang, believed that the Moros were beginning to understand that the American military had “a moral right” to be in the Philippines and “in exercising that moral right it [was] striving to give the Moro light, to educate his brain, to cultivate his habits, to polish his morals and to raise him from the state of the semi-savage.”<sup>8</sup>

The first concerted attempts to rigorously organize and operate schools in the Southern Philippines came in 1903. Within months, Governor Wood and the Legislative Council passed an act providing for “the establishment and maintenance of a public school system in the Moro Province.” By the end of Wood’s tenure in 1906, the council had also legislated disciplinary powers over students, including “reasonable corporal punishment,” and, more importantly, and Act No. 167, which made school attendance compulsory for all children between the ages of seven and thirteen. Parents failing to comply with the ordinance were forced to pay a fine of between three and thirty pesos, and proof was required for an absence to be excused. In passing the act, Leonard Wood and his legislative council unknowingly created the legal foundation of a source of lasting tension between Moros and the government.<sup>9</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup> Diary of Field Service in the Philippines 1898-1901, 21 May 1901, Box 1. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>8</sup> Report from Stephen Fuqua to Adjutant, Zamboanga, 30 September 1903, Box 1, Folder 1. Joseph A. Marmon Papers, 1902-1932, USAHEC.

<sup>9</sup> “Act No. 167: An Act to Require the Attendance of Children at the Public Schools,” Legislative Acts Enacted by the Legislative Council of the Moro Province Council, 20 June 1906, Box 216. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.



In a 1907 speech, Governor Tasker Bliss described the objectives of the public schools. “We have no room in Moro Province for an idle class,” Bliss declared, “and we are, therefore, going to teach your children not only the knowledge which comes from books but the knowledge which comes from training in industrial and agricultural schools. The laborer who produces something to add to the wealth of his country is to be far more respected than the man who simply lives upon the production of others.” Bliss’ vision was of a Moro Province transformed into a capitalist ideal, with development being driven by mines, forests, and plantations. Its roads, he believed, would throng “with an industrious population bringing this wealth to the market.” The governor admitted in his speech that “perhaps one tenth” of the estimated thirty thousand eligible children in the province were attending schools, but was confident that this number would soar when people realized “the value of the free gift which the government holds out to you.”<sup>10</sup> As shown, American colonials frequently imagined Mindanao as space of untapped potential, where myriad natural resources could be exploited. Accomplishing this required not only ambitious white men to establish and oversee operations, but also a pliant and well-trained indigenous labour force. Here the emphasis on industrial and agricultural education met broader developmental agendas for the province.

These grandiose plans for the public school were at odds with realities at the local level. Schools were frequently underfunded, as the government in Zamboanga assigned resources to maintaining order and building transportation infrastructure. Posts outside of built-up areas were difficult to get to and suffered from poor lines of communication. Most importantly, the largest groups being targeted for education – Tausūg, Maranao, Maguindanao, and Samal Moros – proved resistant to government agendas for their children. Although the school system was not geared towards religious conversion, as some Moros feared, it did operate as a tool of deculturation. Being educated in public schools meant foregoing the traditional cultural knowledge provided by the *pandita* schools in favour of colonially mandated values. The schools were the frontline in producing a generation of quiescent Moros whose ideas and ambitions gelled with those of the Americans and Christian Filipinos. As such, being a schoolteacher in the Moro Province meant risking one’s life.

---

<sup>10</sup> Speech at Zamboanga Fair, February 1907, Box 43, Folder 5. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

American and Filipino teachers, the latter particularly, were targets of violence, but the handful of Moros teaching for the government also feared for their own safety. Arolas Tulawie, later a prominent political figure on Jolo, requested the government provide him with a revolver for his protection while teaching. Tulawie, an early adopter of Western fashions, could not properly fit a *barong* into his suit. District Secretary James H. Reeves wrote to Governor Bliss that the problem lay in the fact that nobody travelled outside the walls of Jolo unarmed.<sup>11</sup>

The state of public education in these early years was catalogued in reports from Superintendent Charles R. Cameron, who in June 1906 replaced Najeeb Saleeby as head of education in the province. During his tenure as superintendent and afterwards, Saleeby was sympathetic to the idea of carefully managed datuships, wherein indigenous secular and religious authorities were co-opted instead of being bypassed or dismantled.<sup>12</sup> Saleeby's ideas on the topic deeply influenced Cameron, and where funds were unavailable to establish schools he donated "books and materials to Islamic schools" and encouraged them to "modernize their techniques."<sup>13</sup> First Saleeby and then Cameron devised and distributed Tausūg and Maguindanao literacy primers that utilized Arabic script, antecedents to Frank Laubach's later efforts to teach the Maranaos to read without the use of English.<sup>14</sup> Cameron estimated that before the arrival of the Americans literacy rates were 2 percent among the Samal, 4 percent among the Tausūg, and 8 percent among the Maguindanao (he did not give figures for the Maranaos).<sup>15</sup>

---

<sup>11</sup> Letter from James Reeves to Tasker Bliss, 1 August 1906, Box 15, Folder 65. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

<sup>12</sup> Saleeby, *The Moro Problem*, 29-31.

<sup>13</sup> Milligan, *Islamic Identity*, 66; Bliss, *Annual Report 1907*, 36.

<sup>14</sup> Milligan, *Islamic Identity*, 62.

<sup>15</sup> Charles R. Cameron, "The Schools of Moroland," *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 35. Cameron followed his predecessor Saleeby's lead in attempting to document various aspects of Islamic culture in the Southern Philippines. In 1917, he published a compendium of Sulu-Arabic script. See Charles R. Cameron, *Sulu Writing: An Explanation of the Sulu-Arabic Script as Employed in Writing the Sulu Language of the Southern Philippines* (Zamboanga: The Sulu Press, 1917).

Figures from the period speak to the difficulty Americans had bolstering Muslim enrollment. Between 1903 and 1907, total enrollment in public schools for the Moro Province jumped from 2,114 to 5,394 (although average daily attendance for the latter was only 2,968). Of the 1907 figures, 4,414 were Filipinos, 793 Moros, 165 Lumads, and twenty-two Americans. Cameron was satisfied that the Filipinos were, given their population, meeting expected enrollment numbers. This was due to their “greater natural friendliness” towards the school system and their tendency to concentrate around American garrisons along the coastlines of Mindanao. Enrollment numbers in Muslim communities, for reasons already explained, were incredibly low. The 793 Moro students throughout Mindanao and Sulu came from a pool of over fifty thousand eligible to attend school. Of those students enrolled, it is unlikely that all of them attended classes regularly. Cameron blamed “ancient migratory habits” and impermanent settlements for the Moro reticence to send their children to school. These issues could be corrected, he believed, if Muslim populations were encouraged to develop industrially and adopt modern notions of property accumulation.<sup>16</sup> Tasker Bliss took this corrective pedagogical outlook even further in an article published in the *Mindanao Herald* in 1909, comparing the Moro intransigence to “the willful child or the idle schoolboy who was never taught obedience and never made to do anything which of his own free will he was not included to do” before launching into a tirade about the state of Moro communities prior to the arrival of the Americans.<sup>17</sup>

Beyond basic arithmetic and literacy, even the primary schools emphasized practical training. This began in the first grade, where the children learned “sticklaying, slat-plaiting, paper-folding, block-building” and other basic skills. They advanced to weaving hats and mats in the second grade. In the third and fourth grade they were gender-segregated, with the boys learning to work with rattan and the girls focusing on needlework. Upper year boys also

---

<sup>16</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report 1907*, 16-17. Cameron’s findings are quoted at length within the body of the annual report. He further observed: “Certain progress in civilization must be made before the schools, as ordinarily understood, can begin effective work. As a preparatory step, the wild man must establish communal relations and learn to be an orderly and useful member of society, however crude that society may be. Then and only then can the schools begin their task of individual and social development.”

<sup>17</sup> Referenced at the opening of Chapter Three - Tasker Bliss, “The Government of the Moro Province and its Problems,” *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 4-5.

received one hour of instruction in carpentry per day. The curriculum was flexible, and incorporated materials and training suitable to an individual locality. Ever conscious of their budgets, colonial education officials desired that the material produced by the children be “artistic” and “salable.” Charles Cameron admitted that many of the Filipino and American teachers were unfamiliar with industrial education, but that great strides were being made in creating a uniform curriculum through “rigid inspections.” There was, he added, a “great economic value” in “even a limited amount” of industrial training. In 1907, there were fifty-eight schools operating in the province. Of these, fifty-five were primary, two were strictly industrial, and the final was the provincial high school at Zamboanga. Teaching at these schools were twenty-one Americans, fifty-six Filipinos, and nine Moros. Most taught in English, although two Filipinos taught in Spanish and four Moros taught in local dialects.<sup>18</sup>

Resistance to mandatory public education among Muslim populations extended beyond mere non-participation. Enforcement of Act No. 167, the compulsory school law, was uneven, and the U.S. Army and Philippine Constabulary officers tasked with carrying it out often did so in a tactless manner that alienated native populations. Colonel E.Z. Steever, serving on Jolo, wrote to Tasker Bliss in 1906 that he was unclear about enforcing school attendance. He asked Bliss for clear instructions, “that is whether you wish me to enforce it notwithstanding whatever opposition may arise, or whether its enforcement is to be left partly to my judgment.”<sup>19</sup> Enforced public education generated violence. Primary schools at Parang, Maibun, and Bongao closed due to “dangerous conditions” and a planned school for the education of the Moro elite never advanced past the conceptual stage. In 1909, a frustrated Charles Cameron contacted David Barrows, outgoing educational head for the Philippines, and complained that the colonial authorities in the Moro Province were discrediting native rulers without providing any comprehensive alternative to them. The nature of military service meant that the government was in a constant state of flux, with endless cycles of

---

<sup>18</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report 1907*, 13-16.

<sup>19</sup> Letter from E.Z. Steever to Tasker Bliss, 1 December 1906, Box 15, Folder 68. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

arrivals and departures. This made developing long-term relationships with native leaders difficult, and, consequently, stymied support for industrial education.<sup>20</sup>

At the end of direct military rule in 1913, total enrollment in provincial schools reached 7,568 pupils (with an average daily attendance of 4,535). Filipinos represented 5,111 students, Moros had risen to 1,825, Lumad tribes were at 525, and the remaining one hundred or so students were Chinese, American, and Spanish. Governor John Pershing's annual report boasted that the number of Moros attending school represented a 47 percent increase from the year before, although it was still only a fraction of school-age children in the total population. The report touted the Zamboanga Provincial Normal School, where teachers trained in industrial education, as evidence of progress. Here a "heterogeneous mass" of Visayan, Tagalog, and Moro teachers were "welded into greater homogeneity" under the supervision of Americans, and departed the summer program a "more loyal and better trained body, believing thoroughly in the mission of the public schools and with a clearer idea of their duty toward the expanding civilization of this Province."<sup>21</sup> The Cotabato Moro Girls' School was also lauded. Run by Anna Dworak, wife of the district governor, the boarding school taught Maguindanao girls the domestic arts under "the elevating moral influence of the American Christian woman." An understanding was reached with concerned Maguindanao parents that no religious instruction would occur at the school, but Cameron suggested that the "lived" Christianity of the teachers would "influence the lives of these young girls."<sup>22</sup>

Najeeb Saleeby and Charles Cameron's desire to have indigenous cultural institutions melded with the colonial state never came to fruition. John Pershing resisted the idea of using the *pandita* schools as a means to acculturate Islamic populations to American-Filipino rule, writing that the schools were being "superseded" by public institutions "as fast as funds will permit and competent teachers can be found." The use of *panditas* in the public school system was "almost beyond belief" to Pershing, who argued that the "occult inspiration" of

---

<sup>20</sup> Letter from Charles Cameron to David Barrows, 24 September 1909, Box 320. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD. The murder of teachers was a reoccurring issue in the 1920s and 1930s. See Chapter Five.

<sup>21</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 29-30.

<sup>22</sup> *Ibid.*, 31-32.

Islamic teachers had caused unrest in the past. It was only “civilizing forces” like the colonial school system that would lead to the “social evolution” of the students.<sup>23</sup> This meant a curriculum heavily geared towards the ‘practical’ industrial and agricultural arts. Moros allowed to teach at public schools were invariably those who were amenable to state objectives and had received training at Zamboanga.

Pershing departed in late 1913 and was replaced by Frank Carpenter. Under civilian rule, educational objectives remained consistent with those already in place. The emphasis on vocational training – agriculture in the interior, and “the development of marine resources” on the coast – continued, and in larger towns some students received more advanced skills training in wood and ironworking. The teaching staff in what was now the Department of Mindanao and Sulu expanded greatly, reaching 239. Of these, two hundred were Filipinos, sixteen Moros, and fifteen Americans. In Zamboanga, missionary educational initiatives of the Episcopal Church were underway, and Rev. D.O. Lund of the Christian and Missionary Alliance, alongside his wife, ran schools for boys and girls. Governor Carpenter was as skeptical of indigenous teaching practices as his predecessors, and dismissively observed the “decided inclination to mysticism and pretense to magic” among Islamic teachers. Enrollment numbers continued growing, although Carpenter admitted that an estimated 107,000 children of school age in the province did not receive primary education.<sup>24</sup>

Establishing schools in isolated communities remained delicate work. Even in pacified areas there still existed a great deal of suspicion regarding the aims of the government. In the Cotabato interior, the supervising teacher, James McCall, visited the community of Maganoy to negotiate with its leader, Datu Ampatuan. The datu, advanced in age and religiously conservative, expressed his skepticism to McCall that mandatory schooling in the community would work, and requested soldiers be posted there to chase down those who refused to send their children. At the meeting, McCall met a Tiruray leader who told him that his people were afraid of the Americans and would hide if they came into his territory. Talking to an Indian trader known as “Bombay” afterwards, McCall was told

---

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., 33.

<sup>24</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 350-354.

that the only people in the area who came into contact with the colonials were those living along the banks of the Rio Grande. In the interior, Bombay claimed, the only sustained interaction with outsiders was when Constabulary troops retaliated for the killing of an American or Filipino. Datu Piang, the longtime leader of the Maguindanaon Moros, asked McCall to tell Carpenter that he would “have to be firm in order to enforce obedience.”<sup>25</sup> McCall returned to Cotabato without much to show for his efforts.

The Jones Bill, passed by United States Congress in 1916, increased the rate of Filipinization. Christian Filipinos already represented the vast majority of schoolteachers in the South, but upper-tier education positions remained in American control. Those Filipinos promoted to the upper echelons of the colonial administration were quick to assume the same civilizing impulses towards the Moros enshrined by the Americans. Teopisto Guingona, head of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes in the 1920s and 1930s, mimicked his American predecessors perfectly when he told Arolas Tulawie that the government had “a moral duty and obligation to give instruction to the Mohammedan people.” Guingona wrote to the Tausūg politician that the government wanted to open the eyes of those living in the Sulu Archipelago and “show them the way that leads to civilization.” Education, according to him, was “the basis of the greatness of peoples” and “when the Sulu men and women [had] received the enlightenment emanating from education” they would thank those providing it.<sup>26</sup> Tulawie denied that he was against public education, but was campaigning in opposition to the “Filipinization of education which is against our Mohammedan Culture, and civilization.” The Tausūg people, Tulawie claimed, had no issue with the school system but wanted to be rid of “any Spanish religious influence.” He believed that Christian Filipinos, bearers of this influence, eroded the traditional customs and values of the Tausūg people through the schools and threatened them with the Constabulary.<sup>27</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup> Letter from James McCall to Captain Gallman, 16 January 1914, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>26</sup> Letter from Teopisto Guingona to Arolas Tulawie, 23 July 1920, Box 29, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>27</sup> Letter from Arolas Tulawie to Teopisto Guingona, 12 August 1920, Box 29, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. In the same letter Tulawie requested American teachers, who were not under the sway of Roman Catholicism: “We see all Filipinos pass the Catholic Church in Jolo and remove their hats. No doubt you would do the same. For that reason we should not want you for a teacher. Do you see the point? My people have

From 1914 onwards, a prominent method of shaping Moro youth was providing them with scholarships to study outside of their communities. In the first year of Carpenter's rule, authorities distributed twenty-eight scholarships to Moro boys who demonstrated promise. They were transferred to Zamboanga where they lived "under the immediate observation and influence of department officers" and trained as teachers. That same year, a number of schools in Manila awarded scholarships to Moros. This included the Training School for Nurses, the Philippine School of Arts and Trades, the Philippine General Hospital Training School for Nurses, the School of Commerce, and the Philippine Normal School. The students travelling north were often the children of Moro elites, such as the niece of the Sultan of Sulu.<sup>28</sup> When administration of Moro lands transferred to the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes in 1920, the educational patronage model became solidified in official scholarships. These were distributed with the aim of educating non-Christians to become employees of the Bureau and further government development schemes among their people.<sup>29</sup>

Student *pensionados* had difficult lives. Poor communication between the far-flung islands of the Sulu Archipelago and the Bureau created circumstances where the young men and women arrived in Manila believing they had funding when they did not. Funds available to sustain the scholarships were limited and strict quotas were set.<sup>30</sup> Students who made it to Manila were frequently impoverished. Some petitioned high officials for financial aid. Gowa Mohammad wrote directly to Vice Governor Hayden. Mohammad was enrolled at the Columbian Institute and studying "Police and Detective Science." He was destitute and worked menial jobs to pay for his tuition and matriculation fees, which amounted to ₱68. Mohammad begged Hayden to help him with his costs to save him "from committing suicide" and told the Vice Governor that he had "strong faith and confidence" in him as a

---

always held their heads high because we are proud of our religion and morals. We see our morals breaking now and blame it on education by Christian influences."

<sup>28</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 351.

<sup>29</sup> Development Program: Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes Scholarships, 1931, Box 30, Folder 2. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>30</sup> Letter from Teopisto Guingona to James Fugate, 24 April 1934, Box 28, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.



“great sympathizer of the Moro people.” Hayden replied tersely that all available funds for scholarships were spent for the year. In a subsequent memo, he observed that Gowa Mohammad travelled to Manila after Governor General Frank Murphy displayed interest in him on a visit to Zamboanga.<sup>31</sup>

Public education remained in a state of flux as Filipinization progressed. In the mid-1920s, there were a spate of school-burnings around Lake Lanao and attendance dropped to new lows. Officials attempted to correct this by filling teaching positions with qualified Muslim candidates, but attendance remained meager. In Tamparan in 1932, the performance of the students was so “poor” and their attendance so “irregular” that officials began fining the parents of delinquent children, engendering opposition to the government in the area. Attacks on teachers continued to be an issue.<sup>32</sup> In Sulu, Governor Fugate sarcastically observed that “malicious rumors” had revived “an old and odd superstition that parents dare allow their children absent themselves from home, lest they be devoured by a blood-sucking vampire.” He also lamented the lack of sympathy the Christian Filipino teachers had for the “conditions and situations” of the people of the archipelago and the long classes that small children in rural districts attended.<sup>33</sup>

Qualified teachers were difficult to find. Figures from Sulu show that in 1931, only 1.56 percent of teachers there had any sort of professional training, although the number rose slightly to 7.95 percent the following year. Even with this jump, Sulu still ranked sixth from the bottom in the entire Philippines. Educational authorities at the time, under the direction of Superintendent of Public Instruction K.W. Chapman, pushed to have Muslim boys sent to the Zamboanga Normal School, where they would receive more advanced vocational training than was available in the other regions of the Southern Philippines. There was also an emphasis placed on training Muslim women to be schoolteachers, although this also faced

---

<sup>31</sup> Letter from Gowa Mohammad to J.R. Hayden, 24 July 1935, Box 28 Folder 21. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL; Letter from J.R. Hayden to Gowa Mohammad, 30 July 1935, Box 28, Folder 21. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>32</sup> J.J. Heffington, “Moro Problem: Excerpt from Annual Report of the Provincial Governor of Lanao for the Year 1933,” 1933, Box 28, Folder 9. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>33</sup> Report for the Province of Sulu for 1929, 25 March 1930, Box 29, Folder 14. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

resistance.<sup>34</sup> In 1932, Edward Kuder, a long-serving education official in the South, replaced Chapman. Kuder's experiences in Sulu, Lanao, and Cotabato convinced him that Moro populations were being preyed upon by the Filipino officials, and, in particular, the Constabulary. He aimed to remedy these predations by training a class of Muslim men who could assert themselves in the language of Western governance. They would identify themselves as part of the Filipino national body, yet maintain an ethnoreligious identity separate from it. They would, in short, become Muslim Filipinos and be thusly integrated into the nascent state. "The Commonwealth was preparing [the students] to fit harmoniously into the world," Kuder recalled in an article he wrote after the Second World War, "when the Japanese pestilence swept across them."<sup>35</sup>

Kuder's dreams of an equitable role for the Moros in an ethnically-diverse-yet-nationally-unified Philippines were ambitious but went unfulfilled. Reports from Mindanao and Sulu from the mid-1930s show that educational authorities still struggled. Far from creating a unified elite who could protect Muslim communities within a national framework, Kuder and his subordinates more often faced the same roadblocks as their predecessors: little funding, poor attendance figures, resistance to the educational objectives, and a lack of schools in remote areas. Muslim youth who received advanced education often found that there were no openings for them in white-collar positions, leading Teopisto Guingona to report that this "intellectual unemployment" could be remedied if young Moros "only make up their minds that while there is dignity of labour in an office there is as much dignity of labor in the field – in a homestead." Elsewhere, a development plan for the Southern Philippines urged the government to place emphasis on vocational training so that Moros could be "trained for the household industries to which they are naturally inclined."<sup>36</sup> Blocked from positions of authority, Muslims were encouraged to transform themselves into

---

<sup>34</sup> Report from J. Scott McCormick to Luther Bewley, 11 December 1933, Box 29, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>35</sup> Thomas M. McKenna, *Muslim Rulers and Rebels*, 109; Kuder, "The Moros in the Philippines," 126.

<sup>36</sup> Teopisto Guingona, "Development Plan for Mindanao-Sulu," 1934, Box 29, Folder 8. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL; Teopisto Guingona, "Annual Report of the Director of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes for the Year 1934," 11 March 1935, Box 28, Folder 22. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

sedentary agriculturalists, fishermen, and producers of small manufactures that respected state power without playing a role in its generation.<sup>37</sup>

## Charles Brent, Caroline Spencer, and the Moro Educational Foundation

While the military and civilian governments in the Southern Philippines struggled in their efforts to transform Moro youth through education, American missionary groups also operated in the region. The colonial Philippines was founded on a centuries-long missionary project spearheaded by Spanish Catholic orders who in the process became powerful landholders in the archipelago.<sup>38</sup> Aware of this legacy of Christianization, American missionaries from a variety of Protestant denominations arrived in the Philippines shortly after the second colonial conquest in 1898. Different missionary groups divvied up territory through a comity agreement that year. The Baptists, for example, had ‘rights’ to Western Visayas, while the Congregationalists claimed most of Mindanao. These men and women hoped to win over ‘savage’ tribes to Christ, combat Catholic corruption, and push the colonial authorities to embrace agendas of moral reform by confronting issues like prostitution, human trafficking, and narcotics use. Missionaries in both America and the Philippines approached questions of colonial morality and mission from both pro- and anti-imperialist positions, although most agreed that the Filipinos would be well-served by the presence of social purity advocates. Well-placed social reformers with the ability to generate press and tap into Anglo-

---

<sup>37</sup> Kuder estimated prewar school figures in Cotabato, Lanao, and Sulu as follows: “7 secondary schools, 65-70 complete elementary schools, 250-300 primary schools, 1400-1500 teachers, and 60,000-65,000 pupils.” – Kuder, “The Moros in the Philippines,” 126.

<sup>38</sup> There are many histories that map the influence of the Roman Catholic Church and its missionary orders in the Philippines. Jayeel Cornelio’s recent historiographical essay looks at work in the field and is a good starting point. See Jayeel S. Cornelio, “Popular Religion and the Turn to Everyday Authenticity: Reflections on the Contemporary Study of Philippine Catholicism,” *Philippine Studies* 62.3/4 (2014): 471-500. John N. Schumacher has written expansively on Catholicism and cultural hybridity during the Spanish period. See John N. Schumacher, “Syncretism in Philippine Catholicism: Its Historical Causes,” *Philippine Studies* 32.3 (1984): 251-272; John N. Schumacher, *Growth and Decline: Essays on Philippine Church History* (Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2009). The church presence in predominantly Muslim areas of Mindanao was limited but did exist. See José S. Arcilla, “The Philippine Revolution and the Jesuit Missions in Mindanao, 1896-1900,” *Archivum Historicum Societatis Iesu* 47 (1978): 361-377.

American missionary networks often swayed policy in the Philippines, and the colonial government there searched for ways to co-opt these impulses towards official ends.<sup>39</sup>

Ostensibly independent, the missionaries who ministered to Islamic populations in Mindanao and Sulu nevertheless received substantial support through state channels, more often than not working in tandem with the civilizational prerogatives of the state. From the earliest days of the occupation, missionaries understood that attempting to spread the gospel of Christ to the Moros through conventional proselytism was doomed to failure. An 1898 opinion piece in the *Hartford Courant* that explored the possibilities for Protestant missionaries in the Philippines concluded that America “could perhaps leave those fierce followers of Mahound to their own society and devices.”<sup>40</sup> Both the secular authorities and American missionaries were keenly aware that Spanish attempts to convert the Moros to Roman Catholicism had been greeted with stiff resistance. The resilience of Islam as a transnational bulwark against the hegemonic designs of colonial proselytism was evident from a variety of other contexts, ranging from French experiences in the Maghreb to British ones in Malaya. Spanish histories of the Philippines, quickly translated into English to aid newly arrived Americans, were categorical that the Moros were “so obstinate to God’s grace, that it is impossible to convert them to Christianity.”<sup>41</sup>

Cognizant of these Spanish failures, incoming missionaries tried spreading Christianity through indirect means. This idea – “Christian religion expressed in work” – dovetailed with the educational and industrial proselytism favoured by secular authorities. “The school, the hospital, [and] the playground” represented “the pulpit” in missionary endeavours amongst the Moros. In Mindanao and Sulu, the “bodies, hearts, minds and soul of

---

<sup>39</sup> Likewise, much attention has been given to the influence of various strains of Protestantism in the years before and (especially) after the American arrival in the Philippines. Linked into the circuitry of American cultural power, many missionaries had the active support of colonial officials. The standard text on the subject remains: Clymer, *Protestant Missionaries in the Philippines*, 153-190. More recently, Ian Tyrrell has written about how transnational reform networks, often motivated by religious sentiments, permeated the American imperial realm. Tyrrell, *Reforming the World*, 123-145. See also Mariano C. Apilado, *Revolutionary Spirituality: A Study of the Protestant Role in the American Colonial Rule of the Philippines, 1898-1920* (Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1999).

<sup>40</sup> “The Filipino Rose Has its Thorn,” *The Hartford Courant*, 30 June 1898, 10.

<sup>41</sup> Unmarked Spanish history of the Southern Philippines, Box 319. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

a half a million Mohammedans” could be “reached, inspired, empowered” by American Protestant missionaries “as nowhere else.”<sup>42</sup> For district governors, often short on funds and hard-pressed to achieve civilizing goals, the missionary willingness to fund and run schools and medical dispensaries, while avoiding the unrest that direct attempts at conversion generated, made them welcome visitors. The most significant example of this phenomenon occurred on the island of Jolo in the village of Indanan. There Bishop Charles Henry Brent and Caroline Spencer, two important members of the Episcopal Church, operated a school, a medical station, and a small press.

Charles Brent was the most influential foreign religious figure during the formative years of American colonialism in the Philippines. A Canadian who studied at Trinity College, University of Toronto, and was ordained in the Anglican Church of Canada, Brent moved to the United States in his late twenties, spending time living in a monastic order and serving at churches in impoverished areas of West and South Boston. By 1901, he was prominent enough within the church to be considered for several prestigious positions, including dean of the General Theological Seminary in New York City. These opportunities did not come to pass, however, as Brent was offered and accepted the position of missionary bishop of the Philippines that same year, a post complementary to his belief that “through baptism all Christians [were] called to be missionaries.”<sup>43</sup> Prior to travelling to the Philippines, Brent conducted a fundraising tour, in the process developing friendships with men like Theodore Roosevelt and William Howard Taft.<sup>44</sup> This ability to cultivate relationships with the powerful served him well in the Philippines. Brent’s early projects included a school at Baguio, where the sons and daughters of the colonial elite were educated, and extensive missionary efforts among the Bontoc Igorots. He was also an outspoken advocate of opium

---

<sup>42</sup> “A Few Facts About the Work of the Moro Educational Foundation,” Press Release from Moro Educational Foundation, 1924, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>43</sup> Mark D. Norbeck, “The Legacy of Charles Henry Brent,” *International Bulletin of Missionary Research* 20.4 (1996): 164.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid.

prohibition, a subject of great concern to early twentieth-century social reformers.<sup>45</sup> Later hagiographic accounts of Brent's missionary work heralded his "little team" for plunging "intrepidly into the vastnesses of the mountains" and there finding "the Church of Christ in the most inaccessible villages of the head-hunting Igorots."<sup>46</sup> The diplomatic historian Stephen P. Duggan, who did consulting work at Baguio and saw Brent's projects elsewhere in the Philippines, believed him to be "a great social force" who "represented the Twentieth Century."<sup>47</sup> In the second decade of his service, Brent turned his attentions southwards to the Moros.

The work of the Episcopal Church in the Southern Philippines during the military period was limited to Zamboanga, where the Church of the Holy Trinity ministered to the faithful and opened the Zamboanga Hospital. In 1914, with the region under civilian control, Caroline Spencer arrived. Born Caroline Berryman, she was an East Coast socialite who split her time between New York City and Newport, Rhode Island. Spencer was married to Lorillard Spencer, a prominent social presence in New York City and the commissioner for Rhode Island at the Chicago World's Fair, until his death in 1912.<sup>48</sup> Newly widowed, she made a trip around the world and, stopping in the Philippines, became "intensely interested in the work Bishop Brent [was]...doing among the heathen tribes." After returning to the United States, Spencer committed herself to returning to the Philippines to teach "the children of fanatical Moros."<sup>49</sup>

Reporting on the socialite's decision, the *New York Times* emphasized the disconnect between Caroline Spencer's privileged life and the inability of the Moros to understand "that

---

<sup>45</sup> Anne L. Foster, "Prohibition as Superiority: Policing Opium in South-East Asia, 1898-1925," *The International History Review* 22.2 (2000): 253-273; Chapter Seven: "Opium and the Fashioning of the American Moral Empire," in Ian Tyrrell, *Reforming the World*, 146-165.

<sup>46</sup> Stephen C. Neill, "Charles Henry Brent," *Canadian Journal of Theology* 8.3 (1962): 158.

<sup>47</sup> "Proceedings of the Memorial Anniversary Dinner Held Under the Auspices of the National Committee for the Moro School, Jolo, Philippine Islands and the Bishop Brent International Memorial Committee," 17 December 1939, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>48</sup> "Lorillard Spencer is Dead," *New York Times*, 15 March 1912, 9; "Mrs. L. Spencer Dies in Home at Newport," 7 April 1948, 25.

<sup>49</sup> "Forsakes Society to Teach Murderous Moros," *New York Times*, 14 December 1913, SM5.

a knowledge of simple sanitary laws and that the rudimentary arts of peace and a disposition to live in love and charity with one's neighbors make for civilization and happiness." The *Times* reporter covering her departure fixated on the dangers she faced, but Spencer insisted that her work among the Tausūg would show them they could live amicably with the Americans. "The Moros of Jolo have so far come into contact with hardly any other Americans than soldiers," she told the paper. "We are going to try to show that Americans possess other traits than an ability to fight."<sup>50</sup> Accompanied by a companion, Deaconess Virginia Young, Spencer sailed for Jolo by way of England, Singapore, and Zamboanga. On the final leg of her journey she crossed paths with Sheikh Sayid Mohammed Wajih ul-Gilani, the Ottoman envoy who features prominently in Chapter Eight.<sup>51</sup> "We are not going to attempt to force Christianity down the throats of the people," she said before leaving the United States. "But we want to teach the Moros some of the principles of right living."<sup>52</sup>

In Zamboanga, Bishop Brent parlayed his connections with Governor General Forbes and John Pershing to lay groundwork for the initiative.<sup>53</sup> Still, when Caroline Spencer arrived at Jolo in the spring of 1914 the reception was chilly. Rumours in the walled town had it that *juramentados* planned to kill the missionary, and members of the officer class and their wives felt her presence was generating needless tension between the authorities and the local Tausūg population. Accounts from these early days are limited to fawning journalistic profiles written later in Caroline Spencer's life. One, published in *Survey Graphic* in 1939, described how she and Brent acted as mediators between the authorities and an outlaw named

---

<sup>50</sup> Ibid.

<sup>51</sup> "Representative of the Sultan in Zamboanga," *Consolidación Nacional*, 3 April 1914.

<sup>52</sup> "Forsakes Society," *New York Times*, 14 December 1913. The article is brimming with quotes from Caroline Spencer, and represents the clearest articulation of her views on the project: "On the Island of Jolo, in the last few years, so many men have been killed that the number of widows and orphans is appalling, and among these the death of their husbands and fathers has bred a strong hatred of Americans. The men have been mown down with machine guns, and those left are bitter against the nation whose soldiers have wielded the implements of carnage. I am not saying that this is the fault of the Government. It may have been necessary in the attempt to quiet a rebellious people who would not submit to the laws of civilization. But I do think that to the widows and orphans of the men who have been slain we owe something, and that it is better to have good Moros alive than bad ones dead. I have a feeling that, after all, the Moros are misunderstood, and that, in spite of what those who have fought them say, it may be possible to find much good in them and to bring it out."

<sup>53</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 4, 5 February 1911. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

Salihudin. The writer described Spencer having a mesmeric effect upon his band: “They seemed aware of the contrast between their dark, fierce chief and this fair and fragile woman who stood beside him.”<sup>54</sup> Colonial femininity pacified the savage in its own soothing way. A separate telling of the same encounter, written shortly after Brent’s death in 1929, described the Bishop as a saintly figure who disarmed the bandits by shaming them for meeting “an unarmed white man and a defenceless white woman” while “armed to the teeth.”<sup>55</sup>

Caroline Spencer ingratiated herself to the locals by establishing a medical dispensary where Tausūg villagers were treated for minor health complaints and received smallpox inoculations. Although Virginia Young soon left due to illness, Spencer continued her work on Jolo, becoming friendly enough with its inhabitants that she travelled the island freely, attending Tausūg weddings and birth ceremonies, while further developing her “settlement work.” The dispensary outside of Jolo town, under the supervision of the U.S. Army Medical Corps, “gave medical and surgical relief to several hundred indigent Mohammedan natives each month.”<sup>56</sup> The primary focus of Spencer and Brent’s work, however, was on the establishment of an agricultural school. Land for the proposed school was acquired when the government relinquished its property at Camp Indanan to the missionaries. Located eight miles from Jolo town, adjacent to a Constabulary station and near a market, the Indanan site sprawled across sixty-eight acres.<sup>57</sup>

The school, initially called the Willard Straight Agricultural School for Moro Boys but later changed to the Bishop Brent Moro School, was opened on 12 January 1916 with a ceremony attended by 750 people. Local and regional dignitaries like Hadji Butu and Governor Frank Carpenter attended the event, which included games and a tree-planting ceremony. Initial enrollment was low at just over thirty boys, but in following years it grew to

---

<sup>54</sup> Fonrose Wainright, “Blue Wings Over Sulu,” *Survey Graphic* 18.8 (1939), 511. (Later reprinted by the MEF)

<sup>55</sup> Eleanor Slater, *Charles Henry Brent – Everybody’s Bishop* (Milwaukee: Morehouse Publishing Co., 1932), 23.

<sup>56</sup> Caroline S. Spencer, “What the Golden Rule Has Taught the Moros,” Pamphlet Reprinted by MEF from Newspaper Interviews, 14 and 21 February 1915, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP; Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 389.

<sup>57</sup> *Upbuilding the Wards of the Nation*, Pamphlet, 1913. Charles Brent Papers, LOC-MD.



more than one hundred.<sup>58</sup> The school focused almost entirely on training Tausūg boys in industrial and agricultural arts in the hope they would become, in the words of Brent, “a higher type of Moro.” The Bishop was at his most paternal when he spoke of the project. The goal was “to train the head, not to fill it; to develop muscle, not merely to harden it; to develop a useful, moral citizen, not a bigoted, clever one.”<sup>59</sup> Regional educators like J.W. Light, who supervised for the Department of Public Instruction in Sulu, saw the school as an important component in turning Southeast Asia Muslims into producers. “I have studied intensely the Sulu phase of the Moro problem for two years and I think the Moro Agricultural School has before it the greatest possibilities for development that I know of in the Orient,” Light wrote to Caroline Spencer, noting that Sulu’s close connections with Borneo meant the institution could expand and “develop into a college that will be looked upon with yearning hearts by the youths of the Malay Mohammedan World.”<sup>60</sup>

Photographs from the period show a modest two-storey school building with long porches on both levels where the students slept. Indoors were classrooms, offices, and even a bowling alley. On the surrounding grounds, students grew a variety of crops year-round and had facilities where they processed rice and corn for cooking.<sup>61</sup> Press photographs displayed Moro boys playing baseball and were captioned “The Moro Boys Love Our American Games.”<sup>62</sup> By the early 1920s, the school had expanded to seventy-five acres and Brent hoped to continue growing it until it reached five hundred. Each student was taught farming, building, and road maintenance, while the girls in the area learned basketwork and housekeeping. The Moro Educational Foundation [MEF], which oversaw the school, argued that such education was “a powerful influence against insurrections among the Moros.” Students were also instructed on modern notions of hygiene, a subject of particular interest to

---

<sup>58</sup> Ibid.

<sup>59</sup> “School Works Magical Changes in the Moros,” *New York Times*, 27 April 1924, XX6.

<sup>60</sup> Letter from J.W. Light to Caroline Spencer, 4 September 1920, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>61</sup> Photographs of the Willard Straight Agricultural School for Boys, 1910-1920s, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>62</sup> Press Material on the Moro Educational Fund, 1930, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

Caroline Spencer, who believed that learning the “rules of sanitation” aided in the civilizing process.<sup>63</sup> Press reports were glowing. The *New York Times Magazine* published an article on the school almost entirely comprised of John Pershing’s praise for it and Brent’s own descriptions. The academic Eleanor Crosby Kemp, writing for *International Interpreter*, deemed the experiment to be “anthropologically sound” in its teaching of English, arithmetic, and hygienic living.<sup>64</sup>

Spencer and Brent also planned to establish a similar institution for Moro girls, although they faced reticence among the Tausūg. A charitable fund for the proposed girls school managed to raise \$37,700 in 1924, five thousand of which came from the prominent New York City philanthropist Mary Williamson Averell.<sup>65</sup> A girls’ dormitory in Jolo staffed by Filipino teachers operated for several years, but was opposed by men like Arolas Tulawie, the former schoolteacher now involved in the island’s politics, who thought Moro girls were being prepared to “marry Filipinos or else become prostitutes and I do not believe they will marry Filipinos.” Tulawie thought girls educated at the dormitory turned away from Tausūg customs and learned “to despise their own people.”<sup>66</sup> There were also fears that the girls, under American and Filipino tutelage, would renounce their Islamic faith. The concerns had some merit. An Episcopalian report from 1937 mentioned Moro girls attending school in Zamboanga being “won over to Christianity by constant association with it in a way that so far the dormitory has been able to give,” and the missionary writer Claude Pickens observed “girls from Basilan and the Sulu Archipelago have passed through the school and caught the Christian spirit.”<sup>67</sup> Spencer was successful in having some Tausūg girls sent north for training as nurses, but found most lacked a primary education. She had the famed architect Whitney

---

<sup>63</sup> “Forsakes Society,” *New York Times*, 14 December 1913.

<sup>64</sup> “School Works,” *New York Times*, 27 April 1924; Eleanor Crosby Kemp, “Is the United States Educating the People of the Philippines?” *International Interpreter*, 26 April 1924. Reprinted as “Sound and Effective Educational Plan,” 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>65</sup> “Investments to Date on the Moro Educational Foundation,” 1924, Box 47. Charles Brent Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>66</sup> Letter from Arolas Tulawie to Teopisto Guingona, 12 August 1920, Box 29, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>67</sup> “Missionary District of the Philippine Islands,” 1937, Box 47. Charles Brent Papers, LOC-MD; Claude L. Pickens, “With the Moros of the Philippines,” *The Muslim World* 30.1 (1940): 36.

Warren draw up plans for a girls' school in the 1920s, but the project did not progress further. In the late 1930s, Bishop Frank Mosher, Brent's replacement, reported minor successes in getting paying residents at a girl's dormitory, although at the this time the ravages of the 1932 typhoon and the Great Depression meant that all missionary activities on Jolo were struggling.<sup>68</sup>

One of the MEF's most important projects was the Sulu Press (alternately referred to as the Moro Press). Brent believed that literacy was key to bringing the Moros onside, and disagreed with former officials like Najeeb Saleeby and John Finley who wanted to establish control over the Moros by means of "hopelessly corrupt" traditional hierarchies. Ordering a printing press from Baguio and Arabic typeface from Beirut, he established the press at Indanan alongside the school.<sup>69</sup> It was housed in a small building and was, according to Brent, the "only Moro type in the world."<sup>70</sup> Governor Frank Carpenter's 1914 annual report spoke of the Sulu Press as "of an instructive and generally beneficial character affecting the material well-being and indirectly the spiritual welfare of the Mohammedans of this region."<sup>71</sup>

The chief product of the press was, from the 1920s until the end of the 1930s, a newspaper called *The Student Weekly* and, later, *The Moro Outlook*. The *Weekly* provided an opportunity for students to hone their English skills, but also operated as a subtle outlet for proselytism. In March 1925, for example, it ran an article extolling the virtues of "Christian motherhood," claiming that there was "nothing so sacrificial as that attached to motherhood. It is so close to the sufferings of Christ."<sup>72</sup> The paper encouraged students to practice their English skills by reading the news from Jolo town. Births and deaths were recorded, as was lighter fare, such as the sufferings of one Palili, who had a rotten tooth removed, or the

---

<sup>68</sup> Press Material on the Moro Educational Fund, 1930, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP; "Missionary District of the Philippine Islands," 1937, Box 47. Charles Brent Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>69</sup> Letter from Charles Brent to Dean Worcester, 26 September 1914, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

<sup>70</sup> "The Sulu Press," 1924, Box 47. Charles Brent Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>71</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 389.

<sup>72</sup> "Motherhood," *The Student Weekly*, 7 March 1925, 3.

competition to see which classroom was the cleanest, which was won by the seventh grade.<sup>73</sup> The *Weekly* occasionally reported on the outbursts of violence in the area. In 1926, an article appeared about an “insane” man named Ijasani, who had attacked two people, before walking to Indanan and attempting to break into the Constabulary barracks there. The paper reported that he was shot in the “small of his back,” but that an investigation by a Filipino judge, Mariano de Leon, afterwards cleared the Constabulary of culpability as Ijasani was “killed while *juramentado*.”<sup>74</sup> The students writing in the newspaper were at the time the only Moro voices in the Sulu Archipelago being regularly published.

During its first decade, the school operated under the supervision of Educational Director James R. Fugate, whose remarkably varied career in the colonial Philippines spanned over three decades. After a brief stint at the University of Michigan, Fugate travelled to the archipelago as a sergeant with the California Volunteers, and was first a schoolteacher before being appointed Governor of Siquijor, a small island in the Central Visayas region north of Mindanao.<sup>75</sup> W. Cameron Forbes saw him as “an ordinary man” in the way “Lincoln was an ordinary man,” and admired his ability to “steer the people of Siquijor towards better things.”<sup>76</sup> Officials in Manila admired Fugate’s successes on the island, which included building roads, making potable spring water available to all, and implementing sanitary and hygienic measures to limit disease.<sup>77</sup> In 1916, looking for new opportunities, he was scouted by Bishop Brent and Caroline Spencer to run the boys school at Indanan.

Fugate was, by all accounts, efficient and energetic. Caroline Spencer spent stretches of time on Jolo as overall authority at the school, but was also away for long periods. Charles Brent acted more as a distant patron, and while he did visit Jolo on multiple occasions most

---

<sup>73</sup> “School Notes,” *The Student Weekly*, 7 March 1925, 1.

<sup>74</sup> “Insane Man Killed by Constabulary,” *The Student Weekly*, 4 September 1926, 1.

<sup>75</sup> “Necrology,” *The Michigan Alumnus*, 10 June 1939, 423; Jean-Paul Dumont, *Visayan Vignettes: Ethnographic Traces of a Philippine Island* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1992), 23.

<sup>76</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes Vol.3, 15 July 1909. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>77</sup> Memorandum from J.C. Early to Dwight F. Davis, 17 December 1930, Box 28, Folder 29. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. Fugate also briefly worked for Dean Worcester’s coconut concern, but left on poor terms. Worcester wrote to him later saying that he regretted their disagreements. Letter from Dean Worcester to James Fugate, 28 December 1922, Box 29, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

of his work on the school's behalf was through revenue generation in the United States. Fugate was there to make sure day-to-day operations ran smoothly, and, when she was on the island, cater to the whims of the imperious Spencer. His views on the Moros were more liberal than Brent's or Spencer's. Fugate believed in integrating the cultures of the Sulu Archipelago into structures of education and governance rather than attempting to replace them entirely with unattainable ideals. A tireless worker, by the early 1920s Fugate exhausted himself and became increasingly exasperated by the state of affairs at Indanan, where he was constantly scrounging for funds and battling with the Rileys, an American couple appointed by Spencer as teachers.<sup>78</sup>

In a series of fevered letters to Brent in June 1924, Fugate spelled out all of his issues with the running of the school. He was being pressed to expand operations yet had no money. His personal relations with Spencer were strained. The Sulu Press had to be temporarily shuttered. He was working eighteen-hour days. The last of these letters approached delirium, with Fugate digressing into a rhetorical fit. "True goodness needs no motive to prompt its bounty," he wrote. "What are the motives that impel the supporters of the school? Are they imbued with the idea that it is just a place for laudable missionary endeavor? A place for outpouring of sentiment and generosity of soul? Giving because 'it is more blessed to give than to receive'!" In biblical language, Fugate scoffed at the donors for not understanding "the finer and broader principles of philanthropy" before continuing on about the "pain of a benighted brown baby, born in depravity to be brought up in darkness" and the "Divine plan" for missionary activity.<sup>79</sup>

Curious orthography aside, Fugate's letters were those of an overworked and lonesome man in the midst of collapse.<sup>80</sup> Brent's terse reply acknowledged the school's financial issues, promised to send out "1000 appeals" for funds, and expressed anxiety over

---

<sup>78</sup> He complained at length about the Rileys in a long letter to Spencer: "Mrs. Spencer you are too well experienced in the vagaries of human nature not to realize that many very brilliant persons of your acquaintance, by their attitude render themselves worthless of service, and bad for any position," Letter from James Fugate to Caroline Spencer, 5 November 1924, Box 29, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>79</sup> Letter from James Fugate to Charles Brent, 17 June 1924, Box 29, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>80</sup> For more on Fugate's physical state see Chapter Six.

Fugate's welfare.<sup>81</sup> By early 1926, Fugate was unable to continue at the school and resigned, petitioning Governor General Leonard Wood for work elsewhere. In a scathing letter to Brent the following year, he excoriated the Bishop for failing to appreciate his mental, physical, and financial sacrifices, and for standing idly by while Spencer and others planned to have him "humiliatingly eliminated." Fugate speculated that if he had "belonged to the hierarchy" with his "address gilding the Social Registry of Manhattan" his contributions would be better appreciated. "A dog-like service and meekness brings the dog's reward," he fumed.<sup>82</sup> Ending his relationship with Brent, Spencer, and the school, Fugate once again sought work with the colonial government and in 1928 was appointed District Governor of Sulu.

Fugate was replaced by Leo Meyette, who also worked diligently to keep the school running, if not with the monomaniacal focus of Fugate. When not at Indanan, Meyette travelled to the United States to promote the school. During a visit to the Faculty Club at Columbia University in 1930, Meyette described the successes of the school "in changing the fierce Moro pirates into business men, mechanics, and policemen." Former students had become teachers, government administrators, mechanics, and farmers, he claimed.<sup>83</sup> Despite its apparent successes, the school suffered some setbacks during this period. The death of Charles Brent in 1929 left it and the foundation needing a figurehead. His replacement, Curtis J. Mar, was one of the founders of the MEF but hardly of the international stature Brent was. Donations to the fund decreased as the American elite felt the effects of the Great Depression.

---

<sup>81</sup> Letter from Charles Brent to James Fugate, 24 June 1924, Box 29, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. The same month, Brent's replacement as Episcopal bishop to the Philippines, Frank Mosher, sent him a letter that acknowledged how costly Caroline Spencer's visits had become for the school and how her profligate gift-giving made it hard for Fugate to readjust after she left. "Of course, the one great weakness of the school," he told Brent, "is that you only have one man there who is permanently interested. What on earth would you do with that place in case anything should happen to Fugate I can't imagine and think you ought to make every effort to find one more man to come out and work with him." – Letter from Frank Mosher to Charles Brent, 2 June 1924, Box 29, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>82</sup> Letter from James Fugate to Charles Brent, 15 April 1927, Box 29, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. The vitriol of the letter is spectacular. More: "In that simple, silly, asinine manner of a boob, knowing nothing at the time of the 'prearranged plan' against me, and feeling yet that others were honest, frank, - could be relied upon to live up to all their high-flown pretensions of superior virtues. (For a reminder of my idiocy, henceforth I shall keep, as my constant companion a model of an ASS.) No service, acts, statements of mine are worthy of consideration."

<sup>83</sup> Press Material on the Moro Educational Fund, 1930, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

As a final indignity, a typhoon in the spring of 1932 ravaged Jolo and destroyed the school. “The buildings were almost completely demolished, while the water pipe line was broken at virtually every joint and the entire place wrecked beyond recognition,” reported a letter to the *Washington Post*.<sup>84</sup>

Before his death, Charles Brent expressed to his friends that if they “felt him worthy of a memorial that the Moro School he founded be made that memorial as that undertaking was very close to his heart.”<sup>85</sup> The school struggled to rebuild after the typhoon and was closed for a time, but reopened in the mid-1930s under the direction of W. Carr Cooper. Brent’s connections to the political, military, and religious elite on the Eastern Seaboard were parlayed by the MEF through a series of fundraisers and, in December 1939, an expansive memorial dinner in the late Bishop’s honour. Held at the Waldorf-Astoria in New York City, the event was hosted by the illustrious lawyer and politician George Wharton Pepper, and featured speeches from W. Cameron Forbes, Frank McCoy, the writer Katherine Mayo, and other figures involved in missionary-educational endeavours. John Pershing, who could not attend, had his speech read by Remsen B. Ogilby, head of Trinity College in Connecticut. Forbes delivered the longest address, situating Brent’s school within a larger history of racial reformation in the islands. The work at Indanan taught “the Christian spirit rather than the tenets of the Christian Church” to a people “recently redeemed from savagery.” Forbes praised the work of Caroline Spencer and James Fugate, whose recent murder had made him “one of the many martyrs of the great cause of pacification and betterment of these people.”<sup>86</sup>

Attached to the proceedings from the evening was a series of testimonials for Brent’s work from a laundry list of Americans, living and dead, who influenced policy in the Southern Philippines: Leonard Wood, Dean Worcester, Elihu Root, Najeeb Saleeby, Herbert Hoover, Warren G. Harding, William Taft, Frank Murphy, Dwight Davis, J.R. Hayden, Frank

---

<sup>84</sup> A.C. Hudson, “Bishop Brent’s Moro School, Wrecked by Typhoon, to Be Restored,” *Washington Post*, 2 December 1932, 6.

<sup>85</sup> “Proceedings of the Memorial Anniversary Dinner Held Under the Auspices of the National Committee for the Moro School, Jolo, Philippine Islands and the Bishop Brent International Memorial Committee,” 17 December 1939, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid. See conclusion for an account of Fugate’s death.

W. Carpenter, Henry Stimson, and J.G. Harbord.<sup>87</sup> For these men, the work that Brent and Spencer performed on Jolo was a corollary of their own efforts fighting against, and then developing policy for, the Moros. Brent himself had compared the hardships of missionary work to those faced by the “founders of empire” so would have likely agreed.<sup>88</sup> There were also reports from students, to show potential donors the benefits of the school. Juli Samsialam wrote of all the different vegetables being planted in the school gardens, the smallpox vaccinations given to students and their families, track and field events, and the popularity of baseball among the boys. Another, Ahmaraja Dadjiliul, related a movie-screening put on by the new headmaster, Robert Dickson, that nearly one thousand people attended.<sup>89</sup>

Despite the mythologizing of Brent and continued elite patronage, the school continued to struggle financially. By the early 1940s, the school’s trustees were searching for ways to ensure its continued operation without a wholesale reliance on donations. W. Cameron Forbes cabled President of the Philippines Manuel Quezon in late 1940 requesting that his government make an allowance of \$10,000 or \$20,000 towards the school – with equivalent funds to be raised in the United States – as it was “a very helpful civilizing agency.”<sup>90</sup> He further appealed to Secretary of War Henry L. Stimson to press for the Bishop Brent Moro School to be merged with the public school system, but in a manner where it retained “its character as a memorial to Bishop Brent.” Forbes admitted that the MEF had exhausted its funds and assured Stimson that the school was “purely non-sectarian” (unlike other church schools).<sup>91</sup> In January 1941, Stimson had his aide contact Richard R. Ely, who headed Philippine Affairs at the State Department, and was told that the Filipinos were not

---

<sup>87</sup> Ibid.

<sup>88</sup> Charles Brent, “The Romance of Missions and their Lack of Romance,” *Philippine Presbyterian*, 1910. Clipping in: Box 44. Charles Brent Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>89</sup> “Proceedings of the Memorial Anniversary Dinner Held Under the Auspices of the National Committee for the Moro School, Jolo, Philippine Islands and the Bishop Brent International Memorial Committee,” 17 December 1939, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>90</sup> Cable from W. Cameron Forbes to Manuel Quezon, 9 December 1940, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>91</sup> Letter from W. Cameron Forbes to Henry Stimson, 13 January 1941, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.



amenable to the request. If the school became a publically-funded institution “it would retain the name, but in the final analysis...that is about all they would retain.” Ely said that the Filipinos feared that the special status of the school would “drive a wedge between the Christian Filipino and the Moros” and suggested that the trustees of the school not “trade their birthright for a very doubtful mess of pottage.”<sup>92</sup> The matter of funding resolved itself within the year as the Japanese occupied Jolo. The school remained, although after the war it became a public institution, and was no longer a site where American philanthropists could channel their desires for the civilizational reform of the Tausūg Moros.<sup>93</sup>

## Frank Laubach Among the Maranao

Cautious missionary efforts also took place on Mindanao. In the Christian areas along the northern littoral and around Zamboanga, Congregationalist and Christian & Missionary Alliance members had proselytized since the aftermath of the Spanish-American War. In predominantly Muslim areas like Lanao, however, missionary work was often viewed as too dangerous, and colonial officials in those places – be they American or Filipino – were reluctant to encourage religious groups. Their presence further unsettled the already tense relationship between the government and the local Maranao Moros, raising fears of forced conversion and stoking support for anti-government Islamic preachers. Lanao remained an especially unstable region. After the departure of U.S. Army forces in 1914, the Philippine Constabulary took over the enforcement of law and order, engaging in running battles with groups of Maranaos hostile to state agendas. The burning of schoolhouses, killing of teachers, and massacres by the Constabulary occurred sporadically throughout the first fifteen years of civilian rule.<sup>94</sup>

Frank C. Laubach settled in Dansalan, at the northern end of Lake Lanao, in December 1929. The Congregationalist missionary had been in the Philippines since 1915,

---

<sup>92</sup> Letter from Richard Ely to E.A. Regnier, 30 January 1941, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>93</sup> The activities of Episcopalians were not limited to Jolo, and extended well beyond Charles Brent. For a reflection on the tensions between Episcopal missionaries and imperial ideology, see Jones, “Pragmatic Anti-Imperialists?” 1-28.

<sup>94</sup> See Chapter Five, section: “Resistance and Massacre”

and visited Lanao that year. Surveying the tense situation, he determined “the time was not ripe to attempt any religious work among the Moros” and moved north to minister to the Christian Filipinos of Cagayan de Oro. Laubach returned to Lanao most years, spending a month or two in the area and finding the Maranaos there “more and more peaceful and even eager to know something about Jesus.” The mid-1920s were a time of increased violence in the province, but as hostilities receded towards the end of the decade authorities in Dansalan began considering new avenues for educating the Maranaos. In 1927, while Laubach was visiting the town, the district governor offered him a reduced rate on a building if he decided to open a mission there. Two years later, leaving his wife and son in Baguio (where the latter was attending Bishop Brent’s school), Laubach returned to Dansalan to establish his school.<sup>95</sup>

The ambitious missionary’s interest in Mindanao began during his college years. The son of a dentist from Benton, Pennsylvania, Laubach attended Princeton University, where he completed a degree in sociology. Drawn towards missionary work, in 1913 he studied at the famed Union Theological Seminary in New York City, writing a paper entitled “Problems in Religious Education on the Island of Mindanao.” After considering the prospects for drawing the Visayan population of Mindanao away from Catholicism, Laubach focused on the Islamic inhabitants of the island. At this early stage his views lacked the sophistication and nuance of his later writings on the Maranaos, and he concluded that American efforts with the Moros were fruitless. “One thing is certain,” Laubach wrote. “We must either abandon these people entirely, so far as political control is concerned, or enter upon a war of extermination.” Citing low school enrollment numbers for Moro children, Laubach viewed them as an example of “all the hopelessness of the Mohammedan world every where” and believed “only the faith that they who go in the strength of the Lord can do all things, will send a man among these worse than savage peoples.” The fate of the Moros was destined to be the same as “the

---

<sup>95</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to *The Argus*, 14 January 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC. *The Argus* was a newspaper published in Benton between 1892 and 1969. While in Lanao, Laubach began writing letters to the newspaper for publication in lieu of sending out multiple copies to various family members and friends. Today there are still under one thousand people living in the rural Central Pennsylvanian community, and one can imagine during Laubach’s time his journeys were followed avidly there. Also on colonial missionary education: Bentley G. Carter, “Implicit Evangelism: American Education Among the Muslim Maranao,” *Pilipinas* 12 (1989): 73-96.

American Aborigines” as they came “into contact with Christendom.”<sup>96</sup> Laubach did not moderate his early views on the irreconcilability of the Islamic and Christian worlds for nearly twenty years.

In 1915, Laubach completed his doctoral work at Columbia University, was ordained as a Congregationalist minister, and departed with his wife for the Philippines. First ministering to the Christians of Cagayan de Oro, Laubach then moved to Manila in the 1920s where he taught and published.<sup>97</sup> During this period, his thoughts often returned to Lanao, and, more broadly, the issue of Islam in the Philippines. He petitioned Frank W. Carpenter, the former governor of the Department of Mindanao and Sulu, to spearhead a campaign to bring the Muslims of the Southern Philippines to Christendom and send them forth into the world to convert their coreligionists. This plan was mere fancy, and the militancy of Laubach’s conversionary zeal stood in stark contrast to the viewpoints he developed while living in Lanao.<sup>98</sup>

Once in Dansalan, Laubach started work on several projects, foremost among them the establishment of a school and the opening of a printing press. He became friendly with datus in the area, particularly Datu Pambaya, who became Laubach’s closest Muslim ally. From speaking with these Maranao leaders, he learned their ideas about Islam were not so different than his notions of Christianity. Laubach’s views on the “Mohammedan religion” soon moderated and it became evident to him “that we Christians live in a glass house. If we oppose war in the Mohammedan religion have we not made wars innumerable in the name of Christ, and are not the Christian nations at this moment armed for war a hundred times more than all the other religions put together?” He noted that vices ascribed to Islam were as

---

<sup>96</sup> “Problems in Religious Education on the Island of Mindanao,” 24 March 1913, Box 126, Folder 4. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>97</sup> Most prominent of these was: Frank C. Laubach, *The People of the Philippines: Their Religious Progress and Preparation for Spiritual Leadership in the Far East* (New York: George H. Doran Co., 1925). During his time in Lanao, Laubach published a reflection on the life of the Filipino nationalist hero José Rizal. See Frank C. Laubach, *Rizal: Man and Martyr* (Manila: Community Publishers Inc., 1936).

<sup>98</sup> See Chapter Eight; Peter G. Gowing, “The Legacy of Frank Charles Laubach,” *International Bulletin of Missionary Research* 7.2 (1983): 59; Frank C. Laubach, “What Shall We Do With the Moros?” *Envelope Series* 24.3 (1921): 3-23.

pervasive in the United States, and began to read the Qur'an so he could look "at Mohammed with a fair unprejudiced mind."<sup>99</sup> Muslims, Laubach came to believe, were misled about Christianity in the same way Christians were misled about Islam. He found the Islamic concept of submitting to God's will entirely compatible with his own religious outlook, and began "wondering whether an open minded teachable attitude toward Islam would encourage all Christians to live in constant listening surrender to God."<sup>100</sup> These insights came in the midst of a personal experiment with intercessory prayer, where Laubach tried to be in constant communication with God. In letters home to his father, he recorded his results and reflected on his spiritual development.<sup>101</sup>

Constant discussion with friendly and open-minded Maranaos along with an internal spiritual journey mellowed Laubach's outlook on Islam, allowing for a more inclusive understanding of the ways in which an individual could perform religious service. This contrasted substantially with the views of many other missionary figures during the American colonial period, for whom work among the Moros was a mere illustration of Christians selflessly devoting themselves to the uplift of peoples of lower racial-civilizational stature. Laubach's newly liberalized outlook generated in him a concern that inroads being made by the Americans and Filipinos in Mindanao would dismantle Maranao culture:

I fear that the Moros as a separate civilization will be almost a forgotten thing in less than three hundred years, not to mention a thousand. One can see the inroads of civilization in the adoption of western clothes, in the breaking down of customs, and in the advent of the public school. The public school system which Americans introduced is an intellectual

---

<sup>99</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to *The Argus*, 15 January 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>100</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to *The Argus*, 20 January 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>101</sup> Laubach's reflections on intercessory prayer continue to interest Christian groups. Recently, a collection of his letters to his father were excerpted and published. Although they were written in Lanao, the editors emphasize the personal spiritual aspects of Laubach's letters and leave out much of the material on the environment and the Maranaos. See Frank C. Laubach, *Letters by a Modern Mystic* (Colorado Springs: Purposeful Design Publications, 2007).

steamroller, which ultimately will leave less in its path from the past than did the fanatical Spanish priests three centuries ago. There is perhaps not a great deal that deserves preservation – if ONLY something better and not something worse replaces what the Moros now have!<sup>102</sup>

Evident in the above, Laubach's reconfigured ideas about working among the Maranaos retained a paternal character, yet also critically engaged commonly held wisdom among officials and missionaries that the civilizing project was difficult but fundamentally virtuous work. The complicated legacies of his labour both eschewed and upheld the tropes of the colonial missionary.<sup>103</sup>

After securing a building, Laubach and his assistant Donato Galia, a Columbia-educated Visayan, set about articulating their vision for the school. It was to be a hub of learning for the entire region, an ever-expanding space where Laubach's educational and developmental goals for the Maranaos would be fostered. Soon after arriving in Dansalan, Laubach witnessed a disturbing incident where a mob beat a Moro Constabulary officer who was trying to compel a child to attend school until he "was near dead."<sup>104</sup> The missionary took it upon himself to provide schooling acceptable to the Maranaos. What began as a single schoolhouse in 1930 was, by 1934, a complex of nine buildings spread over sixteen hectares of land. Besides the school, there was a library with thousands of books "classified under history, geography, sociology, education, psychology, business, law, civics, fiction, drama,

---

<sup>102</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to John Laubach, 22 April 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>103</sup> This is fully evident in Laubach's thoughts on a meeting he attended with prominent Maranao leaders in late February 1930: "Half of the distinguished friends out on the deck yonder are Mohammedan priests, who have been showing me the Koran and Mohammedan literature while I was genuinely interested. Twice a pandita especially interested in me, who called me his 'father', pointed to me and said to the other 'He is a Moslem.' I replied 'I am a friend of the Moslems' and smiled. It satisfied him. Suppose I said, 'I am a Christian minister.' Would I tell him the truth? No for what I would seem to say would be, 'I belong to the sect which hates and tries to destroy Moslems.' I am NOT a Christian - not that kind of Christian, for I love these Moslems. I WANT THEM TO HANG ON TO EVERY FINE THING IN THEIR RELIGION, and I want them to endeavor to love the beauty of Jesus in addition – and I want the so-called Christian world to discover the love and begin to follow the beauty of Jesus." – Letter from Frank Laubach to *The Argus*, 1 March 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>104</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to *The Argus*, 29 January 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

poetry, biography, music, [and] religion.” There were also “three encyclopedias, dictionaries in several languages, children’s books, [and] twenty-five newspapers and magazines.” A nursing station dispensed basic medicines, sent medical workers to visit the sick, and worked with the hospital in Dansalan. There was a recreation center, a church that had “classes for Moslems as well as for Christians,” classes for women that taught “reading, writing, sewing, weaving, and hygiene,” and dormitories for the students. Ten hectares of the land was dedicated to plant nurseries and experimental crops, which ranged from soybeans to durian to six hundred California orange trees.<sup>105</sup>

Underpinning the entire operation in Dansalan was Laubach’s fervent belief that literacy could help the Maranao people avoid cultural and demographic elimination as the Southern Philippines integrated into the national body. With this end in mind, he decided to transliterate the Maranao language using the Roman alphabet. Until his arrival, literacy was limited to *panditas* and local elites who had the ability to read Arabic script, which they used to interpret the Qur’an to the locals. Laubach estimated that one in every five hundred Maranaos could read the Arabic alphabet. During his tenure as Superintendent of Schools, Najeeb Saleeby introduced a primer on Moro languages written in Arabic script into the public education system but it was removed after his departure as the government shifted its focus to the teaching of English.<sup>106</sup> Laubach concluded both English and the Arabic alphabet were insufficient, and dedicated himself to compiling Maranao words in a series of dictionaries and then phonetically translating them into the Roman alphabet. Soon, he was able to find three words which together contained “every consonant in the alphabet, but [contained] each consonant only once.”<sup>107</sup> These were *Malabanga* (or Malabang, a town in

---

<sup>105</sup> *Lanao Progress*, 1 September 1934, 1. The *Progress* was published under Laubach’s supervision throughout the 1930s, although by 1938 it transitioned into a newspaper for high school students rather than a general interest newssheet. Many copies of the paper are among the Frank Laubach Collection at the Syracuse University Special Collections Research Center.

<sup>106</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to *The Argus*, 29 January 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>107</sup> “Method I: The Lanao Key System,” Philippines Literacy Material, Undated, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

the area), *karatasa* (paper), and *paganada* (to learn). Together, they represented the ‘key’ words in the language, hence the name Laubach gave his method: the Lanao key system.<sup>108</sup>

The small staff at newly-christened Maranao Folk School started teaching as many Maranaos as possible to read via the Lanao key system using a series of charts that broke down how the method worked. Laubach believed that literacy through the key system was best taught through one-on-one training with a teacher who was familiar with the chart. Advocates of the method claimed that the Maranaos learned to read and write their language – as phonetically interpreted by Laubach – in as little as one hour. Convinced of the revolutionary character of his techniques, Laubach began training men and women to spread them in outlying areas of the province. Literacy teachers were paid ten dollars per month, which Laubach admitted was low. He believed these teachers did not take better paying work because they wanted “to have the honor of sharing this service for their people.” Proponents of the key system thought that the literacy rate in Lanao, which stood at 3 percent in the early 1930s, could be as high as 80 percent by the decade’s close.<sup>109</sup> Writing to Vice Governor J.R. Hayden in 1934, Laubach claimed his literacy work represented the “best way” for Moros to “catch up with the rest of the world” and that his supporters in Lanao were “willing to do anything and to yield anything in order to succeed.”<sup>110</sup>

News of the project reached the United States in 1931, and appeared in the *Boston Daily Globe*. The paper informed its readers that the Moros, who constituted “the most difficult problem under the American flag today,” were “mad” for education after exposure to the key system. Laubach told the *Globe* that a “bright” Maranao already familiar with Arabic script could learn the Roman alphabet in only “fourteen minutes,” but that the staff at the

---

<sup>108</sup> Gowing, “The Legacy of Frank Charles Laubach,” 60.

<sup>109</sup> “Method I: The Lanao Key System,” Philippines Literacy Material, Undated, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC; Kenyon Butterfield, “Toward A Literate Rural World,” *Journal of Adult Education* 4.4 (1932): 383-388. On quicker learners: “It is astonishing how quickly they can learn the Roman letters from our chart if they have known Arabic. We have had quite a number of Arabic scholars who learned the Roman letters in less than half an hour and seldom do we have to spend over an hour in teaching these scholars to read.” – “The Romance of Opening Blind Eyes,” Philippines Literacy Material, Undated, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>110</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to J.R. Hayden, 22 June 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

school liked to “experiment with morons” who took longer to train. Claiming that the missionary’s successes were “like a fairy tale,” the article concluded with a plea for Americans to send as many books as possible to Lanao: “It would take a million books to fulfill these requests. Everything from religious volumes to geographies, scientific books and dictionaries is desired.”<sup>111</sup>

Objections to the literacy campaign arose from both Maranao and government circles. While many Maranaos praised Laubach’s efforts, there were some who feared it masked a broader project of converting Muslims to Christianity. These concerns were not groundless (Laubach was a liberal missionary but a missionary nonetheless), and they were significant enough that the Maranao Folk School released an unusual public statement in 1932. In it, Maranao backers of the endeavour argued that “infidel” Christian Filipinos were convincing Moros that the campaign was a conversion effort. Situating the campaign in opposition to the Filipinos, against whom many Maranaos harboured prejudices, the public statement promoted literacy as a way of combatting Christian cultural incursion. “We inform them that we are Islams as we were born by our Islam parents,” the notice read. “We do not want them to have the least idea that we have been converted to Christianity: no, not even unto death! We have willingly joined Dr. Laubach in his work for it is beneficial to us all.”<sup>112</sup>

Laubach was well regarded among other Americans in Dansalan, although some officials found his teaching methods at odds with the mandates of the public school system. The Bureau of Education in Manila aggressively promoted the learning of English (and, increasingly, Tagalog) as a means of creating a unified Filipino culture, yet Laubach was openly advocating Maranao as the primary conduit for literacy. Governor of Lanao J.J. Heffington attempted on “several occasions” to “explain to Mr. Laubach the necessity of teaching the Moros to read after a fashion that would give them access to the literature of the country, but for some reason the tried and established method of teaching people to read by the regular use of the Roman alphabet in the same way that the public schools are giving

---

<sup>111</sup> “Alphabet is Taming Moros,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 12 July 1931, A11.

<sup>112</sup> “Maranaw Folk School: Address to the Public,” Philippines Literacy Material, 20 April 1932, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.



them a little education...fails to appeal to him, and he prefers to use his own system which may, to the malformed, appear more spectacular.”<sup>113</sup> Visiting Lanao in 1935, the University of Michigan botanist H.H. Bartlett was gentler in his criticisms, observing that Laubach’s original Maranao dictionary was riddled with errors but that subsequent editions were more reliable.<sup>114</sup> Laubach himself admitted that his methods were peculiar and that “sticklers for orthodoxy in education” would likely criticize them.<sup>115</sup>

Similar to Bishop Brent’s school at Indanan, the Maranao Folk School’s endeavours were bolstered by a small newspaper, *The Lanao Progress*. One of Laubach’s first acts in Dansalan was shipping in a secondhand printing press from Cagayan de Oro. An early iteration of the *Progress* was printed in February 1930, only three months after his arrival. By 1933, the press printed new editions of the paper biweekly. English and Maranao versions of each story were printed side-by-side, the latter transliterated phonetically into the Roman alphabet according to Laubach’s key system. The paper usually ran eight to twelve pages (later expanding) and featured an eclectic mix of local, national, and international news. Local news focused on positives such as the progress of the literacy campaign, the natural beauty of the Lanao region, and the strengthening of infrastructure, but also avidly tracked the latest stories on criminal outrages. In 1933 and 1934, the outlaw Dimakaling and his followers appeared multiple times in the pages of the *Progress*, which described how they robbed Christian Filipinos and played cat-and-mouse with Constabulary forces.<sup>116</sup> The *Progress* was also used as pulpit for social issues, as apparent in one article from 1941 encouraging the Maranaos of Dansalan to abstain from alcohol. Written by a Christian Filipino, it argued that alcohol was “an invention of the devil” and complained about Moro boys returning to their dormitories drunk at nights. “I should rather a thousand times see the

---

<sup>113</sup> J.J. Heffington, “Annual Report of Provincial Governor for Lanao, 1932,” 27 January 1933, Box 28, Folder 7. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>114</sup> “Diary of a Twelve-Day Tour with Vice-Governor Hayden From Manila to Sulu and Back,” 11 September 1935, Box 8. Harley Harris Bartlett Papers, BHL.

<sup>115</sup> “Method I: The Lanao Key System,” Philippines Literacy Material, Undated, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>116</sup> “Ambushed by Dimakaling,” *Lanao Progress*, 1 September 1933, 2; “Dimakaling Followers Die,” *Lanao Progress*, 1 September 1934, 3.

Maranaws remain good Mohammedans,” the author wrote, “than become gambling, drinking, immoral lazy people.”<sup>117</sup>

International news was culled from the twenty-five newspapers and periodicals the Folk School’s library subscribed to, which were translated into Maranao by Laubach and his staff. An idiosyncratic variety of stories were chosen to enlighten the Maranaos on global affairs, and subscribers read about strained relations between Russia and Japan or the expansion of Italian colonialism in North Africa. Locals fluent in English were encouraged to write opinion pieces, such as one that appeared in 1940 urging citizens of the Philippines to resist despotism lest the archipelago “sink into a black slavery and extermination worse even than the darkest hours of the Spanish regime.”<sup>118</sup> The paper also used stories from other countries, Islamic and non-Islamic alike, to illustrate the growing role of women in public life. In 1933, it published an article about how women in Turkey had “discarded the veil” under the secular Ataturk regime, and in Egypt how they demanded the right to vote and were “clamoring to secure the same privileges as men.” The newspaper transparently aimed to move the Maranaos away from polygamy and gender segregation by providing selective examples of how women in the heartlands of Islamic culture were “taking up professions, and...entering into business just as they are in western countries.”<sup>119</sup> When not preoccupied with the cultural refashioning of the Maranaos, the paper occasionally veered into the bizarre, publishing observations on the outcome of a shark vs. octopus fight and speculating pseudo-scientifically that murders could be solved “by developing the last picture taken on the eye of a dead person.”<sup>120</sup> The paper was reoriented towards youth in the late 1930s, and in 1941 began publishing a special school news supplement advertised as “wholesome, uplifting, educational, and cultural” and free of “scandal, vice, obscenity, [or] salacious articles.”<sup>121</sup>

---

<sup>117</sup> “Don’t Drink, Maranaws!” *Lanao Progress*, 15 October 1940, 10.

<sup>118</sup> “Do We Really Want a Dictatorship,” *Lanao Progress*, 15 October 1940, 3.

<sup>119</sup> “Progress and Women,” *Lanao Progress*, 1 November 1933, 6.

<sup>120</sup> “Shark vs. Octopus,” *Lanao Progress*, 1 November 1933, 3; “Murder in His Eye,” *Lanao Progress*, 1 September 1934, 6.

<sup>121</sup> “Lanao Progress: School Supplement,” *Lanao Progress*, 15 April 1941, 1.

Laubach and employees of the press were also active in collecting, translating and printing Moro oral histories and myths. The first of these, titled “An Odyssey from Lanao” by Laubach, was published in the periodical *Philippine Public Schools* in late 1930. Written in epic verse, it followed the mythical Moro warrior-prince Bantugan as he traversed the temporal and spiritual realms and warred with the Spanish.<sup>122</sup> The press published other stories in pamphlet form, such as “The Lanao Belief About the Hereafter,” and “The Story of the Vagrant Boy.” H.H. Bartlett received a copy of Laubach’s translation of the Bantugan myth, now referred to as the *Darangen* epic. Reading the missionary’s “florid and grandiloquent” prose he thought him guilty of “literary faking,” but after becoming more familiar with Maranao culture determined that Laubach had “done the cause of Philippine ethnology and literature a very great service in bringing to light a large body of traditional poetry.”<sup>123</sup> In his writings, it is evident that Laubach was fascinated and moved by the oral traditions of the Maranao people, and his efforts in compiling them came from a genuine preservationist instinct.<sup>124</sup> Yet his missionary impulses remained, and alongside his work translating Maranao epics he also published the New Testament in Lanao so that, in his words, “the Gospel of Christ will tell its own story.”<sup>125</sup> To this end, he had one of his employees, a Maranao named Kampong Basman, working late into the night to translate the Christian bible.<sup>126</sup>

The initiative spearheaded by Laubach extended to the petitioning of authorities for new infrastructural projects, the construction of a high school, the establishment of a teacher’s college, and a group for teenagers called the Society for English-Speaking Youth

---

<sup>122</sup> Frank Laubach, “An Odyssey from Lanao, Pt. III,” *Philippine Public Schools*, December 1930, 459-468. Laubach’s version was transcribed in verse, but an earlier telling in prose had appeared as: Ralph S. Porter, “The Story of Bantugan,” *The Journal of American Folklore* 15.58 (1902): 143-161.

<sup>123</sup> “Diary of a Twelve-Day Tour with Vice-Governor Hayden From Manila to Sulu and Back,” 11 September 1935, Box 8. Harley Harris Bartlett Papers, BHL.

<sup>124</sup> For a more thorough consideration of Laubach’s work preserving and transcribing the oral epics of the Maranao, see Brandon Joseph Reilly, “Collecting the People: Textualizing Epics in Philippine History from the Sixteenth Century to the Twenty-First” (PhD diss., University of California, Los Angeles, 2013), 160-168.

<sup>125</sup> “The Literacy Laboratory in Lanao,” Philippines Literacy Material, 1930s, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>126</sup> “Method I: The Lanao Key System,” Philippines Literacy Material, 1930s, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

run by Laubach's son, Robert.<sup>127</sup> But while Lanao was a hive of activity, Laubach's ambitions expanded. He believed his literacy techniques could be just as easily applied elsewhere in the world. In 1934, Laubach began a letter-writing campaign to missionaries, academics, colonial officials, and native leaders around the globe, sending off more than five hundred missives. This included leading colonial educators like Arthur Mayhew, a longtime India hand who returned to England and was editing *Oversea Education*, and Samuel T. Moyer, an enthusiastic American missionary in India who wanted Laubach to speak at a conference he was organizing. In the United States, Laubach corresponded with Elaine Swenson of the Language Research Institute at New York University, who recommended he contact Ernest Boas, son of the famed anthropologist Franz Boas.<sup>128</sup>

In Dansalan, a visual indicator of Laubach's growing transcolonial purview was a large map of the world, hung in the middle of the schoolroom, "with silk threads running from Mindanao to many points in other lands, especially Africa, Asia, and South America. These lines radiate to every country where we have been corresponding with anybody about literacy or where we have prepared charts."<sup>129</sup> In 1933 and 1934, Laubach travelled to other regions of the Philippines to teach his literacy method in anticipation of a world tour in 1935. Setting off in February of that year from Iligan, Laubach and his family stayed in India for several months and created literacy charts there. In the Middle East, Robert Laubach wrote a letter published in *The Lanao Progress* that updated readers in Mindanao on the journey.<sup>130</sup> In the Dansalan classroom, a blue line on the world map marked the family's progress. The Laubachs returned to Lanao in 1936 and stayed on until 1941, although during this time

---

<sup>127</sup> Minutes of the Society of English-Speaking Youth, July-August 1934, Box 131, Folder 4. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>128</sup> Letter from Arthur Mayhew to Frank Laubach, 12 March 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL; Letter from Samuel T. Moyer to Frank Laubach, 22 March 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL; Letter from Elaine Swenson to Frank Laubach, 28 March 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. For further information on Arthur Mayhew, see Clive Whitehead, *Colonial Educators: The British Indian and Colonial Education Service, 1858-1983* (London: I.B. Tauris, 2003), 149-170.

<sup>129</sup> "The Literacy Laboratory in Lanao," Philippines Literacy Material, 1930s, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>130</sup> "Letters," *Lanao Progress*, 1 July 1935, 3.

Frank's attentions turned increasingly towards the global implications of his literacy program.<sup>131</sup>

Frank Laubach was in many ways a more liberal character than Charles Brent, yet paradoxically more energetic in his efforts to convert the Moros. He used his sensitivity and understanding of Maranao culture to find areas where Christian and Islamic scriptures overlapped, then exploited these openings with receptive young Maranaos and drew them towards Christianity. Lanao was a "laboratory" for hybrid approaches to proselytism, and Laubach openly wondered in pages of *The Muslim World*, a journal published by the Hartford Seminary on Christian-Islamic relations, to what extent Christian practices could be married to Islamic ones. "Should we make our church look like a mosque, have a large drum (*tabu*) to call people to prayer, invite *panditas* and *imams* to share the service with us, have a place for washing their feet and hands before entering the church, and perhaps even use prayer rugs instead of chairs?" he wrote. "These are revolutionary ideas we are turning over in our minds."<sup>132</sup> Laubach believed that if Maranao rituals and customs were preserved people would be more receptive to the Christian gospels. In the pages of the *Progress*, articles described the deeds of Christ, and Laubach developed a Christian church service in Maranao for the handful of Moros who converted. In his accounts to other missionaries, the literacy program was a conduit for Christianity.<sup>133</sup>

When Laubach's "finest" Moro convert died of tuberculosis in 1938, he wrote to mission contributors in the United States that he had afterwards looked upon a picture of the young man and it seemed to say to him: "I am depending upon you to do the thing which I wanted to do for my people and which I was prevented from doing by being taken from the flesh. I am still with you in spirit and plead with you not fail."<sup>134</sup> With far fewer links to the upper echelons of colonial power, Laubach's project in Lanao did not benefit from the self-

---

<sup>131</sup> "Progress of Literacy Campaign in Lanao Province, Philippine Islands, 1930-1934," Philippines Literacy Material, 1934, Box 131, Folder 5. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>132</sup> Frank C. Laubach, "Christianity and Islam in Lanao," *The Muslim World* 25.1 (1935): 47.

<sup>133</sup> Frank C. Laubach, "My Approach to the Moros," *The Muslim World* 36.2 (1946): 113-114.

<sup>134</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to Mission Contributors, 24 September 1938, Box 2, Folder 6. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

congratulatory galas in New York City that the Bishop Brent Moro School did, and was less steeped in the cultural imperialism and nationalist sense of duty of earlier educational efforts. In the 1930s, Americans concerned with the welfare of the Moros watched independence loom with trepidation, and reoriented their efforts towards simultaneously protecting Islamic cultures and transforming them so they could better weather the storm of incorporation into a nascent Philippine national identity. A sensitive and perceptive missionary, Frank Laubach was a missionary nonetheless, and, while doing work of real benefit to the Maranaos, also retained conversion as the ultimate signifier of success.

The work at Dansalan and around Lake Lanao continued until the Japanese occupation of the Philippines. In 1941, Laubach operated the Madrasa High School, opened to “meet a crisis in public education,” and the Lanao Library had swelled to five thousand books. Christian students comprised the majority at the high school, but some Maranaos also attended and scholarships were occasionally given to do post-secondary work at Silliman University on the island of Negros.<sup>135</sup> Laubach was convinced that educating the Maranaos was the only way for them to avoid a demographic and cultural catastrophe. His writings at the time were preoccupied with the fate of Moros in an independent Philippines. Migrants from the North were “constantly pressing in upon our Province and taking land by hook or crook,” and Laubach thought that for the province to be “saved” the Moros had to become “intelligent and united” through education.<sup>136</sup> For the Moros to survive integration they needed to catch up with other areas of the archipelago, and the lands in the South had to be transitioned into “regular” provinces. In a forthright letter to the United States in 1937, Laubach admitted to a grim belief that there were “only two possible alternatives: First, that responsible young Moros will appear in sufficient numbers to remake their Province; or second, that the whole Moro race will be wiped out by the Filipinos.”<sup>137</sup> He was not present to witness the struggles of the Maranaos post-independence, as a brief trip outside of

---

<sup>135</sup> Frank C. Laubach, *Planning Ahead for Better Christian-Moslem Relations* (Lanao: American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions in the Philippine Islands, 1942), 1.

<sup>136</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to John Laubach, 27 January 1933, Box 2, Folder 1. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>137</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to David Mills, 22 July 1937, Box 2, Folder 6. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

Mindanao in October 1941 became permanent after the Japanese invasion. Frank Laubach turned his attentions elsewhere, dedicating the remainder of his life to refining the literacy techniques that he developed at Dansalan in other regions of the world and becoming famous in the process.<sup>138</sup>

## The Ambiguities of Colonial State-Building

Advocating a continued American presence in the Philippines, former Governor General Henry L. Stimson reflected on the successes of his nation in a 1932 letter to the explorer and politician Hiram Bingham. “Under enlightened leadership we framed our policy along no selfish lines of colonial domination, but from the beginning undertook the courageous experiment of trying to establish among an Oriental people the practices of Western economic and social development and principles of political democracy,” Stimson wrote. Although the Europeans had “scoffed” at American plans early on, time had proven that the inhabitants of the archipelago had “made progress in achieving a uniform language, a Western system of education, [and] a hitherto unknown national feeling.” The Philippines in 1932 represented an “islet of growing Western development and thought surrounded by an ocean of Orientalism” and its people were “the interpreters of American idealism to the Far East.” The republican virtues of American democracy served to build a unique and admirable colonial state in Southeast Asia.<sup>139</sup>

As shown, many colonials in Mindanao and Sulu shared Stimson’s vision of the American Philippines. In the South, dreams of transformation were driven by a combination of racial, political, and religious motives grouped here under the rubric of civilizational imperatives. These imperatives – establishing systems of law, healthcare, education,

---

<sup>138</sup> Laubach’s global vision was articulated in a 1951 book he released that discussed his experiences in Lanao in the context of social issues worldwide, the Cold War, and the need for literacy drives. See Frank C. Laubach, *Wake Up or Blow Up – America: Lift the World or Lose It!* (New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1951); Biographies of Laubach published during his lifetime and after his death in 1970 are largely hagiographic, emphasizing his spirituality and good acts rather than critically assessing his legacy. See, for example, Majorie Madary, *Each One Teach One: Frank Laubach, Friend to Millions* (New York: Longman, Green & Co., 1954); Helen M. Roberts, *Champion of the Silent Billion: The Story of Frank C. Laubach, Apostle of Literacy* (St. Paul: Macalaster Park Publishing Company, 1961).

<sup>139</sup> Letter from Henry Stimson to Hiram Bingham III, 15 February 1932, Box 83. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

agriculture, and commerce – stemmed from a conviction that Western modes of living needed replication in order for the peoples of the Islamic Philippines to ‘progress’ towards modernity. Such motivations for rule remained remarkably consistent throughout the American colonial period in a broad sense, although methods for achieving them varied. While the number of American officials progressively decreased after 1914, those remaining often occupied important positions where they dictated policy. This was especially true in education and law enforcement. The Filipinos who replaced them, inculcated into colonial norms, often took even more aggressive stances towards ‘civilizing’ their Muslim wards. Elites like Teopisto Guingona viewed Moro areas as problematic in much the same way as Frank Carpenter or John Pershing had before. The ‘Moro Problem’ remained a social and political feature in the minds of Filipino politicians well after the Americans departed.

In nearly four decades, the Americans managed to mold a handful of Westernized Muslim elites. These men and women eschewed traditional customs, dressed in American suits and dresses, spoke and wrote English well, and advocated public schooling for Muslim children. Mostly, they were drawn from elite families like that of Datu Piang in Cotabato or Sultan Jamalul Kiram II on Jolo. Even those onboard with the civilizing mission, however, were skeptical of it. Arolas Tulawie, the schoolteacher and politician we met earlier in this chapter, worked to modernize institutions in the Sulu Archipelago, yet blamed colonial rule for the “deplorable condition[s]” that existed in the South by the 1930s. A functional form of localized government – the *datu*ship – had served to keep the Sultan’s power in check, but it was replaced by inconsistent colonial policies that were implemented with little regard for individual communities. Slavery was abolished and replaced, according to Tulawie, with a type of “wage slavery” that was little better. Tulawie prophesized that in one hundred years time the Muslims of the Southern Philippines would remain in the same disenfranchised state they were in 1933. He estimated that in thirty-five years of American colonial rule seventy thousand Muslims were killed by authorities, or an average of six per day, and adopted the language of President Franklin Roosevelt in calling for a “new deal” for the Moros.<sup>140</sup>

---

<sup>140</sup> Letter from Arolas Tulawie to American Chamber of Commerce, 1933, Box 28, Folder 31. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.



What then are we to make of the civilizing mission in the Southern Philippines? It was undoubtedly generated by deep veins of cultural and racial supremacism, especially pronounced at the beginning of the twentieth-century as American and European politicians, bureaucrats, and educators sought to put a humane and scientifically rationalized face on projects of colonial domination. One could turn to nearly any page in this project and find these colonial logics at work. Yet any sustained engagement with the personal writings of men like Frank Laubach or James Fugate complicates the teleological urge to dismiss every white actor who served in a colonial setting as an agent of oppression. Laubach, for example, contained multitudes. He covertly attempted to convert Maranaos and described them in nakedly paternalist language, but also ran extensive literacy campaigns, opened clinics and schools, and established a newspaper that catered to the newly literate around Lake Lanao – often at financial detriment to himself. Fugate was a product of his time in the way he described the Tausūg, yet fought against Americans and Filipinos who wanted to see the citizens of Sulu play a subordinate role in their own homeland. The moderating tendencies of certain state and state-affiliated actors problematizes arguments depicting the colonial experience as one of unrelenting coercion, adding deeper texture to our narrative.

Understanding resistance to and collaboration with colonial state objectives by Muslim populations also requires us to consider individual and local specificities. Collaboration brought with it access to power for those outside of traditionally influential lineages, a chance to reap the limited material benefits brought by the colonials, and a means by which to avoid state-generated violence. Resistance often occurred under the mantle of authenticity. To resist the civilizational imperatives of the Americans meant reaffirming one's belief in precolonial communal structures and hierarchies, the teachings of Islam, and other established customs. Tensions between sites of authority (government and traditional) frustrated the state's efforts to transform the Moros and their land into models of colonial modernity. Conflicting power structures within government, financial shortages, and local variabilities further complicated the implementation of civilizational imperatives.

## Chapter Five / **Corrective Violence**

### ***On Fear, Resistance, Massacre, and Punishment***

In August 1923, the *Chicago Daily Tribune* reported a disturbance near Lake Lanao. The Philippine Constabulary, responsible for law and order in the region, had clashed with a band of Maranaos led by a man named Guarin. Leonard Wood, then Governor General of the Philippines, claimed that the Moros were radicalized by their travels to Mecca, which caused them to lash out at Filipinos and Americans upon their return to Lanao. Guarin's group threatened to destroy telephone lines and burn schoolhouses if their demands were not acknowledged. An old hand in the Muslim South, Leonard Wood took special interest in what happened there. He speculated to the press that Guarin's influence over "the fanatics" was growing, and asserted that because "influential Moro priests" were unable to quell them that a more punitive approach should be taken. "I believe the opportune time has come to cut short their fanatical activities by means of force," said Wood. "If we postpone action until later, we will have to kill a larger number than now." The *Tribune* reported that in the subsequent battle fifty Maranao warriors and three members of the Constabulary died.<sup>1</sup>

The encounter in Lanao featured a number of elements found in many of the larger confrontations between Moros and government forces. Deaths were asymmetrical, with the Moros routinely suffering casualties many times higher than the authorities. Resistance to civilizational imperatives (schooling, health programs, land reform, and so on) was interpreted as evidence of fanaticism by government authorities. Finally, officials portrayed the overwhelming force used to pacify the Moros as a necessary corrective – both to amend Muslim behaviour and avoid greater bloodshed. Violence as envisioned and practiced by the colonial state in the Islamic Philippines was at its heart an exercise in correcting those Moros unwilling to collaborate in the transformation process designed for them by Americans,

---

<sup>1</sup> "50 Moros Slain in Religious War," *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 8 August 1923, 10.

Filipinos, and their own elites. As such, it represented the coercive underbelly of the colonial state-building project detailed in the previous chapter.<sup>2</sup>

Corrective violence finds its closest conceptual parallel in the work of Michael G. Vann, who writes on the “pedagogic execution” in French Indochina. According to Vann, the violent spectacle of the guillotined criminal was “a cheap and effective way of communicating the colonial order of things” and evidence of how “violence saturated the colonial encounter.” The punishment served not only a penal function but was “a pedagogical tool to discipline the colonial subject who might consider an act of rebellion.”<sup>3</sup> While Vann’s concept focuses mainly on the maintenance of racial supremacy, the idea of corrective violence as deployed by the Americans and Filipinos moves into broader explanatory territory. The relationship between violence and racial demarcation was, as shown by Paul Kramer, an important one in the Philippines.<sup>4</sup> However, punitive acts by the colonial state in the Southern Philippines married this conservation of hierarchy with pedagogical goals. In other words, authorities believed violence ushered in civilizational transformation when dialogue failed. Beyond this, many Americans saw corrective violence as a form of communication the intrinsically savage Moro character understood. Force, as such, was a language the Moro appreciated when he could not be brought into the colonial fold by more diplomatic means. Sporadic slaughter served an important function in refashioning ‘Moros’ into ‘Filipino Muslims.’<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>2</sup> Colonial massacre occurred in pacification campaigns elsewhere in the Philippines. When forty-eight American servicemen were killed by guerillas from the town of Balangiga on Samar, U.S. Army General Jacob Smith famously turned the island into a “howling wilderness.” Retaliatory measures by Americans constituted a reign of terror, with wanton killing of suspected insurgents and enforced starvation as norms. As would happen after the Bud Dajo massacre, anti-imperialist sentiment within the United States rallied against the criminal excesses committed on Samar. The bells from the town of Balangiga were taken by U.S. forces and are presently housed at the Francis E. Warren Air Force Base in Wyoming. See William N. Holden, “The Samar Counterinsurgency Campaign of 1899-1902: Lessons Worth Learning?” *Asian Culture and History* 6.1 (2014): 15-30; Brian M. Linn, *The Philippine War: 1899-1902* (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 2000), 306-310; Tom Quigley, “The Bells of Balangiga,” *Commonweal* 142.1 (2015): 8-9.

<sup>3</sup> Michael G. Vann, “Of Pirates, Postcards, and Public Beheadings: The Pedagogic Execution in French Colonial Indochina,” *Historical Reflection* 36.2 (2010): 40-41.

<sup>4</sup> Paul Kramer. “Race-Making and Colonial Violence in the U.S. Empire,” 169-210.

<sup>5</sup> This chapter is indebted to a number of works on violence and discipline in Asian colonial states. Karl Hack and Tobias Rettig’s edited collection on colonial military forces in Southeast Asia gathers multiple studies on the exercise of coercive power in the region, including one on the Philippine Scouts. James Hevia’s scholarship

Connected to this violent reconstruction was the penal system, where experimental techniques were implemented to teach prisoners how to become model citizens of a distinctly colonial mold upon release. Practices of surveillance and reform through labour, most evident at the San Ramon Penal Farm outside of Zamboanga, can be viewed in a particularly Foucauldian light in their attempts to operate “at every level of the social body and by mingling ceaselessly the art of rectifying and the right to punish.”<sup>6</sup> Officials who believed in the beneficial effects of the “punitive mechanisms” at play envisioned an ideal penal system that would correct errant Moro behaviour while simultaneously operating as a self-supporting “apparatus of production.”<sup>7</sup> Inclinations towards panoptic control and reformation, however, were often belied by the reality of conditions in the municipal and provincial jails. Here, we take cues from another study of French Indochina. In Peter Zinoman’s work, he observes that “power relations marked by the pervasive circulation of disciplinary processes throughout the social body” were undermined by the failure of “modern methods of prison administration” to be effectively implemented throughout the colonial carceral system.<sup>8</sup> A litany of inefficiencies and indignities in the Southern Philippines – from corruption, to prisoner abuse, to a lack of funding – meant that incarceration was characterized by petty brutalities as much as moral reform. In this sense, the variegated realities of imprisonment in the Southern Philippines included both the modernist fantasies of officials and more banal institutional

---

on the British Empire in Asia provides fascinating examples of how nascent colonial intelligence networks were used to shape imperial states. On the topic of colonial prisons, Clare Anderson highlights connections between racial taxonomies and the designations of criminality. Martin Thomas’ study of European colonial policing gives numerous examples of the connections between labour and violence in the colonial state. See Karl Hack and Tobias Rettig, eds., *Colonial Armies in Southeast Asia* (London: Routledge, 2006); James Hevia, *The Imperial Security State: British Colonial Knowledge and Empire-Building in Asia* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012); Clare Anderson, *Legible Bodies: Race, Criminality and Colonialism in South Asia* (Oxford: Berg, 2004); Martin Thomas, *Violence and Colonial Order: Police, Workers and Protest in the European Colonial Empires, 1918-1940* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012).

<sup>6</sup> Michel Foucault, *Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison* (New York: Vintage, 1995), 303.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., 308.

<sup>8</sup> Peter Zinoman, *The Colonial Bastille: A History of Imprisonment in Vietnam, 1862-1940* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2001), 6-7.

realities, speaking to what Zinoman calls “the hybridity of power in colonial and postcolonial societies.”<sup>9</sup>

Underpinning the corrective violence of the colonial state was the belief that the use of force and incarceration countered the innate ability of the Moro to unleash their own spectacular displays of violence. This, they thought, was manifest in the *juramentado*, a term describing practitioners of ritualized religious suicide that took on elastic definitions. Although the military-civilian diarchy in Manila created ongoing tension between the U.S. Army and the Philippine Constabulary in the first decade of colonial rule, the institutional friction did not cause the Constabulary to move away from the use of force after the transition to civilian rule at the end of 1913.<sup>10</sup> If anything, the government of the Department of Mindanao and Sulu continued the policy of mixing law enforcement with administration, as did the provinces run by the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes in the 1920s. Seven of fifteen provincial governors between 1913 and 1930 were Constabulary officers.<sup>11</sup> These structural continuities meant that Moros continued to be viewed in terms of their capacity for violence and responses to resistance were severe throughout the colonial period. The consistent use of force after 1913 meant that the “normalization” of the Southern Philippines officials boasted of never really occurred. While the frequency of violence waxed and waned, it remained a key tool used by the government throughout our period of study. This chapter explores

---

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., 7. Architectures of control, rationalization of prison labour, and scientific schemes to make detention facilities modern spaces were experimented with to varying degrees in other American colonies and in the European colonial empires. Much of the work on this topic derives from Michel Foucault’s pioneering explorations of how penal power was mediated through physical design and surveillance regimes. However, some scholars like Zinoman have questioned the applicability of Foucauldian theories in the face of the often-chaotic realities of colonial prisons. For the American context, see Michael Salman, “‘The Prison That Makes Men Free’: The Iwahig Penal Colony and the Simulcra of the American State in the Philippines,” in *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, ed. Alfred McCoy et al. (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2007), 116-130; Kevin Santiago-Valles, “American Penal Forms and Colonial Spanish Custodial-Regulatory Practices in Fin de Siècle Puerto Rico,” in *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, ed. Alfred McCoy et al. (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2007), 87-96; On colonial forms of punishment and detention, see Mark Brown, *Penal Power and Colonial Rule* (New York: Routledge, 2014); Frank Dikötter and Ian Brown, eds., *Cultures of Confinement: A History of the Prison in Africa, Asia and Latin America* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2007).

<sup>10</sup> Alfred W. McCoy, *Policing America’s Empire*, 83-86.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid.

interconnected histories of fear, violence, and incarceration in the Southern Philippines to better understand the use of corrective violence by the colonial regime and assess its impacts.

## Fixating on *Juramentados*

In August 1934, on the small island of Tabawan in the Tawi-Tawi group, a double homicide occurred.<sup>12</sup> On the 8<sup>th</sup> of that month, the wife of a Moro named Asnol died giving birth to their child. Wracked with grief, Asnol decided to forfeit his own life. Because of Islamic prohibitions against suicide, he would accomplish this through ‘going *juramentado*’ – or ‘running amuck’ – in the neighbouring community of Laum, where the Bureau of Education ran a four-teacher school. The teachers at Laum were Christian Filipinos, which to Asnol meant they were foreigners tasked with imposing alien customs on Moro children. Dying in the act of killing them, therefore, would be considered an honour. Asnol approached the school armed with a *bolo* and cut down two teachers, Felipe Collante and Ruperto Rosos, before being shot dead by a retired teacher, Ignacio Aguilar, with a shotgun.<sup>13</sup>

Included in official reports of the murders were photographs of the deceased teachers, whose bodies were sent to Jolo for medical examination. The pictures show arms nearly severed and deep gashes to the heads of the victims. K.W. Chapman, Acting Division Superintendent of Schools in Sulu, observed that the extent of the injuries was “not exceptional but simply an average case after an amuck has finished with his victim” and suggested that the American and Filipino authorities adopt a more punitive approach to dealing with the problem. “When a man in Borneo runs amuck,” he wrote, “the whole village is held responsible. The British promptly burn the whole village. The Dutch cut off the head of the offender and place it on a pole in the market.” Chapman was bitter that two of his

---

<sup>12</sup> The Tawi-Tawi island group, now a province, lays closest to British North Borneo and was a restive border zone where central authority was hard to maintain. This was partially due to issues of communication and isolation (directives from Manila would often have to go through Zamboanga, then Jolo, before reaching Bongao, the capital of Tawi-Tawi), but also because of local resistance to colonial education and labour schemes. Contemporary scholarship on the region is scarce. For more information on social relations and power structures in Tawi-Tawi, see Patricia Horvatic, “The Martyr and the Mayor: On the Politics of Identity in the Southern Philippines,” in *Cultural Citizenship in Island Southeast Asia: Nation and Belonging in the Hinterlands*, ed. Renato Rosaldo (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2003), 28-32.

<sup>13</sup> Memorandum from E.W. Chapman to J.R. Hayden, 20 August 1934, Box 30, Folder 1. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

teachers were dead while in the meantime Asnol had “covered himself with honor and glory” and that his grave had become a spot of gathering for the people of his village. In arguing for greater punishments to Bureau of Education officials in Manila, Chapman darkly observed that Muslims did not appreciate kind treatment unless it was “tempered with the kind of justice they understand.”<sup>14</sup>

The phenomenon of the *juramentado* or amuck during the American colonial period was inherited from the Spanish. *Juramentado*, which in Spanish means “one who has taken an oath,” was a form of ritual suicide derived from earlier calls for *jihad* (the Qur’anic concept of ‘Holy War’) against sources of authority viewed as illegitimate by the Moros. During the Spanish occupation of Sulu, the Tausūg people referred to the act as *parang sabil* (roughly translating to ‘war in the path of God’) and used it to denote “an individual decision and action, sanctioned and even encouraged by the *panditas* as a form of resistance against the Spanish.”<sup>15</sup> In this private act of *jihad*, the *juramentado* engaged in a series of ritualized practices before attack, including “washing, prayers, and purification that customarily readied a body for burial...other procedures function to give his body strength and endurance and involved amulets and incenses, shaving his head and plucking his eyebrows, and binding his penis in an upright position.”<sup>16</sup> The establishment of a pervasive colonial regime throughout the Southern Philippines by the Americans meant that individual acts of violence by *mujahid* (the person intent on ‘going *juramentado*’) became more common than group resistance to colonial rule.

American military authorities were cognizant of the *juramentado* from the first, drawing information on the phenomenon from the Spanish. A translated Spanish history in the possession of John Pershing spoke of the *juramentado* as those who decided to “vanquish or die rushing against the enemy’s forces, no matter how strong they may be without ever

---

<sup>14</sup> Ibid.

<sup>15</sup> Angeles, “Moros in the Media,” 34.

<sup>16</sup> Karin Andriolo, “Murder by Suicide: Episodes from Muslim History,” *American Anthropologist* 104.3 (2002): 738.

drawing back, till they fall dead.”<sup>17</sup> Writing to his mother, Frank McCoy told a mythologized story of how the Spanish Governor of Jolo in the 1880s, General Juan Arolas, stopped the practice. When Arolas asked the Sultan of Sulu to call a halt to *juramentado* attacks, the Sultan told him he had no control over such matters. Arolas then sent a gunboat to shell the Sultan’s capital at Maibun, and when the Sultan complained he replied, “The gunboat is running amuck, the Captain is *juramentado*. What control have I over such?” The attacks stopped shortly thereafter.<sup>18</sup> The tale was popular enough to enter into common lore, as later chroniclers used the same sequence of events but attributed the disciplinary lesson to Leonard Wood or John Pershing.<sup>19</sup> McCoy went on to describe how the “old Arolas regulations” at the gates of Jolo were still in place. Every person passing into the walled town was disarmed first. Despite this precaution, on three different occasions in 1903 *juramentados* slipped past the guards. “Once the *barongs* were concealed inside bamboos and twice in baskets of fruit. As soon as they were past the guards, out came the *barongs* and they ran amuck, cutting and slashing at everybody in sight till finally riddled by the guards.”<sup>20</sup>

The Samal Moro leader Datu Mandi helped establish his bona fides with the Americans in 1900 by relating how he was awarded the Medal of Merit for Valor by the Spanish for assisting in the killing of a *juramentado* who attempted to run amuck in 1895.<sup>21</sup> Likewise, Sultan Jamalul Kiram drafted a public letter urging the people of Sulu not to engage in the practice against the Americans, warning them “if you love yourselves and your country avoid coming to blows with the Americans, because they are like a matchbox – you strike one and they all go off.”<sup>22</sup> The story in which the Sultan told the Arolas / Wood /

---

<sup>17</sup> Unmarked Spanish History of the Philippines, 1890s, Box 319. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>18</sup> Letter from Frank McCoy to his Mother, 3 September 1903, Box 15, Folder 2. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>19</sup> Charles Ivins related an identical story about John Pershing, who shelled Moro datus until they helped stop the *juramentado* menace – “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 186, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>20</sup> Letter from Frank McCoy to his Mother, 3 September 1903, Box 15, Folder 2. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>21</sup> Datu Mandi, “Note and history of the life of the undersigned and his relations with the Spaniards and Americans,” 10 September 1900, Box 3, Folder 12. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC

<sup>22</sup> Memorandum on Sulu, Summer 1899, Box 2, Folder 9. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.



Pershing figure that he had no control over the *juramentados* contained some truth. As colonial control tightened under the Americans, ritual suicides were more commonly a private matter rather than a means of coordinated resistance. Considering this, Moro leaders in Mindanao and Sulu were likely being truthful when they claimed that the attacks took place without communal foreknowledge. Besides receiving a blessing from their parents and perhaps a local *pandita*, the *juramentado*'s intentions were not widely known outside of their home village until they struck. General John Bates was emphatic that running amuck not be viewed as a religious act, and that "a *juramentado* would be hanged along with the *pandita* who gave him his oath, the barber who shaved his head and anointed him, the person who made his white robe for him, and anybody who should know of his vow without sending warning to the Americans."<sup>23</sup>

The Americans explained the phenomenon in a variety of ways. The *Mindanao Herald*, in a 1914 article, suggested that the practice was a holdover from Spanish times and a remnant of the *jihad* waged during that period. Quoting Esteban Rodriguez de Figueroa, a sixteenth-century Spanish military officer who travelled to Sulu to exact tribute from the Sultan, the paper suggested that early iterations of *jihad* against foreign occupiers were legitimate as they responded to a direct threat to Islam. Acting as interpreter of Qur'anic doctrine, the *Herald* deemed pre-1878 *juramentados* as legitimate actors because they were sanctioned by the Sultan of Sulu, and thus "fulfilled the principle requirements of a true *jihad*" which needed to have a "national character."<sup>24</sup> After the treaty between the Sultanate and the Spanish was concluded in 1878, ritualized suicide in combat was delegitimized because it was no longer "an act of war performed thru the cooperation of large bodies of men actuated by religious motives," and became "little different from murder madness in other parts of Malaysia as 'running amuck,' which drives individuals, despondent because of personal grievances, to an almost indiscriminate slaughter of their fellows." Although reflective in its treatment of Spanish-Muslim relations, the paper made no attempt to understand the role of the *juramentado* during the American period. Because their actions

---

<sup>23</sup> "Details of the Sulu Compact," *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 26 September 1899, 1.

<sup>24</sup> "Juramentados," *Mindanao Herald*, 17 January 1914.

lacked the aforementioned “national character” they did not qualify as true expressions of *jihad*, and therefore were “pseudo-*juramentado*.”<sup>25</sup> To the editors of the *Herald*, the rational actors fighting colonial rule from the sixteenth to nineteenth centuries became madmen unworthy of study after 1878, and a threat to colonial order after 1899.

Like most Americans, John Pershing interpreted running amuck as something other than an act of protest against the colonial status quo. To Pershing, the Moros could not “in any sense be called true believers” and therefore the religious implications of ‘going *juramentado*’ were also nullified. The Moros were pagans whose culture was Islamized to a minor degree, and the only religious authority figure of note that they had, Sultan Jamalul Kiram II, was “licentious” and ill regarded. Pershing blamed the social order of Moro communities for fomenting the attacks. The “degrading slavery of concubinage and polygamy” allowed wealthy Moro men to accumulate wives while those with little in the way of money or power were continually “denied the privilege and the natural right of having a wife” due to being outbid on dowries. Denied a partner, the discouraged Moro male took it upon himself to become a *juramentado* and attack Christians. Although Pershing acknowledged that running amuck could be an act of war against enemies, he saw the principal cause as unequal social relations within Moro society. “A code which recognizes plurality and authorizes concubinage,” he wrote, “can not prevail against civilized standards of morality. Its baneful influence encourages sensuality and lust with all their degrading effect upon Moro character.” The “fully established” links between *juramentados* and polygamy meant that suicidal attacks on the American authorities were an entirely internal problem and could only be fixed if Moro culture was overhauled entirely.<sup>26</sup>

Other explanations for *juramentados* included that given in a report by a representative of the American-Philippine Co., based out of New York City, who visited Mindanao and Sulu in 1913 to survey commercial prospects there. The report explained that attacks against Americans on Jolo were linked directly back to the presence of “Arab *Panditas* or Priests” who were preaching “death and destruction for Christians” to the locals,

---

<sup>25</sup> Ibid.

<sup>26</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 70-71.

and interpreted the Qur'an to the Moros "in such a ways that the Moro feels it often his duty to kill as many Christians as possible and if he should die in the act, immediately he will join Allah in Heaven there to live in luxury with from six to twelve wives."<sup>27</sup> Elsewhere, cases of *juramentado* were described as mental health issues. A Moro student newspaper from Jolo described a scare that happened in 1926 near Indanan, where a man named Ijasani, who was being treated for insanity, confronted Constabulary guards and was shot dead by them.<sup>28</sup> A policy memorandum on Sulu from 1934 likewise described running amuck as the result of a brooding mind, and suggested that the resulting frenzy had nothing to do with killing Christians, or true *juramentado* at all, but was simply a matter of bypassing the religious prohibition on suicide. Once the Moro was determined to die, the memorandum stated, who he killed – "even his own friends and relatives" – was not "very material."<sup>29</sup> The famous muckraking journalist Charles Edward Russell took this line of thinking further, and claimed that the Moro mind "in a state of nature" was "capable of strange fits and starts." Russell compared the Moro to a *carabao* that "after years of plodding patience, may be seized all of a sudden with temporary madness," and suggested that the only way to alter these animalistic qualities was educating Moros on their civic duties.<sup>30</sup>

Newspaper accounts of *juramentados* were predictably sensational. For the press, the *juramentado* functioned as the ultimate iteration of Islamic fanaticism, and a source of constant danger for Americans in the Southern Philippines. That an American soldier or civilian could be cut down at any moment by a frenzied warrior in a state of religious ecstasy made for good copy, and most longer articles on the region made some mention of the phenomenon. In 1912, the *Washington Post* reported on the murder of one Lieutenant Walter H. Rodney, killed in the town of Jolo by a "fanatic, dashing down the street, slashing right

---

<sup>27</sup> Report from Secretary of American-Philippine Company, March 1913, Box 38. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>28</sup> "Insane Man Killed by Constabulary," *The Student Weekly* 4.2, 4 September 1926, 1.

<sup>29</sup> Memorandum on Policy for the Province of Sulu, 8 September 1934, Box 30, Folder 4. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>30</sup> Charles Edward Russell, *The Outlook for the Philippines* (New York: The Century Co., 1922), 266.

and left with his *bolo*.”<sup>31</sup> The *New York Times* reported on Colonel W.H. Wallace’s novel approach to punishing *juramentados* and their families on Jolo. Wallace and his men began burying pigs in the graves of *juramentados* to warn other Tausūg off engaging in the activity. Because of the Islamic admonition against pork, military officers believed that the Tausūg would worry about their soul being contaminated by the presence of a hog in their grave. Wallace described the interment, done before a large crowd, with some relish, noting that “news of the form of punishment adopted soon spread” and that “the method had a wholesome effect” in establishing order on the island.<sup>32</sup> Colonel Alexander Rogers repeated this approach some years later in an even more gruesome fashion. Dead *juramentados* were laid out in village marketplaces and would have slaughtered pigs placed above them.<sup>33</sup>

It is difficult to overstate the extent to which the *juramentados*, who represented a tiny fraction of the Muslim population in the Southern Philippines, played into the American colonial psyche. Many Americans writing about their experiences recounted in lurid detail attacks they witnessed, or, more often than not, had heard about from others. Often times, the accounts emphasized the sheer unpredictability of the amuck, as was the case in the memoir of the Constabulary officer John R. White. He told the story of two Yakan Moros from the island of Basilan who were travelling by sea to the market at Taluksangay, just down the coast from the town of Zamboanga, to sell unprocessed cocoa pods. Their boat capsized in a storm en route and their goods were lost. Washing up on shore, they decided to run amuck in the nearest Christian town. On arriving there, they attacked whomever was closest, or in White’s vivid description: “Slash, cut, slice, a child’s head here, a woman’s arm there, and in

---

<sup>31</sup> “When Moros Run Amuck,” *Washington Post*, 14 January 1912, M3. At a dinner in honour of W. Cameron Forbes at the Harmony Club of America in 1914, Worcester gave a speech where he went into detail about the *juramentado* tendency to “slaughter promiscuously” the Spanish and Filipinos on Jolo – “The Moro Problem,” 1914, Box 2. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

<sup>32</sup> “Buried Pig with Moros,” *New York Times*, 22 December 1903, 5.

<sup>33</sup> Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 119. As a curious aside, Snopes, the website famous for investigating internet rumour and speculation, took up the issue in 2008. Islamophobic chain emails circulated in the wake of the September 2001 terrorist attacks claimed John Pershing had effectively used the pig corpse strategy to end the Moro insurgency. Others attributed the same technique to the British in India (reminiscent of stories about British colonials greasing bullet casings with pig fat so as to insult Islam). The website came to the conclusion that the use of the technique may have happened, although its effectiveness was questioned. For more: Snopes, “Pershing the Thought,” accessed 9 December 2014, <http://www.snopes.com/rumors/pershing.asp>.

as many seconds as it has taken words to tell, the peaceful village street became a place of massacre and wailing.” Eventually, they two were overwhelmed and cut down by Filipino townsfolk, and afterwards their dismembered bodies were strung up publicly.<sup>34</sup> In another of White’s stories, a Tausūg ran amuck after his friends had made fun of his hiccups while they were all sitting around a campfire.<sup>35</sup> A Moro, it seemed, was liable to explode into a murderous frenzy at the slightest provocation.

Distinctions between *juramentado* and amuck shifted. The stories just related, according to White, were garden-variety cases of Moros running amuck, something he and others thought was an innate trait in those with Malay blood. He likened this form of violence to “spontaneous combustion,” where an “apparently sane and respectable citizen” suddenly became a “dancing, frenzied, fiend rushing frantically about to slay, blindly, and indiscriminately.” The proper *juramentado*, on the other hand, was an “amuck with religious and other frills” who worked himself into a state of religious frenzy before stealthily entering a Christian settlement and cutting down as many as possible.<sup>36</sup> Most other accounts did not make a distinction between the two practices. William B. Freer, who wrote of his experiences as a teacher in the Philippines, described the amuck and *juramentado* interchangeably, while others saw *juramentado* as merely the Spanish word to describe the Moro religious variant of a practice they believed to be common amongst Malays in Southeast Asia.<sup>37</sup>

Vic Hurley distinguished between the two practices, claiming that to run amuck was “prevalent among all Eastern peoples” but had “no religious significance.” Essentializing racial characteristics, he claimed the Malay was “prone to brood and linger over imaginary ills and this culminates in the seizure of a *kris* and a mad slashing of every person in the amuck’s path.”<sup>38</sup> Hurley believed that of all the Muslims in the world, only the Moros

---

<sup>34</sup> White, *Bullets and Bolos*, 295.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., 293.

<sup>37</sup> William B. Freer, *The Philippine Experiences of an American Teacher* (New York: Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1906), 266.

<sup>38</sup> Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 68.

practiced the private form of “constructive self-destruction” known as *juramentado*.<sup>39</sup> Despite taking pains to distinguish, he spent numerous pages on the Moros using the term *juramentado* to describe Moro attackers of every stripe, from those who waged open war against the Spanish in the Sulu Archipelago during the 1800s, to those who performed guerilla attacks against army posts in the Lake Lanao region, to the lone amuck who cut down civilians in a crowded marketplace. His timeframe was likewise vast, and he claimed the “terrible period of *juramentado* attacks” lasted from 1509 until 1913.<sup>40</sup>

In collapsing all Moro violence into the phenomenon of the *juramentado*, Hurley mimicked a prevalent tendency among the colonial class. It was commonly held that the innate volatility of the Malay melded with a distinctly Moro version of religious fanaticism to create the *juramentado*, a suicide warrior of such frenzied strength that even men with lengthy experience in the Philippines like Dean Worcester and Frank Laubach were wont to discuss them in near-mystical terms. Laubach claimed that to injure “the fanatic could not stop him...if bayoneted he would often seize the barrel of the rifle and push the bayonet further into himself in an effort to bring the soldier at the other end of the gun near enough to cut him down with his *barong*.”<sup>41</sup> Some claimed, however, that no actual *juramentados* had existed since the Sultanate’s treaty with Spain in 1878. Others saw the specter of amuck in even the most routine murders involving Moros. Florence Kimball Russel, writing in 1907, believed that the attacks no longer took place because the Moros had “taken most kindly to the Americans” and did not view them as Christians in the same way they did the Spanish.<sup>42</sup> Those Americans who wrote or spoke about their experiences in the Southern Philippines later in life generally made some mention of *juramentados* and their fearsome reputation. Charles Ivins claimed in his unpublished memoirs that the *juramentado* would continue

---

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., 66.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., 118-119.

<sup>41</sup> Frank C. Laubach, “What Shall We Do With the Moros?” *Envelope Series* 24.3 (1921): 15.

<sup>42</sup> Russel, *A Woman’s Journey Through the Philippines*, 149.

attacking until he killed multiple soldiers, even though his heart had been “shattered by several bullets.”<sup>43</sup>

Americans were uncertain what Moro violence *meant*. Religious fanaticism, mental illness, racial traits, and honour were all ascribed or disavowed as explanatory factors. Those who served in the Southern Philippines were often genuinely perplexed that these outbursts of violence continued to happen. Stephen F. Dale argues that individual religious suicide attacks by Asian Muslims continued after coordinated resistance to colonial rule ended because of feelings of defeat and dispossession.<sup>44</sup> If the Moro could not meet the foreign occupier – American or Filipino – on equal military footing, he could at least express his displeasure with the colonial regime by dying in a blaze of glory. The civilizational overhaul that came with American rule also had a disorienting effect on Muslim societies. As Michael Adas shows, the innovations of empire “undermine customary beliefs, institutions, and patterns of human interaction so rapidly that viable replacements often cannot be developed quickly enough to cushion the perilous transition to a new order.”<sup>45</sup> The arrival of the Americans brought new modes of societal organization that undermined the institution of the *datu*ship, rearranged Moro business practices, and attempted to secularize education, among other changes.

In this dizzying atmosphere of reconfiguration, violent resistance became more likely. While the larger attempt to remake Moros cannot account for the granular context of each case of amuck – the petty jealousies, the grief, the outrage – it helps explain linkages between a destabilized society and violent outbursts. Americans at the time were infuriated by the phenomenon. Although there were variations in explanations of *juramentado* and amuck, colonials shared a common belief that the irrational and violent character of the Moro could only be contained and corrected if met with punitive action. Paranoia about *juramentados*, as well as indignation that some Moros were not grateful for the benefits of

---

<sup>43</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 40, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>44</sup> Stephen Frederic Dale, “Religious Suicide in Islamic Asia: Anticolonial Terrorism in India, Indonesia, and the Philippines,” *Journal of Conflict Resolution* 32.1 (1988): 56.

<sup>45</sup> Adas, *Prophets of Rebellion*, 183.

colonial rule, helped establish a relationship of ongoing violence between Muslims and the colonial state.

## Resistance and Massacre

General Adna R. Chaffee believed that violence needed to be strategically applied in controlling the Moros. Writing to Adjutant General Henry Corbin in April 1902, he stated his belief that “we must not fail duty which demands application of Mosaic law, ‘An eye for an eye,’ when dealing with savages who know no other way of obtaining redress for wrong.” He feared that Mindanao would “remain in terra incognita” and thought it best for the Moros if the “army press into their settlements in friendly spirit than stand barred out at their gates and lose their respect.”<sup>46</sup> Other Americans in the Southern Philippines, who saw the language of force as a prerequisite for successful civilizing projects, echoed Chaffee’s concerns. Armed with the certainty that they understood the Moro ‘character,’ military officials initiated a violent dynamic that continued long after their departure.

Early confrontations with the Moros took place around the southern shore of Lake Lanao. Lacking unifying figures and riven with internecine conflicts, the Maranao Moros there were believed to be especially unruly. Their relative isolation, ferocity in combat, and knowledge of the local environment meant that Spanish incursions in the previous three centuries were limited. With this in mind, punitive expeditions, most famously those led by John Pershing in 1902-03, demonstrated the power of the U.S. military. At the beginning of May 1902, Colonel Frank Baldwin led a force of some twelve hundred men against Moros holed up in fortifications at Bayan and Pandapatan. Two days of bloody fighting, some of it hand-to-hand, saw between four hundred and five hundred Moros killed with American losses of only eleven killed and forty-two wounded. General Chaffee commented in a terse

---

<sup>46</sup> Letter from Adna Chaffee to Henry Corbin, 24 April 1902, Box 11. Hugh Drum Papers, USAHEC. The full quote is as follows: “We must not fail duty which demands application of Mosaic law, ‘An eye for an eye’, when dealing with savages who know no other way obtaining redress for wrong, and count all as cowards who fail to make the demand and execute it. Every murder of a soldier by a Moro must be satisfied by punishment of offender in our courts. If this be not done better to leave country so favorable for the crime. Certain it is that for each offence we condone 10 crimes will follow, and that great island will remain in terra incognita. Better for Moros that army press into their settlements in friendly spirit than stand barred out at their gates and lose their respect. We can never become friends in such situation.”



cablegram afterwards that the battle at “Bayan caused much astonishment; was extremely necessary wholesome lesson, which don’t think will have to be repeated.”<sup>47</sup>

Bayan established a pattern that continued until Philippine independence: ‘obstinate’ Moros who refused to submit were met with considerable force and decimated in the process. A sub-headline from a Manila newspaper following Pershing’s expeditions was typical: “Victorious American commander attacks the recalcitrants of Mindanao, losing not a single man in the course of the advance.” In the article, an anonymous staff officer in Manila was of the opinion that “the Moros have not forgotten the lesson given them in Bayan,” and that “opposition to Pershing’s men has been desultory.”<sup>48</sup> When the Americans did take losses they were small in comparison to the Moros. Through the spring of 1903, Maranaos “who rejected the tenders of friendship” were violently suppressed. In the wake of the Battle of Bacolod in early April 1903, the *Chicago Evening Post* reported that the defeat of the Moros there would “lead all Moros to acknowledge American sovereignty.”<sup>49</sup>

This did not happen. Resistance continued under Panglima Hassan on Jolo and Datu Ali, a rival of Datu Piang, in Cotabato. Hassan, a powerful Tausūg leader, urged other datus to take up arms against the Americans. District Governor of Jolo Hugh Scott figured Hassan to be “probably the strongest chief on the island” and reckoned he could raise “500 well armed men in an hour, and many more hundreds in a day.”<sup>50</sup> In November and December of 1903, Scott led the 14<sup>th</sup> Cavalry against Hassan’s supporters. “Wherever we met resistance,” he wrote to his wife, “we killed them and burned the houses.”<sup>51</sup> Hassan, whose opposition stemmed from opposition to taxation and a fear of American interference with Moro cultural traditions, was tracked down at Bud Bagsak in March 1904 and killed alongside two

---

<sup>47</sup> Letter from Adna Chaffee to Henry Corbin, 13 May 1902, Box 11. Hugh Drum Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>48</sup> “Pershing Takes Seven Moro Forts and Moves on the Sultan of Maciu,” *Manila Cable-News*, 23 November 1902.

<sup>49</sup> “Hundred Moros Killed; Pershing Captures Bacolod,” *Chicago Evening Post*, 10 April 1903.

<sup>50</sup> Letter from Hugh Scott to Leonard Wood, 17 August 1903, Box 55, Folder 6. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>51</sup> Letter from Hugh Scott to Mary Scott, 16 November 1903, Box 55, Folder 4. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD

companions.<sup>52</sup> Datu Ali, the Sultan of Buayan in the Cotabato region, was at first on good terms with the military authorities in Cotabato, particularly Colonel Lea Febiger, the district governor. In friendlier times, the two made “tentative arrangements to send [Ali] on an educational tour to the United States.”<sup>53</sup> Ali’s relations with the Americans broke down over familiar issues of taxation, slavery, the changing of the common currency from the Mexican to American dollar, and the reordering of power structures in the region.<sup>54</sup>

Attempts to bring Ali in peacefully by men like the Syrian-born regional expert Najeeb Saleeby, who visited the datu’s camp, came to nothing.<sup>55</sup> By 1904, resistance to American rule in the region had transformed into running battles between Ali’s men and U.S. Army forces and Philippine Constabulary in the jungles of Cotabato. After an initial confrontation at Ali’s *cotta* at Seranaya, combat became increasingly decentered as the Moros realized they had greater success against the superior weaponry of the Americans if they used familiarity with the environment to their advantage, attacking patrols quickly and then vanishing. These guerilla tactics frustrated the Americans, who adopted punitive reconcentration policies for Maguindanaon communities in areas suspected of harbouring or supplying Datu Ali and his men. Shoot-on-sight orders were given for any Moro male acting suspiciously, and structures outside of designated reconcentration areas were burned. Even Vic Hurley, no great opponent of colonial empire, admitted “there was some criticism directed at this engagement due to the numbers of women and children killed by the artillery and rifle fire of the American troops.”<sup>56</sup>

When the Constabulary failed to capture or kill Ali, Governor Wood sent a hunting party led by one of his closest aides, Captain Frank McCoy, to track the datu. In late October 1905, McCoy and his men located Ali and shot him dead on the porch of one of his

---

<sup>52</sup> Fulton, *Moroland*, 215.

<sup>53</sup> White, *Bullets and Bolos*, 216.

<sup>54</sup> Fulton, *Moroland*, 246.

<sup>55</sup> Letter from Leonard Wood to Tasker Bliss, 16 April 1906, Box 15, Folder 1. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

<sup>56</sup> Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 91.

hideouts.<sup>57</sup> Despite the violence and displacement brought to the Rio Grande Valley by the conflict, after his death the Maguindanao Moros mythologized Ali as a folk hero. Unlike Datu Piang, a self-made half-caste who readily supported the Americans, they saw Ali as a brave warrior who fought a courageous but suicidal war against a far stronger enemy. Rumours quickly spread that the Maguindanao leader had not even been killed, gaining enough currency that enterprising journalists printed them and the colonial authorities were forced to open an investigation.<sup>58</sup> Ali remained a popular folk hero in the region, and as late as 1914 his son and nephews were resisting foreign rule in the Cotabato region.<sup>59</sup>

The violence of the first years of the American occupation of the Southern Philippines peaked at Bud Dajo, an extinct volcano five miles outside of the town of Jolo, in early March 1906. Hundreds of Tausūg Moros fortified themselves in its crater to protest the unpopular cedula head tax, and more generally how the Americans and colluding Moro elites robbed them of their earnings. The imposition and collection of taxes was a perennial source of friction between the residents of Jolo and the colonial government. A series of encounters between the American military and resisting Moros occurred in the previous two years, including one where 226 Moros were killed in a single afternoon.<sup>60</sup> District Governor Hugh Scott was forced to conduct a series of meetings where he repeatedly explained the cedula and “made a speech declaring that this tax in no way interfered with the eleven tenets of the Mohammedan religion.”<sup>61</sup> Americans co-opted local elites to collect the tax from their followers, but widespread allegations of corruption during the process further alienated the

---

<sup>57</sup> Letter from Frank McCoy to J.J. Crittenden, 1 November 1905, Box 11, Folder 3. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>58</sup> “Investigation made by First Lieutenant Arthur Pilon, 14<sup>th</sup> Cavalry, Aid-de-Camp, per verbal instructions of the Department Commander,” May 1906, Box 11, Folder 6. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD. George Langhorne even had a humorous exchange with an enterprising journalist named C.C. Gilbert, publisher of the *Inter-Island News*, who claimed to have proof that Datu Ali was still alive. Langhorne responded to this in a droll fashion, saying that if Ali “keeps quiet and inoffensive as he now is, it makes no difference, except to himself, whether he be alive or dead.” – Letter from George Langhorne to C.C. Gilbert, 13 June 1906, Box 11, Folder, 6. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>59</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 338.

<sup>60</sup> Marvin Hepler, “History of Troop ‘M’ 14<sup>th</sup> Cavalry from its organization, April 25<sup>th</sup> 1901 to the present date,” 17 January 1906, Box 1, Folder 3. Marvin C. Hepler Papers, 1901-1969, USAHEC.

<sup>61</sup> George T. Langhorne, *Second Annual Report of the Governor of the Province of Moro* (Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1905), 30.

average Joloano. In the months leading up to the massacre, the Americans were also confronting unrest in other parts of the Sulu Archipelago, including the depredations of a pirate named Pala and the assassination of the American commanding officer on the island of Siasi.<sup>62</sup>

Although Scott argued for a measured approach to the holdouts on Bud Dajo, he departed for medical treatment in the United States and was replaced by James Reeves. Reeves' inexperience played into the designs of the provincial governor, Leonard Wood, who believed punitive action was necessary. Having already assured his superiors in Manila and Washington that the Moros were nearly pacified, Wood desired a solution to the Dajo situation more expedient than negotiation. In the words of George Langhorne, an aide to Wood and Secretary of the Moro Province, "the Moros on Daho Mountain" would "have to be exterminated."<sup>63</sup> Without Scott acting as a tempering force, the American leadership in Sulu was in agreement about how best to approach the Dajo situation. Colonel Joseph W. Duncan of the 6<sup>th</sup> Infantry, who had little experience in the region, was assigned an assorted group of soldiers from the 6<sup>th</sup> Infantry, the 19<sup>th</sup> Infantry, the 4<sup>th</sup> Cavalry, and the 28<sup>th</sup> Artillery, along with some members of the Philippine Constabulary and a handful of U.S. sailors.

In a long report, Duncan recounted the events of early March 1906. Meeting with the 4<sup>th</sup> Cavalry at the Schuck family homestead near Jolo town, he and his men marched towards Bud Dajo, destroying 'suspicious' food supplies and structures. Fighting on the mountain broke out on March 6<sup>th</sup>, but it was not until the following day that the Americans reached the summit crater. Although the Moros had previously put up resistance to the advancing Americans, the final confrontation at the top of Dajo was a massacre. Using Krag-Jorgensen rifles and Colt Automatics, American troops cut down a mixed group of Tausūg men,

---

<sup>62</sup> Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 95.

<sup>63</sup> Fulton, *Honor for the Flag*, 96. Fulton's narrative of the massacre at Bud Dajo, expanded from his longer work on the region, is the best recounting of the events of March 1906, and also examines the response of the press in the United States. The author places blame for the fiasco, and subsequent cover-up, on Leonard Wood, and contrasts the governor negatively with Hugh Scott, who is presented as having a comparatively liberal disposition towards the Tausūg Moros.

women, and children. Captain Edward P. Lawton, commander of one of three attacking columns, noted the “desperate resistance” of the Moros, who were “shot down in their tracks with terrible slaughter, so that their *cotta* and lip of the crater were soon piled up with the dead, several bodies deep.” Lawton then sent detachments into the mouth of crater “to burn the shacks and destroy all Moros who might be alive there, which work was thoroughly accomplished.” The following day, March 8<sup>th</sup>, the final Moro *cotta* was taken by the Americans. Inside they found “a mass of bodies piled up, some fifty in number.” Clean-up work commenced immediately, with Duncan and Wood ordering that all structures and food supplies be destroyed.<sup>64</sup>

Estimates of the number of dead at Bud Dajo vary. Major Omar Bundy, leader of one of the attack columns, noted in the wake of the massacre that the Moro interpreters “who were acquainted with the conditions and were best able to form a correct estimate, stated that about 1000 Moros were living in the crater, and that of this number nearly all were killed.”<sup>65</sup> Official army estimates place the number around six hundred, while Robert Fulton suggests the actual figure to be somewhere between seven hundred and nine hundred. Twenty-one members of the attacking force, Americans and their Moro allies, were killed, along with seventy-three wounded.<sup>66</sup> In his concluding remarks, Colonel Duncan lamented the fact that “some women and children were inadvertently killed during the fight on the summit of the mountain.” He used the example of the medical attention given to an injured Moro woman who came down the mountain with her child as evidence of the humane inclinations of the Americans. “It is not believed that a woman or child was intentionally killed by anyone,” Duncan reported, “even though in many instances the women are said to have fought like demons; for the American soldier is of that superior type of manhood that would never willingly lift an avenging hand against woman or child.” Further on, he blamed the Moros themselves for the deaths of their women and children. These explanations, given a mere two

---

<sup>64</sup> “Report of Engagement with the Moro Enemy on Bud Dajo, Island of Jolo,” 10 March 1906, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid.

<sup>66</sup> Fulton, *Honor for the Flag*, 153-154.

days after the events at Dajo ended, anticipated some of the subsequent outrage in the United States.<sup>67</sup>

Limited means of long-distance communication allowed U.S. military authorities to stage-manage information about the slaughter. Many early newspaper reports included long quotations from Leonard Wood's official report to the War Department, which framed the massacre as the lamentable result of fierce Moro resistance to the civilizing designs of the Americans. Using tropes familiar to the American reader, Wood claimed that the problem arose from the Moro tendency to fight to the death against insurmountable odds rather than slink off into the jungles, as the Filipinos would.<sup>68</sup> A variety of explanations for the shockingly high casualty figures were provided, nearly all of which attempted to explain away the killing of women and children. Some officials, like Colonel Duncan, claimed that the Moros had forced their women and children to stay with them, and that the group presented itself to the Americans as an undifferentiated mass. A Lieutenant Madsell of Plainville, Connecticut wrote to the *Hartford Courant* that "a number of Moros rushed out of a trench, each with a woman on his left arm, using her body as a shield and with a *kris* in his right hand hacking away right and left at our men. Of course, some of these women got killed but it couldn't be helped." Madsell speculated that the reason for this behaviour could have been due to Islam, or because the Moros did "not wish their wives to remarry."<sup>69</sup> Governor General of the Philippines Henry Ide claimed that any deaths of women and children were the result of "preliminary shelling at distance" and that "there was no killing of anyone except such as was indispensable to end intolerable situation."<sup>70</sup>

When the women at Bud Dajo were not portrayed as victims of their menfolk, they appeared in print as fierce combatants. In his memoirs, Hugh Scott parroted reports in the press, claiming Moro women fought "as hard as the men."<sup>71</sup> Leonard Wood wrote that "the

---

<sup>67</sup> "Report of Engagement," 10 March 1906, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>68</sup> "Moros Slain in Fierce Battle," *Washington Post*, 10 March 1906, 1.

<sup>69</sup> "First Hand Story of the Jolo Fight," *Hartford Courant*, 28 May 1906, 6.

<sup>70</sup> "Moros Tried Murder," *Washington Post*, 21 March 1906, 9.

<sup>71</sup> Hugh Scott, *Some Memories of a Soldier* (New York: The Century Co., 1928), 353.

casualties among non-combatants were unavoidable and sincerely regretted by the troops although there was no way of avoiding such result, as the women in many instances took a bold and active party in the action.”<sup>72</sup> Analyzing the gendered dimensions of the massacre, Michael Hawkins contends that by participating in the battle “Moro women...were thought to have violated a reciprocal relationship between femininity and chivalry that existed in civilized society.”<sup>73</sup> Whatever the case – women as victims, participants, or, more likely, some combination of both – American military figures, politicians, and supportive press outlets looked for ways to explain away the carnage on the mountaintop.

Critics of the Roosevelt administration seized the events at Bud Dajo as a characteristic example of how empire corrupted American ideals. The social reformer Rev. Charles Parkhurst railed against the administration in a fiery oration on March 18<sup>th</sup>, declaring the saddest aspect about Roosevelt’s congratulations to Leonard Wood on Bud Dajo was “that it contained not one word of sympathy, one note of tender distress, in view of the indiscriminate slaughter perpetrated ‘in honor of the American flag.’” The bombastic oratory continued, with Parkhurst claiming he preferred to think of Roosevelt’s cablegram, “composed as it was in the presence practically of mangled men, torn women, armless and headless children,” as not “being the expression of the man Roosevelt, but of the President Roosevelt, in whom officially the heartlessness and greed of unregenerate nationality are functionally represented.”<sup>74</sup> *The Nation* thought the slaughter indicative of America’s inability to decide on a ‘Moro Policy’: “If there is any definite policy being pursued in regard to the Moros, the country is not aware of it. There seems to be merely an aimless drifting along, with occasional bloody successes and now and then the report of a victory of peace.”<sup>75</sup> In Congress and the House of Representatives, Democratic politicians condemned the violence as “wanton butchery” and “spoke of the battle as a massacre.”<sup>76</sup>

---

<sup>72</sup> Wood and Bliss, *Annual Report 1906*, 3.

<sup>73</sup> Hawkins, “Managing a Massacre,” 102.

<sup>74</sup> “A Scathing Comment,” *The Globe*, 20 March 1906, 10.

<sup>75</sup> “The Latest Moro Slaughter,” *The Nation*, 15 March 1906, 214.

<sup>76</sup> “The ‘Battle’ at Jolo: Charges of Inhumanity in Congress,” *Manchester Guardian*, 16 March 1906, 6.

The Anti-Imperialist League, formed in 1898 in opposition to the acquisition of Spain's colonies, held up the massacre as proof the nation's eroding moral fabric. League president Moorfield Storey questioned the official narrative in a pamphlet distributed by the organization shortly after the events at Bud Dajo. Why were no prisoners taken? Why were American and allied Moro losses so low if the *cotta* at the top of Dajo had been "impregnable"? Why were women and children slain alongside the men? Storey used comparison in an attempt to shape public opinion about the killings: "Suppose we had heard that the British had dealt thus with a Boer force, that the Turks had so attacked and slaughtered Armenians, that colored men had so massacred white men, or even that 600 song birds had been slaughtered for their plumage, would not our papers have been filled with protests and expressions of horror?"<sup>77</sup> Bud Dajo, Storey argued, was merely the latest in a string of incidents comprising America's "bloody record" in the Philippines. His indictment reached its crescendo when he declared that "the spirit which slaughters brown men in Jolo is the spirit which lynches black men in the South." Situating the racialized violence of the Southern Philippines alongside that of the Southern United States, Storey hoped to shock the sensibilities of his East Coast readership.<sup>78</sup>

Mark Twain, a vociferous opponent of empire and a member of the Anti-Imperialist League, had his own thoughts about the events in the crater. Comparing casualty statistics at Bud Dajo to those of the "great battles of the Civil War" he sarcastically commented that the slaughter was "incomparably the greatest victory that was achieved by the Christian soldiers

---

<sup>77</sup> Moorfield Storey, *The Moro Massacre* (Boston: Anti-Imperialist League, 1906), 1-3. A pamphlet adapted from a letter to the *Boston Daily Advertiser* by fellow Anti-Imperialist League member Edward Abbott was also distributed. See Edward Abbott, *The Battle of the Crater: Letter in the Boston Daily Advertiser, March 20, 1906* (Boston: Anti-Imperialist League, 1906). The influence of anti-imperialism in American domestic politics was pronounced in the formative years of colonial empire. The massacre of the Moros at Bud Dajo became part of a larger ongoing conversation about the relationship between United States and empire. See, for examples, Myles Beaupre, "'What are the Philippines Going to do to Us?' E.L. Godkin on Democracy, Empire and Anti-Imperialism," *Journal of American Studies* 46.3 (2012): 711-727; Robert Beisner, *Twelve Against Empire: The Anti-Imperialists, 1898-1900* (New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company, 1969); Susan K. Harris, "Women, Anti-Imperialism, and America's Christian Mission Abroad: The Impact of the Philippine-American War," in *Becoming Visible: Women's Changing Presence in Late Nineteenth Century America*, ed. Alison Easton et al. (Amsterdam: Rodopi, 2010), 307-326; Erin Leigh Murphy, "Anti Imperialism During the Philippine-American War: Protesting 'Criminal Aggression' and 'Benevolent Assimilation'" (PhD diss., University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, 2009); Tyrrell and Sexton, eds., *Empire's Twin*.

<sup>78</sup> Storey, *The Moro Massacre*, 2.



of the United States.” Twain tore into Roosevelt’s letter of congratulations to Leonard Wood, saying that the President “knew perfectly well that our uniformed assassins had *not* upheld the honor of the American flag, but had done as they have been doing continuously for eight years in the Philippines – that is to say, they had dishonored it.” He similarly lacerated Leonard Wood, whom he called President Roosevelt’s “fragrant pet.” Wood’s cablegrams were contradictory to the point of vile comedy, Twain suggested, and a mere smokescreen for murder. Curiously, the great writer’s opinions on Bud Dajo were not published during his lifetime. Twain felt they were too controversial and excised them from his autobiography.<sup>79</sup>

Leonard Wood countered the criticisms of Storey and others, maintaining that “sensational cables sent to the United States relating to the Bud Dajo fight were made up in Manila. There has been no reference in any cable from Mindanao to the killing of women and children...the reporters here had no other information than was contained in my report to Colonel Andrews and supplied sensational features.”<sup>80</sup> Behind the scenes, however, colonial officials scrambled to contain the scandal – especially potential photographs of the massacre. In May 1906, the Secretary of Public Instruction for the Philippines, William Morgan Shuster, sent Leonard Wood a letter marked “personal and confidential.” It relayed claims “that a school-teacher named Miller, now in Japan on leave, has a photograph in his possession of the Dajo fight, in which is shown a half naked female corpse, with a gash in the breast, and lying near the bodies of several infants. American soldiers are standing near, gazing at them, and due to light and shade the female corpse looks like that of a white woman.”<sup>81</sup> Republican defenders of the massacre feared the public backlash should the photo surface. If the image, which showed the slaughter directly following its grim apotheosis, were published in the major East Coast dailies, it could damage the credibility of the colonial project in the Southern Philippines as well as have a detrimental effect on the electoral prospects of Republicans that autumn. That the “female corpse [looked] like that of a white

---

<sup>79</sup> Mark Twain, “Comments on the Moro Massacre, 12 and 14 March 1906,” quoted in Jim Zwick, ed., *Mark Twain’s Weapons of Satire: Anti-Imperialist Writings on the Philippine-American War* (Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1992), 168-178.

<sup>80</sup> “‘Fake’ News of Jolo,” *Hartford Courant*, 20 March 1906, 11.

<sup>81</sup> Letter from W. Morgan Shuster to Leonard Wood, 23 May 1906, Box 11, Folder 6. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

woman” created its own set of problems, with the light skin making the victims that much more relatable to Americans of European descent. Even those opposing Moorfield Storey’s views appear to have shared his belief that Americans weighed tragedy relative to race. Shuster’s contact, a “Mr. Cairns,” suggested that it might be possible to “destroy” the photographs and an “attempt should be made [to do so] upon [the] return of Miller” to the Philippines.<sup>82</sup>

Taken after the frenzied killing on the afternoon of March 7<sup>th</sup>, the photograph is of Captain A.M. Wetherill and his men standing above a trench lined with Tausūg corpses. Many of the Americans pose as if for a formal portrait, but their faces are serious and some wear haunted, battle-weary expressions. In the foreground, the heaps of bodies in the trench are nearly undifferentiated by their proximity to one another, although if the viewer looks closely enough the faces of dead children can be identified. Most striking is the aforementioned “female corpse,” who, in the center of the shot, draws the viewer more readily than the Americans. Her right breast exposed, she appears to have been struck in the neck with a bullet or bayonet. Against her stomach is a dead infant with a bullet wound through its cheek. A second photograph of the atrocity, labeled ‘Six Weeks After the Battle of Dajo,’ shows a group of American soldiers posing by a trench, this time as tourists to the battle site. Across the trench runs a tree trunk, where the Americans have lined up the skulls of the dead, which have quickly decomposed in the tropical climate. If there was unease evident among the American soldiers in the first photograph, here there is none. Bud Dajo was swiftly transformed into imperial kitsch – a site for visiting, photographing, and describing to family in letters home.<sup>83</sup> In taking the photographs, the Americans were establishing their masculine prowess through the transcolonial penchant for hunting trophy

---

<sup>82</sup> Ibid. The contents of the letter make mention that the photograph has “the appearance of having been taken from a broken negative which had been restored,” suggesting that this was derived from the glass plate negative Leonard Wood had ‘accidentally’ broken. For more information on questions surrounding the photograph, see Fulton, *Honor for the Flag*, 51.

<sup>83</sup> Both photographs have become visually emblematic of what occurred at Bud Dajo. Each can be found through a simple online image search. They appear mainly on discussion forums dedicated to the study of American military history, but have not permeated general discussions about colonial massacre as a global phenomenon.

shots and predicting a darker turn in the practice.<sup>84</sup> The increasing availability of the personal camera twinned with the wars of annihilation later in the twentieth-century history meant that such photographs, with their explicit “imposition of degradation” and cheapening of tragedy, became common.<sup>85</sup>

Rhetorically pondering the American public’s reaction had the massacre been perpetrated by another colonial power, *The Nation* summed up negative responses to the events at Bud Dajo by saying that they had “yet to hear any one speak of that bloody work except with misgivings and disgust” and that even within the military there was “sharp criticism of Gen. Wood for flinging his troops needlessly against fortifications that might have been taken in a less spectacular and murderous fashion.”<sup>86</sup> Military leaders and Republican politicians conceded that the violence had been unpleasant but was a necessity nonetheless. For them, the people at the summit of Bud Dajo represented a threat to the colonial order. Their violent elimination was a warning to other potential transgressors. American public interest in the story waned within a few weeks, and the Southern Philippines did not capture the popular imagination in the same explosive way again until the Second World War. Nevertheless, Jolo continued to be a restless place. Although a second massacre at Bud Dajo was narrowly avoided five years later, in 1913 a similarly asymmetrical confrontation at another inactive volcano on Jolo called Bud Bagsak left between four hundred and five hundred Moros dead.<sup>87</sup>

In the wake of Bud Dajo, violence in the region persisted despite repeated claims by the civil-military authorities in Zamboanga that each action against oppositional Moros was

---

<sup>84</sup> Matthew Brower, “Trophy Shots: Early North American Photographs of Nonhuman Animals and the Display of Masculine Prowess,” *Society and Animals* 13.1 (2005): 21-22.

<sup>85</sup> Hilary Roberts, “War Trophy Photographs: Proof or Pornography?” in *Picturing Atrocity: Photography in Crisis*, ed. Jay Prosser et al. (London: Reaktion Books, 2012), 202. The role of atrocity photography in studying history and violence is discussed and debated at length in the collection the chapter is drawn from. The photograph taken at the trench at Bud Dajo eerily presaged later visual artifacts of mass violence in both its content and staging. The complicated necessity of using atrocity photography in academic studies is comprehensively examined in Susie Linfield, *The Cruel Radiance: Photography and Political Violence* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2010).

<sup>86</sup> “The Week,” *The Nation*, 15 March 1906, 211.

<sup>87</sup> Byler, “Pacifying the Moros,” 44.

the decisive one.<sup>88</sup> In 1909, fears that the Moros would return to their criminal ways crystallized around the outlaw Jikiri, a Samal who had previously served as a bodyguard for the Sultan of Sulu. Jikiri's outlaw career began in the early 1900s with the hijacking of small merchant ships that plied their trade between Basilan and Jolo. He exploited the power vacuum that developed after the death of Basilan strongman Datu Kalun and acquired a larger fleet of *vintas* and more followers. Jikiri drew the attention of the Americans after the murders of two white lumbermen, George Case and J.H. Verment, in December 1907.<sup>89</sup> As a result, the District Governor of Zamboanga John P. Finley led two battalions of U.S. Army infantry, as well as two companies of Constabulary, to Basilan. They focused not on Jikiri but instead an anti-American preacher named Salip Agil who was urging his followers to resist American attempts to collect taxes. Agil's Rancheria at Ubung was razed, some of his followers were killed, and Agil himself was taken prisoner.<sup>90</sup>

Evading Finley's Basilan dragnet, Jikiri remained at large in Sulu. After the murder of Pvt. Albert L. Burleigh, a schoolteacher at Maibun, the *Mindanao Herald* commented that "Jikiri has evaded the authorities so long that the Moros are beginning to entertain a great respect for his prowess, and unless he is accounted for soon, he will be the cause of serious disorder."<sup>91</sup> Ranging from Basilan to British North Borneo, Jikiri and his band attacked American and English planters, a Constabulary outpost at Siasi, the British Constabulary in North Borneo, and a variety of merchant vessels. The story of the manhunt for Jikiri was eventually notable enough to feature on the front page of the *New York Times*, which spoke of

---

<sup>88</sup> An editorial published in the *Washington Post* made bitter fun of this practice: "In four years there have been not less than six army officers of rank from lieutenant to general who have pacified the Moros. Twenty statesmen who have pacified them in voluminous reports at regular intervals and the constabulary holds them in a pleasant subjection between the reports. In fact, the Moros get up a semi-annual insurrection just for the purpose of giving substance to the reports and permitting the various functionaries to report that the 'backbone of the rising' has been broken again - in a new place. It is evidently a patent, self-healing backbone that doesn't feel well treated unless it is broken correctly. Pacifying the Moros has become a profession and the next generation is expected to amplify and develop it as well as practice it." - "Pacifying the Moros," *Washington Post*, 10 November 1905, 6.

<sup>89</sup> Fulton, *Moroland*, 343.

<sup>90</sup> John P. Finley, "Brief Report of the Basilan Campaign 1907-1908," Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>91</sup> Quoted in Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 107.

the pirate being “on a rampage” and detailed the efforts of the government to track him down.<sup>92</sup> Captain Charles Rhodes, who helped direct the hunt for Jikiri and his followers, dedicated an entire journal to the subject of the six months he spent scouring the Sulu Sea and engaging in running battles with the outlaws.<sup>93</sup>

Jikiri was ultimately located on Patian, a small island south of Jolo, by the military authorities. Governor General W. Cameron Forbes, who was in Zamboanga when the final battle with Jikiri’s band took place, described the mayhem surrounding it. The outlaws had so firmly ensconced themselves in a mountainside cave that the soldiers had difficulties flushing them out, going so far as to shoot a mountain gun (a small artillery piece used frequently in the region by American forces) into the cave. After the barrage, Jikiri and his followers finally emerged. According to Forbes, “the only effort of the outlaws was to kill as many as possible before they were cut down, but the storm of shot was so fierce that everyone was killed but a baby, who fell under his mother and over the bodies of others that had come out.” Jikiri’s head was “literally shot to pieces at a distance of four feet, a charge of buck shot entering his right cheek-bone and taking out one whole side of his head.”<sup>94</sup>

Afterwards, Forbes publicly mourned the friends he had lost in the battle, griped about Tasker Bliss’ refusal to use Constabulary forces to capture the outlaw earlier, and visited Patian Island. There he hunted for wild boar and trekked to the cave where the battle occurred, sketching it in his notebook.<sup>95</sup> Jikiri continued to appear in press reports. In 1911, the *Atlanta Constitution* labeled him an “expert assassin” and noted that for a Moro pirate “to kill a white man is always a commendable thing, but to torture him as a preliminary, cutting him to pieces, bit by bit, or by other ingenious means, is better.”<sup>96</sup> In the pages of the *Washington Post* the following year, Jikiri was compared to the Old West outlaw Harry Tracy

---

<sup>92</sup> “Gun Boats on Man Hunt,” *New York Times*, 10 May 1909, 1.

<sup>93</sup> “Diary of Pirate-Hunting in the Sulu Archipelago,” 1909, Box 1. Charles Rhodes Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>94</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 3, 4-7 July 1909. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., 8-9 July 1909.

<sup>96</sup> “When Our Own Pet Pirates Break Loose,” *Atlanta Constitution*, 25 June 1911, C7

for “reckless audacity and defiance of all the powers of the law.”<sup>97</sup> Two decades after Jikiri was cornered and killed, he remained a favourite reference of both the Moros, who viewed him as a brave holdout against colonial rule, and the Americans, to whom he was a demonstration of how they had curbed the piratical tendencies of the Moros. In 1931, Islani Sapal, a Joloano boy, recounted how his Boy Scout Troop, led by scoutmaster Wilfred E. Seymour, made a trip to visit the cave where Jikiri, “the famous old outlaw of former years,” was gunned down.<sup>98</sup>

More routine were smaller encounters arising from the collision of colonial and native prerogatives. Such was the case on the small island of Pata, where local resistance to the imposition of secular schooling flared up in 1920.<sup>99</sup> Native police on the island visited the homes of parents who refused to send their children to the new schoolhouses. In the village of Sapa-Malaom, a local leader named Hatib Sihaban, brother of island chief Panglima Dugassan, opposed the new school. Sihaban fortified his home, effectively making it a small *cotta*, and those that joined him built adjoining structures. Talks with Moro leaders and Governor of Sulu P.D. Rogers occurred in October and November of that year, but Sihaban and his followers remained in their fortifications. On December 3<sup>rd</sup>, matters escalated when a local Moro policeman named Adjalani visited Sihaban’s *cotta* and was murdered in murky circumstances.<sup>100</sup>

The following day, the Philippine Constabulary, headed by Lieutenant P.C. Soriano, arrived at Sapa-Malaom to confront Sihaban and his followers. In Soriano’s telling, the Constabulary forces were met with determined resistance, and the women and children refused to leave. In keeping with the common depiction of Moro women as warriors, Soriano noted that when Constabulary troops attempted to approach the fortification the women

---

<sup>97</sup> “When Moros Run Amuck,” *Washington Post*, 14 January 1912, M3

<sup>98</sup> “A Moro Boy Talks of his Native Sululand,” 17 January 1931, Box 30, Folder 10. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>99</sup> Pata was again the site of a violent encounter after independence when, in 1981, 124 members of a Filipino infantry battalion were, after conducting a “police action” on the island, surrounded by armed men, disarmed, and killed. – “How Troops met their Deaths in Island Massacre,” *Sydney Morning Herald*, 19 February 1981, 10.

<sup>100</sup> Report from Pastor C. Soriano to Adjutant, Philippine Constabulary, 10 December 1920, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

forced them back with spears. Soriano's account was vague in how exactly negotiations collapsed, but they did and a short battle ensued. "Women showed more bravery than men themselves," Soriano reported, "the former dancing with their spears and ready to launch them at us at any time... We put down 14 men, 11 women and 8 children killed. There were some 30 women and children who escaped the shooting about ten of whom are wounded and they are brought to Sulu Public Hospital for treatment."<sup>101</sup> The Constabulary recovered six *kris*es, eight *barongs*, fourteen spears, two fish spears, ten bamboo spears, and five *bolos* from Sihaban and his followers.<sup>102</sup>

In the only detailed account of the events on Pata to appear publicly, the journalist Charles Edward Russell parroted Soriano's account and framed the massacre as the tragic but unavoidable result of resisting colonial progress. He wrote that the other residents of Pata were firmly on the side of the government, and those who had died in the massacre "had run amuck and that was the end of the story." Russell used the story to reflect more broadly on colonial violence, noting, "civilization is more efficient in taming devils than in making angels."<sup>103</sup> The coming of "the school-house" to Pata and other small islands in the Sulu Archipelago meant that there would be "no more 'Moro peril' and nobody with the hardihood to assert it."<sup>104</sup> In the wake of the massacre, Lieutenant Colonel John Tharp of the Constabulary decided that after the killing of Adjalani reasoning with Sihaban's group was "entirely out of the question" and exonerated the actions of Soriano and his men.<sup>105</sup>

The commanding officers of the Philippine Constabulary in Manila were not as sanguine about the violence on Pata. In January 1921, C.E. Nathorst, future Constabulary chief, wrote Colonel Ole Waloe, PC commander in Mindanao and Sulu, that he had it "on excellent authority" that the events leading to the murder of Adjalani resulted from the

---

<sup>101</sup> Ibid.

<sup>102</sup> Ibid.

<sup>103</sup> Russell, *The Outlook for the Philippines*, 277.

<sup>104</sup> Ibid., 278.

<sup>105</sup> Report by Lieutenant Colonel John L.F. Tharp on Pata Massacre, 3 January 1921, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

policeman having an affair with Hatib Sihaban's wife, implying far pettier factors underlying the massacre. Nathorst went on to brush aside the answers provided to PC headquarters by Lieutenant Colonel Tharp, which were mainly restatements of Soriano's report. "The mere fact that [Soriano] knowingly attacked 15 defenseless men with 29 soldiers and 3 officers armed with rifles and revolvers, condemns him," he fired back, "Please send us a report and show the real cause for this unwarranted killing."<sup>106</sup>

The events on Pata led to an intense examination of the use of violence from within the PC command structure. Nathorst continued pressing Ole Waloe about the sporadic massacres taking place in Mindanao and Sulu, specifically those relating to the school attendance question. In September 1921, he wrote that "a strong feeling seems to prevail among the Constabulary of your district to 'eliminate' any Moro who causes trouble – trouble oftentimes brought about by the Constabulary's activity in forcing Moro girls, against the wish of their parents, to attend school" and reminded Waloe that J.J. Heffington, then Superintendent of Schools in Mindanao and Sulu, and Teopisto Guingona, head of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, both opposed the enforcement of mandatory attendance.<sup>107</sup> A string of letters followed in which Nathorst, based on reports being received in Manila, suggested moving or removing several PC officers known for using violence to solve disagreements with local Moro populations.<sup>108</sup> "The killing of a Moro in that part of the country," he reflected acidly, "is evidently of no consequence and all in a day's work... The idea, which prevails in your district, to 'eliminate' the Moros must cease and the quicker the better for all concerned."<sup>109</sup>

Despite such institutional soul-searching, asymmetrical clashes between Moros and the Constabulary continued throughout the 1920s. The rapid Filipinization of government

---

<sup>106</sup> Letter from C.E. Nathorst to Ole Waloe, 21 January 1921, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>107</sup> Letter from C.E. Nathorst to Ole Waloe, 8 September 1921, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>108</sup> Letter from C.E. Nathorst to Ole Waloe, 9-12 September 1921, Box 217, Folder 6, Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>109</sup> Letter from C.E. Nathorst to Ole Waloe, 21 September 1921, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.



positions between 1914 and 1920, alongside the regular arrival of new Christian Filipino settlers to Mindanao, meant that tensions remained high. In Lanao, for example, annual Constabulary reports showed a pattern of resistance and massacre. A local Moro leader would object to the compulsory education, the Constabulary would attempt to enforce the regulations, the leader and his followers would retreat to a fortification, and slaughter would ensue. Although the Constabulary was hopeful in early 1921 that “the worst period of our educational campaign has passed,” the violence persisted. In August 1921, Datu Amai Binanning, a longtime irritant to colonial authorities, fortified himself in his *cotta* with his followers in opposition to compulsory education. He and several followers were killed by a Constabulary attack.<sup>110</sup> The following year saw outlaw bands “of more or less importance” appear in Sulu, Cotabato, and Lanao, and “an unusually large number of murders and robberies” committed in these provinces, including the murder of teachers in January and August. A report noted a persistent resistance to the imposition of the cedula tax.<sup>111</sup>

In March 1923, Pata Island once again became the site of colonial violence. A Moro named Akbara, whom the Constabulary labelled “a religious fanatic,” stood in open opposition to the cedula tax, the establishment of a school on the island, and the conducting of land surveys. When Akbara’s group of around 250 threatened the Constabulary, Lieutenant Leon Angles and a detachment of seventeen men confronted the Moros, resulting in “25 killed without Constab. casualty.”<sup>112</sup> On May 19<sup>th</sup>, Hatib Sihaban reappeared in support of Akbara, and with “about 400 armed fanatics” rushed a Constabulary detachment, resulting in 23 Moros killed. Ten days later another encounter caused a further forty-five deaths, again with no recorded Constabulary casualties. Akbara was killed by a local government councilor shortly thereafter and Hatib Sihaban surrendered in early June. The report relayed that he “had brooded over the loss of his wife and children” in the massacre of 1920. “Collection of taxes a part of the problem,” it added.<sup>113</sup> The problems continued into 1924. During that year,

---

<sup>110</sup> Constabulary Report, 14 February 1922, Box 28, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>111</sup> Constabulary Report, 6 February 1923, Box 28, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>112</sup> Constabulary Report, 30 Jan 1924, Box 28, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>113</sup> Ibid.

nineteen schoolhouses were burned down in Lanao, government launches were fired upon on the lake, and multiple murders occurred. The Constabulary responded in kind, and with four U.S. Army Officers there “as observers,” bombed Moro *cottas* with hydroplanes, then attacked them with mountain guns and Stokes mortars.<sup>114</sup> Throughout the second-half of 1925, a familiar pattern of burned schools, murdered teachers, and Constabulary barrage ensured that Lanao remained in a state of violent unrest.

Although primarily compendiums of police actions in Mindanao and Sulu, Constabulary reports occasionally segued into a more reflective tone. After relating the events that took place on Pata Island in 1923, for example, the compiler of a report surmised that violence against the government was caused by local Moro leaders whose “only chance to get their followers to unite is to accuse the government of encroaching upon their religion.” The report claimed that the Moro underclass, newly enfranchised by wage labour, could now compete with the datu class in romantic affairs: “It is not infrequent that one hears of a *sacop* who has left his master, gone to work, made some money, then returned to his home town and beaten his former chief, or one of the datu class, in wooing a girl.”<sup>115</sup> It was jealousy on the part of higher class Moros, in the report’s estimation, which caused them to incite violence against the colonial authorities. The author unwittingly touched upon actual social problems, as the state’s reordering of social relations in Muslim communities had created very real tensions.

The premier example of resistance to late colonial rule in the 1920s and 1930s was the outlaw Dimakaling. A Maranao wanted by Lanao authorities for murder as early as 1925, Dimakaling only began regularly surfacing in Constabulary reports after 1929, when he formed an outlaw band. Early attempts to capture the bandit were disorganized and unsuccessful. During one, Dimakaling’s wife stabbed a Constabulary corporal. When the outlaw was later enticed to visit the home of a local *Presidente* near his headquarters at Mt. Gurain, he escaped by killing a soldier and wounding two others. During the subsequent pursuit, a Moro guide and another soldier were also killed. After this, Dimakaling’s band

---

<sup>114</sup> Constabulary Report, 29 January 1925, Box 28, Folder 27, J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>115</sup> Constabulary Report, 20 February 1930, Box 28, Folder 27, J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

became a regular concern for authorities, with J.J. Heffington mentioning it as one of the two major sources of resistance to American rule in the province. Heffington was dismissive of the group's capabilities, noting that besides Dimakaling, who was armed with a revolver and a carbine, the other twelve members of the band had only "*paliuntuds*, home made shotguns, and bladed weapons." He observed that the band was "roaming only at night from one place to another trying their best to avoid arrest" and begging for food from sympathetic *datus*. "The members of the band are not criminals. Some of them are Dimakaling's relatives and others are only mere sympathizers," he noted, and any "handicap" to locating the band was due to the unwillingness of *datus* to provide the government with information.<sup>116</sup>

In the fledgling Lanao press, Dimakaling appeared repeatedly as a source of problems in the region. In 1933, for example, he was reported to have robbed Sultan Sa Bara-as, a Christian farmer named Mr. Bravo, and eight of their companions as they returned from selling copra at a store in Malabang. Surveilling the party in town, Dimakaling's band trailed them into the woods and forced them at gunpoint to turn over the ₱1,090 they had received for their merchandise.<sup>117</sup> In Heffington's assessment, Dimakaling and his associates were a nuisance to the authorities, but little more. They existed apart from governmental authority, although posed no serious threat to it. This position shifted when the Lumbatan Agricultural School was attacked in May 1934.

Located on the fractious southern shore of Lake Lanao, the school at Lumbatan was, like other centers of higher learning in the region, meant to educate Moros in American methods of agricultural and industrial development. Run by an American teacher named Clayton Douglas, who lived on the grounds with his family, the school was "a symbol of the attempt to 'civilize' the Muslim population and modernize its life."<sup>118</sup> Two of Douglas' servants were murdered and one wounded in the attack. His family was sick in hospital at the

---

<sup>116</sup> J.J. Heffington, "Annual Report of Provincial Governor for Lanao, year 1932," 27 January 1933, Box 28, Folder 7. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>117</sup> "Ambushed by Dimakaling," *Lanao Progress*, 1 September 1933, 2.

<sup>118</sup> Midori Kawashima, "The Uprising of the 'Fearful Ruler of Lanao': Banditry and the Internalization of Violence in a Southern Philippine Muslim Society During the 1930s," in *Popular Movements and Democratization in the Muslim World*, ed. Masatochi Kisaichi (New York: Routledge, 2006), 81. Kawashima conducted interviews with Maranaos to determine Dimakaling's place in the social memory of the region.

time and thus escaped unharmed. Douglas himself was in the school building during the raid and was chased off by rifle fire when he attempted to confront Dimakaling's band with local Maranaos.<sup>119</sup> The attack mobilized the Americans and Filipinos, who now saw Dimakaling and his followers as a threat to colonial order in Lanao. Superintendent of Education Edward Kuder claimed that Dimakaling was "astute enough to salt his profession of motive with whatever other reasons he may think may gain him favor, tolerations, or sympathy of people disposed to give it," indicating anxieties among American colonials that support for Dimakaling ran deeper than previously imagined.<sup>120</sup>

After another attack in Northern Lanao months later, the authorities in Manila took notice but were unable to catch Dimakaling throughout the following year. Teopisto Guingona mentioned Dimakaling's band as one of the two outlaw groups "still at large," and referenced the 1925 murder he was wanted for alongside the incident at Lumbatan.<sup>121</sup> Vice Governor J.R. Hayden visited the region in September 1935 accompanied by the botanist Harley Harris Bartlett, who observed that "Dimakaling has committed numerous murders, defies the authority of the Government, and appears to have some of the local *datus* on his side, for they have refused now for some months to give any information about local affairs, especially about anything concerning Dimakaling." Bartlett remarked upon the "cupidity" of the locals and their unwillingness to turn in Dimakaling, despite a large cash reward being offered for information leading to his arrest.<sup>122</sup>

Meanwhile, Heffington was furious at the fear and deference local Maranao leaders showed Dimakaling. One, Muti Kurut of Saguiaran, was briefly in the same room as the outlaw but feared for his own safety too much to attempt to kill or capture him. Kurut claimed that Dimakaling's network of informants in the region was vast, and that Moros

---

<sup>119</sup> Letter from Luther B. Bewley to Frank Murphy – Forwarded Notes by Edward Kuder, 2 July 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>120</sup> Ibid.

<sup>121</sup> Teopisto Guingona, "Report of the Director of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes for the Year 1934," 11 March 1935, Box 28, Folder 22. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>122</sup> "Diary of a Twelve-Day Tour with Vice-Governor Hayden from Manila to Sulu and Back," 11 September 1935, Box 8. Harley Harris Bartlett Papers. BHL.

would not make any effort to capture him unless the man who brought him down was promised a deputy governorship. Talking to the vice governor, Kurut said that he had heard the only way to join Dimakaling's inner-circle was to kill a Christian in front of witnesses, "so that the man will never try to escape...knowing that if he does, he will be punished by the government." He claimed that the murderers of the two servants during the Lumbatan attack were initiates into Dimakaling's gang. The outlaw loomed large in the imaginations of the Maranao people, and rivaled the authorities in terms of his intelligence network and ability to mete out punishment upon those who 'betrayed' his band of resisters.<sup>123</sup> In the summer and autumn of 1934, Philippine Constabulary troops carried out multiple raids against suspected hideouts of Dimakaling and his compatriots. During one, they killed Adaro Ompia as he bathed with three other outlaws. One of the men, believed to be Dimakaling, was wounded, but still managed to escape, leaving behind his trousers and a belt with eighty-six rounds of ammunition.<sup>124</sup>

Hiding out in Kapai, northeast of Dansalan, Dimakaling was surrounded by Constabulary troops in late November 1935. The *Philippines Free Press* reported on the story the following week, giving details of how "Lanao's No. 1 outlaw" was "riddled by a dozen Constabulary bullets" as he attempted escape. The paper gave a history of Dimakaling's various crimes, suggesting that had he lived longer he planned to assassinate a local sultan in the Kapai area. It also conveyed the opinions of "certain Lanao datus" who claimed Dimakaling turned to banditry to defend the principles of the Maranao Moros: "He disliked the way the government was run. The Moros' constitutional rights were not sufficiently respected by the authorities. Constabulary soldiers, without regard for individual freedom, would come to their house and ransack the place. False arrest and convictions on false evidence, they claimed, had occurred from time to time...schoolchildren were heavily fined for absenting themselves from school, the amount being usually ₱50."<sup>125</sup> That a Manila-based paper, run and written by Americans and Christian Filipinos, aired these legitimate

---

<sup>123</sup> Minutes of the Society of Educated Youth, 6 August 1934, Box 131, Folder 4. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>124</sup> "Dimakaling Followers Die," *Lanao Progress*, 1 September 1934, 3.

<sup>125</sup> "Trail's End for Dimakaling," *Philippines Free Press*, 30 November 1935, 10-11.

grievances intimates there was something to them, although the story predictably concluded that Dimakaling's death was entirely justified.

In her study of Dimakaling, Midori Kawashima writes that support for him on the part of Muslim society in Lanao came from a variety of factors, including resentment towards the abuses by the Constabulary, anger over compulsory education, and a hatred of fellow Maranaos who abetted the authorities.<sup>126</sup> His contemporary status as a folk hero, as well as the supernatural qualities attributed to him during his life, speaks to a belief among the Moros of Lanao that he performed an important social function. Maranao society was undergoing a series of seismic shifts as American and Filipino colonials attempted to remake the region. At a time when traditional power relations, educational structures, and modes of labour were being transformed, Dimakaling symbolized a vigorous indigenous refusal to be governed by outside forces. Bandits are often the products of rural societies resisting dramatic changes being brought upon them by alien rulers and local collaborators. The idealized vision of Dimakaling fits into this conception of social banditry.<sup>127</sup>

Elsewhere, relations between Muslims and the colonial state were often tense. The Sulu Archipelago in particular saw a high number of attacks on officials, especially teachers.<sup>128</sup> On the island of Sitangkai, near the coast of Borneo, the Deputy Governor-at-Large F.G. Roth reported on the murder of a Filipino teacher named Sofronio Aquino by an "amuck." The incident ended in a shootout between locals and the Constabulary, which left three Moros and two Constabulary soldiers dead.<sup>129</sup> The aforementioned case of Asnol, on Tabawan Island, was one of several incidents between Moros and educational authorities in

---

<sup>126</sup> Kawashima, "The Uprising of the 'Fearsome Ruler of Lanao,'" 86-88. On Dimakaling's lasting impact on Maranao historical memory, see Hadji Sarip Riwarung Labi, "Dimakaling – Hero or Outlaw? A View from a Meranao Folk Song," *The Journal of Sophia Asian Studies* 27 (2009): 161-180.

<sup>127</sup> Eric Hobsbawm, *Bandits* (London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 2000), 140-145.

<sup>128</sup> Letter from Charles Cameron to David P. Barrows, 24 September 1909, Box 320. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>129</sup> Report on Amuck Cases by F.G. Roth, 24 January 1935, Box 30, Folder 1. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

Sulu in the summer of 1934, and the following years saw no cessation in attacks.<sup>130</sup> The Muslim regions of the Southern Philippines continued to be viewed as a lawless and anarchic place by Americans and Christian Filipinos up until the eve of the Japanese invasion. Throughout the late 1930s, the press in Manila reported on the various outrages committed by Moros in the most sensational language possible – babies used as human shields, *cottas* stormed, love affairs ending in massacres, decapitations, resistance to military service, and so forth.<sup>131</sup> While coordinated resistance to outside rule did not reappear until after independence, the Muslim South remained problematic to a colonial power with totalizing aims, and refused to submissively integrate into the burgeoning Philippine nation. The colonial state punished Moros extensively for their insubordination. In the late colonial period, large Bud Dajo-style massacres were replaced by smaller armed encounters between Muslims and the authorities that left the region in a state of perpetual disorder.

## Colonial Discipline

While groups resisting state imperatives were met with military force, individual transgressors were more often subject to imprisonment and reform through labour. In the first years of military rule, punishment for crimes was often mediated through the local Moro leadership. For example, a report was made to a local datu that a cattle theft ring was operating in a certain area and that datu passed along the information to the district governor.<sup>132</sup> Smaller infractions that did not threaten the American presence were often handled within a community by traditional authorities. In Zamboanga, Brigadier General William A. Kobbé left the rule of the Moros to the local leader Datu Mandi and occupied himself with matters related to the ongoing insurgency further north. Kobbé believed that Mandi, representing “the cause of good order,” deserved to have his power and influence

---

<sup>130</sup> For examples, see “Juramentado Kills Woman, Wounds Three,” 11 July 1936, Box 30, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL; “Moro In Jolo Runs Amuck,” 25 May 1937, Box 29, Folder 1. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>131</sup> A large number of press clippings on crimes in Mindanao and Sulu can be found in Box 28, Folders 16 + 17, J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>132</sup> This was certainly the case on Jolo. In one set of documents from the Sulu Sultanate are complaints about stolen horses, extortion rings, dead buffalos, cattle raids, opium sales, purloined slaves, and arson, not to mention local leaders on Jolo warning Americans to steer clear of internecine conflicts between them. See Folders 1-8, Set 1. Records of the Sultanate of the Sulu Archipelago, LOC-MD.

increased in the interest of stability.<sup>133</sup> Although the co-option and utilization of local Moro leaders continued throughout the American period, approaches to crime and punishment shifted as the colonial state consolidated itself in the Southern Philippines following the cessation of hostilities in the North.

Evidence of increasing involvement in non-political crime by the Americans is evidenced in a report submitted by Lieutenant Stephen O. Fuqua of the 23<sup>rd</sup> Infantry, who was stationed at Malabang in Cotabato and put in charge of Moro Affairs in September 1903. Apart from mediating with local leaders like Datu Ali (pre-insurrection), Fuqua claimed he made “a rather broad and very elastic policy” towards disciplining the Moros, noting “the Moro character although childlike in its composition, understands and appreciates right and wrong.” Dealing with crime in the area, Fuqua and his men left certain matters to Moro leaders while pursuing others directly. When a young Moro girl was raped the “case was turned over to the Moro judge for investigation and trial. The man was fined one hundred (100) pesos and the money turned over to the injured woman. This action was keeping with the Moro custom and idea and produced satisfaction to all parties.” Alternately, Moros near the mouth of the Marga River who murdered a man and wounded a woman were pursued by a detachment of the 15<sup>th</sup> Cavalry, albeit without result. Fuqua fretted over being the “author” of any definitive policy on law and order as one had not been provided to him at the beginning of his assignment.<sup>134</sup>

Following the establishment of the Moro Province in 1903, authorities took greater interest in using prison populations to achieve the infrastructural goals of the region. In 1904, Leonard Wood contacted W. Cameron Forbes, then Commissioner of Commerce and Police, and offered to take one thousand prisoners from Luzon to work on road building in Mindanao.<sup>135</sup> By the following March, the prisoners had arrived and Wood informed Forbes that he was confident that the Moro Province could “handle them all right and work them

---

<sup>133</sup> Diary of Field Service in the Philippines 1898-1901, 9 May 1900. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>134</sup> Report from Stephen Fuqua to Adjutant, 30 September 1903. Box 1, Folder 1. Joseph Marmon Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>135</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 1, 23 October 1904. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.



profitably.”<sup>136</sup> Wood and Forbes further discussed how to best delineate authority between the military and the Philippine Constabulary (for whom Forbes was responsible) in the region so as to present a united front to the Moro elite “who until recently have been practically independent of all authority.”<sup>137</sup> Putting the prisoners to work on roads in the area around Camp Overton, Wood tapped reform-through-labour schemes popular elsewhere and helped defray the costs of a prison population that was growing as the colonial government assumed greater control over non-military matters. During the first year of Tasker Bliss’ governorship in 1906-07, the Legislative Council of the Moro Province enacted a compulsory labour scheme for all able-bodied prisoners. They also legislated a similar act which decreed any male inhabitant in the province subject to the payment of the cedula tax “shall labor on the public highways, bridges, wharves or trails for five days of nine hours every calendar year or pay the equivalent in cash of such days labor.”<sup>138</sup>

An increase in policing and incarceration came from the widespread opinion among the colonials, shared by Bliss himself, that criminals in Mindanao were “permitted their liberty through laxity of civil officials and disinclination of the military to interfere,” as well as being protected from incarceration by fellow Muslims.<sup>139</sup> By deploying prisoners on public works projects, the Moro Province was able to maintain higher carceral rates while defraying costs. In addition, officials believed that Muslim prisoner-labourers would benefit from learning new skills. Such was the case with the capitol building at Zamboanga, which was constructed by prisoners using a concrete block machine from South Bend, Indiana. The prisoners, “none of whom had any previous knowledge of cement work of any kind,” also learned how to lay stones and do plaster work during the project.<sup>140</sup> In the drive to connect

---

<sup>136</sup> Letter from Leonard Wood to W. Cameron Forbes, 17 March 1905, Box 11, Folder 1. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>137</sup> Letter from Leonard Wood to W. Cameron Forbes, 18 March 1905, Box 11, Folder 1. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>138</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report 1907*, 21. Turning foreign subjects into productive labourers was important to a range of American colonial projects around the globe. For examples, see Daniel E. Bender and Jana K. Lipman, eds., *Making the Empire Work: Labor and United States Imperialism* (New York: New York University Press, 2015).

<sup>139</sup> “Moro Murderers Free by Official Laxity,” *Washington Post*, 19 September 1906, 3.

<sup>140</sup> “Public Works of the Moro Province,” *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909, 33.

the various regions of the province prison labour was an important tool. The use of prisoners to maintain roads and public properties continued well into the era of civilian rule.

Nowhere was the meeting of labour, science, and colonial discipline more evident than at San Ramon. Photographs of the San Ramon Penal Farm taken in 1913 show a series of modern white single storey buildings, built in the tropical style with gently sloping roofs and large open windows. Each of these concrete bunkhouses held 108 prisoners. In another photograph, prisoners mingle in an interior yard amidst the tall palms. Although some appear to be wearing the typical prison stripes, most are dressed in civilian clothes; if the photograph were not captioned appropriately the scene could be easily mistaken as one from a boarding school or community center. According to American officials, San Ramon was viewed as “a perfect type of tropical prison.”<sup>141</sup> Surrounded by a wall of concrete and iron grill, the prison grounds housed an administrative office, kitchens, storehouses, workshops, as well as the bunkhouses where the prisoners slept. There was also a woman’s ward with its own small hospital (in reality more of a dispensary), bake oven, dining room, and workshops. The design of the prison was thought to afford “ample protection from the rain” but allow “plenty of sunshine and a free circulation of air, so necessary to health and comfort in this climate.” Upon the completion of a water system “the sanitary arrangement [would] be perfect.”<sup>142</sup> The convicts spent their days harvesting coconuts, foraging crops, and raising cattle and *carabao*, with the goal of making the institution self-supporting.<sup>143</sup>

Located twenty-five kilometers north of Zamboanga, San Ramon was established by the Spanish in 1870 and named after the patron saint of Governor General Ramon Blanco. It was a place for *deportados*, prisoners from the North serving long sentences. “Christian Filipinos regarded as socially undesirable [by the Spanish colonial state] for reasons of political persuasion, criminal intention, or moral laxity were summarily detained and

---

<sup>141</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 14.

<sup>142</sup> Ibid.

<sup>143</sup> Ibid., 112.

dispatched to the coastal sectors of Mindanao and Palawan,” writes Greg Bankoff.<sup>144</sup> Many of San Ramon’s prisoners were serving life terms, and they toiled the plantation in an attempt by administrators to make the venture profitable. High rates of disease, insect infestations, crop failure, and a culture of corruption amongst prison officials ensured that prosperity was never achieved. Local Yakan tribesmen were hired to help track down any escapees, which occasionally led to summary executions of prisoners. San Ramon “was far more effective as a prison than as an economic venture” because of its isolation.<sup>145</sup> As in the other remote penal settlements that dotted the colonial world, the environment became as much of a jailer as the prison guards.

The prison was destroyed and its prisoners released during the Spanish-American War.<sup>146</sup> Americans took notice of the penal farm immediately and it fell under the control of the Insular Government. Initially, the U.S. military grew hemp and other products there for sale in Manila. One visiting journalist noted in 1900 that San Ramon’s fields were suited for the production of all sorts of agricultural products, from coffee to tobacco.<sup>147</sup> Soon after the establishment of the Moro Province in 1903, George Langhorne, aide to Leonard Wood, wrote Hugh Scott that San Ramon could be used for tutelary purposes as a “model institution” wherein Muslims and Christian Filipinos could be taught “to cultivate the soil in a scientific manner.”<sup>148</sup> In late 1905, the Philippine Commission approved the appropriation of the farm by the government of the Moro Province on the understanding that its primary use would be as an experimental farm for the growing of “cocoanuts or hemp or other plants likely to be of use.”<sup>149</sup>

---

<sup>144</sup> Greg Bankoff, “Deportation and the Prison Colony of San Ramon, 1870-1898,” *Philippine Studies* 39.4 (1991): 444.

<sup>145</sup> Ibid., 454-455.

<sup>146</sup> The prison, which is still operational and run by the Department of Justice’s Bureau of Correction, has its own website. For more: Bureau of Corrections, “San Ramon Penal Farm,” accessed 15 December 2014, <http://www.bucor.gov.ph/facilities/srppf.html>.

<sup>147</sup> Frank G. Carpenter, “Moros Do Not Drink,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 13 May 1900, 40.

<sup>148</sup> Letter from George Langhorne to Hugh Scott, Box 55, Folder 5. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>149</sup> Minutes of the Legislative Council of the Moro Province, 29 September 1905, Box 216, Folder 3. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

For the remainder of the military period, officials floated ideas of how the farm could be best exploited. Leonard Wood believed the farm would be of incredible future value. Scientifically grown and managed crops could be sold, and the seeds could be distributed to colonists to start their own farms. The effects of elevation on crop production could be tested in the mountains that San Ramon backed onto. Moro boys would be able to learn about American agricultural methods.<sup>150</sup> Tasker Bliss took Sultan Jamalul Kiram and other Sulu dignitaries to San Ramon in April of 1906 and observed that they were “united in a common feeling of interest and admiration at the working of the modern plows, cultivators, and barrows, in comparison with their own antiquated implements.”<sup>151</sup> Officials undertook experiments with lemon trees, Liberian coffee, vegetables, Para rubber, and cinnamon. The government also promoted the furnishing of seeds and cuttings to planters in the Moro Province to encourage the diversification of crops there.<sup>152</sup> In 1908, a small annex to the Calarian (provincial) prison, located in Zamboanga, was built at San Ramon. Two years later, the Calarian was deemed “not well situated” and plans were made to locate the prison on the site of the experimental farm.<sup>153</sup>

By 1913, the experimental farm at San Ramon had become the provincial prison and represented a unique example of colonial penology in the Southern Philippines. That year, there were 500 prisoners. Bandolerism (130), robbery (130), and assassination (113) were the three largest reasons for incarceration, and Tausūg Moros represented the largest population group of inmates (191), followed by Maranaos (117).<sup>154</sup> Dr. W.H. Dade, formerly a prison official in Kentucky, headed the prison, and a company of Philippine Scouts guarded it.<sup>155</sup>

---

<sup>150</sup> Wood and Bliss, *Annual Report 1906*, 24.

<sup>151</sup> Ibid., 85.

<sup>152</sup> Bliss, *The Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province – For the Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1908* (Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Co., 1908), 16.

<sup>153</sup> Ralph Hoyt, *Annual Report of Colonel Ralph W. Hoyt, 25<sup>th</sup> United States Infantry, Governor of the Moro Province, for Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1909* (Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Co., 1909), 10.

<sup>154</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 15. Of note is the report’s distinction between prisoners who carried out assassinations and those who had committed homicide. The former outnumbered the latter by a ratio of 3:1, giving an indication of the number of politically-motivated murders that occurred in the province.

<sup>155</sup> Letter from W.H. Dade to Judge Ingersoll, 14 November 1913, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

Governor Frank Carpenter noted in 1914 with some satisfaction that the prison system was a space for “correction and education” and that the department prison at San Ramon merited “classification as educational center rather than as a penitentiary.”<sup>156</sup> Carpenter claimed that because roughly 80 percent of the inmates at San Ramon were Muslims the problems it faced were “radically different” from those of prisons further north, but that “both from the standpoint of reform and moral betterment of the prisoners and from that of economic results” San Ramon was succeeding.<sup>157</sup>

In American accounts of the Southern Philippines, San Ramon was used as evidence that a hybrid formula of education, commerce, and discipline could correct those Moros who resisted colonial rule. In his Philippine travelogue, Charles Edward Russell told of a Tausūg Moro, imprisoned at San Ramon for murder, who became a model inmate – “obedient, industrious, willing and always polite” – and eventually gained the respect of the warden, who made him a trustee. The man was allowed to fish freely on his own so long as he returned to San Ramon each evening. One day while out on the water he encountered a capsized Constabulary boat and helped to rescue its crew, despite the men being his “natural enemies.” For this, Governor Carpenter was said to have pardoned the man in a ceremony that “deeply affected” the spectators and caused the Moro to fall to floor in tears. Russell wrote that the governor did two things thought impossible in causing both an old U.S. army officer and a Moro to weep, and thus showing “with different-colored skins and under the dour exterior that both assiduously cultivated, both were of the same old stock of the children of the earth.”<sup>158</sup> In this sentimental rendering, U.S. readers were provided evidence that through the most modern techniques, the Moro, previously irredeemably savage, could be transformed into a productive member of colonial society.

Educator and missionary Frank Laubach was unstinting in his praise of the penal colony. San Ramon was “greatly influenced by the modern idea of penology,” he claimed, and was as charming as Zamboanga. For the prisoners “it is like sending a man to heaven for

---

<sup>156</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 355.

<sup>157</sup> Ibid.

<sup>158</sup> Russell, *The Outlook for the Philippines*, 58-59.

being wicked, for it is by all odds the most lovely and lovable spot they ever lived in.” Laubach explained that San Ramon had the “finest record of cured inmates of any prison in the world” and joked that the only danger that a released prisoner would reoffend was so that he could return to the penitentiary. Laubach’s rationale for the apparent success at San Ramon was that the Moro inmates, childlike in their notions of law and order, had to be treated differently than prisoners in the United States. American prisoners were “simply abnormal, morally defective, degenerate men” while the Moros committed crimes because they had “not had a chance to catch up with the new age, an age of law instead of family feuds.” This mixture of progressive idealism and racial paternalism was common among the more liberal Americans in the Southern Philippines.<sup>159</sup>

On visiting San Ramon in 1926, J.R. Hayden commented in a letter to his wife that the “Filipinos are at least a generation ahead of us in their penology” and noted the presence of a man he identified as Captain Sleeper, one of the few Americans imprisoned there. Sleeper, whose crime Hayden did not mention, had a house with a large veranda on the grounds, and, although an inmate, ran the forestry and land clearing departments.<sup>160</sup> Charles Ivins, serving as an officer with the Philippine Scouts, encountered San Ramon when he was tasked with returning some prisoners who had been loaned to Fort Pilar to do labour. Seeing that the prisoners were generally free to do as they pleased, he thought it likely that none were imprisoned for serious offenses. Before taking them back to San Ramon, however, he discovered to his chagrin that were in prison for committing decapitations and thus drove back to the penal colony at high speed.<sup>161</sup>

San Ramon was considered so successful that in 1931 a second penal colony was opened in the Southern Philippines, this time forty-five kilometers outside of the town of

---

<sup>159</sup> Laubach, “What Shall We Do,” 18-19.

<sup>160</sup> Letter from J.R. Hayden to Betty Hayden, 17 September 1926, Box 28, Folder 26. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>161</sup> One prisoner, Tumarompong, cut off his wife’s head when she refused to help with the digging of camotes in the field. The other, Macalangan, decapitated his neighbour during a dispute over a borrowed carabao that had given birth to a calf. Ivins’ related the story, as he was wont to do, with comedic exasperation at being placed in such a strange situation in a foreign land - “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 209-211, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

Davao. Colonel Paulino Santos, Director of the Bureau of Prisons, organized the Davao Penal Colony and chose model inmates from San Ramon and Bilibid Prison (in Luzon) to populate it. The prisoners were referred to as ‘colonists’ and encouraged to start homesteads and raise farm animals and crops. The Bureau of Prisons worked in conjunction with the Bureau of Plant Industry to establish the colony, with the former contributing “available labor and experience in establishing agricultural colonies” and the latter its agricultural expertise.<sup>162</sup> Santos brought in agronomists, specialists in rice culture, and mechanical engineers to advise on how to best run the colony. The number of ‘colonists’ increased from four hundred to one thousand in the first five years of operation. By taking the model of San Ramon and expanding upon it, Santos claimed he was able to end escape attempts, run a carceral center at minimal cost, and “teach erring men to use their hands to better themselves, always with a hope that they will return to society as respectable citizens and better than what they entered the prison gates.”<sup>163</sup>

Prisoner transfers to the North still occurred regularly. In November 1933, the *Lanao Progress* reported that authorities had shipped thirty-eight provincial prisoners from Dansalan to Bilibid Prison. Most were imprisoned for theft, with cattle stealing being a major problem in the area. “While it is necessary for the government to put criminals where they cannot repeat their crimes,” the paper moralized, “the hearts of all go out to the innocent wives and children who have to suffer.” The story, very much the product of Frank Laubach’s moral sensibility, claimed that each week the prisoners were mailed copies of the *Progress* “so that they can keep in touch with their own province while they are in Bilibid.”<sup>164</sup> Laubach’s operation in Dansalan kept in contact with prisoners at Bilibid throughout the 1930s. Such was the case with Hannah Taylor, an American woman who, along with her Filipino husband, was sentenced to jail time for the murder of her father, an African-American who lived in the

---

<sup>162</sup> Paulino Santos and Inocencio Elaya, “A Tentative Plan for the Development of Agricultural Colonies Under the New Colonization Law,” Undated, Box 29, Folder 6. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>163</sup> Juan C. Orendain, “Davao Colony is Model Work in Penology,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 25 April 1936.

<sup>164</sup> “Bilibid,” *Lanao Progress*, 1 November 1933, 2.

area. After spending some time in the provincial jail, Taylor was transferred to Bilibid, where Laubach sent her oranges, cookies, and candy.<sup>165</sup>

Although deeply engaged in experiments of racial transformation and moral reform, the administration of justice in the Southern Philippines shared many of the problems found in prison systems elsewhere. In a wide-ranging report given to the Wood-Forbes Mission in 1921, Assistant Judge Advocate General Major L.P. Johnson of the Philippine Department reported that the large penal institutions at Bilibid, San Ramon, and Iwahig were “not altogether free from political influence.” He cited the case of Jose I. Baluyot as evidence of this. Baluyot, a political figure in Luzon, was imprisoned in 1918 and given a life sentence for the murder of the Governor of Bataan.<sup>166</sup> Upon transfer to San Ramon in 1921, he was given his own house on the farm, where he and his family lived. He was also provided with two servants, made a trustee, and not required to spend any time within the walls of the prison. When the Wood-Forbes Mission visited San Ramon, Baluyot feigned illness so that he would not be required to line-up with the other prisoners and the prison surgeon accommodated the ruse.<sup>167</sup> In its final report, the Wood-Forbes Mission tersely acknowledged that provincial and municipal prisons throughout the Philippine Islands were also problematic, with poorly trained staff and favoritism “shown to prisoners with influential friends.”<sup>168</sup>

L.P. Johnson’s report also highlighted troubling discrepancies in how crimes were prosecuted in the Southern Philippines, noting that Muslims were more likely to receive harsher punishments. He made reference to Criminal Case No. 2671, which was brought before the Justice of the Peace at Jolo. The case involved residents of the island who were

---

<sup>165</sup> Letter from Minnie K. Schultz to Mission Contributors, 8 January 1938, Box 2, Folder 6. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC. Unfortunately, we have no further information about Hannah Taylor. One could surmise that she was the offspring of an African-American father who remained in the Philippines after the war officially concluded (1902) and married a local woman.

<sup>166</sup> The LawPhil Project (Philippine Laws and Jurisdiction Databank), “The United States Vs. Jose I. Baluyot,” Accessed on 2 November 2014, [http://www.lawphil.net/judjuris/juri1919/nov1919/gr\\_1-14476\\_1919.html](http://www.lawphil.net/judjuris/juri1919/nov1919/gr_1-14476_1919.html).

<sup>167</sup> Alexander L.P. Johnson, “The Administration of Justice in the Philippine Islands,” 1921, Box 82. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>168</sup> Wood and Forbes, *Report of the Special Mission*, 27-28.



caught gambling illegally (they were playing a variation of Monte). The Filipinos apprehended were each fined fifteen pesos. A week later, Moros caught playing a lower-stakes game called *Igud* were charged fines of fifty pesos, despite the game not being specifically listed on the anti-gambling ordinances like Monte was. The report noted that in addition to harsher fines, Moros were often tried for gambling by the Justice of the Peace and then tried again by the Court of the First Instance later on, thus receiving two separate punishments. The Justice of the Peace at Jolo explained the harsh treatment as a byproduct of trying to correct the savage behaviour of the Moros. The problem extended to more serious cases, such as one where a Filipino had swindled a Moro out of four hundred pesos for a fake land survey. Despite the evidence being “complete and sufficient to convict” the pseudo-surveyor, the case was dismissed by the Filipino fiscal.<sup>169</sup> Over a decade later in 1934, Vice Governor J.R. Hayden wrote to Governor General Frank Murphy about similar problems he witnessed on an inspection tour in Sulu, suggesting that Moro prisoners were having their sentencing delayed due to official torpor.<sup>170</sup>

Even more serious were abuses of power by the Constabulary against Moro prisoners. Johnson described this as a “vicious situation,” where young and inexperienced Constabulary officers were appointed to deputy governor positions and therefore responsible for a combination for executive, police, and judicial powers. These officers, often “inclined to use force rather than discretion,” helped foster an atmosphere of mistrust and recrimination between government officials and the Moros, and contributed to some of the violent incidents described in the previous section.<sup>171</sup> In the wake of the Pata massacre, Major Johnson visited the island. There he found several Moro prisoners, “one of whom was handcuffed and shackled.” When Johnson examined the guard book he found that no entry was made for the prisoners, suggesting that they were being detained on unclear or false grounds.<sup>172</sup>

---

<sup>169</sup> Johnson, “Administration of Justice,” 1921, Box 82. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>170</sup> Letter from J.R. Hayden to Frank Murphy, 20 April 1934, Box 30, Folder 9. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>171</sup> Johnson, “Administration of Justice,” 1921, Box 82. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>172</sup> Letter from C.E. Nathorst to Ole Waloe, 12 September 1921, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

In Lanao, education official Edward Kuder frequently clashed with Governor J.J. Heffington by protesting Constabulary violence. Kuder repeatedly accused Constabulary officers of the killing of prisoners and a general recklessness with Moro life. Writing to Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes chief Teopisto Guingona in 1934, Heffington related the story of the death of a Moro prisoner named Bogalong. Bogalong and another prisoner were handcuffed together and asked their jailers if they could leave their holding cell to relieve themselves. On the top of the stairs, according to Heffington, Bogalong attempted to escape, fell down the stairs with the other prisoner, and died as a result. Kuder and one of his subordinates, a School Inspector named Alug, claimed that the explanation provided by the Constabulary was cover for a murder. Heffington believed that Kuder's accusations were evidence of his "remarkably prejudiced" view towards the Constabulary (which at times approached "that of insanity") and suggested he be relieved of his duties as superintendent.<sup>173</sup> To Vice Governor Hayden, Heffington claimed Kuder was suffering from a "complex that causes him to accept, and possibly encourage, reports from Moros against Constabulary officers and soldiers without taking the pains of ascertaining whether such reports are well founded." Nevertheless, Heffington pointed out in the same letter that Colonel Guy Fort of the Constabulary was investigating abuses and one officer, Lieutenant Fred Belling, was forced to take a leave of absence in the meantime. Despite Heffington's antipathy towards Kuder, it is not unreasonable to put stock in the superintendent's claims against the Constabulary. Kuder was not the only observer to notice the organization's willingness to mete out violence against Muslims at the slightest provocation.<sup>174</sup>

Processes of arrest and detention, refined throughout the colonial period, never led to the total pacification and transformation of Muslim recidivists, as intended. A lack of Moro

---

<sup>173</sup> Letter from J.J. Heffington to Teopisto Guingona, 3 August 1934, Box 28, Folder 12. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>174</sup> Kuder attempted to correct this problem by requesting the enrollment of more young Moros at the Constabulary Academy in Baguio. One candidate that he proposed, a Maguindanao named Samaon Afday, had problems gaining entrance because of increasingly competitive examinations which favoured Christian Filipinos from areas where the American and European educational institutions were more deeply embedded. In a letter to J.R. Hayden in the spring of 1934, Kuder voiced his frustration that, despite their large numbers, the Maguindanaos had "no representative in the Constabulary." These barriers to entry for Moros meant that outsiders maintained law and order in Mindanao and Sulu – Letter from Edward M. Kuder to J.R. Hayden, 12 April 1934, Box 28, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

representation in law enforcement agencies, the judiciary, and prison administration meant that these organizations were compositionally alienated from the population they were attempting to control. Heavy-handed tactics by the Philippine Constabulary, and violent responses to them by the Moros, created a reciprocal mistrust that ensured cycles of massacre and resistance continued long after the American military departed. Real and perceived injustices – including harsher punishments for Moros and various iniquities within the prison system – dulled the morally rehabilitative benefits Americans and Filipinos boasted were inherent to their disciplinary regime.

## Corrective Violence and Ambient Violence

Between 1899 and 1942, government officials and the press routinely declared that a combination of violent discipline and the civilizing effects of colonial tutelage had ended disorder in the South. Americans portrayed themselves as reluctant imperialists who used force to pacify and correct the Moro of his “bestial exhibitions of religious frenzy.”<sup>175</sup> Annual reports from the provinces noted ever-decreasing levels of banditry and rapid advances in settlement, agriculture, infrastructure, and education. Many officials believed that development would continue unhindered so long as, in the words of John Pershing, the Southern Philippines was “governed and controlled permanently by American officials and under American sovereignty.”<sup>176</sup>

Yet for all the boasting that the South was pacified and changed, the region remained unstable. For each report that claimed banditry was at an end there was another indicating campaigns against outlaws were at an all-time high.<sup>177</sup> If threats during the military period arose from larger armed bands, during civilian rule they were fragmentary and diffuse. Lines between criminality and social banditry were blurred and the two often existed in tandem within Moro outlaw groups. The separation between legitimate law enforcement and brutal

---

<sup>175</sup> “Scenes in a War 350 Years Old that Americans are about to End,” *Washington Post*, 22 July 1913, ES3.

<sup>176</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 68.

<sup>177</sup> G.B. Raval, “Annual Report the Governor Lanao for the Year Ending December 31, 1937,” Box 28, Folder 8. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. They were no better in the 1920s, when J.R. Hayden claimed the school superintendent was not able to make his inspection tours without an armed escort. Hayden, “What Next for the Moro?” 642.

coercion on the part of the Constabulary was likewise muddled. The periodization of the so-called ‘Moro Rebellion’ used by many sources dates its end at 1913, when John Pershing ‘completed’ the disarmament of the Moros. What this suggests is that any confrontations that came afterwards could be understood as simple police responses to isolated lawlessness, rather than indicators of a sustained relationship of violent reciprocity that mutated over time but retained its core features. That massacres were still occurring, schoolhouses still burning, and officials still dying throughout the 1920s and 1930s suggests that the popular notion of the ‘Moro Problem’ ending by 1913 needs rethinking.

In the late 1930s, military expeditions against Muslim populations continued. In early 1938, the Philippine Army dispatched warplanes to Lanao, where they bombed Maranao *cottas* around the lake. Ground forces shelled the fortifications and fought against resistant groups. Minnie K. Schultz, working for Frank Laubach’s organization in Dansalan, wrote home that the shelling of one of the *cottas* came during Ramadan, and that Laubach feared this would suggest to the Maranaos that the government was purposefully attacking Islam. Schultz noted with bitter irony that some of those fighting against the Philippine Army were young Maranao men who had just completed their six months of government-mandated military training.<sup>178</sup> Several months later, Laubach himself complained that the army was actively working against the interests of peace in Lanao, and that each time an “outlaw” was killed by the military “his relatives [became] angry...the result is that instead of a dozen outlaws which might have been found at the beginning of the campaign, there are now nearly one hundred.”<sup>179</sup> Laubach’s grim observation about how counterinsurgency operations radicalized the population was darkly predictive of the violence between state authorities and Muslim communities in the 1960s and 1970s.

Encouraged by fear of the Moro *juramentado*, corrective violence was deployed to aid in the transformation of the region. Rather than having pedagogic or quiescent effects, however, it established the preconditions for ambient violence, which describes scenarios

---

<sup>178</sup> Letter from Minnie Schultz to Mission Contributors, 8 January 1938, Box 2, Folder 6. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>179</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to Mission Contributors, 8 April 1938, Box 2, Folder 6. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

where central authority is simultaneously coercive and absent, and where state violence, armed resistance, and criminality interact toxically. Far from being a lulling presence, the ambience is characterized by murder and reprisal in spaces where brutality is normalized.<sup>180</sup> The resulting environment is one where predation is likely to occur. In the Southern Philippines, Americans killed Moros, Moros killed Americans, Filipinos killed Moros, Moros killed Filipinos, and so forth. We should be careful to avoid what Nicole Guidotti-Hernández calls “facile deployments of the discourse of resistance/victimization” by collapsing historical actors into simple roles as either victims or perpetrators, while acknowledging that state and non-state violence was a reoccurring experience for many in Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>181</sup> The paranoid leitmotif of the *juramentado*, patterns of massacre, and the colonial carceral system give some explanation of the persistence of these deadly encounters.

---

<sup>180</sup> Nicolas Werth, *Cannibal Island: Death in a Siberian Gulag* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2007), 178.

<sup>181</sup> Nicole Guidotti-Hernández, *Unspeakable Violence: Remapping U.S. and Mexican National Imaginaries* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2011), 26.

## Chapter Six / Tropical Idylls

### *Maintaining Colonial Spaces and Bodies*

“The Far East prior to World War II was definitely a white man’s heaven,” Charles Ivins recalled. An American military officer attached to the Philippine Scouts during the early 1930s, Ivins reminisced how “the white man had a raft of servants, lived like a lord of the manor, and demanded and usually got the servile deference of the native.”<sup>1</sup> His unpublished memoirs tell of a life in the tropics full of comic adventures, exotic locales, boozy afternoons, and parties lasting until the early hours of the morning. They conjure idealized visions of how Americans travelled and lived in the Southern Philippines when they were not busy storming *cottas* or pondering the civilizational capacities of the inhabitants. Ivins’ writings also give us a range of detail on colonial habituation processes in foreign environments. That he focused so heavily on non-professional pursuits suggests colonial life in Mindanao and Sulu extended well beyond official activities into the realm of the touristic. The following chapter considers the stories of Ivins and his fellow colonials in the Southern Philippines, in the process contributing to the growing body of literature that explores the interconnected worlds of militarism, commerce, tropical medicine, and leisure.<sup>2</sup>

Studies of the pleasures and fears of colonial agents are well-established in historiographies of European empires, but are of recent import in cultural histories of the American colonial realm. Much of the work has focused on intersections between climactic thinking, racial categorization, and public health; here we add Mindanao and Sulu to that

---

<sup>1</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 30, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>2</sup> ‘Militourism’ describes a “phenomenon in which militarist and tourist industries organizes islanders bodies to construct native-ness.” While this was certainly occurring in the Southern Philippines, I argue that the bodies and social spaces of the colonizers themselves were often just as much of a focus – Ayano Ginoza, “Articulations of Okinawan Indigeneities, Activism, and Militourism: A Study of Interdependencies of U.S. and Japanese Empires” (PhD diss., Washington State University, 2010), 49. See also: Vernadette Vicuña Gonzalez, *Securing Paradise: Tourism and Militarism in Hawai’i and the Philippines* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2014), 1-115; Adam Weaver, “Tourism and the Military: Pleasure and the War Economy,” *Annals of Tourism Research*, 38.2 (2011): 672-689.

discussion. However, I expand the parameters of my investigation to include other key considerations of colonial administrators, including architecture, urban planning, and the replication of metropolitan leisure in the colonies. Examining the activities of colonials at play sheds light on methods of ordering and familiarizing alien landscapes, strategies of differentiation employed to culturally distance colonials from the natives, and the fetishization and fear of tropical landscapes pregnant with hazard. If American colonials fixated on controlling and reforming native bodies in their official lives, in their private time they gave considerably more attention to their own. Balancing pleasure with caution, for many, took on an obsessive quality, fuelled by inexact and nebulous formulations of how a white man or woman should conduct themselves in the tropics. Colonial state-building in the Philippines was led by Americans who believed in rationalizing nature according to the progressive schemas of the homeland, yet these same people feared lacking the personal fortitude to withstand hostile environments.<sup>3</sup>

This section explores these issues by studying the interlocking relations between colonial spaces, leisure and sociality, and colonial breakdown. In examining the pleasures and anxieties of American colonials, we gain insight into why empire in the Southern Philippines took the shape it did. Being largely rooted in American projections of self, and fears about its collapse, this chapter is closely related to the chapter in this project on American perceptions and representations of the Moro. The orientalist trope of “the other,” as Susanne Zantop notes, is intimately linked to the construction of “self.”<sup>4</sup> Americans living in Mindanao and Sulu, vastly outnumbered by native populations, keenly internalized this understanding, aware that in their behaviours they defined themselves by what they believed they were (importers of superior civilizational values) and against what they believed the natives to be

---

<sup>3</sup> The body of literature exploring the experiences of Americans in ‘hostile’ racialized tropical environments has grown in recent years. See Kimberly Alidio, “‘When I Get Home, I Want to Forget’: Memory and Amnesia in the Occupied Philippines, 1901-1904,” *Social Text* 59 (1999): 105-122; Anderson, *Colonial Pathologies*, 1-13; Greg Bankoff, “First Impressions: Diarists, Scientists, Imperialists and the Management of the Environment in the American Pacific, 1899-1902,” *The Journal of Pacific History* 44.3 (2009): 261-280; Bender, *American Abyss*, 40-99; Frank Schumacher, “On the Frontier of Civilization: Deliberations of Exceptionalism and Environmental Determinism in the Creation of America’s Tropical Empire, 1890-1910,” in *Frontiers and Boundaries in U.S. History*, ed. Cornelius A. van Minnen and Sylvia L. Hilton (Amsterdam: VU University Press, 2004), 127-142.

<sup>4</sup> Zantop, *Colonial Fantasies*, 14.

(members of degraded and savage cultures). As such, the same concerns about ‘uplifting’ the benighted races of the Philippine Archipelago became motivating factors for American strategies of differentiation: the social rituals around food and drink; the compulsion to explore, photograph, and collect; and the urban scapes manufactured for Anglo-Saxons to live ‘properly’ in tropical spaces. In acting as they did, Americans sought to simultaneously demonstrate to the colonized ‘correct’ modes of living *and* reassured themselves of their own cultural superiority. In other words, these aspects of colonial culture were both instructional and assuaged latent anxieties.

Surveying the lived experiences of American colonials means slipping between contextual zones, where measurements of threat and safety varied drastically. The clubhouse, the deck of the steamship, or the veranda of the governor’s residence were all areas where Americans mastered the chaos of the tropical environment and native spatiality. In such environments, an American officer or businessman could drink his favourite scotch whiskey, indulge in Western sporting activities, and swap the latest news with his colleagues. Outside of these spaces lay the sensory overload of the indigenous village and marketplace, the perilous fecundity of the overgrown jungle, and the threat of the invisible – whether that be a sudden *juramentado* attack or the invasion of one’s body by endemic disease. The boundaries of these constructed and regulated environmental dichotomies were less stable than many Americans admitted to, and required maintenance lest transgression occur.

In this chapter, the Moros and Filipinos who lived in and around colonial control centers appear spectral. This is by design, and mimics the tendency of American colonials to exclude these groups from their non-professional lives. Acknowledgment of them during down time came via the wave of the hand to get another drink at the Overseas Club, or through playing the groups off one another in team sports, or by collecting their manufactures as examples of the ‘natural’ environment. The natives were always present in accounts of social outings, but they were narratively ephemeral – exiting the story as quickly as they had entered, usually after having performed some practical chore or been used as an example of local colour. It was only in narratives of control and transformation that indigenous actors took center stage, a trend that reveals much about the anxieties of the colonizers. By barring the natives from participating in their personal lives as equivalents, American colonials tacitly



recognized that the intimate sphere was a place where power relations could be more readily compromised.<sup>5</sup> By socially and racially banishing those white men who married native women, they openly acknowledged it.

Mapping the social environments of the colonizer and colonized involves examining how agents of colonialism understood their environment, how they attempted to shape it, the pastimes they pursued, and their anxieties. In exploring the experiences of Charles Ivins and others like him during the American era, we see how fantasy, fear, and ideology played out in the daily lives of American colonials. These lives contain some of the clearest illustrations of how schismatic notions of the tropics and their inhabitants shaped the most intimate areas of the colonial project. They also lay bare the tensions inherent in attempts to promote the virtues of the modern democratic state while still operating in the racial-exclusionist manner of ‘traditional’ colonial entities. Further, they allow us to better comprehend how Americans fit into the intellectual vectors that shaped transcolonial approaches to the “indolent” tropics.<sup>6</sup>

## Creating Colonial Spaces

The journalist and playwright Atherton Brownell, writing in 1905, described Zamboanga – “the city as well as the district” – as a “model of cleanliness and tropical picturesqueness. The streets are dry and well made...a river runs through it, deeply shaded by tropical trees, bordered by smooth and well-kept lawns. The houses are neat and orderly. Pigs do not roam at large, as elsewhere. The Army and Navy Club looks out over a well-built sea-wall to coral islands beyond, and the climate, though it is warm, has a distinctly genial touch.”<sup>7</sup> In the pages of *Outlook*, Brownell addressed some of the major concerns about the new living spaces of Westerners in the Philippines. In depicting Zamboanga as a “model of cleanliness,”

---

<sup>5</sup> Ann Laura Stoler, “Intimidations of Empire: Predicaments of the Tactile and Unseen,” in *Haunted by Empire: Geographies of Intimacy in North American History*, ed. Ann Laura Stoler (Durham: Duke University Press, 2006), 7.

<sup>6</sup> Bender, *American Abyss*, 44. On the notion of the tropics as a space of potential and degeneracy, see Nicholas Thomas, *Islanders: The Pacific in the Age of Empire* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2011); Felix Driver and Luciana Martins, eds., *Tropical Visions in an Age of Empire* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2005).

<sup>7</sup> Atherton Brownell, “Ideas of American Citizenship,” *Outlook*, January 1905, 978.

and praising its general organization, Brownell expressed to readers that the provincial capital was a safe space for Americans to live, and perhaps even a desirable one.

Western discourses on urban planning, architecture and sanitation in the tropics developed well before the United States acquired a colonial empire. The nineteenth-century saw the rapid creation of European colonies in tropical environments, and officials sent to administer these spaces brought with them the understandings of race, disease, climate, and urbanization current in Europe at the time. Metropolitan alarm at the effects of chaotic urbanization in the age of industrialization comingled with the miasmatic theory of disease transmission, and in the colonies these notions were further interwoven with prevalent notions of race and the degenerative properties of the tropical climate.<sup>8</sup> These complex considerations, which were constantly evolving and competing with one another in the minds of colonials, formed the backbone of how Europeans thought about space in the tropics.

Americans were by no means isolated from this global conversation, and after acquiring their Pacific empire authorities dispatched an array of architectural and medical experts to assess how the environment of the Philippines should be managed, and how European models could be bettered. The most famous example of this dynamic at work was in Baguio, for a time the colonial summer capital of the Philippines. Located in the highlands of Northern Luzon and partially planned by the famed architect Daniel Burnham, Baguio was an adaptation of the British hill stations created to help colonials recover their health after extended periods in challenging landscapes. On the Indian subcontinent, the spaces “were at

---

<sup>8</sup> Jiat-Hwee Chang and Anthony D. King, “Towards a Genealogy of Tropical Architecture: Historical Fragments of Power-Knowledge, Built Environment and Climate in the British Colonial Territories,” *Singapore Journal of Tropical Geography* 32 (2011): 287-297. For geographically and culturally diffuse examples of the linkages between colonial architecture, spatial planning, and control, see Liora Bigon, “Urban Planning, Colonial Doctrines and Street Naming,” 426-448; Stacey E. Holden, “Constructing an Archival Cityscape: Local Views of Colonial Urbanism in the French Protectorate of Morocco,” *History in Africa* 34 (2007): 121-132; Iain Jackson, “Tropical Architecture and the West Indies: From Military Advances and Tropical Medicine, to Robert Garner-Medwin and the Networks of Tropical Modernism,” *The Journal of Architecture* 18.2 (2013): 167-195; Anthony D. King, *Colonial Urban Development: Culture, Social Power, and Environment* (New York: Routledge, 2010); Ziva Kolodney and Rachel Kallus, “From Colonial to National Landscape: Producing Haifa’s Cityscape,” *Planning Perspectives* 23.3 (2008): 323-348; Thomas A. Markus, *Buildings and Power: Freedom and Control in the Origin of Modern Building Types* (London: Routledge, 1993); David Rifkind, “Gondar: Architecture and Urbanism for Italy’s Fascist Empire,” *Journal of the Society of Architectural Historians* 70.4 (2011): 492-511; Siddhartha Sen, “Between Dominance, Dependence, Negotiation, and Compromise: European Architecture and Urban Planning Practices in Colonial India,” *Journal of Planning History* 9.4 (2010): 203-231.

the heart of the British effort to define and defend the boundaries that set them apart from Indians and that sustained their new identity as agents of a superior culture.”<sup>9</sup>

For Americans, Baguio was likewise a site for practicing familiar cultural rituals and where one went to regenerate after long periods in remote and environmentally difficult locales. In his study of American visual culture in the Philippines, David Brody notes that Burnham’s plans for Baguio were expressions of a larger “imperialist desire” to familiarize foreign spaces by recreating American domestic norms within them.<sup>10</sup> Seeing the Philippine landscape as primitive and Spanish colonial antecedents as imperfect, Burnham turned to contemporary urban ideals, taking into account the views of prominent urban reformers when planning for “sanitation, ventilation, lighting, and a wide range of other urban ills.”<sup>11</sup> As with the British hill stations, Baguio represented both an escape from cultural and environmental woes, as well as a projection of how American knowledge could ‘master’ the tropics.

Further south, the Americans inherited the colonial towns of Zamboanga and Jolo from the Spanish. While administrators there never had access to the same level of expertise that existed in Manila and Baguio, they shared many of the same concerns.<sup>12</sup> Zamboanga,

---

<sup>9</sup> Kennedy, Dane Keith. *The Magic Mountains: Hill Stations and the British Raj* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1996), 226. The confluence between health, leisure, and colonial urban modernism was especially pronounced in the British Empire, but was also important in other European imperial contexts as well. See Julian C.T. Baker, “Mobility, Tropicality and Landscape: the Darjeeling Himalayan Railway, 1881-1939,” *Journal of Historical Geography* 44 (2014): 133-144; Nandini Bhattacharya, “Leisure, Economy, and Colonial Urbanism: Darjeeling, 1835-1930,” *Urban History* 40.3 (2013): 442-461; Eric T. Jennings, “From *Indochine* to *Indochine*: The Lang Bian / Dalat Palace Hotel and French Colonial, Leisure, Power and Culture,” *Modern Asian Studies* 37.1 (2003): 159-194; Phyllis Martin, *Leisure and Society in Colonial Brazzaville* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1995); Queeny Pradhan, “Empire in the Hills: The Making of Hill Stations in Colonial India,” *Studies in History* 23.1 (2007): 33-91.

<sup>10</sup> Brody, *Visualizing American Empire*, 149. On Baguio and American planning, see Best, “Empire Builders,” 23-34; Duque, “Modern Tropical Architecture,” 261-271; Rebecca Thinio McKenna, “American Imperial Pastoral: The Baguio Scheme and United States Designs of the Philippines, 1898-1921” (PhD diss, Yale University, 2010); Frank Schumacher, “Creating Imperial Spaces: Baguio and the American Empire in the Philippines, 1898-1920,” in *Taking Up Space: New Approaches to American History*, ed. Anke Ortlepp et al. (Trier: WVT, 2004): 59-75.

<sup>11</sup> Brody, *Visualizing American Empire*, 152.

<sup>12</sup> This unsurprising fact speaks to a predictable center-periphery relationship within the Philippines. Since Manila and Baguio were the primary residences of the American colonial elite, and the places most likely to be visited by outside observers looking to get a sense of the colonial project, they received greater allocations. A constant in reports from officials in the Southern Philippines are complaints about not having enough money.

the seat of American power in the Southern Philippines, was singled out as a site in need of fastidious maintenance. On arriving there in the spring of 1899, American military forces found that fighting between the Spanish garrison and Filipino insurrectos had ravaged the town. On May 24<sup>th</sup>, the day of the Spanish evacuation, further destruction occurred when a large fire spread through central Zamboanga, damaging or ruining many buildings.<sup>13</sup> American military officials saw this not as an impediment but rather a chance to reshape the town.

A year later, Zamboanga was already holding balls to celebrate the arrivals and departures of colonial personages.<sup>14</sup> Writing in the *Boston Globe*, Frank G. Carpenter described the town as a tropical idyll: “Every surrounding of the place, in fact, is picturesque. It looks more like a botanical garden with the accompaniment of midway plaisance than an everyday American garrison. Its houses are shaded with cocoanut trees. Tall bananas rustle their leaves as you walk through the streets, and all about it is the most luxuriant tropical vegetation.”<sup>15</sup> Carpenter’s romantic descriptions of the natural setting extended to how pre-existing colonial architecture interacted with the environment. He was especially fond of the old Spanish-built headquarters: “It is a big two-story house. Covering perhaps a quarter of an acre, with balconies 10 feet wide running around it, all shielded from the rays of the sun by oyster-shell windows. The house is floored with mahogany boards, some of which are two feet wide and 20 feet long. Its ceilings are from 15 to 20 feet high. It is right on the beach and it is a stiff sea breeze which blows through it all day and all night.”<sup>16</sup> Although miasmic theories of disease transmission were waning by the turn of the twentieth-century, the preoccupation with preventing ‘stagnant’ air continued as a medical-architectural concern among American colonials.

---

<sup>13</sup> “Extracts from Letters of Commander Very, U.S.S. ‘Castine’,” 24 May 1899, Box 2, Folder 3. John Bates Papers, USAHEC; Letter from H.M. Reeve to John Bates, 31 July 1899, Box 2, Folder 3. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>14</sup> Frederick Palmer, “Americanizing the Southern Philippines,” *Collier’s Weekly*, 1 September 1900.

<sup>15</sup> Frank G. Carpenter, “Moros Do Not Drink,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 13 May 1900, 40.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid.

Reports from the Moro Province speak to a preoccupation with changing Zamboanga into the ideal colonial town. George Langhorne wrote in 1904 about the state of public works there and the efforts to reconstruct “the provincial building at Zamboanga, as well as the streets of the town, building a provincial jail, repairing wharves, constructing schoolhouses, repairing district and municipal buildings at the principal towns of the province.”<sup>17</sup> There was an emphasis placed on erecting permanent buildings and roads of “a substantial and lasting character” as an expression of the fixity of the American presence.<sup>18</sup> Meanwhile, locals were encouraged to take “an interest in public improvements and [establishing] the municipality upon a sound basis.”<sup>19</sup> Construction continued through 1906, when six new sets of captain’s quarters and four new sets of lieutenant’s quarters were built, as well as a new bathhouse, paint shop, laundry, stables, and band barracks.<sup>20</sup> The governor’s report even detailed the type of furniture desired for the officers’ quarters.<sup>21</sup>

Bliss described Zamboanga as “entirely cosmopolitan in character” and as a place where “commercial interests are developing under American, European, and Chinese energy and capital.”<sup>22</sup> An extensive listing of American and European residents in the town compiled during the period bears this out. It included engineers, missionaries, bookkeepers, teachers, bartenders, a veterinarian, a dentist, numerous small business owners, public sector employees, and even a man listed as a “money lender and capitalist,” among others.<sup>23</sup> The Americans carried on the Spanish colonial practice of spatially and socially segregating the Samal Moros of the area, who continued living on the margins of the community. The Filipinos and Chinese of Zamboanga interacted with its Western residents in matters of

---

<sup>17</sup> Langhorne, *Annual Report 1904*, 15.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., 17.

<sup>20</sup> Wood and Bliss, *Annual Report 1906*, 7.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., 22.

<sup>22</sup> Tasker Bliss, *Annual Report Fiscal Year 1907*, 23.

<sup>23</sup> This undated document was drawn from the papers of John Pershing and we can assume it originates from his time as Governor of the Moro Province between 1909 and 1913. Interestingly, the document also lists those Americans and Europeans who are married to non-whites - “American Residents of Zamboanga, Together with Europeans,” Box 320. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

commerce, or as servants, but (by design) inhabited their own social spheres apart from the Americans and Europeans.

Being the hub of colonial power in the South and its major population center, Zamboanga received an inordinate amount of funding, and some of the most extensive civilizational experiments, like the Moro Exchange, were based there. The city advertised itself as “the Key to the Orient” in promotional literature, and boasted that it led all other areas in the Southern Philippines in commercial and industrial development. Zamboanga, the pamphlet claimed, was on all major regional trade routes, including those trafficking goods from Australia, China, the East Indies, and Singapore. Extensive plantations, cattle ranches, coal deposits, and potential logging sites also surrounded it. Most importantly, according to the literature, the community was “without question the most attractive little city in the Philippines... The neatness, cleanliness, shade and ornamental trees and green lawns, ridges of tropical plants and flowers, the unique mountains, sunken and hanging gardens in the beautifully arranged parks, together with the well-paved streets and fine shady driveways excite the admiration and afford comfort and recreation to all.” Looking to attract business and tourists, the city self-promoted as the ideal colonial space: modern, hygienic, connected, and economically productive.<sup>24</sup>

The character of the town remained consistent throughout the American period. Writing in the 1930s, Charles Ivins shared Frank G. Carpenter’s eye for architectural detail. Ivins and his fellow officers lived in “large two-story frame buildings with wide porches all the way around on both levels – the top one being screened. The architect had designed the building for the tropics. The ceilings were tall, the doors and windows large, the kitchen and servants quarters were separate from the main house but connected by a breezeway.”<sup>25</sup> As Jiat-Hwee Chang and Anthony D. King observe, the wraparound veranda was a “structure particularly symbolic of the colonial tropical lifestyle,” suggesting an American debt to earlier colonial models (which in turn had fused European and native architectural traditions)

---

<sup>24</sup> “‘The Key to the Orient’: The Growing Port of Zamboanga,” 26715, Box 1123. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>25</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 43, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

in the design of their buildings.<sup>26</sup> Maintaining domestic standards meant not only living in spaces designed for Westerners in the tropics, but also differentiating oneself from the natives by rigorously enforcing a regime of cleanliness through proper management of the home. In the Ivins household, this was the job of his wife Vivian, who “had previous experience in running a home in Puerto Rico and in Panama...this tropical stuff was old hat to her.”<sup>27</sup> Drawing upon personal experiences of colonial domesticity, Vivian directed a staff of servants in her attempts to stave off filth. Ivins wrote that many times he witnessed her coming back from the commissary with very little food but “heavily laden with soaps, scouring powder, waxes and cleaners of all types.”<sup>28</sup>

The dichotomy between Western and native concepts of cleanliness and hygiene was made abundantly clear in Walter Cutter’s descriptions of the walled town of Jolo, and the Moros living outside those walls. Jolo, he noted, “has been called the garden spot of the Philippines and it is no misnomer. It is an island paradise.” Cutter was taken with the Spanish architecture, describing favourably the “Moorish doorways” and the “white beach sand and ground corral” used for the streets. Where nature intruded, it did so pleasantly via sweet smelling plants like ylang-ylang, or caged tropical birds in one of the local parks. Fresh mountain water pumped into town and an ice plant ensured cool refreshments for the Americans.<sup>29</sup> In Cutter’s imagining, Jolo was favourably exotic; tropical without being threatening. This contrasted with his descriptions of nearby Tausūg settlements like Tullei and Bus Bus, which he described as a visual and olfactory assault. To visit either was “an insult to one’s sense of smell. The native race here are Moros and they are lower in the social scale than anything I ever saw before. A Filipino is as neat as wax and highly civilized compared with them. A Moro is a savage pure and simple.”<sup>30</sup>

---

<sup>26</sup> Chang and King, “Towards a Genealogy,” 286.

<sup>27</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 44, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid.

<sup>29</sup> “In the Philippines,” 14 December 1901, Box 1. Walter Cutter Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid.

Cutter used the Christian Filipino as a guidepost for just how degraded Moro spaces were from the standpoint of a Westerner. In this continuum, Spanish antecedents were imperfect but still highly refined compared to Filipino examples, which themselves were more civilized than Moro ones. Mobilizing concepts of cleanliness to comprehend and designate racial fitness was a well-established colonial phenomenon with roots in the emergent bourgeois metropolitan domesticity of nineteenth-century Europe.<sup>31</sup> As such, the domestic prerogatives of women like Vivian Ivins, utilizing cheap native labour to keep their homes spotless, were attempts to negate the unpleasant aspects of the tropical environment and create markers of racial and cultural separation from the peoples of Mindanao and Sulu.

If Zamboanga was the cosmopolitan colonial capital of the South, then Jolo was the frontier town made exhilarating by its proximity to native life. J.R. Hayden, visiting as a scholar in the 1920s, described the town as

one of the most picturesque places I have ever seen. The old walled Spanish town is very much as it was when we took over... The most picturesque and colorful parts of the town, however, are the Moro town, built on stilts over the water, and the 'Chinese Pier.' The latter is a pier which stretches a quarter of a mile out into the harbor and upon which are built two storey frame houses occupied by the Chinese. A board walk runs along the front of these houses and on it we passed representatives of almost every race in the Orient. I never have seen such a gay and picturesque lot of costumes, not even in Java.<sup>32</sup>

Hayden continued in this vein, describing the array of seafood available for purchase at the market, as well as "fruits of all kinds, for Jolo produces more varieties of fruit than any place in the Philippines."<sup>33</sup> Charles Ivins was less enthusiastic about the seaside settlement, and described how "the whole town reeked of sweat, garbage and filth. Only in certain areas of

---

<sup>31</sup> McClintock, *Imperial Leather*, 71-74.

<sup>32</sup> Letter from J.R. Hayden to Betty Hayden, 17 September 1926, Box 28, Folder 26. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid.



China have I encountered any smells that could even approach the potent odors of Jolo.”<sup>34</sup> Far more isolated and intermeshed with the local Muslim population than Zamboanga was, Jolo inspired a variety of opinions from Americans. J.R. Hayden saw the town as a vivid Oriental tableau brought to life before his eyes. Walter Cutter had mixed opinions, contrasting the orderly interior of the walled city with the squalor he witnessed outside of it. Charles Ivins, stopping in Jolo briefly, had uniformly negative views, placing it beyond the realm of civilized colonial space by virtue of its offending scents. This divergence of opinions on the towns and villages of the Muslim South was common, and generally had to do with how habituated the writer was to Zamboanga (the more they were, the less they liked other places in Mindanao and Sulu).

The creation of the town of Dansalan represented a departure for the Americans. If officials previously sought to reshape preexisting colonial spaces, in 1906 they decided to plan and build a site that would encompass the paternalist agendas of the colonial regime. Located at the northern tip of Lake Lanao some forty kilometers south of Iligan, Dansalan lay across the Agus River from Camp Keithley and the Maranao settlement of Marawi. Alongside the Sulu Archipelago, the Lanao region was the location of some of the fiercest resistance to American rule. The Spanish inability to conquer Lanao meant that there was no colonial hub like there was in the coastal areas. Reflecting on these problems, the government of the Moro Province determined that creating Dansalan was necessary to effectively manage the restive Maranao communities around the lake.

Tasker Bliss saw the incipient town as “probably the first and only instance in the Philippine Islands of the establishment of an orderly and well-regulated community after the manner followed by the Anglo-Saxon settlers of the United States.”<sup>35</sup> The Chinese, Japanese, Filipino, and Moro inhabitants of the settlement would be placed under the guidance of the Americans there, Bliss stated, and if more Americans “of the old sturdy stock” could be convinced to settle in the province it would become an engine of economic growth in the

---

<sup>34</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 109, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>35</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report 1907*, 26.

Southern Philippines.<sup>36</sup> Marawi itself was filled with “squatters,” who surrounded Camp Keithley (the main military base in the region) that were forced to “transfer themselves” by the military authorities. Although Bliss scoffed at claims of Maranao ancestral-communal ownership of the land, he admitted that paying off local *datus* was preferable to bloodshed.<sup>37</sup> District Governor John McAuley Palmer dealt with a variety of issues related to the creation of a model colonial settlement, including the commissioning of land surveys, negotiating with Moro *grandees*, divvying up lots, reimbursing of businessmen who raised money to pay the Moros, and overseeing the “ejectment” of those left in Marawi.<sup>38</sup> Tasker Bliss worried about the effects that the licensed saloons would have on the American residents of the new town – particularly the soldiers – but admitted that “under the law” they could not be prevented. A prohibitively high liquor license fee of ₱4,800 was imposed and a special liquor zone created to address these concerns.<sup>39</sup>

Dansalan was intended to civilize the region through the instructive example of market capitalism. Palmer wrote letters to prominent traders in Iligan like Martin Geary, mentioning that if enterprising Western businessmen could harness the “industrial capacity” of the Lanao Moros everybody would prosper. He mentioned fabrics, brass work, and the nascent coffee trade as areas ripe for exploitation. There was “a place here for somebody to make money” Palmer told Geary, and making that money was inextricably linked to the civilizational plans colonial officials had for the Moros.<sup>40</sup> Palmer suggested starting an experimental colony near Dansalan to serve the interests of commerce and act as a guidepost for Moro development. “While the idea of enforced labor is rather startling to Americans,” he wrote, “its necessity in dealing with people like the Moros must be apparent to anyone who

---

<sup>36</sup> Ibid.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid.

<sup>38</sup> Letter from John McAuley Palmer to J.P. Jervy, 13 February 1907, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>39</sup> Letter from Tasker Bliss to John McAuley Palmer, 3 July 1907, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD; Letter from John McAuley Palmer to Tasker Bliss, 13 July 1907, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>40</sup> Letter from John McAuley Palmer to Martin Geary, 4 March 1907, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

has had occasion to study them or similar peoples in Malaysia.”<sup>41</sup> As seen in Chapter Three, officials believed that agricultural colonies would have a domino effect, organically multiplying and encouraging Moros in the region to buy into Western modes of production. As for other trade, Palmer suggested that travelling Moro middlemen could buy from more isolated markets around Lake Lanao and, in turn, sell to Western businessmen operating out of Dansalan.<sup>42</sup>

Annual reports from the Moro Province for 1910-11 and 1912-13 related modest, but steady, improvements to Dansalan, including the installation of a bridge across the Agus River that linked the town with Camp Keithley, a new municipal building, a school building, a municipal market, and a district jail. A small frame hospital and dispensary served around seventy-five patients per day, and there were plans to build an industrial school.<sup>43</sup> By the 1920s, Dansalan was a vibrant place where missionaries and businessmen extended colonial society to the remote interior of Mindanao.<sup>44</sup> Writing to his wife in 1926, J.R. Hayden described meeting with local datus, dining with the governor, and shooting nine holes of “poor” golf overlooking “beautiful scenery.”<sup>45</sup> Although Dansalan was designed with a cultural fusion of commerce and tutelary uplift in mind, respectable Westerners kept mostly to the city and socialized with their own. Adventures into the hinterland were normally done in armed groups – and often for punitive reasons.<sup>46</sup> The grand agricultural and industrial plans of John McAuley Palmer never materialized in earnest, and in many respects the town remained similar to Jolo – an imperial outpost in a unstable land.

---

<sup>41</sup> Letter from John McAuley Palmer to Tasker Bliss, 12 January 1908, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>42</sup> Letter from John McAuley Palmer to Martin Geary, 4 March 1907, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>43</sup> John Pershing, *Annual Report of Brigadier General John J. Pershing, U.S. Army, Governor of the Moro Province, For Year Ending June 30, 1911* (Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Co., 1911), 14-15; Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 25-28, 37-40.

<sup>44</sup> “The Apostleship of Sunset Cox,” *La Opinion Y El Comercio*, 16 July 1926.

<sup>45</sup> Letter from J.R. Hayden to Betty Hayden, 12 September 1926, Box 28, Folder 26. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>46</sup> Letter from J.J. Heffington to J.R. Hayden, 12 July 1934, Box 28, Folder 12. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

Despite this, writers visiting Dansalan had a tendency to idealize it in the same language they used when speaking about Zamboanga or Jolo. Writing for the *Philippines Free Press* in 1941, S.S. Schier complimented the climate, and was delighted how in Dansalan “the air itself was charged with animation and importance.” He went so far as to call the town the “Mecca of Moroland” and described the Lake Lanao region as “a composite of indescribable, scenic grandeur and Mohammedan art.” Schier believed that tourism could be a major boon for Lanao, but that if it was not developed it would continue “slumbering under the tropical sun” as it had for “many thousands of years” prior.<sup>47</sup> Characteristically, Charles Ivins took a more blinkered view, writing that he would never place Dansalan in “a contest for municipal achievement” and claiming the isolation of the Maranao Moros in Lanao had made them more “war-like” and “less tolerant of infidels and unbelievers.”<sup>48</sup> Originally envisioned as a new type of colonial space, Dansalan came to resemble other more established towns in written accounts.

## Sociality and Leisure

Zamboanga was the hub of colonial life in the Muslim South. There members of white society organized sports teams, ran a golf and country club, held dances, acted as amateur scholars, took photographs, went to the cinema, entertained visitors, organized parades and fairs, and went adventuring in the interior and out in the Sulu Sea. While most Americans lasted only as long as their tour of duty, some managed to finagle extended stays at Zamboanga, or else got posted there again later in their careers. Some grew sentimentally attached to the place. When Leonard Wood visited his old governor’s residence there near the end of his life “the tears were streaming down his cheeks.”<sup>49</sup> Through the permanent

---

<sup>47</sup> S.S. Schier, “The Lake Empire of Lanao,” *Philippines Free Press*, 26 July 1941.

<sup>48</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 182-184, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>49</sup> Interview with Mrs. Dorey, 1 May 1930, Box 15, Folder 2. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD. Dorey expanded on Wood’s picturesque life in Zamboanga in another segment of the interview: “Wood was wonderfully happy at Zamboanga. It was, in fact, his last really happy period. He loved the country, the climate, the free and independent life. The Moros depended on him and he had the consciousness that he was needed and had a job worth doing. He was with his children, playing tennis with them. There would be grand picnics miles off in the hills. Or they would go paddling through the Mangrove swamps past caribou and the monkeys

presence of certain key families like the Worcesters and the continuity provided by the clubs around town, Zamboanga maintained its own distinct character throughout the American period. As early as 1902, military societies in Zamboanga fostered American colonial culture in the region. One such was The Military Order of the Kris, which took its name from the famed Moro weapon, and had John Pershing as its Vice-President. This group, formed as the result of the early campaigns against the Lanao Moros, celebrated Christmas “with many field sports, including baseball, horse-racing, and high-jumping. In the evening there was a minstrel show.”<sup>50</sup> By combining typically Western athletic pursuits with racialized forms of entertainment, the Americans amused themselves while simultaneously encouraging the maintenance of boundaries.

Military newspapers were important in establishing a sense of community among servicemen and their families in Mindanao and Sulu. The *Twenty Third Infantry Lantaka*, published in Parang by Hugh Drum and others, provided information about upcoming social gatherings, baseball scores, the activities of officers’ wives, and poked fun at military culture. Serious military issues received humorous treatment, presumably as a steam valve. The outrages of the Moro outlaw Jikiri were described with levity. Jikiri was “abroad in the land flaying the Chinese and flogging the fair women of the Southern Isles.”<sup>51</sup> The *Lantaka* even had its own spin-off, the even more satirical *Twenty-Third Infantry Bolo*. The *Bolo* was devoted entirely to comedy, making light of everything from Hugh Drum’s erotic experiences in Japan (it claimed he had written a book called *Geisha Girls I Have Known*) to epidemiological conditions at Parang: “A large typhoid bug visited our little city recently. He was extensively entertained, care being taken not to injure him in any way.”<sup>52</sup>

---

chattering in the trees, meeting now and then a Moro in his *vinta*, paddling slowly by with his knife beside him.” Ibid., 1 May 1930, Box 17, Folder 4. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>50</sup> “Order of the Kris,” *Manila Times*, 27 December 1902.

<sup>51</sup> “The Yellow Peril,” *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka*, 20 November 1909, 6.

<sup>52</sup> “Personals,” *Twenty-Third Infantry Bolo*, 9 April 1907, 2.

Similarly, the *Jolo Howler* provided a creative outlet for some of the men stationed in the Sulu Archipelago. Created by an officer in the 17<sup>th</sup> Infantry with access to a typewriter, its main goal was chronicling American military life in the tropics. The *Howler* made jokes about nearly every major figure, American and Moro, on the island of Jolo at the time. The Moros and their culture were mercilessly skewered in poems like “The Belle of Jolo,” where each quatrain began in the style of a saccharine romance poem and ended with an insult to Moro women. For example: “There’s a beautiful Sulu belle, / with a queenly, shapely head; / There’s a mystic spell in her eyes gazelle - / And her teeth are betel-red,” or “Her nose is gently retroussé / And mayhap, slightly flat; / I’ve often thought that once it caught / A swinging baseball bat.”<sup>53</sup> The article “Spring Fashions for Jolo” gave an account of what clothes were popular in Jolo that year in the style of a fashion magazine like *Harper’s Bazaar* (“The Dowager Sultana recently imported from Sandakan a beautiful green cotton sunshade. No doubt Sulu society women will lose no time in following royal example”<sup>54</sup>), the joke being the juxtaposition between haute couture fashion reportage and the savage remoteness of Jolo. Elsewhere in the paper were humorous observations about the Chinese penchant for fireworks, inside jokes about the sporting abilities of a variety of American servicemen, and advertisements for fake businesses on the island. While largely satirical, regimental newspapers like the *Lantaka* and the *Howler* touched upon a variety of concerns shared by the men stationed in Mindanao and Sulu, from disease to sexuality to isolation.

Many of the poems and songs originating among Americans stationed in the Philippines eventually filtered back to the metropole. The soldier and journalist Damon Runyon published a song in 1911 referencing the tendency of Moro females to fight alongside men called “The Ladies in the Trenches: A Soldier Song of the Sulu Isles” or “If A Lady’s Wearing Pantaloon.” Another song was inspired by the hunt for Datu Ali in Cotabato after the Maguindanaon leader’s relationship with colonial authorities turned hostile. One verse went as follows: “Oh, sing a song of hikers, / On Dato Ali’s trail, / On straight tips from old Piang / Who ought to be in jail. / Three commands of dough-boys / And one of horseless

---

<sup>53</sup> “The Belle of Jolo,” *Jolo Howler* 1.1, 1 January 1902, 5.

<sup>54</sup> “Spring Fashions for Jolo,” *Jolo Howler* 1.1, 1 January 1902, 15.

horse, / Through mud and slime; / Through filth and grime; / We wend our way performe.” Yet others mixed sentimentality with racial humour, and spoke of Moro “romances,” “queens,” “chiefs,” and “nights.” For many soldiers, interpreting their experiences through music added levity and narrative form to what they witnessed in the Southern Philippines. In the United States, songs about the Moros were sometimes the only familiarity citizens had with their nation’s Pacific frontier.<sup>55</sup>

The whites-only Army and Navy Club at Zamboanga was a hub of American sociality throughout the colonial period. In 1905, native dancers greeted Secretary of War William Howard Taft in front of the club, and ushered him inside for drinks and dancing. Later in the evening, he and others watched from the patio as a native boat parade of some two hundred vessels passed along the waterfront “with Serpentine movements.”<sup>56</sup> The Americans present were thus able to witness the stage-managed and romanticized spectacle of primitive races in their ‘natural’ environment while remaining ensconced within a familiar, racially demarcated space. Seymour Howell, an officer with the Pay Department, wrote to his son of the Army and Navy Club in 1902, describing its “broad covered gallery” extending out over the water “and equipped with every kind of cane or bamboo lazy chair and lounge known to this tropical climate.”<sup>57</sup> The club had a “ladies night” on Saturday evenings “where nearly every officer and lady at the post [was] present, the charming native dance music keeping the interested till a later hour.”<sup>58</sup> Howell’s time in Zamboanga mitigated the long and difficult pay trips he took around the region, and the club, with its combination of curated exoticism and Western familiarity, provided needed comforts.

---

<sup>55</sup> The most comprehensive listing of American songs from the colonial Philippines is: Thomas P. Walsh, *Tin Pan Alley and the Philippines: American Songs of War and Love, 1898-1946 - A Resource Guide* (Lanham: Scarecrow Press, 2013). Walsh’s notations on the songs about Moros are extensive and useful. See, for examples, pages 151-152 on Moro female cross-dressing, or pages 193-195 on Datu Ali.

<sup>56</sup> “Memorandum: On the entertainment in honor of the Honorable Secretary of War, William H. Taft,” 17-18 August 1905, Box 11, Folder 3. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>57</sup> Letter from W. Seymour Howell to Howd Howell, 31 August 1902, Box 1. Howell-Taylor Family Papers, 1641-1951, USAHEC.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid.

The anthropologist Charles Eugen Guthe and Charles Ivins – writing in the 1920s and 1930s, respectively – each described club life in Zamboanga in more raucous terms. While conducting a multi-year anthropological collecting mission in the Philippines, Guthe stayed in Zamboanga on numerous occasions. There he spent his time ambling about town, negotiating with Frederick Worcester, son of the recently deceased Dean, for his father’s photographic collection, and drinking with an assortment of local characters. Much of this took place at the Zamboanga Overseas Club, a civilian companion to the Army and Navy Club. In this “old house right in the centre of things” Guthe described dancing and imbibing until the early hours of the morning, on one occasion nearly getting in a fist fight, drinking leftover champagne from vacated tables, and ending the night drunkenly reviewing over some disturbing photographs from a recent conflagration in the area.<sup>59</sup>

Charles Ivins recounted his days at the Zamboanga Golf and Country Club in a similarly colourful manner. He spent afternoons at the clubhouse with Ian McDougall, the resident manager of the Chartered Bank of India, Australia and China, arguing over which country was to blame for the Great Depression. The golf course itself was infested with pigs, dogs, chickens, monkeys, cobras, and all other manner of local fauna. Ivins joked about the religious aversion of the Moro caddies to the pigs, claiming “they would never in the afterlife get to enjoy the limitless pleasures of the Perfumed Gardens” had they interacted with them.<sup>60</sup> The drinking at the golf course was extensive and reckless, and at one point Ivins found himself “testing the comparative merits of Johnny Walker and Grand McNish” whiskies with Chuck Gamble, a representative for the local steamship line. “Eventually we reached a state of exuberance that could only be quelled by an auto race back to town,” Ivins recalled, going on to describe said auto race, which ended with Ivins spraying the car of Gamble with *carabao* waste (whose explosive properties when hit at high speeds he remarked upon) and emerging victorious.<sup>61</sup> This comic vignette illustrates the frequently idle nature of

---

<sup>59</sup> Diary of Carl Eugen Guthe, 18 May 1924, Box 5. Carl Eugen Guthe Papers, BHL.

<sup>60</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 98-101, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., 176-178.



colonial rule in 1930s Zamboanga, where the white elite entertained themselves by drinking their afternoons away and occasionally engaging in reckless behaviour.

Visiting Zamboanga in the earliest days of the Moro Province, Maud Huntley Jenks wrote of the routine binge drinking in more unpleasant terms. Attending a military banquet in 1903, she observed men drink themselves into unconsciousness. Jenks found such behaviour “pathetic” yet “understandable.” A lack of healthful pursuits in the area made drunken escapades among the men stationed there inevitable. She connected such behaviour to colonial environments worldwide: “The drinking is terrible over here in these Islands, as it is in the tropics wherever the white man has gone in any numbers – whether American, British, Dutch – and its results are more terrible.” Alcohol, it seemed, could speed the effects of tropical degeneration on the mind and body. Jenks met one man on a steamer en route to Manila who doctors claimed was “incurably insane...because of drinking” and lamented his decline.<sup>62</sup>

Sport was another integral element of the social structures and strategies of differentiation employed by American colonials. By participating in sports unfamiliar to the natives, Americans distinguished themselves as bearers of a more sophisticated culture.<sup>63</sup> In certain cases, Moros and Filipinos participated in these events, but only under strictly controlled conditions. As with their social clubs, activities like hunting, polo, sport fishing, and baseball were a means to replicate the comforts of the distant American homeland. During his tenure as Governor General of the Philippines, W. Cameron Forbes actively participated in sporting activities. In both 1909 and 1910, during inspection tours of Mindanao, he and a host of officials hunted duck at Lake Liguasan in the Cotabato district. On the first trip, Forbes described the watery paths through islands of reeds, the “incessant

---

<sup>62</sup> Maud Huntley Jenks, *Death Stalks the Philippine Wilds: Letters of Maud Huntley Jenks* (Minneapolis: The Lund Press, 1951), 191-192.

<sup>63</sup> Scholars like Lou Antolihao and Allen Guttman stress the connections between empire and sport. What results from the introduction of the imperialist’s games to a colonized population is often a complex reciprocal process where the colonialist quickly loses the upper hand in the exchange –the role cricket plays in South Asia, for example. See Lou Antolihao, *Playing with the Big Boys: Basketball, American Imperialism, and Subaltern Discourse in the Philippines* (Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2015); Allen Guttman, *Games and Empires: Modern Sports and Cultural Imperialism* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1994), 171-188.

whir of birds,” and the “old, scarred, seamed, and hideous Moros with black teeth and juice-stained red mouths and lips...silent, capable, and active pirates” who guided them to various hunting spots. To Forbes, the trip was idyllic, and he found he could not “convey the charm of the circumstances of this hunt – the bright sky, the mystery of the huge lake, unknown depths underneath where may be were lurking crocodiles.”<sup>64</sup>

These scenes repeated themselves on another trip to the region less than a year later. Forbes took to paying the Moro guides to return the ducks as he suspected they had kept some back for themselves on his previous outing. Forbes’ group bagged 475 ducks and afterwards visited with Datu Enoch and his wife near Lake Buluan. As he left the marshes, Forbes reflected upon “the varying degrees of hominess which we felt on returning from one condition of travel to another; getting back into the small *vinta* from mud and water being first, to the large *vinta* with its drinks, edibles, seats, cushions, and companions” and onwards to the larger ships with their staterooms and servants. His only regret on the trip was not bringing Dean Worcester along to properly classify the various flora and fauna encountered.<sup>65</sup> For Forbes, what was ostensibly an inspection tour also doubled as a leisurely sporting vacation on the fringes of the colony.

Baseball was both a leisure pursuit for American personnel and a means by which to inculcate natives into Western team sports.<sup>66</sup> In the Southern Philippines, baseball was at first used as an outlet for soldiers in between periods of fighting Moro insurgents. Regimental newspapers like the *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka* went into great detail about the most recent games, noting standout offensive and defensive plays,<sup>67</sup> and teams from the various

---

<sup>64</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 3, 10 July 1909. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>65</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 4, 5-7 March 1910. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>66</sup> Steven W. Pope, “Rethinking Sport, Empire, and American Exceptionalism,” *Sport History Review* 38 (2007): 92-120; Kramer, *The Blood of Government*, 386. The most comprehensive analysis of the connections between baseball and U.S. foreign policy can be found in Robert Elias, *The Empire Strikes Out: How Baseball Sold U.S. Foreign Policy and Promoted the American Way Abroad* (New York: New Press, 2010). On sport as a racial and ideological tool, see Gerald R. Gems, *The Athletic Crusade: Sport and American Cultural Imperialism* (Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2006).

<sup>67</sup> “Battalion League,” *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka*, 20 November 1909, 8.

stations around Mindanao and Sulu visited one another when they were able to.<sup>68</sup> Military commanders actively participated in these events, with men like John Pershing and Matthew Steele acting as umpires in the hotly contested matches.<sup>69</sup> Military clubs also played against Filipino and Moro teams, and Moro and Filipino teams against each another. In one account, the Visayan Regimental Team competed against the American team of Company D (23<sup>rd</sup> Infantry) in Zamboanga “on two successive Saturdays.” The *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka* reported that “the native has a natural aptitude for the great American game. His light weight, however, is a great handicap in meeting Americans, both in batting and base running.” Each July 4<sup>th</sup> in Zamboanga, the Americans used their national holiday to stage a game that pitted the local Filipino team against the Moro one.<sup>70</sup> Here, American patriotic fervor was a staging ground for intra-imperial competition between two groups of subject people that despised one another. Nearly twenty years later, Charles Ivins spoke of the same dynamic, opening his memoirs with a scene from a baseball game between the Filipino and Moro Companies of the Philippine Scouts. The game ends with a Moro sergeant killed by an errant pitch, and Ivins reflecting on the man up in “the Mohammedan heavens” starring “as the home-run king in some celestial ball park.”<sup>71</sup> Ivins’ comingling of the Islamic afterlife with an American pastime is lighthearted in its intent, but also telling of how in colonial environments even leisure was deployed as a tool of civilizational imperatives.<sup>72</sup>

When stationed in Zamboanga, colonial personnel took great pains to establish domestic spaces for themselves that replicated (as far as possible) the pleasures of home. To

---

<sup>68</sup> “I have been detailed in charge of the regimental baseball team and would like to take the team on a trip, playing at Jolo, Malabang, Parang, Iloilo, and Manila, or such places as it would be convenient to reach.” Letter from N.M. Green to Frank McCoy, 25 March 1906, Box 11, Folder 5. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>69</sup> Report on Activities of 2<sup>nd</sup> Cavalry in Zamboanga, 11 January 1910, Box 3, Folder 5. Matthew Steele Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>70</sup> “No Title,” *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka*, 9 April 1907, 8-9.

<sup>71</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 1x-3x, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>72</sup> Dean Worcester also wrote about the “beneficial effects” of non-Christians taking up baseball, viewing the sport as “one of the really important things which the Bureau of Education has taught the boys.” An article he published in 1913 for *National Geographic* featured images of Igorot youth playing baseball and assembled for a team photograph. See Dean Worcester, “The Non-Christian Peoples of the Philippine Islands,” *National Geographic* 24.2 (1913): 1252-1255.

achieve this, they exploited the effects of colonial rule on local labour. The wives of officers often managed households, and nearly all of them did so with Moro and Filipino cooks, houseboys, and laundrywomen, “who in nearly all cases were well trained and needed little supervision.”<sup>73</sup> This reliance on servants, shared by both American men and women, freed up time to have long boozy lunches at the clubs around Zamboanga, play bridge, pick over the disappointing merchandise at the commissary, explore the surrounding area, go to the cinema, and indulge in cocktail hour.<sup>74</sup> If an American woman’s home had dull floors or was not immaculately tidy, assumptions were made that she did not know “how to run her servants.” In the 1930s, it was generally agreed that Mrs. Worcester, widow of Dean, set the standard for imperial hauteur in the provincial capital.<sup>75</sup>

While Americans in the Philippines were delighted by tropical fruits and vegetables, they also desired familiar staples from North America. As most goods were shipped from Manila, where the best items were picked over first, American personnel in the South were often left with the second-rate remainders. When a special meal occurred, particularly in the early years of the occupation, it was a cause for celebration. So much so that Walter Cutter recorded the entire menu of the Thanksgiving meal he had at Jolo in 1901, commenting that “under the fierce rays of the tropical sun, with swarthy Mohammedans looking curiously on, it seemed a strange setting for the old New England holiday.” The menu for the Christmas meal Cutter ate the following month was transcribed in even greater detail.<sup>76</sup> For the officers, such meals were extensive. At the 23<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Mess’ thirteenth anniversary dinner in late 1909, those present feasted on caviar on toast, devilled Illana Bay crabs, fillet of beef with mushroom sauce, crème de menthe, and duty-free cigars,<sup>77</sup> all while singing songs that

---

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., 158.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., 160.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid.

<sup>76</sup> “Wearing the Khaki: Diary of a High Private,” November-December 1901, Box 1. Walter Cutter Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>77</sup> “23<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Mess Thirteenth Anniversary Dinner – Menu,” 4 December 1909, Box 11, Folder 9. Hugh Drum Papers, USAHEC.

humorously skewered the trials and tribulations of life on Jolo.<sup>78</sup> Those stationed near Bud Dajo in 1911, was less enthusiastic about what was being served, writing in a letter to his wife that “the meat + potatoes + all were cooked to a sort of thick pulp” and he was constantly ravenous as a result.<sup>79</sup>

As Susie Protschky notes in her study of culinary habits in the Dutch East Indies, “eating assumed a deep significance: it performed the social function of demonstrating cultural affiliation” in colonial environments.<sup>80</sup> For Americans, especially those living in isolated areas, what food was consumed and how it was consumed was important to maintaining hierarchies of difference. This applied not only to holidays and special events, but also to everyday life. Charles Ivins noticed this when he visited the Goodyear rubber plantation at Kabsalan. Despite arriving in the middle of the night, Ivins was met by two plantation labourers, who pushed him on a flat car along a narrow-gauge railway for two miles over a “pestilential swamp” until he arrived at the manager’s home in the early hours of the morning. There he was greeted with “a couple rounds of drinks and a large dinner” that was prepared for the Americans by the Filipino cooks and houseboys. Ivins explained that the servants enjoyed serving them dinner and drinks at such an advanced hour because the Filipino “likes to make people happy.”<sup>81</sup> For men like Ivins and the writer Vic Hurley, who was then working at Kabsalan, maintaining civilized behaviour in the midst of the untamed wilderness of Mindanao reified their status as bearers of a superior culture, and meals like the one described were totemic in their significance.

At Kabsalan, Ivins also participated in amateur exploration, another popular pastime of American colonials. If the imagined *terra incognita* of Mindanao and Sulu was ‘mastered’

---

<sup>78</sup> This included one song addressed to Wild Bill Cody about how the 23<sup>rd</sup> had “a show” in Jolo to top his own travelling Western revue, and another about the indignities of Philippinitis - “Rare Bits,” 4 December 1909, Box 11, Folder 9. Hugh Drum Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>79</sup> Letter from Matthew Steele to Wife, 24 December 1911, Box 12, Folder 1. Matthew Steele Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>80</sup> Susie Protschky, “The Colonial Table: Food, Culture and Dutch Identity in Colonial Indonesia,” *Australian Journal of Politics and History* 54.3 (2008): 356.

<sup>81</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 126-127, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

in the towns where Americans resided, elsewhere it was utilized by those with a sense of adventure and a wish to prove themselves against untamed nature. The American presence in the archipelago coincided with the last great era of exploration, and the idea of the great Victorian adventurer, while dwindling, still maintained a hold on the popular imagination. In the 1920s, newspapers avidly covered expeditions like that of the doomed Percy Fawcett in the Amazon, and many of the world's highest peaks remained unscaled.<sup>82</sup> Add to this the Rooseveltian ideal of the "vigorous life," and the result was a class of American men and women in the Southern Philippines who saw the occasional sojourn into the wilds as a mark of strength.

Betty Hurley, wife of Vic, led treks into the jungle surrounding Kabsalan. "Betty was the only white woman within a hundred miles and was of course quite an object of interest on that account," Ivins related. "That afternoon she took us on an extended hike over some of her favourite trails. Doc and I were used to long hikes carrying plenty of equipment but Betty set a fast pace that had us soon panting for breath." Leeches besieged the party, but Ivins described the adventure as one of good fun.<sup>83</sup> Betty Hurley was by no means the only woman who trekked into Mindanao's interior. Three decades earlier, Maud Jenks travelled across Lake Lanao with her husband as they secured the human exhibits for the St. Louis World's Fair. Jenks, an active participant in her husband's scholarly pursuits, noted the tribal histories of the people she met in letters home to her mother. She boasted of "[probing] the wilds

---

<sup>82</sup> For an excellent popular history of the colonial obsession with exploration, mapping, and myth through the lens of the Fawcett expedition, see David Grann, *The Lost City of Z: A Tale of Deadly Obsession in the Amazon* (New York: Vintage, 2010).

<sup>83</sup> "The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga," Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 129, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC. Betty Hurley was an interesting character whose life, along with that of Caroline Spencer, demonstrates the ways in which isolated colonial environments occasionally freed white women from certain gender constraints. Of course, this was partially due to the benefits of having a native servant class performing all the domestic duties that would have been expected of them. At one point, in an anecdote ripe with implied comic emasculation, Ivins relates how on a fishing trip Betty caught a barracuda much larger than what Vic could manage, thereby establishing her bona fides as 'one of the guys.' Betty Hurley was typical of a small but understudied segment of American women who used colonial travel as a means of bypassing the constrictions of 'femininity' back home. See, for example, Isabel Foster, "Women Answer the Call of Adventure," *Hartford Courant*, 24 June 1928, E1.

where no white woman has ever been before” in multiple letters, saying she felt “quite honored.”<sup>84</sup>

Treks into the unknown were encouraged from the outset of American rule. In 1901, the anthropologist and Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes chief David Prescott Barrows issued a pamphlet to volunteer field workers for the Museum of Ethnology, Natural History and Commerce giving extensive directions for non-specialists to take anthropometric measurements of the natives, question them about their cultural practices, and record their vocabulary. The reports sent back to the Bureau would then be used for investigations regarding: “1. Miscegenation in the Philippines, 2. Racial Pathology in the Philippines, 3. Racial Psychology, 4. Criminal Anthropology, 5. Viability of the Chinese Population.”<sup>85</sup> This spoke to a broader project of population mapping and control, but the governing idea of the document – that the entire Philippine Archipelago was a blank slate and gaps in knowledge could be filled by even non-specialist contributions – often intersected with the daily lives of those colonials who ventured, or were assigned, outside of built-up stations. Such outings were common in the South. Fred Passmore, then Acting Division Superintendent of Education for Lanao, described in detail to J.R. Hayden a two-day hiking trip around the Ragain region southeast of Dansalan. The climate was “unsurpassed” as was the “scenery,” which included the Moro settlements the hiking group passed through. “The native culture...is surely most interesting and in some respects replete with charm,” Passmore reflected.<sup>86</sup>

The army surgeon Charles Hack spent his free time along the southern shores of Lake Lanao studying the local flora and fauna. During one visit to the Mataling River, he recorded his descriptions of the various plants that grew there and, lost in thought, marvelled at how close he was “to the heart of nature.” Despite the presence of Moro villages throughout the area, Hack reflected that it was “strange to think of the United States having territory that is

---

<sup>84</sup> Jenks, *Death Stalks*, 177-179.

<sup>85</sup> David Prescott Barrows, *Circular of Information Instructions for Volunteer Field Workers – The Museum of Ethnology, Natural History and Commerce* (Manila: The Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, 1901), 8.

<sup>86</sup> Letter from Fred J. Passmore to J.R. Hayden, 17 September 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

yet unexplored.”<sup>87</sup> The surgeon collected Moro manufactures and extensively listed them in his journal. He gave a partial accounting, noting he had fifteen *krises* (the most valuable being those with intricate patterns or those that had killed people), seven *agongs*, a *lantaka*, three spears, a betel nut box, a coat of mail and brass helmet, and some sarongs, among other items.<sup>88</sup> He eventually shipped his collection back to the United States, where his widow donated it to the Museum of Natural History in New York City after his death.<sup>89</sup>

W. Cameron Forbes also accumulated a collection during trips to Mindanao and Sulu, making repeated reference to his *lantakas*, *krises*, *barongs* and other curiosities in his journal.<sup>90</sup> Many Westerners stationed in or visiting the Southern Philippines shared an enthusiasm for collecting Moro weapons, clothing, and jewelry. Seymour Howell wrote to his wife about searching for “desirable brass work” in the markets of Zamboanga,<sup>91</sup> and J.R. Hayden wrote home describing the fine silks available in Jolo.<sup>92</sup> Here, the enthusiasms of the amateur anthropologist coalesced with the commodification of Moro culture, which could be purchased and sent to the United States to be admired for its Oriental exoticism. Business-minded residents, Moro and Western alike, soon realized the market for such items and produced them at greater rates. Jos. S. Johnston of Zamboanga manufactured picture postcards that featured idealized scenes of Mindanao and Sulu,<sup>93</sup> and the American Bazaar sold everything from “gentlemen’s furnishing goods” to “novelties” at prices “cheaper than you can buy elsewhere in Philippines.”<sup>94</sup>

---

<sup>87</sup> Journal of Charles W. Hack, 22 June 1902, Box 1, Folder 7. Charles Hack Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid.

<sup>89</sup> List of Artifacts in Hack’s Collection, 1919-1926, Box 1, Folder 9. Charles Hack Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>90</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 3, 13 July 1909. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>91</sup> Letter from W. Seymour Howell to Wife, 22 February 1903, Box 01. Howell-Taylor Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>92</sup> Letter from J.R. Hayden to Betty Hayden, 17 September 1926, Box 28, Folder 26. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>93</sup> Advertisement: Jos. S. Johnston, *Mindanao Herald*, 3 February 1909. This was a common imperial practice. As Paul Barclay observes in his examination of postcards from Japanese-controlled Taiwan, “for the first two decades of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the picture postcard was the dominant source of photographic imagery from the colony.” Paul D. Barclay, “Peddling Postcards and Selling Empire: Image-Making in Taiwan under Japanese Colonial Rule,” *Japanese Studies* 30 (2010): 81-110.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid.



Alongside exploring and collecting, photography was also a popular hobby for American colonials. Technological developments in the field meant that by the early twentieth-century barriers to owning and operating a camera had largely vanished. Those interested in capturing environmental knowledge through the medium were increasingly free to do so. Dean Worcester became the most famous practitioner of this trend in the Philippines, turning an amateur interest into a vast archive cataloguing the peoples of the archipelago and contributing to anthropological studies of the day.<sup>95</sup> Most colonials taking photographs in the Muslim South did not have the resources, access, or inclinations of Dean Worcester, yet what pictures they did take are still telling. As Krista Thompson notes in her study of photography in the British Caribbean colonies, images were often a means for colonials to depict idealized versions of the tropical environment while also conveying a sense of “exemplary and disciplined” colonial societies.<sup>96</sup> Photographs from the period convey the innate foreignness of the people and environment of the Southern Philippines, and promote visions of disciplined Anglo-Saxon men mastering wild peoples.

Constabulary officer Sterling Larrabee exemplified the practice of visually documenting life in Mindanao and Sulu. Photographs regularly accompanied the letters he mailed to his parents in the United States. In one missive from 1912, he included a variety of photographs taken during his time on an expedition in the Mindanao interior. A casual shot of “Lt. Johnson frying some *carabao* liver” is appended with the offhanded comment “We shot the *carabao* along with two Moros that morning,” suggesting violence was routine to the point of banality for Larrabee and his men. Another photograph shows Captain Guy O. Fort of the Constabulary with two Moro *capitazes* (men in charge of baggage-carrying). The two Moros stand with hands on their hips as Captain Fort observes them. “Fort speaks the Malanao Moro dialect like a native,” Larrabee explained to his parents, also mentioning that the “picture shows the Malanao (Lake Lanao) type of Moro to perfection.”<sup>97</sup>

---

<sup>95</sup> Rice, *Fantasy Islands*, 1-39.

<sup>96</sup> Krista Thompson, *An Eye for the Tropics: Tourism, Photography, and Framing the Caribbean Picturesque* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2006), 7.

<sup>97</sup> Letter and Photographs from Sterling Larrabee to Parents, 18 June 1912, Box 1. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC.

In his personal scrapbook Larrabee paired newspaper articles about skirmishes he participated in with photographs he took. A report from the *New York Herald* about a battle between Constabulary soldiers and Moro outlaws was pasted alongside informal pictures of Moros at rest and work, as well as a staged portrait of a Lanao headman and his retinue.<sup>98</sup> Larrabee also dabbled in photographs resembling the formal ethnographic ones taken by academics like Worcester. A letter to his parents in August 1911 included two photographs, one of 1<sup>st</sup> Sergeant Malaco<sup>99</sup> and the other of one of Larrabee's "*muchachos*," a boy named Bwasa whom he taught to read and write. In the shots, a sheet is hung behind each subject to isolate them from their surroundings, and they are similarly captured: full body, hands to the side, staring directly into the camera.<sup>100</sup> These photographs, along with that of the "perfect" Lanao Moros, display a preoccupation with rigorous documentation and categorization of living environments common to colonial photography.

Robert Lee Bullard, famous for his service in the First World War, also spent his leisure time photographing the landscapes and inhabitants of the Southern Philippines. Staged group portraits in his collection include nearly every important Moro leader in the region during the transition to civilian rule in 1913 and 1914. Bullard was a fastidious caption-writer, recording not only the names of the dignitaries, but also the roles of their retainers. He took informal photographs of Moro *krises*, Moro road labourers, the pier at Jolo, American soldiers on patrol and at rest amidst lush tropical surroundings, and even Moro women bathing.<sup>101</sup> Photographs of nude or semi-nude Moros were in keeping with the social mores of the time, which, taking their lead from the ethnographic portraiture found in magazines like *National Geographic*, dictated that capturing images of nudity did not constitute moral

---

<sup>98</sup> "20 Moro Outlaws Killed in Battle," *New York Herald*, 19 February 1911.

<sup>99</sup> Malaco appears in Vic Hurley's *Jungle Patrol*, helping Lieutenant Oscar Preuss fight rebellious Lanao Moros. Hurley notes that Malaco was "the only man in the history of the Philippine Constabulary to win two Medals of Valor," a fact also mentioned by Larrabee – Vic Hurley, *Jungle Patrol: The Story of the Philippine Constabulary* (New York: E.P. Dutton & Co., 1938), 321.

<sup>100</sup> Letter from Sterling Larrabee to Parents, 4 August 1911, Box 1. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>101</sup> "Photographs – Moros," Box 10. Robert Lee Bullard Papers, LOC-MD.

transgression if the subjects were of semi-civilized racial stock.<sup>102</sup> Frank McCoy, who returned to the Philippines with the Wood-Forbes mission in 1921, likewise photographed exposed natives.<sup>103</sup> Anthropologists and eugenicists of the period promoted ‘scientifically managed’ photography of naked non-white peoples as a tool which revealed racial-civilizational truths, yet neither Bullard nor McCoy were taking their photos as part of any academic exercise.<sup>104</sup> Rather, they had internalized the dominant mode of visually cataloguing foreign bodies and utilized this knowledge when taking photographs for pleasure.

Americans in the Southern Philippines went to great efforts to manage their environment, maintain domestic standards, and replicate the popular social activities they engaged in at home in the United States. The distinctions they maintained between themselves and the natives were established to demonstrate not only the superiority of Western culture, but also as a bulwark against racial pollution or transgression. The natural environment (which, to colonials, included the natives) provided a space where one could show their adventurous spirit, participate in the larger colonial project of ‘discovery,’ collect unique indigenous items to demonstrate one’s familiarity with Oriental cultures, or study the local flora and fauna through photography. Yet these pursuits rested upon unstable ground.

## Dissipation and Breakdown

Alongside sporting events, parades, dances, and other leisurely pursuits were pervasive fears about the deleterious effects of climate and immorality on the American body and psyche. In the Southern Philippines, these concerns were expressed in diffuse ways, in some cases being considered dire medical emergencies and in others topics of levity. What remained constant were general anxieties about what has been alternately referred to as tropical neurasthenia,

---

<sup>102</sup> The role of *National Geographic* in presenting empire in the Philippines to the American public is explored in Julie A. Tuason, “The Ideology of Empire in National Geographic Magazine’s Coverage of the Philippines, 1898-1908,” *Geographical Review* 89.1 (1999): 34-53.

<sup>103</sup> Personal photographs affixed to *Report of the Special Mission to the Philippines*, 1921, Box 82. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>104</sup> Philippa Levine, “States of Undress: Nakedness and the Colonial Imagination,” *Victorian Studies* 50.2 (2008): 206-07.

colonial breakdown, and, in lighter accounts, ‘Philippinitis.’<sup>105</sup> Military reports, civilians and soldiers writing home, amateur poets, barracks newsletters, medical professionals, and diarists all commented on the condition. Beneath the seemingly bucolic conditions in Zamboanga and Dansalan were lingering anxieties about the ways the environment and its inhabitants could spur degeneration in Westerners and destabilize the colonial project.

In his study of American tropical medicine in the Philippines, Warwick Anderson explores the shifting understandings of colonial breakdown among U.S. military and civilian personnel. The early years of the occupation, he argues, were characterized by a belief that cases of collapse in the Philippines were “an unfortunate but understandable failure of character – letting down the side of manly civilization, but perhaps the side was physiologically a forlorn hope in such a climate.”<sup>106</sup> The latter half of the American period saw a decrease in diagnoses of tropical breakdown, partially, according to Anderson, due to a smaller white presence in the archipelago, but also because of increasing currency of Freudian ideas among medical professionals. This created a shift from a “mechanistic” to a “psychodynamic” model of understanding breakdown. Explanatory models now tended to link nervousness and emotional collapse with psychosexual disorders. “The white man’s dirty secret was replacing the white man’s burden,” and there was a growing reticence among Americans in the Philippines to seek diagnosis or treatment.<sup>107</sup>

As with many other aspects of American colonial empire in the early twentieth-century, fears of tropical neurasthenia and related forms of breakdown were shared among other white colonial regimes around the globe. In her article on the linkages between metropolitan psychiatric practices and understandings of tropical neurasthenia in the British Empire, Anna Crozier contends that colonial administrations used the diagnosis of tropical neurasthenia to control their officials, discarding those deemed unfit to serve, and that this

---

<sup>105</sup> This term was popularized by the American neurologist George Miller Beard. For his work on the topic, see George M. Beard and A.D. Rockwell, *A Practical Treatise on Nervous Exhaustion (Neurasthenia) its Symptoms, Nature, Sequences, Treatment* (New York: E.B. Treat, 1889).

<sup>106</sup> Anderson, *Colonial Pathologies*, 139.

<sup>107</sup> *Ibid.*, 153.

practice eventually extended into non-governmental organizations.<sup>108</sup> Recent developments in the field suggest discussions of race, climatic conditions, and empire can be understood within the context of imperial “helplessness” and epistemic uncertainties.<sup>109</sup> Thus, when we discuss colonial breakdown in the Southern Philippines we are situated within transcolonial conversations predating American colonial empire in the Pacific.

Early reports from Mindanao and Sulu highlight the comparative thinking of military officials. George Langhorne, secretary of the Moro Province, recorded in 1904 that there was

nothing in the climate of this portion of the islands which prohibits long residence here. The British residents of North Borneo and the Malay Peninsula and the Dutch in Java manage to live apparently very contented and healthy lives in those countries, which are hotter than any portion of the Philippine Islands. While service is in a way severe, it does not seem to deter the average Englishman or Dutchman from competing eagerly for positions in the government of the colonies, and it is believed that Americans can live and do good work where any other white race can. A moral life, with plenty of hard work, will be found to counteract in most cases the so-called demoralizing effects of the Philippine climate.<sup>110</sup>

If the British and Dutch survived in the tropics, Langhorne thought, the Americans could thrive in them, particularly if citizens of the “best class” were brought to the islands.<sup>111</sup>

---

<sup>108</sup> Anna Crozier, “What Was Tropical About Tropical Neurasthenia? The Utility of the Diagnosis in the Management of British East Africa,” *Journal of the History of Medicine and Allied Sciences* 64.4 (2009): 546–547. For other examples see Chakrabarti, *Medicine and Empire*; Mark Harrison, *Climates and Constitutions: Health, Race, Environment and British Imperialism in India 1600–1850* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999); Marijke Gijswijt-Hofstra and Roy Porter, eds., *Cultures of Neurasthenia from Beard to the First World War* (Amsterdam: Rodopi, 2001); Charlotte Rogers, *Jungle Fever: Exploring Madness and Medicine in Twentieth-Century Tropical Narratives* (Nashville: Vanderbilt University Press, 2012).

<sup>109</sup> Maurus Reinkowski and Gregor Thum, eds., *Helpless Imperialists: Imperial Failure, Fear and Radicalization* (Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 2013); James Beattie, *Empire and Environmental Anxiety: Health, Science, Art and Conservation in South Asia and Australasia, 1800–1920* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2011).

<sup>110</sup> Langhorne, *Annual Report 1904*, 21.

<sup>111</sup> *Ibid.*

Nevertheless, the colonial ideal of the citizen-soldier-settler prospering in the tropical environment was destabilized repeatedly in the lives of colonials in Mindanao and Sulu.

Accounts of nervous exhaustion are evident in the writings of the earliest American chroniclers of the Muslim South. A typical example is the journal of the army surgeon Charles W. Hack. Arriving in Mindanao in 1902, Hack was optimistic. He preferred the Moros to the Christian Filipinos, and wrote enthusiastically about how the Muslim children spoke English, the quality of the rubber market, and the abundance of fruits and vegetables in Lanao. Even when posted to remote Camp Vicars at the southern end of Lake Lanao, Hack remained pragmatically upbeat. He wrote in June 1902 that “the life is rough and hard here; we have no pleasures except those we make for ourselves. We sleep with our clothes on, eat bacon and hard tack, etc., but I do not care so much.”<sup>112</sup>

Eventually the difficult environment, poor quality army food, and his own racial and religious suspicions began to erode Hack’s adventurous bonhomie. At the end of June he was moved to an even more isolated post at Mataling Falls. Hack fulminated against the Maranao communities surrounding him in his journal. “They (being Mohammedan) have no regard for human life...It seems that no Malay can be trusted, whether Moro, Filipino or whatever,” he wrote on June 30<sup>th</sup>.<sup>113</sup> While still enjoying collecting local manufactures, Hack became increasingly disaffected by the military’s unwillingness or inability to move against the Moros “on account of politics in the States.”<sup>114</sup> He began dreading roll call each morning and by September his diary was punctuated by racist screeds about the intractability of the American position in Lanao.

Charles Hack blamed his worsening condition not on the consistent fighting between the Maranao Moros and the Americans, but rather on the climate and his remove from proper civilization. This remove, which saw him “nearly six months without even being in a house, and no music, theatres, clubs or anything of that kind or church,” left him “nothing short of

---

<sup>112</sup> Journal of Charles W. Hack, 2 June 1902, Box 1, Folder 7. Charles Hack Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>113</sup> Ibid., 30 June 1902.

<sup>114</sup> Ibid., 9 August 1902.

lazy.”<sup>115</sup> Ironically, his ‘Philippinitis’ caused difficulty when pursuing cultivated studies, and he concluded, near the end of his time in Lanao, “I trust when we return to the States any energy we may have once had will return. I am not only speaking of my own case, but this is the experience of nearly everyone I have been associated with.”<sup>116</sup> Amidst denunciations of the Moros and Filipinos as racially and culturally inferior, Hack’s diaries display a creeping unease about the destabilizing qualities of the isolated tropical environment on the civilized character of the American male.

Hack’s journal entries speak to a larger concern about the ability of American men to serve in the Southern Philippines during the first decade of the 1900s. In February 1903, an article in the *Manila Times* about troop replacement in Lanao focused mainly on the intolerable conditions there. The soldiers were plagued by ill health and on the verge of malnourishment. The newspaper bitterly observed that the troops were forced to double as road labourers as “the Moros did not have the heart” to perform the tasks the Americans demanded of them.<sup>117</sup> The *Times*’ account of climactic and epidemiological conditions at points verged on the biblical. Descriptions of the weather emphasized the oppressive heat and excessive rainfall, which at times turned into floods “lasting often as long as from twenty-five to thirty days.” When the floodwaters receded “the bodies of those who succumb in the floods appear later suspended in the trees on account of the lack of dry earth in which to bury them.” The prevalence of cholera, smallpox, and “fevers of the most malignant type” ensured high death rates and infirmities among Americans. Dysentery in Lanao was so acute and widespread that the *Times* reported soldiers were “merely dragging themselves along on their rounds of duty on account of the wasting disease.”<sup>118</sup>

Far from being private, forms of physical and emotional collapse were so common amongst military personnel that regimental newspapers discussed them openly. In 1909, the *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka* featured a long tongue-in-cheek description of ‘Philippinitis’

---

<sup>115</sup> Ibid., 30 September 1902.

<sup>116</sup> Ibid.

<sup>117</sup> “Mindanao Troops May Be Relieved,” *Manila Times*, 14 February 1903.

<sup>118</sup> Ibid.

in its pages. Ostensibly responding to a question posed by a female reader in Philadelphia, the editors of the *Lantaka* gave a comically philosophical accounting of what ‘Philippinitis’ was, or was not: “There is no theory to account for it and no practice to fit it. It is like the wicked flea: the moment a man discovers that he has it, he has it not. There is neither subjective nor objective consciousness of a Philippinitic state. It is fortuitous, sporadic, imminent, and may be figured on as closely as where the lightning will strike or what turn a balky mule will take next.” Philippinitis, it claimed, had existed “since the days of Methuselah, but it is only within the last decade that the preponderance of American population in the tropics has resulted in finding a name for it.”<sup>119</sup>

The *Lantaka* also reported on serious regimental news, and distinguished between ‘Philippinitis’ and actual cases of mental collapse. In relating the goings-on around Parang, the paper lamented the departure of one Lieutenant Pepper and his wife. Pepper had been shipped back to the United States on sick leave. “He has been afflicted with neurasthenia for some time,” the newspaper read, “and it is sincerely hoped that the trip and home atmosphere will return him to health.”<sup>120</sup> To the editors of the *Lantaka*, when a state of collapse became serious enough, it ceased being the existentially absurd ‘Philippinitis’ and was medicalized as ‘neurasthenia.’ The dichotomy presented in the publication suggests shifting understandings of the relationship between minds, bodies, and the tropical environment.

J. Franklin Bell, commander of the Philippines Division in the waning years of the military period, held strong views about the health of the troops and the effects of isolation and climate. In a 1914 report on shortening tours of duty, Bell assessed the benefits and shortcomings of each military station in Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>121</sup> “Every comfort and

---

<sup>119</sup> Editors, “Philippinitis,” *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka*, 20 November 1909, 4-5.

<sup>120</sup> “News Notes,” *Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka*, 20 November 1909, 7.

<sup>121</sup> Other members of the army brass likewise considered environmental effects on the troops, although their conclusions were not always sympathetic. A memorandum from 1908 shows that every station in the Southern Philippines was considered on the basis of climate, sanitary conditions, access to potable water, and reliability of supply transportation. While it spoke favourably of the “healthful” climate and “excellent” facilities for supply in places like Zamboanga and Camp Keithley, the writer of the document was more circumspect in discussing the difficult conditions at isolated posts like Camp Vicars or Cotabato. – Memorandum on Military Bases in Mindanao and Sulu, 24 February 1908, Box 217, Folder 9. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.



convenience available in Manila will be obtainable there. Better markets could not be expected,” Bell wrote of Zamboanga. Only Camp John Hay in Baguio exceeded Camp Keithley in the “healthfulness and comfort” of its climate. Augur Barracks in Jolo received the mildest criticism: “Opportunity for amusement and recreation is limited.”<sup>122</sup> With these considerations in mind, Bell regarded those who succumbed to the “depressive effect” and “monotony of life at remote and outlying stations” as moral failures. The cause of breakdown was not environmental but internal, with soldiers who “have not sufficient determination and perseverance to maintain a proper regimen” more likely to “suffer from the effects which have been noted in the letter of the Department Surgeon and the Sanitary Inspector.” Bell’s refutation of the Sanitary Inspector’s recommendations extended to officers, and he claimed that only those “who crave the fleshpots of society” were averse to postings outside of Manila.<sup>123</sup> Bell’s conception of breakdown as entirely linked to social dissipation, with implications of substance abuse and sexual immorality, may have been influenced by pragmatic concerns. Shortened tours of duty increased military costs for transportation and training.

The onset of civilian rule did little to decrease fears about the state of the occidental body, and Americans continued to suffer similar ailments. The most prominent of these was Governor Frank Carpenter, whose service in the Philippines led to repeated breakdowns, and “a progressive invalidism with repeated relapses on account of disease of the heart and circulatory system ‘contracted in the line of duty.’”<sup>124</sup> Carpenter was one of the longest-serving American officials in the Philippines. Coming to the islands in 1899 as a stenographer attached to the 4<sup>th</sup> U.S. Army Corps, he served in a variety of administrative positions in the Central and Northern Philippines for the next decade and a half. By the time he was transferred to the South, Carpenter was already in poor health.<sup>125</sup> Writing about Carpenter in

---

<sup>122</sup> J. Franklin Bell, “Report on Shortening Philippines Tour of Duty,” 8 September 1914, Box 217, Folder 3. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>123</sup> *Ibid.*, 35-36.

<sup>124</sup> Frank W. Carpenter, “Memorandum Regarding Government Service of Frank W. Carpenter,” October 1915, 8, Box 1. Frank Carpenter Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>125</sup> *Ibid.*, 1-3

1915, Governor General Francis Burton Harrison ascribed Carpenter's poor state not only to his ceaseless work ethic but also "continued residence for so long a time in the tropics,"<sup>126</sup> suggesting that an American could only survive for a finite period of time in such a place before collapse.

Carpenter remained in the Philippines until the early 1920s, by which time the Department of Mindanao and Sulu had been disestablished and reorganized into a series of smaller provinces under the direction of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes. After two years of recovery in Japan, he returned to private life in the United States. The lingering effects of Carpenter's service led him, in the mid-1930s, to lobby the U.S. Senate and Congress for dispensation to receive a military pension on account of the length of his service and his ailments. In 1935, he wrote Rep. Richard B. Wigglesworth, giving an account of how he was, at sixty-four, "without resources, completely incapacitated, not only for manual labour but also for any gainful employment" as a result of his time in the Philippines.<sup>127</sup> In 1937, the Senate granted Carpenter an annuity amounting to \$1,800 per annum, in recognition that he was "broken in health due to long service in the tropics."<sup>128</sup>

James Fugate, Governor of Sulu in the 1920s and 1930s, also attributed his failing health to life in the tropics, and in correspondence with J.R. Hayden spoke of recurrent stomach troubles and throat issues limiting him to a single meal per day.<sup>129</sup> The botanist H.H. Bartlett met Fugate while accompanying Hayden on an inspection tour of the South in 1935 and described him as being "in bad health...and hanging on by grim determination."<sup>130</sup> Fugate's correspondence from the period was marked by a stoic fatalism: the colonial

---

<sup>126</sup> Letter from Francis Burton Harrison to Lindley Garrison, 5 November 1915, Box 1. Frank Carpenter Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>127</sup> Letter from Frank Carpenter to Richard B. Wigglesworth, 20 February 1935, Box 1. Frank Carpenter Papers.

<sup>128</sup> United States Senate. Committee on Territories and Insular Affairs, *Frank W. Carpenter* (S. 1699), by Henry Cabot Lodge Jr. (Washington: United States Government Printing Office, 1937).

<sup>129</sup> Letter from James Fugate to J.R. Hayden, 1932, Box 29, Folder 30. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>130</sup> "Diary of a Twelve-Day Tour with Vice-Governor Hayden From Manila to Sulu and Back," 14 September 1935, Box 8. Harley Harris Bartlett Papers, BHL.

administrator fighting for civilizational coherence against the politicking of the local Moro elites and the onslaught of tropical fecundity.<sup>131</sup>

As with most subjects, Charles Ivins had strong opinions about the effects of the Muslim South on the American mind and body. The officers he encountered at Camp Keithley troubled him. “It seemed that prolonged existence in the tropics working for and with natives erodes a white man’s character,” Ivins observed. “He seems to have a chip on his shoulder and usually gradually deteriorates, often resorting to alcohol.”<sup>132</sup> Conversely, Ivins believed the natives had assimilated “the improvements in Western thought and science, they know they are on the way up, whereas the whites know they are on the way down.” Ivins was quick to clarify that he referred to Caucasians who went “over to the native side – not to those who remain in the employ of homeside commercial entities or who are able to run their own businesses.”<sup>133</sup> In his worldview, Moro or Filipino contact with American culture could only improve their wellbeing, while those Americans assimilating into native cultures were destined to waste away.

Elsewhere in his memoirs, Ivins addressed relations between the respectable segments of the colonial class (including himself, naturally) and those Americans who transgressed. The latter permanently settled in Mindanao and violated racial-sexual boundaries by marrying and having children with local women. These men were “usually soldiers who had been retired at lower grades” and were referred to as “Sunshiners.” Ivins noted their penchant for cheap “square-face” gin, which they bought from Chinese merchants, and the way they wandered around “stooped over, with dull vacant eyes” when in the midst of a binge. He separated them further from the administrative and business classes by commenting on their aversion to shaving and bathing, making light of their stench. Racial tropes linking tropical inhabitants with unhygienic practices were thusly employed to recategorize these problematic men as something other than white or American, allowing Ivins and his ilk to view them as

---

<sup>131</sup> Letter from James Fugate to J.R. Hayden, 28 December 1933, Box 29, Folder 29. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>132</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 186, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>133</sup> *Ibid.*, 187.

ridiculous savages rather than countrymen who made the conscious decision to live outside status quo demarcations of class and race.<sup>134</sup>

The Sunshiners and their lives also provided an arena for sexual titillation. In recounting his encounters with them, Ivins spoke of “a giant of a man” who came down the coast to Zamboanga every few months to resupply. This American ex-soldier had married several native women and each time he visited the commissary he invited Ivins to come to his homestead “and to make the acquaintance of his wives and daughters, the latter of whom he assured me with a broad wink, would do their best to make my journey socially enjoyable.”<sup>135</sup> The suggestions of boundary violation here speak to the persistent belief among officials in Mindanao that the tropics were a sensuous and debased space, where a man could easily indulge himself in temporal delights – but at the cost of his racial fitness.<sup>136</sup> In Ivins’ estimation, combatting the deleterious climactic effects and lurid natives involved constant diligence.<sup>137</sup>

Connected to these fears of racial, sexual, and medical breakdown were gendered notions that depicted the tropics as a crucible of manliness. If the white man could survive the moral and physical hazards of the environment, he stood to reap great rewards from the untapped riches of the land. Robert Aldrich’s observations about French colonial masculinity apply here. He writes that “manly virtues provided the mettle of empire, with manly pleasures

---

<sup>134</sup> Ibid., 169.

<sup>135</sup> Ibid., 170. Fixations with intermarriage and métissage were by no means limited to the American colonial empire. See Damon Ieremia Salesa, *Racial Crossings: Race, Intermarriage, and the Victorian British Empire* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2011); Eika Tai, “The Discourse of Intermarriage in Colonial Taiwan,” *The Journal of Japanese Studies* 40.1 (2014): 87-116; Daniel J. Walther, “Sex, Race and Empire: White Male Sexuality and the ‘Other’ in Germany’s Colonies, 1894-1914,” *German Studies Review* 33.1 (2010): 45-71.

<sup>136</sup> Ivins also told the story of ‘Coal Pile’ Johnson, an American soldier who stayed in the Southern Philippines after the insurrection ended in the early 1902 and impregnated a range of local women, resulting “in a fair sprinkling of young *mestizos* in that part of the province.” Ivins liked him, noting that Coal Pile took in destitute children when their mothers could not raise them and was also a savvy businessman. Nevertheless, because he had married a native and “on account of his elastic conception of the marriage bond, he was not accepted socially by White Zamboanga society.” Ivins speculated that at the time of writing his memoirs Coal Pile had “gone to his celestial reward” and was chasing Filipinas in heaven. In his story, we see an intersection of fascination and repulsion towards transgressors of racial demarcations – “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 62, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>137</sup> Ibid., 120.

as its rewards...the French man had constantly to promote and defend his manliness as the brave soldier, the wise administrator, the hard-working colonist, and to cast himself into the role of the *civilized* man juxtaposed to the savage one.”<sup>138</sup> As with the French colonial man so with the American one. When Vic Hurley arrived in Zamboanga in the mid-1920s he optimistically observed that “all the romance of the tropics was there, just as it had been in the story books.”<sup>139</sup> After a successful NCAA track career at the University of Oregon, he came to Mindanao to grow coconuts and belladonna, acquiring a plot of land with his business partner in a remote part of Southern Cotabato rarely visited by white colonials. In braving the flora and fauna of Mindanao, Hurley hoped to get rich and prove his mettle.

Surveying the human landscape before departing from Zamboanga, the young writer sneered at those who confined themselves to the “drinking parties and bridge parties” of Zamboanga and then bragged of “tropic service” upon returning to the United States. He was, however, fascinated by the sexual politics of the town, commenting that when an American man married a “little *mestiza* girl” he found that “every white door swings shut to him. He is forced to associate with the Filipinos. His job suffers and in time he fades from the picture.” Like Ivins, Hurley was fascinated by the Sunshiners, who were “completely ostracized by the whites.” These outcasts, tending to small plots of land and surviving off their modest U.S. Army pensions, had “deliberately forsaken the ways of the white men.” Still, Hurley

---

<sup>138</sup> Robert Aldrich, “Colonial Man,” in *French Masculinities: History, Culture and Politics*, ed. Christopher E. Forth et al. (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007): 136. Aldrich’s work is situated within a rich body of literature that analyzes how masculinities and femininities were shaped by empire, and vice-versa. See, for examples, Robert Aldrich, *Colonialism and Homosexuality* (New York: Routledge, 2002); Warwick Anderson, “The Trespass Speaks: White Masculinity and Colonial Breakdown,” *The American Historical Review* 102.5 (1997): 1342-1370; Denise Cruz, *Transpacific Feminities: The Making of the Modern Filipina* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2012); James S. Duncan, “The Struggle to be Temperate: Climate and ‘Moral Masculinity’ in Mid-Nineteenth Century Ceylon,” *Singapore Journal of Tropical Geography* 21.2 (2000): 34-47; Harald Fischer-Tiné and Susanne Gehrman, eds., *Empires and Boundaries: Rethinking Race, Class, and Gender in Colonial Settings* (New York: Routledge, 2009); Wilson Chacko Jacob, *Working Out Egypt: Effendi Masculinity and Subject Formation in Colonial Modernity, 1870-1940* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2011); J.A. Mangan, *‘Manufactured’ Masculinity: Making Imperial Manliness, Morality and Militarism* (New York: Routledge, 2012); Sara Mills, *Gender and Colonial Space* (Manchester: Manchester University Press, 2005); Michael D. Pante, “A Collision of Masculinities: Men, Modernity and Urban Transportation in American-Colonial Manila,” *Asian Studies Review* 38.2 (2014): 253-273; Patty O’Brien, *The Pacific Muse: Exotic Femininity and the Colonial Pacific* (Seattle: University of Washington Press, 2006); Angela Woollacott, *Gender and Empire* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2006).

<sup>139</sup> Vic Hurley, *Southeast of Zamboanga* (New York: E.P. Dutton & Co., 1935), 21.

suspected that they were “probably better off than they would be at home” and afforded them a grudging respect he did not show to the colonial bourgeoisie in Zamboanga. The Sunshiners came to the tropics and mastered the environment without Occidental pleasures like golf courses or scotch whiskey on a shaded veranda.<sup>140</sup>

Arriving at his plantation-to-be, Hurley was beset by a fear of encirclement particular to colonials in isolated areas. He had guns shipped from Manila and fretted about entering the “unsettled and dangerous” interior. “The idea of going too far from civilization disturbs me,” he wrote, “This portion of the islands is still marked unexplored. Everyone tells us that it is a wild country and that the Moros are not dependable.”<sup>141</sup> Still, he had hope for his plantation and even fantasized about discovering rare hardwood specimens and becoming wealthy. Living in a small shack at the edge of the jungle, Hurley spent nearly a year trying to make his venture succeed. It failed miserably, and Hurley’s health and equilibrium deteriorated in the process. Some nights, he brought his kerosene lamp outside into the darkness and shot in the direction of the animal eyes reflecting back at him. The writer had numerous run-ins with wild boar, huge pythons, crocodiles, and a seven-inch centipede that one evening made a home in his armpit while he was sleeping. Well-armed, he feared the curious Moros who occasionally visited his property, and fretted they would kill him for his guns. Hurley became increasingly unhinged.

Malaria was what finally undid him. Alone in his shack with a pistol by his side, he slipped into a feverish state and fantasized about the “billions of little parasites...racing to destroy the corpuscles of my blood...three thousand billion little parasites running through my veins as I lie here on my cot.”<sup>142</sup> Hurley spent his final days feverish and paranoid, waiting for his partner (long since departed) to return to collect him. “This is my reward for going to impossible places where no white man should be,” he wrote, “Maybe I am not tough enough for this country. I have stood up to the strain of highly competitive athletics in college and I have stood up to France in wartime but I am afraid that I *cannot* stand up to the bush in

---

<sup>140</sup> Ibid., 32-34.

<sup>141</sup> Ibid., 27.

<sup>142</sup> Ibid., 219.

Mindanao. It is sapping me and I am becoming more afraid everyday.”<sup>143</sup> Abandoning his failed business venture, Hurley nevertheless remained in Mindanao until the 1930s, managing several plantations for larger firms. When he published his memoir in 1935, the *Saturday Review of Literature* called their article on it, fittingly, “No Place for a White Man.”<sup>144</sup>

Causes and solutions to the threat of the tropical environment were linked by how porous and shifting they were. While the colonial medical elite developed their own understandings, Americans sojourning in the Southern Philippines employed a broad spectrum of explanations to rationalize everything from ennui to the maintenance of racial-sexual boundaries. Even in comic accounts of ‘Philippinitis’ lingered an anxious undercurrent acknowledging the harsh realities of serving on the colonial frontier. What all accounts shared was an anxiety that Americans lived in an environment actively hostile to them in every sense: through a lack of modern amenities; through the relentless tropical climate; through the strange and dangerous wildlife; through prolonged contact with inferior races. Those failing to monitor their personal hygiene, alcohol consumption, or interactions with the natives were prone to degeneration, with the most extreme cases abandoning their American essence and becoming Sunshiners eking out a marginal existence along the Mindanao littoral.

Placed upon a broader canvas, fears of degeneration highlighted “the simultaneous imperatives of individual conduct and political administration” in the colonial project.<sup>145</sup> The threat to the American mind and body posed by the environment was not just an individual concern, but had direct implications for the stability of American rule in Mindanao and Sulu. This was certainly the belief of U.S. Army commanders like J. Franklin Bell, who spent considerable time pondering questions of dissipation and breakdown during tropical service. Even after direct military rule ended, and American personnel in the region were greatly reduced, the stresses of tropical life, real and manufactured, continued to plague U.S. colonials in the region. Questions of “how best to educate or to discipline [the] civilized mind

---

<sup>143</sup> Ibid., 228-229.

<sup>144</sup> Arthur Ruhl, “No Place for a White Man,” *Saturday Review of Literature*, 1 June 1935, 6.

<sup>145</sup> Alison Bashford, *Imperial Hygiene: A Critical History of Colonialism, Nationalism and Public Health* (New York: Palgrave MacMillan, 2004), 188.

– how to harden it against internal and external enemies” were a persistent trope throughout the period.<sup>146</sup>

## Paradise and Purgatory

Americans in Mindanao and Sulu experienced their environment as a series of bifurcations. It appealed to their idyllic notions of a tropical paradise, yet was also teeming with uncontrolled filth and disease. It was refreshingly different from the United States, yet required mastering to reflect American domestic standards. It was ripe for exploration, yet unspeakably dangerous. This extended to the natives of the Southern Philippines as well. The Moros were fascinating and colourful, but also savage practitioners of a degraded form of Islam at odds with Christian values. Native bodies needed close study, yet distance was required lest boundaries be violated. Native weapons and clothing were sought-after collectors items, yet also symbolic of profound barbarism. For American colonials, the landscape *in toto* was an object of allure and repulsion in almost equal measure.

To combat potential threats of breakdown and deracination in the inherently “indigenous, sensual” tropics, American colonials fashioned spaces for themselves that borrowed from pre-existing colonial models and addressed concerns about the deleterious effects of the tropics on the mind and body of the Westerner.<sup>147</sup> As David Brody observes, this “visual scape of the built environment played a significant role in the expression of Orientalist discourse and the defense of imperialist action.”<sup>148</sup> In their leisure time, Americans created small newspapers, golfed, played sports, and drank liberally within their colonial enclaves. When they ventured outside of them for pleasure, they did so as amateur explorers, collectors, or photographers, and were careful to maintain distance between themselves and subject populations. Nevertheless, fears about the degenerative qualities of the climate and prolonged contact with the natives persisted throughout the colonial period and infused the American presence there with an anxious quality.

---

<sup>146</sup> Anderson, “The Trespass Speaks,” 1367.

<sup>147</sup> Susie Protschky, “Seductive Landscapes: Gender, Race and European Representations of Nature in the Dutch East Indies,” *Gender & History* 20.2 (2008): 391.

<sup>148</sup> Brody, *Visualizing American Empire*, 141.



We end as we began with Charles Ivins. At the end of his tour, Ivins and his wife threw a party attended by all the other colonials in Zamboanga, and continued the festivities at the bar on the ship taking them to Manila the following day. There were “toasts, handshakes, kisses, laughter and tears” as Charles and Vivienne left, and the military band came out for their departure to play “The Monkeys Have No Tails In Zamboanga,”<sup>149</sup> a favourite of the Americans and the song that gave Ivins’ memoirs their name. “Soon the pier became smaller and smaller,” Ivins wrote, “and in less than an hour Zamboanga dropped below the horizon into the sea of pleasant, wistful memories.”<sup>150</sup>

---

<sup>149</sup> The song originated during the Spanish-American War, and the racist implications of its title and content are clear. Abe Lyman adapted the tune into the popular “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Pago Pago” in 1939. For the murky history of the song, see Walsh, *Tin Pan Alley and the Philippines*, 127-128.

<sup>150</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 227, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC. Charles Ivins’ candid memoirs, which he composed in the 1960s and 1970s after his retirement, were never published. Attached to the manuscript is a short newspaper article from the 8 September 1980 edition of the *St. Petersburg Times*, entitled “Married 60 Years, Couple Didn’t Want to Live Apart” and detailing the deaths of Ivins and his wife, Vivian. She was suffering from dementia and mobility issues, while he was terminally ill with cancer. On September 6<sup>th</sup>, he went to her nursing home where he ended her life and then his own, leaving a note at his apartment “to his son and other relatives asking them to regard his final mission ‘not as an act of violence, but as an act of love.’” The historian Edward M. Coffman was in correspondence with Ivins at the time, and received a note from him that was written the day before his death: “I am in a nursing home and am toting 82 years around with me. Things are difficult.” – Edward M. Coffman, *The Regulars: The American Army, 1898-1941* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2004), 426.

## Chapter Seven / Moros in America

### *Visiting the Metropole in Fact and Fiction*

In the summer of 1904, a married couple from rural Maine made the long overland journey to reach the Louisiana Purchase Exposition, commonly referred to as the St. Louis World's Fair. After several days taking in the sights, the couple, Bob and Becky, visited the Philippine Reservation. Spread across forty-seven acres, it was the largest exhibit at the fair. Built with ample funding from the Insular Government in Manila, the exhibit was a paean to the moral and commercial victories of imperial aggrandizement, and its organizers envisioned the display as a validation of colonial empire. Bob came to the fair as a "radical anti-expansionist" who thought "the government had all the territory it needed for its people" and ought not to look for "new possessions till our own country was perfected." He and Becky toured the grounds of the reservation, visiting the villages of the Samal Moros and other non-Christian tribes "where men and boys of varying shades of brown and yellow sported among the trees, almost entirely nude." Bob was unconvinced by their potential, claiming that the United States could not "civilize 'em in three centuries or more."<sup>1</sup>

Bob's mind changed when he saw members of the Philippine Scouts and Constabulary in their "natty uniforms" marching to 'The Battle Hymn of the Republic' under an American flag. He cheered at the sight and Becky "wiped her eyes, bedimmed with patriotic tears." The display of tutelary uplift moved the New Englanders to declare that it should be America's mission "to scatter the influence of Christianity, establish our commercial supremacy and relieve the oppressed, build up and disseminate the fruits of

---

<sup>1</sup> Herschel Williams, *Uncle Bob and Aunt Becky's Strange Adventures at the World's Great Exposition* (Chicago: Laird and Lee Publishers, 1904), 278-279. Race-thinking was fundamental to both pro- and anti-imperialists in the United States. Supporters of empire believed that the guiding hand of Anglo-Saxon civilization would uplift subject peoples, while many anti-imperialists cited "scientific theories of ethnological difference and fears about racial retrogression" to argue against colonial rule. Both positions derived from the commonly held belief that Western societies represented the benchmark of racial progress, but differed in their notions of civilizational responsibility and assessments of danger posed by non-whites in the body politic. See Rick Baldoz, *The Third Asiatic Invasion: Empire and Migration in Filipino America, 1898-1946* (New York: New York University Press, 2011), 22-23.

civilization where cruelty, ignorance and superstition exist.”<sup>2</sup> Of course, this Damascene moment was imaginary and so were Bob and Becky, two characters in a vernacular dime novel about the St. Louis World’s Fair. Yet this fiction, written in a simple style and aimed at a mass audience, spoke broadly to how empire permeated metropolitan culture. How could colonies be presented to a skeptical American public? How should producers of popular culture portray America’s new foreign subjects? Should they be viewed as inveterate primitives under the protection of Uncle Sam, as peoples on the make due to the guiding principles of civilizational reform, or as some combination of both?

This chapter uses the Moro villages at the Louisiana Purchase Exposition as an entry point into a wider examination of how Muslims from the Southern Philippines entered the American public consciousness – as display objects, as independent travellers, and as fictions in stage plays, children’s books, radio serials, and Hollywood films. The Moros in America, beginning in St. Louis and continuing up until the 1940s, were portrayed in a manner meant to emphasize the moral aspects of the colonial project, but this narrative was easily destabilized. First, through the tendency of those supporting colonial empire to sensationalize the innate otherness of the Moros, thereby contradicting their own storyline of racial and cultural redemption. Second, through Moros like Tarhata Kiram, educated in America yet critical of the colonial regime in the Philippines, and writers like George Ade, who skewered the self-serious business of ‘civilizing’ other peoples.

The first encounters between the American people and the Moros that occurred outside of the colony or printed page came in St. Louis. The Philippine Reservation borrowed from well-established imperial traditions of introducing foreign subjects to the metropolitan public through grand spectacle. These displays were manufactured to titillate the spectator while reaffirming their beliefs in the fundamental correctness of colonial rule. Imperial notions of time, progress, and the ordering of mankind were on offer as early as the first World’s Fair, held in London in 1851 and constructed as a impressive visual scape where “time became global, a progressive accumulation of panoramas and scenes arranged, ordered

---

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., 280.

and catalogued according to the logic of imperial capital.”<sup>3</sup> On these massive stages, commercial and racial exhibits mesmerized visitors with their unitary chronicles of progress. Nations also used the fairs to define their colonial identities. For instance, France created its own miniature native villages with human displays and placed them alongside museum exhibits attesting to the advances made by their subjects. All of this, according to Dana S. Hale, created a vision of a “racially, materially, and morally superior France whose leaders embarked on colonial conquest to benefit backward societies and develop underutilized resources.”<sup>4</sup>

If international exhibitions and their landscapes of cultural power were pervasive in the latter half of the nineteenth-century, so were visits to the metropole by elite indigenous members of colonial society and depictions of the colonized in cultural products.<sup>5</sup> When America acquired its overseas colonies, foreswearing empire was displaced in favour of demonstrating the exceptionality of empire-building in places like the Philippines. In displaying the human and material progress being achieved there, American supporters of empire participated in the transcolonial phenomenon of exhibitory racism as a response to domestic critics who portrayed empire as a moral failure. The leitmotif of benevolent assimilation was complicated in the case of the Moros, who in the racial schemas of

---

<sup>3</sup> McClintock, *Imperial Leather*, 58.

<sup>4</sup> Dana S. Hale, *Races on Display: French Representations of Colonized Peoples 1886-1940* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2008), 161.

<sup>5</sup> Exhibits showing the commercial and racial potential of colonies were some of the most vivid and direct expressions of imperial ideology. They are the focus of a large body of recent scholarship. Pertinent examples from the United States are contained in the footnotes of the following section, but this chapter takes its lead from other studies about the exhibitory impulses of European empires. Besides the work of McClintock and Hale, David Ciarlo’s work on advertising in the German empire is a useful primer on the relationship between consumer culture and systems of colonial domination. George Steinmetz and Julia Hell’s material on visuality and colonial history, also focusing on Imperial Germany, has helped me form ideas about how to interpret non-traditional archival sources. For information on the ways in which colonized cultures were represented in the metropolitan consciousness, Saloni Mathur’s monograph on the commodification of Indian bodies, symbols, and stories in Britain is excellent. Zeynep Çelik’s writing on Islamic architecture at nineteenth-century world’s fairs helped me think about the ways in which Islamic cultures were presented. See David Ciarlo, *Advertising Empire: Race and Visual Culture in Imperial Germany* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2011); George Steinmetz and Julia Hell, “The Visual Archive of Colonialism: Germany and Namibia,” *Public Culture* 18.1 (2006): 147-183; Saloni Mathur, *India by Design: Colonial History and Cultural Display* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2007); Zeynep Çelik, *Displaying the Orient: Architecture of Islam at Nineteenth-Century World’s Fairs* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1992).

American empire were seen as less civilized than Christian Filipinos, yet potentially redeemable in ways not available to ‘lesser’ groupings like the Negritos. This nebulous ranking generated a multiplicity of cultural imaginings when Moros began visiting the metropole in fact and fiction.

## **A Moral Display in St. Louis**

In a pamphlet distributed at the 1904 St. Louis World’s Fair, Herbert Stone, Chief of Publicity for the Philippine Exposition Board [PEB], spelled out the cultural message intended for visitors to the sprawling Philippine Reservation: “The one thing that has stood in the way of the proper development of any colonial possession by its governing country,” the pamphlet declared, “has been the fact that a lack of knowledge of the real conditions and affairs of their colonies has blocked the way of the legislation most necessary for such development and exploitation. Every American resident of the Philippine Islands has had this truth thrust upon him, and realizes just what is meant by the ‘White Man’s Burden’ yet within the United States the potential of the Philippines and its peoples [is] underappreciated from both moralistic and commercial standpoints.” The PEB aimed to remedy that in presenting “to the people of the United States a vivid outline picture of the Philippine Islands and their eight million inhabitants.” The Philippine Reservation would be the largest single exhibit at the exposition, costing over \$1,000,000 (close to \$30,000,000 by present valuation), with nearly one hundred buildings, 75,000 catalogued exhibits, and 1,100 people on display.<sup>6</sup>

Plans for a Philippine exhibit got underway in late 1901, when Civil Governor William Howard Taft sent an official communiqué to the Louisiana Purchase Exposition Company [LPEC], headed by former mayor of St. Louis David R. Francis, expressing interest in securing at the exposition “a suitable exhibition of the resources of the Philippines.” C.H. Huttig, Chairman for the Committee on State and Territorial Exhibits at the LPEC, noted approvingly that the insular treasuries would pay for the Philippine exhibit. Even at this early

---

<sup>6</sup> Herbert S. Stone, “Philippine Exposition: World’s Fair, St. Louis, 1904,” State Historical Society of Missouri, Columbia, Missouri. (Henceforth referenced as SHSM-C)

stage, what became the Philippine Reservation was forecasted to be an impressive thirty to forty acres in size.<sup>7</sup> A subsequent memorandum by LPEC secretary Charles M. Reeves indicated “large sums of money will be expended on the exhibits from the Insular Possessions” and that Governor Taft was authorized by the War Department to set aside funds to “defray the expense of the Philippine exhibit.” Although fighting between Americans and Filipinos was ongoing, the political elite in Manila and Washington looked ahead to 1904 as an important chance to advertise the benefits of American colonial rule to the world.

In the summer of 1902, Taft held a conference with W.P. Wilson, Director of the Philadelphia Commercial Museum, to plan for the exhibit. Act No. 514 of the Philippine Commission, passed in November 1902, created the PEB. Wilson and his deputy Gustavo Niederlein, a German botanist who played a key role gathering materials for the exhibit, headed the board.<sup>8</sup> The government in Manila gave the PEB impressive powers, placing at its disposal “different bureaus, such as forestry, agriculture, ethnology, education, and scientific laboratories, the complete telegraph system throughout the islands, and the use of the numerous government steamers...constantly plying between Manila and all the other ports.”<sup>9</sup> In the meantime, provincial governors and other colonial officials were urged to form committees aimed at securing collections for the PEB that “would illustrate the habits, customs, and life of the people.”<sup>10</sup> The mobilization of personnel and resources for the purposes of the exhibit occurred throughout the Philippines, although in the South there were two men, Albert Jenks and Gustavo Niederlein, who played pivotal roles in securing the human and non-human exhibits for display in St. Louis.

As Chief of the Ethnological Survey in the Philippines, Albert Ernest Jenks was assigned to the collection of living exhibits for the exposition. Jenks was a Michigan-born

---

<sup>7</sup> Letter from C.H. Huttig to Charles Reeves, 10 December 1901, Box 2, Folder 12. Charles Monroe Reeves Papers. SHSM-C.

<sup>8</sup> *Report of the Philippine Exposition Board to the Louisiana Purchase Exposition* (St. Louis: Greeley Printery of St. Louis, 1904), 6.

<sup>9</sup> W.P. Wilson, “The Philippines at St. Louis,” *The Booklovers Magazine* 4.1 (1904), 3.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, 5.

academic who initially studied to be an economist, publishing his dissertation on rice gathering and utilization among Native Americans. Self-trained as an anthropologist and archaeologist, Jenks' multidisciplinary endeavours were common among academics during the late nineteenth-century. Jenks came to the Philippines via his service with the Bureau of American Ethnology in 1902, when he was appointed Assistant Chief of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, lately under the leadership of David Prescott Barrows. Shortly thereafter, Jenks became Chief of the Ethnological Survey, putting him in charge of cataloguing the various ethnic groupings of the archipelago. His most prominent work took place among the Bontoc Igorot population of Northern Luzon, a people about whom he published a book in 1905.<sup>11</sup>

Albert and Maud Jenks began their collection tour in Zamboanga in November 1902.<sup>12</sup> There they met with the physician and Moro specialist Najeeb Saleeby, then heading the public school system in the Moro Province, who agreed to help with arrangements for the human exhibits. Saleeby sought out “dependable men” to “keep the natives safeguarded” in St. Louis, and he and Jenks eventually settled on Frederick Lewis, an American expatriate later involved in the government of the Moro Province. Lewis was entrusted with the management of the Samal Moros, and Maud Jenks described him as “a man of good character, who is said to know the natives as well as any American and understands how to get along with them.”<sup>13</sup> In her letters home, Maud relayed the complications her husband faced arranging “the whole undertaking.” Simply getting money from Manila to Mindanao was difficult because in many areas there was nobody authorized to receive wire transfers, and Albert Jenks was reticent about carrying around \$1,000 in cash to secure contracts. Maud

---

<sup>11</sup> Guy Gibbon and Scott F. Anfison, “Digging Up Minnesota’s Past: A History of Minnesota Archaeology,” *Publications in Anthropology* 8 (2012), accessed 15 January 2015, <http://anthropology.umn.edu/labs/wlnaa/history/contents.html>. For further information on Jenks’ career, see Mark Soderstrom, “Family Trees and Timber Rights: Albert E. Jenks, Americanization, and the Rise of Anthropology at the University of Minnesota,” *The Journal of the Gilded Age and Progressive Era* 3.2 (2004): 176-204.

<sup>12</sup> For a consideration of the letters of Maud Jenks as an impressionistic counterpoint to Albert Jenks scientific ‘objectivity,’ see Dinah Roma-Sianturi, “At Home in the Cordillera Wilds: Colonial Domesticity in the Letters of Maud Huntley Jenks, 1901-1903,” *Asia-Pacific Social Science Review* 7.1 (2007): 59-74.

<sup>13</sup> Jenks, *Death Stalks*, 171.

admitted that at some points it seemed as though “the venture would be a failure,” but tried to stay positive, relating that “of the three groups contracted for down here, some ought to get to the United States in satisfactory condition.”<sup>14</sup>

The forty Maranao Moros who visited St. Louis were the product of the Jenks’ efforts in the Lake Lanao region the following month. The entire area, in the midst of John Pershing’s famous pacification campaigns, was restive, and even travelling down the newly established road between Iligan and the northern tip of Lake Lanao could be a harrowing experience. In the settlements surrounding the lake, scores of datus and self-proclaimed sultans vied for power, alternately collaborating with or confronting American military forces as it suited their purposes. The Jenks were given an armed escort of five soldiers as a safety precaution. The group travelled by night and was picked up on the shores of Lanao by an army rowboat, so as not to alert nearby Maranao settlements to their presence. They passed silently through the narrow channel that separated the mainland from Woman’s Island, so-called because it was where Maranaos safe-kept their wives during times of war.<sup>15</sup>

Journalist Guy T. Viskniskki told readers of the *Toledo Times-Bee* how the Moros were impressed by Maud Jenks’ bravery and decided to negotiate with the Americans because of it. Bungud, a minor sultan on the Lanao coast, was persuaded by the Jenks to travel to St. Louis with forty of his people. The sultan wanted to bring 130 women, as he was being paid ten dollars per person who joined him. Alas, Bungud was only allowed to bring four wives, which still amounted to a decent sum. Likewise, Hadji Butu, prime minister to the Sultan of Sulu, was said to have acquired two additional wives when he found out about payments per head.<sup>16</sup> Butu’s attempts to augment his salary were likewise reined in. Viskniskki’s descriptions, exotic hyperbole aside, are evidence that the collection of human beings for the fair involved careful negotiation on the part of Albert and Maud Jenks.

---

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., 189.

<sup>15</sup> Guy T. Viskniskki, “The Filipino Conquest of America,” *Toledo Times-Bee*, 17 July 1904. Louisiana Purchase Exposition Scrapbook 196, Missouri History Museum Library and Research Center, St. Louis, Missouri. Henceforth, newspaper articles appended with ‘LPE scrapbook #’ are those I’ve gathered from the Missouri History Museum. They are clipped and pasted into these scrapbooks, often without reference to the page numbers and often from obscure regional newspapers.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid.



Unaware of the racial-pedagogic function of the displays, Moro elites treated their co-option into the fair as a form of employment and a chance to travel abroad.

Responsible for gathering non-human items for the exposition was another colonial agent, Gustavo Niederlein. The deputy of W.P. Wilson at the PEB, Niederlein's life was a case study in fashioning a career across empires. Born in Saxony and trained as a botanist at Berlin University, he first taught at the University of Cordoba in Argentina in 1879. Ingratiating himself into the Argentine power structure, Niederlein participated in a variety of scientific expeditions, including one connected with the conquest of the indigenous peoples of Patagonia in the early 1880s. As a special commissioner with the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, he was involved in mediating boundary disputes with Brazil. Returning to his botanist roots, Niederlein collected and classified products for Argentina during the lead-up to the Paris Exposition of 1889. Made National Inspector of Agriculture in 1891, Niederlein represented Argentina at the 1893 Columbian Exposition in Chicago, before taking a job as Chief of the Scientific Department of the Philadelphia Museums the following year. A perennial exposition participant, he attended fairs in Antwerp in 1894, Atlanta in 1896, Guatemala City in 1897, and Paris in 1900. In addition to his busy fair schedule, Niederlein also represented the United States Commercial Commission to China in 1898-1899, and was responsible for the classification of colonial products for France's Overseas Ministry in the wake of the Paris Exposition. W.P. Wilson was effusive in his praise, saying that he had sent Niederlein "to China, Japan, and the Philippines, where he has in relation to those governments, made himself a power." Noël Auricoste, an influential merchant connected to the French Colonial Union, requested Niederlein stay on in France and become a representative of French colonial products at the Colonial Exposition in Hanoi.<sup>17</sup>

The insular government in Manila gave Niederlein a carte blanche to scour the archipelago for exhibition items. Governor Taft wrote the botanist a letter which, addressed to "all Bureaus, all the Chiefs of Bureaus of the Insular Government, to all the Provincial Governors and other Provincial Officers, to all Municipal Officers of Municipalities in the

---

<sup>17</sup> "Dr. Gustavo Niederlein – Special Commissioner of Philippine Islands for the World's Fair," *World's Fair Bulletin* 3.12 (1902): 30.

Philippine Islands,” gave instructions that Niederlein should be extended “every assistance in your power in the very important work which he has preparing exhibits for the Philippine part of the St. Louis Exposition.”<sup>18</sup> The letter was printed in a pamphlet by the Exposition Board, and distributed to officials throughout the Philippine Islands in anticipation of Niederlein’s arrival. It included a general invitation to “join in the efforts of the Philippine Exposition Board in Making the Philippine Exhibit a success” by “procuring superior exhibits which shall well represent the past and future as well as the actual state of economic and social development of the Philippines.”<sup>19</sup> The majority of the pamphlet was given to detailed instructions on how eager colonials could go about selecting, preparing, and shipping their items. Each department featured at the fair gave specifications. For the Department of Anthropology and Ethnology, this included “tribal and racial exhibits in every detail, with full description, photographs, casts, measurements, regarding the physical structure of races; besides books, grammars, vocabularies in different languages and dialects, showing the state of culture and growth of civilization.”<sup>20</sup> In this scheme, Niederlein was the chief collector, but every Westerner and ‘civilized’ Filipino could play a role in presenting the colony at St. Louis.

Gustavo Niederlein travelled throughout the Philippine Archipelago, making hundreds of stops on his grand collection tour.<sup>21</sup> The *Binghampton Leader-Chronicle* reported on his journeys in the Southern Philippines in October 1903. The paper took special interest in Niederlein’s time on Jolo, then best known in the United States as the setting of George Ade’s comic opera *The Sultan of Sulu*. With the help of S.A. Korczki, a Polish merchant, Niederlein surveyed the Moro villages near the town of Jolo, noting the designs of Tausūg homes, as well as the unique items contained within: “goat skins, copper plates and copper

---

<sup>18</sup> *Circular Letter of Governor Taft and Information and Instructions for the Preparation of the Philippine Exhibit for the Louisiana Purchase Exposition to be Held at St. Louis, Mo., U.S.A., 1904* (Manila: Bureau of Public Printing, 1903), 11.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*, 15.

<sup>20</sup> *Ibid.*, 33.

<sup>21</sup> Niederlein and David Prescott Barrows contacted the physical anthropologist Daniel Folkmar and the PEB agreed to fund his work sculpting plaster casts of the heads of prisoners at Bilibid Prison in Manila. Paul Kramer cites this as evidence of how “events such as the 1904 St. Louis fair emerged out of colonial institutions and dynamics like those at Bilibid.” – Kramer, *Blood of Government*, 230.

ware, earthen and china ware, large pots, baskets of all forms, fishing nets, gongs of peculiar shapes, lances, knives, *barongs*, *campilans*, shields, hats, turbans, betelnut boxes, cocoanuts, cloths and scores of other articles of wide range.” Niederlein and his party then visited a local Moro blacksmith, and watched a group of armed Tausūg men giving “a representation of a Moro war dance.” Commercial and ethnographic products (the demarcation between the two was blurred continuously) were collected, and Niederlein arranged for further work on an exhibit in St. Louis showing “useful products” and the natives of Jolo “engaged in their work, songs, dances and strange rites and ceremonies.”<sup>22</sup>

Moving on, Niederlein made a stop at Zamboanga, which the *Leader-Chronicle* identified as “a great export place for copra, pearl shells, wax, resins, oil seeds, gutta-percha and seeds,” where he procured an “exquisitely beautiful” collection of orchids previously unseen outside of Mindanao. In Basilan, he visited Datu Pedro Cuevas, who promised to attend the exposition and aid in the collection of items for it. Niederlein travelled around Lake Lanao, and then ventured past Cotabato, up the Rio Grande, and into Maguindanao territory, securing other “valuable collections” as he progressed. All told, the trip took nearly a month.<sup>23</sup> The following year, the *Chicago Record-Herald* praised Niederlein’s efforts, claiming that he “seized everything he could find that illustrates the life, customs, commerce, arts and industries of the people, and installed them here in a scientific and attractive manner.” The paper bubbled that Niederlein’s “complete and comprehensive collection” illustrated the raw economic potential of the Philippines.<sup>24</sup> Colonial agents like Albert Jenks and Gustavo Niederlein illustrate the complex and extended process of collection for the fair. American power in the Southern Philippines was often coercive yet far from total, especially in the Lake Lanao region, and Jenks and Niederlein were forced to negotiate with Moro

---

<sup>22</sup> “Interesting Relics for World’s Fair,” *Binghamton Leader-Chronicle*, 10 October 1903. LPE Scrapbook 113. Korczki acted as translator in meetings between John Bates and Datu Mandi in 1899, when Bates was securing the aid of Mandi against Filipino *insurrectos* in Zamboanga. Korczki, based out of Sandakan in British North Borneo, expressed a desire for American troops in the area and thought that trouble could be ended quickly. – Interview Between John Bates and Datu Mandi. 28 July 1899. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid.

<sup>24</sup> “Huge Exhibit by Isles,” *Chicago Record-Herald*, 22 October 1904. LPE Scrapbook 196.

leaders, often using colonial intermediaries like Najeeb Saleeby or S.A. Korczki to secure peoples and items valuable to the exposition.

Although W.P. Wilson travelled to the Philippines briefly in May 1903, the majority of his work as head of the PEB occurred in St. Louis. Wilson first visited the intended site of the exhibit in late 1902 to “canvass the possibilities of showing the wild tribes in the Philippines under natural conditions.” After examining the grounds, Wilson put in a “formal request” that the trees there be “carefully preserved” so they could be used to house tree-dwelling tribes. The article in the *World’s Fair Bulletin* describing Wilson’s visit also made mention of space allotted for “lake dwellers living in huts built on poles in the water,” the first indication that the Samal Moros were being brought to America.<sup>25</sup> Work began on the construction of buildings for the reservation in October 1903, when Filipino labourers “commenced the work of building their native houses and camps.” By the opening of the fair on April 30<sup>th</sup> 1904, boosters claimed that the Philippine exhibit stood as “a monument to Secretary Taft and his able assistants, the Philippine Exhibit Board.”<sup>26</sup>

Wilson’s work beautifying the forty-seven acre grounds resulted in an enclosed reservation that functioned within the framework of the World’s Fair, yet was also an entity apart. Located in the southwest corner of the exposition grounds, visitors accessed the exhibit by three bridges that crossed over Lake Arrowhead, a small body of water bounding the grounds on its north and east sides. The main bridge to the exhibit was a reproduction of the Bridge of Spain over the Pasig River and deposited visitors at a miniature replication of Manila’s walled city, complete with a functioning infrastructure and a military museum. Further into the grounds, there was a central plaza surrounded by buildings dedicated to government, education, and horticulture. There were also buildings “devoted to forestry, to mines and metallurgy, to agriculture and horticulture, to fish and game and to ethnology, all artistically placed.” There was a large relief map of the archipelago, and fairgoers could visit an observatory, or view lantern slides showing life in the islands. Along with a restaurant, there were cafés and concession stands where visitors enjoyed refreshments and purchased

---

<sup>25</sup> “The Philippine Exhibit,” *World’s Fair Bulletin* 4.2 (1902): 28.

<sup>26</sup> William N. Swarthout, “Descriptive Story of the Philippine Exhibit,” *World’s Fair Bulletin* 5.8 (1904): 50.

items crafted by the natives.<sup>27</sup> Such elements of the Philippine Reservation were purpose-built to demonstrate the great progress the islands had made in the brief time since the American conquest.

More sensational, and thus more popular, were the humans on display. Located along the shore of Lake Arrowhead and in the forest surrounding the central plaza, the various ethnic groups of the archipelago were categorized and exhibited based on their perceived level of civilization, with the ‘savage’ Negritos depicted as debased evolutionary survivals next to the comparatively refined Visayans. Apart from anthropological concerns, which we shall arrive at in a moment, members of LPEC and the PEB wanted to convey a sense of authenticity to visitors. The spectator, viewing the settlements of the savage and semi-savage peoples of the Philippines, was meant to imagine they were viewing the real thing: primitive native villages transported, as if by magic, to the American Midwest. Visitors were assured by advertisements and press reports that by visiting the Philippine Reservation they would “find the material to fill in the detail of the complete picture” of life in the islands.<sup>28</sup> Writing in the *Boise Bulletin*, Edmund Mitchell proclaimed that the exhibit brought the advantages of foreign travel within “the reach of the multitude” and “in certain circumstances...may prove even more profitable than an actual voyage to distant lands.”<sup>29</sup> In the same way that modern zoos attempted to recreate the habitat of wild animals, Wilson and his team fashioned what Robert Rydell calls an “anthropologically validated racial landscape” demonstrating to the American people in stark visual terms why colonial control and reconfiguration of these far-away islands was necessary.<sup>30</sup>

---

<sup>27</sup> *Report of the Philippine Exposition Board*, 6.

<sup>28</sup> Wilson, “The Philippines at St. Louis,” 5.

<sup>29</sup> Edmund Mitchell, “The Philippine at the World’s Fair,” *Boise Bulletin*, 28 June 1904. LPE 196.

<sup>30</sup> Robert Rydell, *All the World’s A Fair: Visions of Empire at American International Expositions, 1876-1916* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1984), 157. Rydell’s book was the first to look at American world’s fairs as legitimations of racial hierarchy and empire. The book connects St. Louis to a longer chain of fairs, beginning in Philadelphia in 1876. On how American spectators consumed the spectacle, see James Gilbert, *Whose Fair? Experience, Memory, and the History of the Great St. Louis Exposition* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2009).

The Samal and Lanao Moros lived in two settlements along the northern section of Lake Arrowhead. The Moros began their long journey to St. Louis in late 1903. The Samal group, led by Datu Facundo and managed by Frederick Lewis, consisted of nineteen men, eleven women, five boys, and five girls. Departing from Zamboanga, they stopped in Manila, where “a number of exhibitions were given for the benefit of the various officials, and the natives themselves were given an opportunity of seeing their first city of any size, and of becoming accustomed to the ways of modern civilization.”<sup>31</sup> This extended stopover in Manila was to prepare them for the even greater attention they would receive in St. Louis. It was here they met with the thirty-eight Maranao Moros and their manager C.H. Wax. The Samals and the Maranao travelled together to St. Louis, but did not mix socially.<sup>32</sup>

The Samal village was modeled on buildings in Magay, the Moro section of Zamboanga, and, according to LPEC President David R. Francis, “every detail characteristic of Moro architecture was carefully adhered to.” No nails were used while assembling the Samal dwellings, and each was made of nipa, rattan, and bamboo in an attempt to maintain realism.<sup>33</sup> The Moros “in accordance with their own peculiar ideas and style of architecture” built the village. It included seven small residences for the inhabitants, as well as an administrative building displaying items of ethnographic relevance, and a theatre for public performances. Gravel was strewn about the shores of Lake Arrowhead to mimic the sandy beaches of the Southern Philippines. The Lanao village, comparable in size although architecturally distinct, was initially separate but soon merged with the Samal settlement. The native villages officially opened to the public on June 18<sup>th</sup> 1904 and remained so until the exposition ended.<sup>34</sup>

---

<sup>31</sup> *Report of the Philippine Exposition Board*, 34.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid. A listing of the names of Moro participants, Samal and Maranao, can be found in Nancy J. Parezo and Don D. Fowler, *Anthropology Goes to the Fair: The 1904 Louisiana Purchase Exposition* (Lincoln and London: University of Nebraska Press, 2007), 415-416.

<sup>33</sup> David R. Francis, *The Universal Exposition of 1904, Vol. I* (St. Louis: Louisiana Purchase Exposition Co., 1913), 571.

<sup>34</sup> *Report of the Philippine Exposition Board*, 34-35.

Official programs, schedules, and a free map give us an idea of how the displayed Muslims spent their days. As both employees and living exhibits they were subject to robust routines. Visitors watched Moro women weaving “all day,” and women and children gave hourly dances at the village theatre. In the late morning, Samal Moro boys engaged in canoe races, ‘shooting the chutes’ (forerunners of modern waterslides), and diving into Lake Arrowhead for coins thrown by spectators. Inhabitants played gongs and other “curious musical instruments,” and fairgoers were treated to a spear and shield dance, referred to in exposition literature as the “Moro-Moro dance.”<sup>35</sup> When not engaged in these displays, Moro youth attended the classroom of Pilar Zamora, “the only native Filipino who has ever taught at the Government Normal School.” Located next to the cathedral, the model schoolhouse was intended as a practical illustration of how American teaching methods were instilling modern ideals in the children of the islands. Although an occasional class brought all the students together, the Moros were generally taught apart from the Negritos, Visayans, Igorots, and Bagobos.<sup>36</sup> Otherwise, the Moros could be seen “engaging in their native industries and occupations,” which for the men meant fishing in Lake Arrowhead. “Every possible attraction introduced that might prove interesting and instructive to visitors was presented,” observed David R. Francis.<sup>37</sup> In August, shipments of “sufficient raw materials” were released by U.S. customs, which led to pearl diving in the lake and “the cleaning and polishing of pearl shells.” The final report from the PEB also proudly mentioned that the Moros were provided food similar to what they ate in Mindanao and had “no complaints.”<sup>38</sup>

The materials collected from the Moros by American colonials and assembled by Gustavo Niederlein were housed in the Ethnology Building, located just behind the grandstand off of the central plaza. While material evidence of the advances made by Christian Filipinos featured in a variety of buildings (horticulture, agriculture, industry,

---

<sup>35</sup> “Free Pictorial Map of the Philippine Exposition,” Folder 154. The Louisiana Purchase Exposition Collection. SHSM-C; *Daily Official Program – World’s Fair, 25 April 1904* (St. Louis: St. Louis World’s Fair Program Co., 1904).

<sup>36</sup> Wolcott Calkins, “Teaching the Brown Man,” *Boston Evening Transcript*, 27 April 1904. LPE Scrapbook 196.

<sup>37</sup> Francis, *Universal Exposition*, 571.

<sup>38</sup> *Report of the Philippine Exposition Board*, 571.

forestry), manufactures of the ‘savage’ and ‘semi-savage’ peoples were displayed as curiosities indicative of stunted historical and racial development. The building included items from thirty separate groups. In the prevalent tone of anthropological condescension, Albert Jenks wrote that the exhibits in the Ethnology Building were unreflective of the Filipino’s potential for cultural progress, as “these wild people” represented only one-seventh of the population of the Philippines and had cultures “almost entirely of their own development.”<sup>39</sup> Despite their primitive state, Jenks observed, “it should also be noticed here and there an individual group has developed a single art or process to a relatively high degree.”<sup>39</sup> Promotional literature for the exhibit gave similarly backhanded compliments, noting “in spite of the uniform shallowness of the Philippine culture, here and there something has impelled a group of savages to a high degree an industrial activity which elsewhere in the archipelago may yet be in its crudest development.”<sup>40</sup> Collected and exhibited in the Ethnology building were household utensils, clothing, ornaments, musical instruments, and hunting and fishing implements from the Samal Moros. From the Sulu came clothing, personal ornaments, household utensils, looms, agricultural, fishing and hunting implements, brass armor, bass betelnut boxes, jars and trays, bedding, saddles, bridles, musical instruments, and cannons.<sup>41</sup>

The weaponry of Moros and other non-Christians was collected by members of the Philippine Constabulary and displayed in the Walled City. Moro *lantakas*, *bolos*, *kris*, and other objects of war were shipped to St. Louis to tell “a varied and interesting story of the peculiarly misdirected and undirected struggle against America.”<sup>42</sup> The Constabulary took the exhibit seriously and sent a battalion of men to demonstrate to audiences what a Filipino paramilitary force, trained under U.S. supervision, was capable of. Alongside the Philippine Scouts, the men of the Constabulary, dressed in sharp military attire, stood in stark contrast to the scantily clad natives of the villages, and visually mapped colonial uplift for visitors. The

---

<sup>39</sup> W.P. Wilson, *Official Catalogue of Exhibits – Philippine Government* (St. Louis: Official Catalogue Co., 1904), 262.

<sup>40</sup> Stone, “Philippine Exposition: World’s Fair, St. Louis, 1904,” SHSM-C.

<sup>41</sup> Wilson, *Official Catalogue of Exhibits*, 269-271.

<sup>42</sup> *Ibid.*, 293.



Constabulary battalion was barracked in the Cuartel Filipino in the southwest corner of the reservation, and among the eleven officers and 280 enlisted men were nine Moros. They came from the Fifth Constabulary District in the Moro Province, and instead of the customary campaign hat wore a red *fez*. Colonel Harry Bandholtz, chief of the Constabulary District, gave these men special dispensation for their dietary needs.<sup>43</sup>

The racialized spectacle of the native villages was popular with fairgoers, and newspapers avidly reported to their readership. Martha Root, writing for the *Pittsburg Dispatch*, wrote that the Moros “were not bred so dull they cannot learn” but that “so far they have been immune from the epidemic called civilization” before launching into a lengthy taxonomy of the non-Christian tribes of the archipelago. Drawing from the stock phraseology developed for the Moros since 1899, Root described them as the “fiercest of all tribes” to whom war was “only recreation.” The Samal village was a “primitive Atlantic City, where the inhabitants practically live in the water” and the Moro women, of whose honour the men were “intensely jealous,” were “modest and comely.”<sup>44</sup> William E. Curtis,<sup>45</sup> the globetrotting reporter and one-time head of the Latin American Department at the 1893 Chicago World’s Fair, saw the Moros as remarkable athletic specimens – “muscular, agile, and enduring” –and thought them superior to Christian Filipinos. Describing the traits of the Moros at length, Curtis claimed they were an “interesting problem for [the] ethnologists and sociologists” who would “watch their development under a liberal government and the educational privileges the Yankees have introduced in the southern islands of the Philippine archipelago.” The Moros at the fair were “an object lesson for the information and edification of the American

---

<sup>43</sup> Stone, “Philippine Exposition: World’s Fair, St. Louis, 1904,” SHSM-C.

<sup>44</sup> Martha L. Root, “In the Philippines and on the Pike,” *Pittsburgh Dispatch*, 26 June 1904. LPE 196.

<sup>45</sup> Like Gustavo Niederlein, Curtis was a participant in other world’s fairs, heading the Latin American Department and Historical Section at the World’s Columbian Exposition in Chicago in 1893. He was the director of the Columbian Historical Exposition in Madrid, overseeing a wide array of Americana there. Additionally, he travelled widely, writing on nihilism in Russia and on the decaying Ottoman Empire, and was at one time a special envoy to the Vatican on behalf of the U.S. government. See “William E. Curtis of the Chicago Record-Herald – Lecture Tour,” Box 82. Redpath Chautauqua Collection, University of Iowa Libraries Special Collections Department, Iowa City, Iowa.

people,” and Curtis assured readers that the exhibit was “not only interesting but accurate and quite true to life.”<sup>46</sup>

Apart from assessments of racial fitness, reporters who visited St. Louis related the ‘unusual’ customs and daily activities of the Moros back to the American public. In a short article that also featured news on the Apache Indians and Hawaiian Islanders, the *Indianapolis Journal* related how the Lanao Moros participated in a cycle of praying and feasting in anticipation of the marriage of one of their chiefs, Datu Asume, who was said to have “ninety slave-wives.”<sup>47</sup> Moro leaders at the fair had their lives and customs conveyed in tabloid fashion. The *St. Louis Republic* regaled its audience with a story from the love life of Datu Facundo, leader of the Samal Moros, telling of how he killed fourteen men who tried to thwart one of his love affairs. The likely exaggerated tale read like a revenge thriller. The suitors and male relations of Facundo’s love interest banded together against him. One of her brothers attempted to murder him, but Facundo killed him and then embarked on a campaign of vengeance against those who opposed the marriage. “The battle between Fecundo and those opposed to him extended over several Moro provinces and lasted for nearly two years,” the *Republic* wrote. “During the time the girl was spirited away by her family and pursued by Fecundo.” It did not conclude until he married the girl, who joined him in St. Louis. Giving a titillating wink to readers, the newspaper opined that “the strenuous life of a Moro lover would be too much for even the most enthusiastic American.”<sup>48</sup>

Less fantastical and more telling was an article in the *Washington Post* from September 1904, which described an encounter on the fair playgrounds. Visayan children using the swings quickly vacated them when Moro and Negrito boys approached, refusing to play with non-Christians from unfamiliar tribes. The *Post* saw this as “old caste prejudice in the islands transplanted to America. At home a Visayan never mingles on equal terms with an Igorrote or Moro, much less a Negrito, who is the most despised of all.” The paper wrote approvingly of how two American boys “brought out the contrast between democratic

---

<sup>46</sup> William E. Curtis, “The Curtis Letter,” *New York Globe*, 3 August 1904. LPE 196.

<sup>47</sup> “Moros Praying and Feasting at St. Louis,” *Indianapolis Journal*, 12 May 1904, 9.

<sup>48</sup> “Killed Fourteen Men to Secure his Wife,” *St. Louis Republic*, 14 May 1904, 4.

America and the Filipino caste system” by playing with the children the Visayans had snubbed. The paper made no mention of why the Moros and others were present in “democratic America” to begin with, or the state of race relations in Missouri at the time.<sup>49</sup> Elsewhere on the fairgrounds, a follower of the charismatic Scottish faith healer John Alexander Dowie spoke with C.H. Wax, manager of the Lanao Moros, to request an opportunity to convert them to the Christian Faith. The Moros came to Dowie’s attention because they abstained from pork and tobacco, but Wax dissuaded his acolyte from attempting missionary work by warning that the Moros would likely kill him.<sup>50</sup> This supposedly fierce temperament led to rumours that photographing Muslims could result in smashed cameras and grievous bodily harm to the photographer.<sup>51</sup>

Colonial officials and fair organizers intended the Philippine Reservation as a curated expression of how empire benefitted the world’s benighted races. As early as 1902, Governor Taft spoke of the “moral effect” the exhibit would have on the wards of the state, and how their participation in the fair would be “a very great influence in completing pacification and in bringing Filipinos to improve their condition.” Taft expressed his displeasure that questions of governance in the Philippines became caught up in American domestic politics, instead preferring to view ‘progress’ amongst the inhabitants of the archipelago as the apolitical cultural benefit of American rule.<sup>52</sup> LPEC President David Francis also believed that the American mission in the Philippines was a matter of duty, proclaiming that educating and protecting the islanders’ interests would “advance [Filipinos] to civilization.”<sup>53</sup> Head of the Department of Anthropology W.J. McGee was similarly self-righteous. “The primary motives of expositions are commercial and intellectual,” he wrote, “yet the time would seem to be ripe for introducing a moral motive among the rest – and save incidentally, in the

---

<sup>49</sup> “Savages at the Fair as Snobs,” *Washington Post*, 10 September 1904, 6.

<sup>50</sup> “Dowie’s Agent Gives up Moros as Bad Job,” *St. Louis Republic*, 13 May 1904, 8.

<sup>51</sup> Irwin W. Lyndon, *Reporting Live: Articles and Letters from the 1904 St. Louis World’s Fair* (Wyandotte: Gregath Company Inc., 2008), 83. On the racial dimensions of photography at the 1904 World’s Fair, see Randal Rogers, “Colonial Imitation and Racial Insubordination: Photography at the Louisiana Purchase Exhibition of 1904,” *History of Photography* 32.4 (2008): 347-367

<sup>52</sup> “The Philippine Display,” *World’s Fair Bulletin* 3.7 (1902): 21.

<sup>53</sup> *Ibid.*, 20.

department connected with education, there is little place for the revelation of the moral motive except in the Department of Anthropology.”<sup>54</sup>

Like Albert Jenks and Gustavo Niederlein, W.J. McGee was something of a professional and intellectual chameleon, self-training as a geologist before moving into anthropology professionally in the 1890s. Primarily interested in cultures “uncontaminated by outside influences,” McGee produced an ethnographic account of the Seri Indians of Sonora, Mexico, using his “imaginative powers of generalization and preconceived expectations to portray the Seri as the quintessential ‘savages’ of North America.”<sup>55</sup> After losing a fight to control the Bureau of American Ethnology and becoming mired in a minor financial scandal, McGee was hired by the LPEC to arrange the anthropological displays for the World’s Fair. His ideas, which Nancy Parezo and Don Fowler detail in their examination of anthropology at the Louisiana Purchase Exposition, were beholden to nineteenth-century notions wherein races were ranked against one another through panoptic measurements of civilizational progress. McGee’s racial schematics validated late Victorian American bourgeois culture as the apogee of human development, which meshed well with the beliefs (and origins) of the fair organizers and bestowed upon LPEC endeavours the veil of scientific legitimacy.<sup>56</sup>

Departing from station six of the intramural railway running through the fairgrounds, visitors could head north, stopping to view ‘primitive’ tools and art in the Ethnological Building before continuing through the human portion of the anthropology exhibit. Here were Ainu from Japan, Patagonian indigenes, Cocopa Indians from Mexico, and Native Americans from a variety of tribes. McGee’s charting of progress-through-exhibition melded sober-minded academic language, the moralism of the colonial project, and the titillation of the circus sideshow. “The Anthropology exhibit has the interest of strangeness,” McGee wrote in *The World’s Work*, “for it is an exhibit of races of men whose lives and crafts have no

---

<sup>54</sup> W.J. McGee, “Anthropology,” *World’s Fair Bulletin* 5.4 (1904): 4.

<sup>55</sup> Parezo and Fowler, *Anthropology Goes to the Fair*, 39.

<sup>56</sup> Parezo and Fowler consider McGee and his endeavours in their book at length, concluding: “the ultimate goal of McGee’s anthropology was to trace the course of human progress and classify peoples in terms of that progress to illuminate the origin and destiny of man. This endeavor was undertaken to guide future progress. Anthropology was thus a moral undertaking as well as a scientific enterprise, which McGee would visualize through his activities in St. Louis.” – Ibid., 48.

counterpart in our lives and crafts.”<sup>57</sup> According to McGee’s logic, the Ainu, Patagonian, and Cocopa were unreconstructed primitives, but the Native Americans were beneficiaries of U.S. colonialism, and their exhibit told “two living stories.” One of a “race narrative of odd peoples who mark time while the world advances,” and the other “of savages made, by American methods, into civilized workers.”<sup>58</sup>

McGee diagramed the global racial landscape upon the fairgrounds, and believed that visitors could follow “the course of human progress...in a general way from the ethnic and cultural types assembled on the grounds under the Department of Anthropology, in the Philippine display, and in some of the attractions on The Pike.” The idea of racial progress was apparent in the use of didactic before-and-after displays. The “trained pupils” of the American Indian exhibit were placed on the opposite side of a long hallway in the Indian Building from their parents, with the former group illustrating “the educational methods of the United States Indian Office” while the latter engaged in traditional, and by implication inferior, crafting.<sup>59</sup> Commissioner for Indian Affairs Francis E. Leupp visited the fair and was explicit in his belief that “the contrast between the old Indian and the new is thus most vividly brought out – the savage, dirty, ignorant, and forlorn, leading a useless and purposeless existence...the Government pupil trained to fit a place in the world of to-day, his naturally sharp senses brought to a keener edge, his resources multiplied, which he can coin into dollars.”<sup>60</sup> Viewing the humans on display, Leupp followed the short path that connected the Indian Building and the Philippine Reservation. He thought there was “not the first suggestion of indecency about the exhibition,” and, like other visitors, was treated to dichotomies-by-design similar to those shown at the anthropology exhibit.<sup>61</sup> The barely clothed Moro villagers were juxtaposed with the sharply dressed members of the Philippine Constabulary. Moro children in their natural state engaged in rambunctious, unstructured tomfoolery, but were redeemed by American influence when they attended Pilar Zamora’s

---

<sup>57</sup> W.J. McGee, “Strange Races of Men,” *The World’s Work*, August 1904, 5185

<sup>58</sup> Ibid.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., 5188.

<sup>60</sup> Francis E. Leupp, “Hints for Fair Visitors,” *New York Evening Post*, 2 July 1904. LPE Scrapbook 196.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid.

class at the model schoolhouse. Fair organizers reaped monetary benefits from having human spectacles for fairgoers to ogle, while also downplaying the carnival atmosphere in favour of the moral message of racial uplift.

On November 26<sup>th</sup>, a week before the St. Louis World's Fair closed, President Theodore Roosevelt visited the Philippine Reservation. After witnessing a drill by the Constabulary and Scouts, he toured the various buildings of the exhibit, stopping at the model school to congratulate Pilar Zamora. While visiting the Samal and Lanao leaders, Datu Facundo presented a *bolo* to Roosevelt, with which the Samal chief claimed to have killed three men: "In presenting the weapon [Facundo] remarked that he had no further use for it, and surrendered it to the President of the United States."<sup>62</sup> At closing, the Moro village had made \$40,624.37 from sales and admissions, a higher take than the Visayan or Negrito villages but well below the \$137,147.92 made by the Igorot village. For all the high-minded talk of displaying civilizational progress, the exhibits at the fair were primarily moneymaking ventures.<sup>63</sup> Numerous Moro display items received awards, and organizers bestowed a gold medal on Datu Facundo for the quality of his participation. Six Lanao Moro leaders were given silver medals, "with the exception of one or two who behaved badly and received lesser recognition."<sup>64</sup> As Nancy Parezo and Don Fowler observe, "assimilation was rewarded." Christian Filipino "honourable residents" received medals without exception.<sup>65</sup> During the fair, two Moro participants died from beriberi, while another, a twenty-year-old named Pgpina, died suddenly after a dancing session.<sup>66</sup> The Moros were buried in St. Louis "together with the half dozen other Filipinos who died since coming to the World's Fair."<sup>67</sup>

---

<sup>62</sup> "The President of the United States Visits the World's Fair," *World's Fair Bulletin* 6.2 (1904): 3.

<sup>63</sup> *Report of the Philippine Exposition Board*, 48.

<sup>64</sup> "Awards," *World's Fair Bulletin* 6.1 (1904): 20.

<sup>65</sup> Parezo and Fowler, *Anthropology Goes to the Fair*, 366.

<sup>66</sup> *Report of the Philippine Exposition Board*, 42.

<sup>67</sup> "No Shower Baths During Hot Days," *St. Louis Republic*, 29 July 1904, 8. The death of a Moro named Pgpina was blamed on a shower he had taken after dancing for gathered spectators. W.P. Wilson banned Moros from taking baths during the day, saying it was "best to take no chances." A small aside in the article noted that Pgpina was suffering from a persistent cold that had developed into pleurisy, a severe inflammation of the lining surrounding the lungs. An exacerbation of this condition is likely what killed the Moro, who was unable to fight off the foreign pathogens brought in by spectators.

For fair boosters and supporters of American empire (often one and the same), the Philippine Reservation was an unmitigated success. “It is the first attempt of the United States to exploit a colony, and without doubt it is the best colonial exhibit ever brought together,” gushed William E. Curtis in the *Chicago Record-Herald*.<sup>68</sup> Promotional literature distributed by the PEC viewed the colonization of the Philippines through rose-tinted glasses, proclaiming that benevolent assimilation had ensured “race antipathy” was “nearly a thing of the past” in the archipelago. The exhibit was necessary to give Americans a “clearer understanding” of the “duties thrust upon them with their assumption of the sovereignty of the Philippine Islands.”<sup>69</sup> Still, the fair presented problems for organizers and supporters of colonial empire in the government. The display of ‘savages’ like the Moros gave fuel to those who opposed empire from a racial standpoint and argued that annexing the Philippine Islands meant taking on groupings of irredeemable primitives.<sup>70</sup> More practical problems faced by the PEB included controlling the complex array of racial and civilizational tropes presented at the Philippine Reservation, turning a profit, and disposing of collected materials and promotional literature once the World’s Fair ended. A museum based on the exhibit in Manila, originally intended to be permanent, closed quickly, and returns on the insular government’s investments in the fair were meager.<sup>71</sup>

Despite these ideological and monetary problems at St. Louis, Moros were displayed again at the Jamestown Exposition, held outside of Norfolk, Virginia in 1907. The much smaller five-acre exhibit featured Moros, Bagobos, Ilocanos, and Tagalogs, but was staged in opposition to the desires of many American officials, who believed that exhibitions of uncivilized and semi-civilized residents of the Philippines contravened the progressive imperatives of the American mission there, and, in the case of Filipino nationalists, the quest

---

<sup>68</sup> William E. Curtis, “Huge Exhibit by Isles,” *Chicago Record-Herald*, 22 October 1904. LPE Scrapbook 196.

<sup>69</sup> Stone, “Philippine Exposition: World’s Fair, St. Louis, 1904,” SHSM-C.

<sup>70</sup> Rydell, *All the World’s A Fair*, 174.

<sup>71</sup> Kramer, “Making Concessions: Race and Empire Revisited at the Philippine Exposition,” *Radical History Review* 73 (1999): 78-79, 106-108.

for a cohesive national identity and independent statehood.<sup>72</sup> Datu Sansaluna and four of his Maguindanao followers from Cotabato came to Jamestown to be presented alongside other race-based exhibits. Sansaluna was the teenage son of Datu Ali, famous for resisting American rule in Cotabato until his death in 1905. The *Washington Post* observed Sansaluna's "great respect for the uniform and shoulder straps," and his imperious nature, evidenced in his refusal to meet with anybody besides high-ranking officials. The newspaper added that Tasker Bliss, Governor of the Moro Province, was eager to see Sansaluna leave the country lest warfare breakout.<sup>73</sup> This was not true. In fact, Bliss was skeptical of Moro participation in fairs and remarked acidly in his 1907 annual report that "the exhibition of Moros seems to have become a stock feature of these expositions. No good has come to the Moros from it and I recommend that the practice be stopped."<sup>74</sup>

## Visiting the Metropole

Frederick Lewis, the manager of the Moro Village, received a telegram on August 7<sup>th</sup> 1904 from the White House extending an invitation to Datu Facundo and some of his followers to visit Washington and meet with President Theodore Roosevelt.<sup>75</sup> Also invited was Datu Antonio of the Igorots. The American managers of both native villages accompanied the group of three Moros and four Igorots, whose purpose, according to press reports, was to assure the President of their loyalty and "express the appreciation which their people feel for the changes from their old system to the present form of government, inaugurated by the United States."<sup>76</sup> Facundo's meeting with Roosevelt was the first in a series of journeys to the United States by Moro elites during the colonial period. Press outlets eager to provide Americans with details about their nation's Muslim wards covered these visits.

---

<sup>72</sup> Kramer, *Blood of Government*, 340. Frederic Gleach's work focuses on Jamestown's displays of Native Americans and America's presentation of itself as a global colonial power. See Frederic W. Gleach, "Pocahontas at the Fair: Crafting Identities at the 1907 Jamestown Exposition," *Ethnohistory* 50.3 (2003): 419-445

<sup>73</sup> "Moro Prince at Jamestown," *Washington Post*, 29 May 1907, 2.

<sup>74</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report for Fiscal Year 1906-07*, 34.

<sup>75</sup> Francis, *Universal Exposition*, 571.

<sup>76</sup> "Igorrotes to be Clad," *Washington Post*, 9 August 1904, 2.



Although the trip to Washington was organized quickly, it still received publicity. Clarence R. Edwards, Chief of the Insular Bureau of the War Department, told reporters that the visitors were “about on a par in many respect with some of the Indians of this country, and that they are as much objects of interest in Manila as they are in America.” The Moros and Igorots were eager to meet Roosevelt, and Edwards dubiously claimed the tribesmen were like the American Indians in how they imagined the President as their “Great White Father.”<sup>77</sup> Frederick Lewis and T.K. Hunt, managers of the Moro and Igorot villages, accompanied the group on their visit as “social mentors” to “prevent them from committing any social faux pas” during the brief trip. The unspoken implication was that these unreconstructed savages were prone at any moment to break into violent or lascivious behaviour if not under proper control.<sup>78</sup> The Moros and Igorots travelled to D.C. by overnight train, and were objects of fascination for the other passengers, who clamored to visit with them. Lewis and Hunt claimed that were it not for their interference “their charges would have been torn limb from limb” on the way to Washington by the attentions of the crowd.<sup>79</sup> They arrived in the capital on the morning of August 9<sup>th</sup>.

The *Washington Post* covered the visit of Facundo and his companions closely, paying attention to the garment choices of the Moros and Igorots during their time in D.C. As happened at the fair, Washingtonians gaped at the exotic dress and behaviours of the two groups, and crowds gathered at the train station and outside their hotel on Third Street. The *Post* dedicated nearly a third of its page-long article on the visit to the attire of the Moros and Igorots. The newspaper was disappointed that the visitors were mostly clothed, which “took away from the day and its heroes one-half of the interest and all of its picturesque character.” The unclothed Moro was “as alluring as a new toy and as entertaining as a pet monkey,” yet garbed he had “a hobo appearance that no amount of stage setting can redeem.” The *Post* assured readers that the Moros had eschewed clothing until right before disembarking in Washington, and disrobed immediately upon leaving. During the visit, they were monitored

---

<sup>77</sup> Ibid.

<sup>78</sup> “Igorottes on Way,” *Washington Post*, 8 August 1904, 1.

<sup>79</sup> “Dattos See Capital,” *Washington Post*, 10 August 1904, 2.

lest they remove their suits at an inopportune moment. Much to the paper's chagrin, Datu Facundo insisted on wearing shoes during the visit. Digressing into sartorial colonialism, the *Post* declared, "neither the Moro nor the Igorrote foot is made for the ordinary shoe of civilization" before giving a precise description of the ideal footwear for them: "A shoe of moderate length, almost six inches wide at the toe and tapering to almost a point at the back of the heel, would be the style for these most recent wards of the nation."<sup>80</sup>

The group visited the War Department, the Naval Yards, the Treasury Department, and met the President at the White House during their day in Washington. At the Treasury Department, Chief Antonio sang 'My Country, 'Tis of Thee' for an assembled crowd of seven hundred, while at the Naval Yards Datu Facundo declared any resistance against the colonial state in the Philippines hopeless, as the Americans had "more guns in the navy than there were Moros warriors in the Island of Mindanao."<sup>81</sup> At the White House, Roosevelt assured the Moros and Igorots via translator of the American people's desire to help them in their development. When the President referenced continuing rebellions on Mindanao, Datu Facundo offered to kill Datu Ali, then leading resistance against the Americans in the Cotabato Valley. The *Post* related the declarations of Facundo in the literary style of pidgin English prototypical of what was later referred to as 'Tonto Speak' or 'Tonto Talk' and used to depict American Indians:<sup>82</sup> "Tell great white Chief that me know big chief who fight Americanos. Me go back home and get head of chief. This stop little chiefs. Me go right now." Roosevelt replied that he appreciated the offer, but that the Americans in the Southern Philippines were "entirely able to master the rebellious chief and [he] did not desire Facundo to go to all that trouble." The President received a variety of gifts from his guests, including carved metallic pipes, a spear, and two shields.<sup>83</sup>

---

<sup>80</sup> Ibid.

<sup>81</sup> "Filipinos Return from Washington," *St. Louis Republic*, 12 August 1904, 8.

<sup>82</sup> Some Native American chiefs at St. Louis had already visited the White House. The use of pidgin talk was a means by which the press could efficiently convey ignorance to an American readership familiar with, and sympathetic to, such depictions of 'savages.' This method was further popularized in film and television. See Jacquelyn Kilpatrick, *Celluloid Indians: Native Americans and Film* (Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1999).

<sup>83</sup> "Dattos See Capital," *Washington Post*, 10 August 1904, 2.

Sufficiently awed by the grandiose expressions of American power they saw in Washington, the Moros and Igorots returned to St. Louis, where they remained until the fair's end. The next visit occurred in November 1907, when Datu Sansaluna made the short trip from Norfolk to Washington to meet with President Roosevelt. The *Evening Star* described Sansaluna's colourful apparel and took interest in his gift to Roosevelt, a doubled-edged *kris* purported to have been property of Datu Ali and passed down in the family for 280 years.<sup>84</sup> Unlike Facundo, Sansaluna had a private secretary and contacted the New Willard Hotel in advance asking them to reserve rooms for him and his party. The *Post* reported that the young noble was visiting the United States not only to participate in the Jamestown Exposition, but also in hopes of entering an American college.<sup>85</sup> Descriptions of the "Moro Prince" were not all genteel. Reports surfaced that he attempted to cut down a Filipino guide at the exposition with his *kris* because the man erroneously told visitors that Sansaluna had five wives. The Moro commented that it was "bad enough to be stared at by the crowds without being pointed out as the husband of five women."<sup>86</sup>

The visit of Sultan Jamalul Kiram II to the United States in 1910 garnered even more attention. Kiram, the titular head of the Moros in the Sulu Archipelago, received extensive coverage in the domestic press during the preceding decade. Newspapers portrayed him as an encapsulation of the unusual Muslim customs. Ruling from his modest 'palace' at Maibun on Jolo, Kiram's actual power was always in debate, as an interchanging series of Tausūg datus in Sulu chipped away at his claims to leadership. Letters to American officials from the Sultan during the period show a leader constantly concerned about the erosion of his power,<sup>87</sup> particularly at the hands of his principal rival Datu Jekanain.<sup>88</sup> Throughout the colonial period, American military and civilian officials were dismissive of Kiram's abilities, with J. Franklin Bell, commander of U.S. military forces in the Philippines during the lead-up to Filipinization, describing the Moro ruler as a "weakling – mentally, morally and

---

<sup>84</sup> "At the White House," *Washington Evening Star*, 2 November 1907, 1.

<sup>85</sup> "Moro Datto Comes Here," *Washington Post*, 2 August 1907, 2.

<sup>86</sup> "Too Much Matrimony," *Washington Post*, 13 October 1907, 15.

<sup>87</sup> Letter from Sultan Jamalul Kiram to O.J. Sweet, 16 September 1901. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>88</sup> Letter from Jamalul Kiram to C.A. Williams, 13 January 1902. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

physically...Unlike most of the leaders of the Moros he is timid, weak, vacillating and very much afraid of responsibility.”<sup>89</sup> Despite such misgivings, Kiram was the public face of Muslims in the Philippines, and managed to retain his status (albeit in a politically limited way) until his death in the 1930s. As such, his visit to the United States was met with interest.

Kiram arrived in New York City aboard the ocean liner *St. Louis* on 24 September 1910, and was greeted at the docks by Hugh Scott, the one-time District Governor of Sulu and a figure with more extensive links to the Tausūg elite than any other American. With the Sultan was Hadji Muhammad Panglima Mulian, Hadji Tahib, Salip Maydano, and Hadji Gulamu Rasul, the son of the Joloano diplomat and politician Hadji Butu.<sup>90</sup> Kiram’s long voyage to the United States by way of China and Europe had been news since his departure, with the *Los Angeles Times* speculating (incorrectly) that the Sultan was bringing hundreds of thousands of dollars in pearls and was willing to pay \$25,000 “for a choice Southern California girl.” The newspaper reported (also incorrectly) that the Sultan propositioned Alice Roosevelt, daughter of Theodore, with marriage during her visit to the Philippines and offered the President “a large price for his daughter.”<sup>91</sup> Multiple newspapers picked up on rumours about the Sultan’s “famous pearls,” with the *Boston Daily Globe* claiming their worth at \$500,000 and speculating about how the U.S. Treasury Department would deal with

---

<sup>89</sup> Letter from J. Franklin Bell to Francis Burton Harrison, January 1914. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>90</sup> Gulamu Rasul and his father represented the modernizing faction in Sulu in the 1920s and 1930s, when they pushed for Moro integration into the Filipino state and encouraged young Moros to learn English and adopt American customs. Twenty years removed from his time as Kiram’s companion in America, Rasul served as Justice of the Peace and sent back scathing indictments of the Sultan’s influence in Sulu. “It is a matter of record that the Sultan is a mentally weak man,” he wrote to Abad Santos, Philippine Minister of Justice, in 1931. “He is easily swayed and influenced by those around him; whether for his good or for theirs, through his gullibility. He gathers around him the most ignorant and in many instances crooks, whose advice he seeks and takes. He and those around him are not interested in either the social, spiritual or political advancement of the Sulu people, and his courts constitute one of the greatest stumbling blocks to their progress.” – Memorandum from H. Gulamu Rasul to Abad Santos, 5 August 1931. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>91</sup> “Sultan Sails Hither,” *Los Angeles Times*, 24 July 1910, 11. Hugh Scott cleared up these rumours in an interview with the *New York Times*. During her world trip in 1905, Alice Roosevelt stopped in Sulu with her mother, where, a lavish ball occurred. Although mainly attended by American military officers and their wives, local Moro dignitaries were also invited. This included Sultan Kiram and his then main rival for power on the island, Datu Jekanain. When the latter presented Alice with a pearl, the Sultan became incensed and, looking to save face, improvised and gave her his pearl ring. This is what led to the rumours of the proposal. – “Sultan of Sulu Has His Dream at Last,” *New York Times*, 24 September 1910, 1.

that matter were they declared at customs.<sup>92</sup> When asked about the supposed treasures by Hugh Scott during his disembarkation from the *St. Louis*, Kiram mentioned that he had sold \$100,000 of pearls during his stay in London and had none remaining with him.<sup>93</sup>

The *New York Times* was especially fond of relating how awed the Moros were by the sites and sounds of the metropolis. Travelling to their hotel, the Astor, the Tausūg dignitaries “hardly said a word all the way. They simply looked and marveled at the wonderful sight.” Viewing the city from the top of the Times Building (now One Times Square), the Sultan and his retinue “could not find words to express their delight. When they passed Wallack’s Theatre, where George Ade’s play about the Sultan had ran, Kiram regretted not seeing “what he looked like on stage.”<sup>94</sup> The party taxied around Manhattan and Brooklyn, visiting Central Park, the Bowery, and Grant’s Tomb, among other sites. Kiram expressed his desire to remain in New York to the press, but said President Taft would be “grieved” if he stayed in the city and enjoyed himself “instead of performing the duties of [his] rank.”<sup>95</sup> This was an overstatement, as when he arrived in Washington Kiram waited several days before receiving an audience with Taft. In the meantime, the Moros visited Leonard Wood at the War Department and took in the sites of the capital. The *Washington Post* fixated on the habits of Kiram as it had done with Datu Facundo, observing that he was “doubtful about civilization’s sartorial mandates” and did not like the feel of trousers. Besides taking note of his eating habits, the *Post* reported on the Sultan’s visit to an acrobatic show and congratulated “the government of a great people” doing “all possible to make him happy” despite the visit being unofficial.<sup>96</sup>

---

<sup>92</sup> “Sultan of Sulu is Here to See Taft,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 24 September 1910, 16. The *Washington Post* published an article dedicated to the matter of the jewels, and said that customs officials would have to determine whether they were brought for sale or simply personal adornment before deciding if they would levy a duty tax – “Sultan’s Jewels A Puzzle,” *Washington Post*, 24 September 1910, 7.

<sup>93</sup> “New York’s Marvels Awe Sultan of Sulu,” *New York Times*, 25 September 1910, 1.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid.

<sup>95</sup> “Hadji Takes Pickles with his Ice Cream,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 26 September 1910, 1. The article fixated upon Kiram’s food choices: “His highness exhibited vagaries of appetite which startled hotel chefs. For lunch today he began with a plate of ice cream garnished with pickles. Then followed a dish of chile con carne and he insisted on winding up with Hungarian goulash and French pastry.”

<sup>96</sup> “Sultan Has to Wait,” *Washington Post*, 27 September 1910, 2.

Kiram's visit with President Taft at the White House was brief but cordial. Accompanied by Hugh Scott, the Sultan joined Taft in the Green Room where they discussed "old times" with the aide of an interpreter. While there, Kiram viewed the portraits of the ex-Presidents, and "evinced great interest in the painting of Abraham Lincoln, who, it was explained to him, set the slaves free." A journalist present observed that the Sultan was forced to give up his slaves by the United States only a decade previous.<sup>97</sup> Three days later, Kiram's party stopped in Chicago, where the issue of trousers was once more on the agenda. The *Daily Tribune* took relish in describing how the Sultan "fell prey to a New York clothes shop" that sold him a pair of ill-fitting pants requiring constant adjustments. Kiram corrected this in Chicago, where he purchased a seven-dollar pair of trousers that were "cut off right and hung straight." During his tour of the city, he visited a variety of parks and at the stockyards inquired as to whether he was allowed to slaughter an animal. The meatpacking district, made infamous by Upton Sinclair's *The Jungle* four years prior, impressed the Sultan so much that he claimed he planned on using the methods he witnessed upon returning to Jolo.<sup>98</sup> On October 5<sup>th</sup>, Kiram and his companions arrived in San Francisco and departed for Honolulu, en route to Manila and, finally, Jolo.

The Sultan of Sulu and his American hosts saw the tour as instructive, although in different ways. While staying in Washington, Kiram told reporters grandiloquently that his mission in the United States was to "learn of the world for my people" and, playing to the national pride of the gathered press, that he wanted to tell them "fully of the nation of which they have become a part of." The Sultan continued in the same vein, talking about the importance of global travel for somebody from a part of the world where such things were not common.<sup>99</sup> American writers commented on the visit with a greater degree of racial condescension, observing that it was the first time the "fiercest fighting strain" of Malays had seen "civilization." The *Washington Post* was impressed that "there was not a sign of the uncouth, of the bizarre, of the savage" about the Moros, declaring this evidence that good

---

<sup>97</sup> "Sultan of Sulu Talks Over Old Times With Taft," *Hartford Courant*, 29 September 1910, 1.

<sup>98</sup> "Chicago's Pants Win Sulu Sultan," *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 1 October 1910, 9.

<sup>99</sup> "Whole World One Big School to Him Says Sulu Sultan," *Christian Science Monitor*, 6 October 1910, 7.

manners were “a matter of intention, not convention” – the implication being that ‘civilized’ manners were by no means conventional in the Southern Philippines.<sup>100</sup> The *Christian Science Monitor* was more explicit about the moral effects of American empire on the Moros, noting that “his little dark brown majesty” could spread the word about the benefits of Western technology and encourage his people to engage in industrial education so that automobiles, “talking machines,” and agricultural equipment could be extensively introduced to the region.<sup>101</sup> Another article used the Sultan’s visit to reflect on the presence of “Asiatic visitors” in the United States, linking Kiram with transcolonial developments in the Pacific world that connected Asian countries and the United States through trade, religion, and education. Although the article deemed the Sultan a “dependent,” scant mention was made of America’s largest role in Asia being the maintenance of colonial states.<sup>102</sup>

The Moro visitor who most captured the American public imagination was not the Sultan of Sulu, but rather his remarkable young niece, Tarhata Kiram. Born on Jolo in 1904, authorities identified Tarhata at a young age as the type of Moro woman the colonial state wanted to groom. Although the sultanate was highly patriarchal, women from noble families still had influence over the affairs of the region, as was evident in the deference paid to the Sultan’s mother Inchy Jamela. Educating Moro women was seen as a corrective to the ill of plural marriage, a common practice for wealthier men in Sulu and anathematic to the Victorian sensibilities of the Americans. To this end, the Cotabato Girls’ School was opened in 1913 and a girls’ dormitory and school on Jolo in 1916. By teaching Moro girls “personal cleanliness, housekeeping, cooking, embroidery, and English,” officials believed they could transform gender relations in the region to match North American norms, which is to say that women would still be in a primarily subordinate domestic role, but arranged and multiple marriages would cease and Moro men would inch closer to civilization.<sup>103</sup> In this way, Moro

---

<sup>100</sup> “The Sultan’s Manners,” *Washington Post*, 28 September 1910, 6.

<sup>101</sup> “What the Sultan is Taking to Sulu,” *Christian Science Monitor*, 22 October 1910, 30.

<sup>102</sup> “The Lure of America for the Far East is Growing,” *New York Times*, 2 October 1910, SM13.

<sup>103</sup> Angeles, “Philippine Muslim Women,” 212-213. Such considerations fit into a larger conversation about the role of cultural exchanges in imperial relationships, and how these were shaped by comingled notions of ‘appropriate’ behaviour for racialized and gendered subjects. These issues were inextricably linked with intimate

women would serve as Trojan horses for America's cultural prerogatives. In 1914, Tarhata was sent to the elite Normal School in Manila to receive "training in domestic science and other appropriate branches."<sup>104</sup> Governor Frank W. Carpenter hoped that bringing Moro girls into contact with the dominant Christian culture of the islands would help assimilate the Muslims into American "beliefs, standards and ideals" (although religious conversion was never actively pursued) and advance a unified Filipino national identity.<sup>105</sup>

After her time in Manila, Tarhata Kiram, at the urging of the Bureau of Insular Affairs, enrolled at the University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, becoming the first Moro woman on record to attend an American post-secondary institution. Still a teenager, she arrived in Illinois at the end of August 1919 with friend and roommate Carmen Aguinaldo, daughter of revolutionary leader Emilio Aguinaldo.<sup>106</sup> Tarhata's presence was noticed by several newspapers, one of which wrote that she "has come to this country to acquire much as possible of American training and ideas. She has chosen a college in the Middle West, she says, because of the greater opportunity to mingle with and meet everyday Americans."<sup>107</sup> By all accounts, Tarhata's time at the University of Illinois was busy. She began her studies in the School of Music, but soon switched to the College of Liberal Arts and Sciences, where she took courses in history, economics, political science, and trigonometry. Outside of the classroom, she adopted American fashion, owning "numerous streets dresses," fur coats, and skirts. She kept her hair in a bob, a style popular among female university students of the

---

spheres. See Catherine Hall and Sonya Ross, *At Home with the Empire: Metropolitan Culture and the Imperial World* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006); Mary Hancock, "Home Science and the Nationalization of Domesticity in Colonial India," *Modern Asian Studies* 35.4 (2001): 873-903; Amy Kaplan, "Manifest Domesticity," *American Literature* 70.3 (1998): 581-606; Rafael, "Colonial Domesticity," 639-666; Indira Sen, "Colonial Domesticities, Contentious Interactions: Ayahs, Wet-Nurses and Memsahibs in Colonial India," *Indian Journal of Gender Studies* 16.3 (2009): 299-328; Ann Laura Stoler, *Carnal Knowledge and Imperial Power*, 1-111.

<sup>104</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 351.

<sup>105</sup> Angeles, "Philippine Muslim Women," 213.

<sup>106</sup> "They Find Chicago a Wonder City," *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 28 August 1919, 5.

<sup>107</sup> "Princess of Sulu Visits Washington on Way to Illinois College Where She Hopes to Learn About America," *Washington Herald*, 8 September 1920, 6.



period, and “never appeared to skimp on her spending money.”<sup>108</sup> Light-heartedly referred to as “The One and Only Sulu Flapper” by other students, Tarhata was remarkably popular on campus, attending parties, dances, and generally living a life typical of the well-heeled American college student. Only nominally Muslim, she would joke with her friends about ‘going *juramentado*’ and was reputed to blow better smoke rings “than the slickest ‘campus cowboy’ on the dean’s list.”<sup>109</sup> Tarhata remained in Illinois until 1924, when she returned to the Sulu Archipelago.

Tarhata Kiram reappeared in the American press in 1927, this time as a cautionary tale about the dangers of colonial betrayal. A year prior, she became the fourth wife of Datu Tahil, son of the famed Datu Jokanain and one of the leaders who faced John Pershing at the Battle of Bagsak in 1913 (where a wife and child of his were killed). Tahil made peace with the government after Bagsak and for a time served as third member of the Provincial Board. When he was politically outmaneuvered and replaced by Arolas Tulawie, a fluent English-speaker and staunch supporter of American colonial power, Tahil turned against state taxation policies and built a fortification at Patikul, some miles east of Jolo town.<sup>110</sup> At the orders of Sulu Governor Carl Moore, the Philippine Constabulary was sent to Patikul and there was a tense standoff lasting several days. The Constabulary did not approach the *cotta* while Tarhata was inside. They feared her death could cause a general revolt on Jolo and waited until she left the fort. On January 27<sup>th</sup>, thirty-five of Tahil’s followers died in a brief but intense battle with the Constabulary. Tahil was taken into custody soon thereafter, while Tarhata Kiram was arrested and charged with sedition on February 4<sup>th</sup>.<sup>111</sup>

Reaction to Tarhata’s ‘betrayal’ in the United States was swift and condemnatory. Elizabeth Walker, reporting for the *Los Angeles Times*, described the Tausūg princess’ “reversion to type” in physical terms. She had replaced her “fashionable foreign clothes” with

---

<sup>108</sup> “Rise of Princess Recalls Coed Days,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 31 March 1932, 10.

<sup>109</sup> “That Wild Little Sulu Flapper We Couldn’t Tame,” *Atlanta Constitution*, 6 March 1927, F6.

<sup>110</sup> Orosa, *The Sulu Archipelago and its People*, 54; Constabulary Report, 19 March 1927, Box 28, Folder 27. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>111</sup> “Sultana of Sulu, Once U.I. Co-Ed, Stalks Bandits,” *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 6 February 1938, 15.

a traditional sarong, filed her teeth, and allowed her hair to grow out, although Walker noticed that Tarhata continued “practicing the only lesson she really ever learned in an American classroom – that woman’s place is wherever she wants it to be.” When the journalist met Tarhata she described her as a “slatternly creature in native garb” who had “scandalized” her “sophisticated American neighbors” by marrying the rebellious Tahir.<sup>112</sup> The *Atlanta Constitution* was even more unsparing, claiming that the “thin veneer of culture” bestowed upon Tarhata during her time in America had “wore off when she got back among her own primitive people.” Dedicating a full-page feature to her, the *Constitution* declared that Tarhata had transformed back into a savage “despite the best efforts of the University of Illinois and other agencies of American culture to send her back to the Philippines thoroughly and incurably Americanized.”<sup>113</sup> The article suggested that whatever transformation Tarhata underwent in the United States was replaced by defeminized barbarism once she returned to her homeland. Every report on her role in the rebellion implied a betrayal of “all the advantages given her” and with it a reversion that stripped her physically and intellectually of any accumulated cultural cachet.<sup>114</sup> The lone voice of protest against Tarhata’s treatment in the U.S. media was a letter to the *Chicago Daily Tribune* from Margaret C. Stoll, a fellow student from the University of Illinois. Her defence was an argument for Tarhata’s acculturation, rather than a simple statement of support: “She is a cultured, refined, and keen witted woman who, against the odds of century-old oriental customs, is struggling to maintain her thoroughly occidental ideas,” Stoll wrote.<sup>115</sup>

The editorial Tarhata Kiram wrote in response to the attacks on her was measured and thoughtful. Published in the *Los Angeles Times* on February 18<sup>th</sup>, the piece blamed the unrest on the unjust power dynamics in Sulu. Governor Carl Moore, she wrote, was not only the chief executive in the region, but also acted as Superintendent of Schools and Justice of the

---

<sup>112</sup> Elizabeth Walker, “Moro Princess Explains Her Reversion to Type,” *Los Angeles Times*, 6 February 1927, 12.

<sup>113</sup> “That Wild Little Sulu Flapper We Couldn’t Tame,” *Atlanta Constitution*, 6 March 1927, F6.

<sup>114</sup> L.B. Johnson, “Co-Ed Reveals How Royal Dreams Faded,” *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 9 February 1927, 1.

<sup>115</sup> Margaret C. Stoll, “Voice of the People: A Portrait of Princess Tarhata,” *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 18 February 1927, 8.

Peace, thereby usurping “the prerogatives of the other officials, who are being converted into mere pawns on the chessboard.” She claimed her stay in America had taught her “that the true essence of free government is that all powers should not be vested in one man.” Alluding indirectly to her own life, she reflected that it was “the experience of all colonial governments that the most troublesome elements in a subjugated country belong to the educated class, particularly those educated abroad. It is axiomatic that you cannot make slave of a man after educating him.”<sup>116</sup> Based on this sanguine response, it is apparent Tarhata had a deeper comprehension of the paradoxes inherent in the relationships between colonial officials, Western education, and the indigenous elite than her detractors in the American press – so quick to resort to racial caricature – did. In an interview she gave shortly after her capture, Tarhata inquired about the famous Leopold and Loeb murder case, asked after a male friend she had dated (football legend Red Grange), and explained that her return to traditional Tausūg garb was a pragmatic way of becoming “a power among my own people” and helping rescue them from impending Filipino hegemony. The short-lived rebellion of 1927 sidelined Princess Tarhata for only a few years, and by the early 1930s, she had reappeared in the American and Filipino Press to advocate for the return of certain islands and territories of British North Borneo to the Sultanate of Sulu. Later in the decade she became a Special Agent for the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes and led raids against outlaws.<sup>117</sup>

Other Moro visitors who came to the United States during the colonial period also received press coverage, albeit not as extensively as Jamalul or Tarhata Kiram. Abdullah, son of Datu Piang, leader of Cotabato, visited San Francisco in 1912 and newspapers claimed he was on the hunt for an American wife, giving scant evidence but likely titillating the racial sensitivities of their readership.<sup>118</sup> Gulamu Rasul, the youngest member of the Sultan’s

---

<sup>116</sup> “Princess Blames Moore,” *Los Angeles Times*, 18 February 1927, 7.

<sup>117</sup> “Sulu Princess Claims Islands in South Seas; Calls on British to Give Them to Philippines,” *New York Times*, 30 March 1930, 1; “Sultana of Sulu...Stalks Bandits,” *Chicago Daily Tribune*; Letter from Akuk Sangkula to Frank Murphy, 6 January 1934, Box 29, Folder 34. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. Tarhata remained active in public life until her death in 1979. She married twice more, acted as a consultant on Islamic affairs to the Philippine government, and even wrote some music. Five years after her death she was officially commemorated when her portrait appeared on a three-peso stamp.

<sup>118</sup> Richard Barry “Datto Abdullah Piang – Wife Hunting in America,” *Evening Standard* (Ogden City, Ut.), 16 March 1912, 12. Barry, a reporter who maintained personal correspondence with Leonard Wood and was in

entourage in 1910, returned to America in 1919 and enrolled at George Washington University, where he met a woman named Alma Stewart whom he courted and married.<sup>119</sup> The younger generation of Moro elite blurred racial and cultural lines in ways that the press found to difficult to convey. Tarhata Kiram's selective role in anti-colonial agitation when she returned home was depicted in terms of a betrayal of the culture bequeathed her by benevolent colonial authorities. The romantic lives of Abdullah Piang and Gulamu Rasul while in the United States carried with them serious notes of interracial sexual transgression, complicating demarcations between colonizer and colonized, and were thus brushed off as comic asides. Newspaper writers were at ease reporting on the stage-managed visits to Washington by Datus Facundo and Sansaluna, or the awe expressed by the Sultan of Sulu as he admired New York City's vertices and Chicago's sprawling abattoirs. In these earlier visits, racial-cultural hierarchies appeared fixed, with a small people paying homage to the cultural gifts bestowed by a great nation. In the 1920s, as colonial empire entered its terminal phase across the globe, visits to the metropole by Moros became more complex and, by extension, troubling.

---

Cotabato to cover the death of Datu Ali in 1905, used Abdullah Piang's presence in America to revive the Piang-Ali family romance he reported on seven years earlier: "Abdullah, the son of Piang, has plenty of money and the robes of office, with which he may travel to the splendid America which assisted his father to overcome his enemy. Ali, the son of Ali, is over there in a small village on the banks of the Cottabatto, poor, friendless, unable to buy even one wife, but in his veins flow the blood of Mahomet, which is white. Time will tell." In the years after his visit to America, the younger Piang became notorious in Cotabato for his brazen behaviour. J.R. Hayden, travelling through the region in 1926 related to his wife that Abdullah was known as "a loud mouthed drunkard whose chief purpose in life seems to be the squandering of his sire's hoarded gold. When I asked Piang how many *carabao* he had, he replied not many, that Abdullah had sold them all and wasted the money. When I remarked that he must get a lot of money from all of the stores in his town that he rents to Chinese merchants he admitted that he got 600 pesos per month, but lamented that Abdullah spent that much in a week. He also informed me that Abdullah had tricked him into signing a power of attorney and then had sold his big house in Cotabato – and so forth. The funny part is though, that Abdullah is the favorite of his 32 living children and that the old Chino gets a great kick out of his very excesses. Of course his drinking is a scandal to all Mohammedans...while his affairs with women are both vicious and expensive. There has never been a Moro like him and so far as I can make out, his goings on are a great source of interest among his compatriots...At any rate, last year he got the GG to appoint the rascal representative at large from Mindanao and Sulu and he is now a Moro statesman." – Letter from J.R. Hayden to Betty Hayden, 17 September 1926, Box 28, Folder 26. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>119</sup> "Capital Girl Stirs Ire of Moro Wife," *Washington Post*, 30 March 1922, 2.

## Subjects, Sidekicks, and Savages

Regrettably missed by its titular character, George Ade's comic opera *The Sultan of Sulu* opened in Chicago on 11 March 1902 to an audience comprised mainly of the writer's friends. Regional newspapers took note, with the *Kansas City Star* reporting "nearly every newspaper paragrapher in the country noted at the time of the addition of Sulu to America's territorial possessions that the incident afforded an excellent subject for comic opera treatment."<sup>120</sup> Ade was an Indiana-born writer who established his reputation penning vernacular fables for Chicago newspapers at the turn of the century. His work was famed for its keen understanding of the American character, especially that of the Midwesterner, and, like his contemporary Mark Twain, he made extensive use regional slang.<sup>121</sup> A staunch anti-imperialist, Ade critiqued the American conquest and the project of benevolent assimilation in print, imbuing in his Filipino characters a plainspoken common sense (similar to that found in his sketches of Midwesterners) that cut through the grandiose yet hollow rhetoric of those in favour of empire.<sup>122</sup> Ade's visit to the Philippines in 1900 coincided with his decision to focus on writing for the stage. Meeting in Manila with press correspondents who had reported from Sulu, Ade was intrigued by their stories of Kiram's "pretentious court, extensive harem, and his disagreement with certain provisos of the American constitution." Ade kept current with developments in the Sulu Archipelago as he wrote the play over the next two years.<sup>123</sup> After making its New York City premiere in December 1902, *The Sultan of Sulu* was performed there a further 192 times during its inaugural run, making it Ade's first major success on the stage.

Ade's satire did not include much in the way of detail about the Tausūg Moros, despite being set in the Sulu Archipelago. In the play, Kiram - stylized as 'Ki-Ram' - is

---

<sup>120</sup> "The Merry 'Sultan of Sulu'," *Kansas City Star*, 12 March 1902, 9.

<sup>121</sup> Harold H. Kolb Jr., "George Ade (1866-1944)," *American Literary Realism* 4.2 (1971): 157-158; Salman, *The Embarrassment of Slavery*, 45-46; Characteristic examples of Ade's newspaper writing can be found in George Ade, *Fables in Slang* (Chicago: Herbert Stone & Co., 1899).

<sup>122</sup> Perry E. Gianakos, "George Ade's Critique of Benevolent Assimilation," *Diplomatic History* 7.3 (1983): 223-225.

<sup>123</sup> Lee Coyle, *George Ade* (New York: Twayne Publishers, 1964), 55.

portrayed as a ridiculous yet harmless figure, a holder of slaves, and a dedicated polygamist. Dramatic tension arises from the arrival of the Americans, led by Colonel Jefferson Budd, who introduce the Sultan to the glories of democratic rule and then use the same system to strip him of his wives and imprison him for failure to pay alimony. The Kiram figure, dressed in a clown costume, plays an Asian version of the rural naïf in one of Ade's American stories, constantly duped yet possessed with a charming ability to see through the blithe hypocrisies of his persecutors (if not his own). Ade's songs take aim at the dissonance found in the colonial regime's pairing of military conquest and benevolent assimilation, and at one point a group of American soldiers sing "We want to assimilate, if we can, / Our brother who is brown; / We love our dusky fellow-man / And we hate to hunt him down / So, when we perforate his frame, / We want him to be good / We shoot at him to make him tame, / If he'd but understand."<sup>124</sup> Shortly thereafter, Colonel Budd asks Ki-Ram if he "consents" to the "benevolent plan" of educating the "neglected race" of Moros, to which the Sultan does – albeit surrounded by soldiers' bayonets.<sup>125</sup> Several of these strange scenes punctuate the play (there is even, at one point, a minstrel act), with the sum being a humorous skewering of the conventions and contradictions of empire-building.

Despite its lack of concrete information about the inhabitants of the Sulu Archipelago, Ade's play was for many Americans the only cultural product associated with the region in the first years of colonial rule. Even intimates of American officials in the Philippines developed their understandings of the Moros through it. A friend of Hugh Scott, Governor of Sulu, wrote to him that he had seen the play three times and "liked it very much, but I little thought that I would soon have the pleasure of an acquaintance with the Sultan himself of that strange and very interesting part of our common country." The friend, George Barbour, encouraged Scott in his new role as governor, confident he would help the Moros and "very readily grasp the conditions necessary for their good," perhaps marveling that he was

---

<sup>124</sup> George Ade, *The Sultan of Sulu: An Original Satire in Two Acts* (New York: R.H. Russell, 1903), 12.

<sup>125</sup> *Ibid.*, 25-26.

corresponding with a real life Colonel Jefferson Budd.<sup>126</sup> Vivienne Angeles writes that *The Sultan of Sulu* emphasized “otherness” and “justified the need to change” the Tausūg Moros, yet this unsmiling read of the play does not consider that the Americans were also portrayed as fundamentally ludicrous.<sup>127</sup> If the Sultan and his subjects were Orientalist tropes, then the self-righteous Americans, certain in the knowledge that Western modernity could be spread at gunpoint, were Occidental ones. The play, after all, was satire. *The Sultan of Sulu* was milder than other depictions of the Moros in American culture, which tended to be less self-aware and more indebted to prevalent ideas on race.

Offstage, America’s fictional colonial endeavours among the Moros were promoted through children’s literature. Imperial adventure stories were a staple in Britain, and were typified in the early twentieth-century by the works of Rudyard Kipling (himself a famous supporter of America’s mission in the Philippines) and, later on, Hugh Lofting. Colonized lands were simultaneously places of fantasy, where a child’s imagination could run wild, and zones of moral inscription, where the values of the civilized world proved their mettle against the chaotic degradation of precolonial culture. “The omnipresence of empire and its images in popular juvenile fiction is no surprise,” writes M. Daphne Kutzer. “Empire and exploitation lend themselves to sensationalism, to exoticism, to ceremony, to jargon and lingo and secret societies, all of which have an appeal for children, and especially for boys of the period.”<sup>128</sup> This exoticism was harnessed and made knowable in more instructive works like Burtis M. Little’s *Francisco the Filipino*, wherein the titular character is used as vessel to expand the American child’s understanding of the moral and commercial possibilities of colonial

---

<sup>126</sup> Letter from George Barbour to Hugh Scott, 18 October 1903, Box 55, Folder 5. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>127</sup> Angeles, “Moros in the Media,” 42-43.

<sup>128</sup> M. Daphne Kutzer, *Empire’s Children: Empire and Imperialism in Classic Children’s Books* (London: Routledge, 2002), 14. Recent studies have looked at how colonial empire’s permeation of physical and mental landscapes manifested in children’s literature and play. See Michelle J. Smith, *Empire in British Girls’ Literature and Culture: Imperial Girls, 1880-1915* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2011); Supriya Goswami, “Fictions of Empire: Colonial India and Nineteenth-Century Children’s Literature” (PhD diss., George Washington University, 2002); Rashna B. Singh, *Goodly is Our Heritage: Children’s Literature, Empire, and the Certitude of Character* (Washington: Scarecrow Press, 2004); Megan A. Norcia, “Playing Empire: Children’s Parlor Games, Home Theatricals, and Improvisational Play,” *Children’s Literature Association Quarterly* 29.1 (2004): 294-314.

possessions.<sup>129</sup> Alternately, the Southern Philippines was for Americans akin to the unknown spaces of British India or colonial Africa, and used as the backdrop for stories articulating notions of civilization and savagery.<sup>130</sup>

This was so in Florence Partello Stuart's *The Adventures of Piang the Moro Jungle Boy*, a collection of adventure stories all featuring the title character engaging in feats of daring and learning about the benefits of American rule in the process. Stuart, who spent time in Mindanao when her father was stationed there, credited Dean Worcester in the preamble for providing statistics and information pertaining to the "origin and development of the Moro." Stuart even claimed "some of Piang's adventures" were "actual incidents of Dean Worcester's travels," evidencing direct contact between American officialdom and the production of colonial fantasy.<sup>131</sup> *The Adventures of Piang the Moro Jungle Boy*, published in 1917, attempted to remedy the ignorance and indifference of the American public towards the Philippines and was subtitled "A Book for Young and Old," although the earlier publication of some of the stories in *Boys' World* magazine indicate they were written mainly for youth.<sup>132</sup>

Piang's adventures can be roughly split into two categories, the first serving as a simplistic ethnographic portrait of the life of Moros in the Cotabato region, and the second illustrating the ameliorating effects of American rule in Mindanao and Sulu. In the first group

---

<sup>129</sup> Burtis M. Little, *Francisco the Filipino* (New York: American Book Co., 1915). Little, a former principal at the Provincial School in Albay, wrote an instructional guide for the young colonial subject in the form of a novel. Francisco learns about the usefulness of English when navigating the streets of Manila, and sees firsthand how the American reorganization of the islands has improved the quality of life for Filipinos. The book likely had a dual purpose of teaching American schoolchildren about their nation's foreign possessions, as well as providing Filipino youth with an English language storybook that gave 'correct' information regarding the transformations occurring in their country.

<sup>130</sup> There was also interest in the oral traditions of the islands. Mabel Cook Cole, who lived in the Philippines for four years while her husband did "ethnological work for the Field Museum of Natural History," compiled folk stories a variety of ethnic groups. Her subsequent book, the first attempt "to offer to the general public a comprehensive popular collection" of these stories, featured two tales from the Muslims of Mindanao. See Mabel Cook Cole, *Philippine Folk Tales* (Chicago: A.C. McClurg & Co., 1916).

<sup>131</sup> Florence Partello Stuart, *The Adventures of Piang the Moro Jungle Boy* (New York: The Century Co., 1917), 4.

<sup>132</sup> Stuart was not the only writer of fanciful tales about the Moros. See S.P. Meek, *The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga* (New York: William Morrow & Co., 1935).



of stories, the reader is introduced to Piang and the Moros. Piang is the young hero of his tribe, and the main helper of the tribe's datu, Kali Pandapatan. His main enemy is another adolescent named Sicto, a *mestizo* bully whose "dirty cream color" skin and "murky eyes" are evidence of his treacherous nature. Piang's early adventures concentrate mainly on his struggles against the natural world, with snakes, wild boar, crocodiles, typhoons, and waterfalls all attempting to thwart the Moro boy. He competes with Sicto to reach Mount Ganassi and become the "charm boy" of his tribe, which he accomplishes to the delight of Kali Pandapatan and his fellow villagers. The boy hero also faces threats from rival tribes, who are receiving help from his chief adversary: "Sicto has betrayed us, but have no fear. Piang, the charm boy leads you; take courage, and Allah, the Merciful, will give you victory."<sup>133</sup> In the first half of the book, the young American reader is given fairly straightforward boy vs. nature tales, albeit with racialized elements.

Piang's first extended contact with American colonials happens during a period of famine, when the U.S. military brings the village much-needed supplies to ease their suffering. As a result, any suspicions of the foreigners are "banished from the minds of the natives." Piang then helps the Americans recover rice from the bottom of Lake Lanao despite the presence of the dangerous natives of the region, in the process learning of the heroic exploits of "General Bushing," a fictional stand-in for John Pershing, in the pacification of the Lanao country. Since Piang's tribe welcomed the colonizers, it is implied they will be safe and reap the benefits of colonial rule. The Americans respond to their greeting by naming a recovered Spanish boat (sunk in Lake Lanao) after the boy.<sup>134</sup>

Piang subsequently becomes the sidekick of Lieutenant Lewis, a young army officer who epitomizes American valor. The two participate in a pirate-hunting mission on the island of Basilan, off the coast of Zamboanga, where Piang helps U.S. troops face down the threat

---

<sup>133</sup> Ibid., 10, 96. The titular character is based on a "real boy," according to Stuart's introduction. Given that his name is 'Piang' and he comes from the Cotabato region, he was presumably inspired by Datu Piang, the American-backed ruler of the region, or one of his many children. Interestingly, Datu Piang himself was of mixed heritage, being the son of a Chinese trader and a Maguindanaon mother. So the fictional Piang may share a name with the very real Datu Piang, but the latter has more in common, in terms of ancestry, with the villain Sicto (whose *mestizo* status is used as evidence of his moral impurity).

<sup>134</sup> Ibid., 160, 191.

of *juramentados*. “Ashamed of his fierce people,” Piang describes to Lewis and his men the tradition of ritual suicide in battle against the infidel, and how the slain *juramentado* then rode into the afterlife on a “shadowy white horse taller than a *carabao*.” Lewis chides Piang for believing “those fairy tales” now that the Moro boy is “a good American.” Piang replies, “Sure, me good American now.” When the army detachment is attacked by *juramentados*, they confront the local Sultan, who responds indifferently by telling them that his people become excited on Islamic feast days and he cannot control their actions. Lewis is frustrated at how it seems “impossible to deal with the crafty sultan according to Christian standards” but soon devises a plan with the help of Piang. He sends the gunboat *Sabah* up to the nearby Moro village where the Sultan lives and has it open fire. When the Sultan visits the Americans to protest, he comes in state. “No insignificant nigger greeted Lewis this time,” writes Stuart, employing racial epithets culled from the United States to emphasize the grandeur of the Sultan and his retainers. When asked to explain why the *Sabah* attacked the village, Lewis explains that the ship went *juramentado* because it was the Christian feast day of Christmas and could not be controlled. The Sultan understands that his logic is being used against him and brings the Americans gifts of turkeys (for their Christmas dinner) and keshi pearls.<sup>135</sup>

The ‘true’ story of the boat ‘going *juramentado*’ was a favourite of colonials in Mindanao and Sulu, and, as related earlier, was alternately attributed to the Spanish General Juan Arolas, John Pershing, and Leonard Wood. It is likely Stuart sourced it from her talks with Dean Worcester or John Finley, both of whom were familiar with the comic anecdote.<sup>136</sup> Likewise, Stuart’s descriptions in the following chapter of a *bichara* (a ceremonial meeting of elders, or rough equivalent of a *darbar* in the British Raj) organized by “Governor Findy” correspond directly to those held by John Findley during his time governing the District of Zamboanga.<sup>137</sup> Stuart observes that the Findy (Findley) character has “been severely

---

<sup>135</sup> Ibid.

<sup>136</sup> See Chapter Five, footnotes eighteen and nineteen.

<sup>137</sup> “These people arrived by trail and by a vast number of native boats, the latter being highly decorated with native bunting. Their approach was heralded by the beating of *agongs* and *kulintangans* and the firing of *lantakas*...As this vast assemblage drew near to the Zamboanga dock, the hum of voices, the shouts of

criticized for his experiment” in transforming the Moros, but that “he was willing to run the risks” to “bring the light of freedom and peace to the misguided savages.”<sup>138</sup> Piang delights in the festivities, of course, marveling at American-made confections such as pink lemonade, toy balloons, and popcorn. He also foils a plot to assassinate Governor Findy, earning further plaudits from the Americans.

Apart from Findley and Pershing, fictionalized versions of a variety of real personages appear or are referenced by Stuart. This includes Datu Mandi, Datu Enoch, the pirate Jikiri, Datu Ali, the *insurrecto* Vincente Alvarez, and Leonard Wood. Although Stuart claimed Piang was a real boy in the preface to the collection, he was likely named after Datu Piang, the mixed Moro-Chinese ruler of the Cotabato region. Findley even provided a blurb for the book, saying that Stuart “faithfully portrayed the daily life of the average Moro” and accurately “depicted the characteristics of Malayan Moro youth.”<sup>139</sup> Drawing on materials from the War Department, her access to Dean Worcester and John Findley, and her own experiences in Mindanao, Stuart presented the stories as lightly fictionalized accounts of the lives of ‘loyal’ Muslims. The book was praised in the *New York Times* for the excitement of Piang’s adventures, but also for being “full of information about the customs, beliefs, and way of living of the Moros.”<sup>140</sup> The *Times* did not mention that the tales were also allegories about the righteousness of the American project to reconfigure society in the Southern Philippines.

Children with military aspirations read about the Muslim South in H. Irving Hancock’s *Uncle Sam’s Boys in the Philippines: or, Following the Flag Against the Moros*. The book was one of a series that followed the young men of B Company in the 34<sup>th</sup> Infantry

---

command, the swish of paddles, all coupled with the noise of *agongs* and *lantakas* made indescribable din and a scene of matchless barbaric splendor. The Sultan and his tribal chiefs were received by Governor Finley with high military honors and escorted by troops to the audience chamber.” See Findley, “Race Development by Industrial Means,” 343-344.

<sup>138</sup> Stuart, *Piang*, 223.

<sup>139</sup> *Ibid.*, jacket.

<sup>140</sup> “Latest Works of Fiction,” *New York Times*, 7 October 1917, 49.

as they battled foes, foreign and domestic alike. In *Following the Flag*, the company is stationed in the fictional town of Bantoc, likely named by Hancock after Bontoc in Mountain Province but modeled on Zamboanga in its ethnic composition. The “lazy and good-natured” Christian Filipino residents in the story are contrasted with the fierce Moros, who quickly burn down an American schoolhouse and pay special attention to destroying its American flag. An American plantation owner in the area begs the soldiers to “not conclude that all of the Moros are bad, or even troublesome. The truth is that most of the Moros on the island of Mindanao are good fellows. They’re lazy, but not notably vicious.” The planter, Seaforth, explains to the soldiers that the cause of problems stems from local *datus* worried about losing power.<sup>141</sup>

The second half of the novel focuses on the outnumbered Americans of B Company using their superior weaponry to protect American plantation owners from the extortions of local *datus*. In scenes of slaughter, the infantrymen mow down “dense brown ranks” of Moros with their Gatling gun.<sup>142</sup> The natives are referred to as “goo-goos” and accused of the desecration of American graves. In one chapter, entitled “Playing Goo-Goo in a Grim Game,” two B Company soldiers cover themselves with dirt and infiltrate a Moro encampment by speaking gibberish to the guards (who assume it’s a local dialect). When the hostile *Datu* Hakkut is eventually surrounded, he commits *seppuku* and the Americans fling his body over the ramparts of the *cotta* to quell his men: “‘I fancy the cruel war is over, gentlemen,’ remarked Captain Freeman that evening to his two younger officers. ‘These Moros, like other semi-savages, fight with heart only when they have a great leader.’”<sup>143</sup> The novel closes with a vulgar scene of patriotic fervor and racial denigration. The American flag is raised above the captured *cotta* and the Moro prisoners are “forced to pay it humble reverence, after which they were allowed, on their hands and knees, to crawl out of the fort and find their liberty

---

<sup>141</sup> H. Irving Hancock, *Uncle Sam’s Boys in the Philippines: or, Following the Flag Against the Moros*. (Philadelphia: Henry Altemus Company, 1912), 122-124. Hancock’s contributions to the ‘war preparedness movement’ are catalogued in Elizabeth S. Frank, “Advocating War Preparedness: H. Irving Hancock’s *Conquest of the United States Series*,” in *Pioneers, Passionate Ladies, and Private Eyes: Dime Novels, Series Books, and Paperbacks*, ed. Larry E. Sullivan et al. (Binghamton: The Haworth Press, 1996), 215-231.

<sup>142</sup> Hancock, *Uncle Sam’s Boys*, 199.

<sup>143</sup> *Ibid.*, 251.

outside.”<sup>144</sup> For the young reader, American moral and material superiority over savagery is made explicit in these and many other scenes in Hancock’s novel.

If Piang represented the ideal faithful Moro – resourceful yet hampered by racial and cultural determinants – then his spiritual counterpart was *Jack Armstrong, the All-American Boy*. In his nightly radio program, airing from 1933-1951, the fictional Jack travelled the globe with his two friends, Betty and Billy, and their industrialist uncle, Jim Fairfield. In his compendium of old-time radio, John Dunning claims that the program was “a pinnacle of juvenile American radio serials,” in a period when the form was pervasive.<sup>145</sup> The show was underwritten during its two decade run by General Mills and their cereal Wheaties, and each episode began with an advertisement (itself a short dramatic skit) connecting the product to the athleticism, personal hygiene, and regular breakfast habits of Jack Armstrong. Popular with the young listenership were the mail-in products linked to the cereal, some of which appeared in Jack’s adventures. During Jack’s trip to the Philippines, for example, young fans could send away for a pedometer.<sup>146</sup> *Jack Armstrong, the All-American Boy* was vetted by the child psychologist Martin L. Reymert, director of the Mooseheart Lab for Child Research, who implemented a “five point program” to ensure that the serial’s plots were “objective,” fostered a “constructive social attitude” in young listeners, promoted “a respect for fine personal qualities,” developed “an attitude of self-reliance,” and was “wholesome” in its excitements.<sup>147</sup> Not only a simple children’s program, *Jack Armstrong* married American consumer culture with military-technological fetishism, and was grounded in the idea that the incipient moral awareness of youth could be scientifically managed.

Jack and his gang met the Moros during their 1940-1941 adventures in the Philippines. Searching for the missing Professor Loring and his dangerous cache of uranium-

---

<sup>144</sup> Ibid., 253.

<sup>145</sup> John Dunning, *On the Air: The Encyclopedia of Old-Time Radio* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2003), 353.

<sup>146</sup> Ibid., 355.

<sup>147</sup> “Jack Armstrong Script Checked by Child Expert,” *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 7 December 1941, N9.

235, the group clashes with villains in Luzon and the Sulu Sea before landing on Mindanao. At Zamboanga, Betty and Uncle Jim have this telling exchange:

**Betty:** Oh Uncle Jim, everything around here looks so civilized – it’s not at all like the part of Mindanao we were in before!

**Uncle Jim:** That’s the U.S. Army for you, Betty...everything looks ready for inspection, and that’s a sure sign that the troops are ready for anything.<sup>148</sup>

In the world of *Jack Armstrong*, the Americans are still the undisputed masters of the Southern Philippines on the eve of the Second World War, and Zamboanga is still firmly in the hands of the U.S. military (who officially ceded control to civilians nearly three decades earlier). Uncle Jim warns Jack and his companions that the ‘civilization’ on offer in Zamboanga is tenuous, telling them of his participation years earlier in suppressing an uprising in the region and giving the youth a primer on the dangers of the peninsula. “You wouldn’t think so to look at this orderly town...on the surface everything is peaceful, but look at that range of hills beyond the parade grounds. They are only a few miles away, and yet once you get on the other side of them you’re in a wild and savage country.”<sup>149</sup> For the listeners of *Jack Armstrong*, Zamboanga remained a civilized outpost in an untamed land, much as it appeared to Americans arriving there four decades earlier.

The narrative conventions of the adventure story ensured that Jack and company are travelling in the “wild and savage country” beyond Zamboanga by the next episode. The Moros in the fictional village of Mulita, headed by the nefarious Datu Karang, are hostile and threaten the party. They are tricked through Jack’s predictable use of the latest technology. He convinces Karang that a horse he has rigged with a walkie-talkie can speak, scaring the Moro datu and safeguarding the group. Manua, a loyal Moro from “Cotabango” (Cotabato),

---

<sup>148</sup> “A New Adventure,” *Jack Armstrong, the All-American Boy*, 6 January 1941, Tape 156. American Radio Collection, 1931-1972, SHSM-C.

<sup>149</sup> Ibid.

aids Jack. He informs the group that the real villain is the “White Sultan of Mindanao,” who wants to unite all the Moro tribes into “one piratical government.”<sup>150</sup> As in the Piang stories, Moros are dichotomized as either savage and untrustworthy, or dull-witted and “faithful.” The Moro and Lumad tribes of Mindanao are a source of constant danger to Jack and his friends, who repeatedly escape trouble through their innate resourcefulness and technological marvels like Uncle Jim’s autogyro (a proto-helicopter). The group thwarts gun smugglers, rescues captured American soldiers, and, eventually, finds Professor Loring and the missing uranium-235. The show’s incredible popularity made it one of the few conduits for (admittedly dubious) information about the Moros available to American adolescents. Depictions of Moros in youth literature and radio serials were largely unflattering, much like the cultural products aimed at older audiences.

In the spring of 1939, work finished on a replica Philippine village spread over six acres on the United Artists film lot in Los Angeles. Featuring a 700-foot tropical lagoon, it was at the time “the largest set ever used in Hollywood.”<sup>151</sup> This was where *The Real Glory*, the only movie about the so-called Moro Rebellion, was filmed.<sup>152</sup> Produced by Samuel Goldwyn and directed by Henry Hathaway, the film starred Gary Cooper, David Niven, and Reginald Owen as officers of the Philippine Constabulary posted to a remote station in Northern Mindanao and tasked with training helpless Christian Filipino villagers to fight the Moro scourge. The film was released in September 1939 to limited fanfare. It was re-released in 1942 to capitalize on renewed interest in Asia driven by the war with Japan, but pulled quickly at the behest of the Motion Picture Division of the Office of War Information, who

---

<sup>150</sup> “Moro Peddler,” *Jack Armstrong, the All-American Boy*, 17 January 1941, Tape 157. American Radio Collection, SHSM-C; “Another Talking Trick,” *Jack Armstrong, the All-American Boy*, 20 January 1941, Tape 157. American Radio Collection, SHSM-C; “After Hidden Guns,” *Jack Armstrong, the All-American Boy*, 21 January 1941, Tape 157. American Radio Collection, SHSM-C.

<sup>151</sup> “Gary Cooper Cast in ‘The Real Glory’,” *Atlanta Constitution*, 2 April 1939, SM7; “‘Glory’ Up to Start,” *Variety*, 19 April 1939, 18.

<sup>152</sup> The film was based upon a novel by Charles L. Clifford, a prolific writer of adventure stories who published frequently in magazine like *The Red Book* (now *Redbook*), *Cosmopolitan*, and *Adventure*. His identity is a subject of speculation online, and some have stated his name was simply a pseudonym of Vic Hurley, author of *The Swish of the Kris* and *Jungle Patrol*. These claims are thinly sourced. For the original work, see Charles L. Clifford, *The Real Glory* (London: Heinemann, 1937).

had received protests and thought it “held our Allies in a bad light.”<sup>153</sup> At the time, groups of Moros were aiding the Americans in guerilla warfare against the Japanese on Mindanao.

*The Real Glory* begins with a dedication to the “members of the Philippine Constabulary – who, ‘always outnumbered, never outfought’ – struggled valiantly to wrest independence from forces that sought to enslave them. Their unfailing courage in the face of untold hardships – has made possible the great Philippine Commonwealth as we know it today.”<sup>154</sup> To portray the “forces that sought to enslave” the Philippine Constabulary, the movie took significant liberties with the historical record. Opening in 1906 with the departure of the United States Army from Fort Mysang in Northern Mindanao, *The Real Glory* portrays a Tagalog-speaking community in mortal danger from the predations of Alipang, a Moro chieftain whose monomaniacal desire to kill and enslave Christians enters into the realm of the absurd. The villagers and native members of the Constabulary are helpless against the *bolos* of the Moros, and run in fear whenever attacked. The ruminative Catholic priest, who is the only ‘Filipino’ voice in the film, comments to the American officers that the Moros “will kill all the men, and carry away all the women and children into slavery...for you it will be a report written in ink, but for my people it will be a report written in blood.”<sup>155</sup>

When successive American commanders of Fort Mysang are killed by *juramentado* attacks, Dr. Canavan, played by Cooper, decides to attack what he sees as the root of the problem: the Filipino fear of the Moro. After being told by the padre that Moros are unafraid to die but terrified of being buried in a pigskin (“Father Filipe, you’ve done it! You’ve isolated the germ for me! A pigskin might be the salvation of Mysang!”), Canavan captures a would-be *juramentado* and parades him before the Filipinos. The doctor places the Moro into the pigskin where he begins screaming out in horror. “Now look at him, your brave Moro, your terrible Moro,” says Canavan, “who won’t let you work your rice fields or fish the seas in peace. How can you be afraid of that worm crawling on the ground howling for mercy,

---

<sup>153</sup> “Withdraw ‘Real Glory’ After Gov’t Request,” *Boxoffice*, 13 September 1942, 8.

<sup>154</sup> *The Real Glory*, directed by Henry Hathaway (1939; Los Angeles: MGM Movie Legends Collection, 2007), DVD.

<sup>155</sup> *Ibid.*



begging for help, scared out of his skin because of the skin of a dead pig?” The invigorated Filipinos are then shown hitting and bayonetting the dummies of Moro warriors that they were once afraid of, suggesting Canavan’s pigskin act has imbued them with a martial spirit. The Constabulary outpost and surrounding village are still in peril, however. Alipang dams the water supply, leading to an outbreak of cholera when the misguided Commander Hartley, played by Owen, insists on using a well instead of attacking the Moros and undamming the river. “Why doesn’t he come down here and fight like a man?” Canavan says of Alipang, “He’s making war with germs instead of *bolos*.” Canavan employs the latest sanitary measures to halt the outbreak – cottonseed oil, a prohibition against eating raw foods, scrubbing rooms with carbolic acid – but is unsuccessful.<sup>156</sup>

Commander Hartley, the main impediment to confronting Alipang, finally admits his errors, and proclaims that “Mysang isn’t just an isolated village, it’s a test” of the colonial project to train self-sufficient Filipinos. With this admission, the film’s violent final act begins. Canavan discovers a fellow officer murdered by being buried up to his neck, covered in honey, and feasted upon by the jungle ants. Enraged, he dynamites the dam and returns to the village to confront the Moros. Spears, *bolos*, a Gatling gun, and dynamite all feature as the body count rises, but eventually Alipang’s goal of looting the three hundred Krag-Jorgenson rifles in Mysang’s armory and becoming “the Sultan of Mindanao” is foiled. In a highly symbolic final battle, Yamo, the detachment’s Filipino lieutenant, confronts the Moro leader, beating him to death with the butt of his Krag and knocking his body into the river, where it is carried downstream. As Canavan and Hartley leave for Manila shortly thereafter, having brought the Filipinos up to American standards, the well-trained and attired members of the Philippine Constabulary, led by Yamo, stand at attention for them. “We who are about to live salute you,” says the Catholic padre, as the villagers throw garlands of flowers at the Americans’ departing boat and the screen fades to black.<sup>157</sup>

In *The Real Glory*, the Moro is an evil figure – a primitive, despotic villain who seeks domination of the more docile Christian Filipinos for no other reason than because his

---

<sup>156</sup> Ibid.

<sup>157</sup> Ibid.

warlike disposition dictates he do so. Besides Alipang, the only other Moro adult to play a prominent role in the film is the unnamed Datu, who acts as a friend to the Americans while secretly working for Alipang. A boy with a Hispanic name, Miguel, plays the one ‘good’ Moro in the film (why he has a typically Filipino name is not cleared up). Referred to as ‘Mike’ by the Americans, he quickly becomes a sidekick/manservant to Canavan, in a relationship that mimics that of Lewis and Piang in Florence Partello Stuart’s collection of stories. ‘Mike’ shines Canavan’s boots, laughs when his fellow Muslim is being threatened with the pigskin, and dispenses his thoughts in predictable pidgin sentences like “Moro no afraid of things he can see, only afraid of things he can’t see.”<sup>158</sup> ‘Mike’ is rewarded for his collaboration with a spot on Canavan’s boat to Manila, and he is last seen dressed in a Western-style suit.

The film garnered favourable reviews, although the critic Nelson B. Bell wrote that the leaders of the Philippine Commonwealth took issue with some depictions of the Filipinos as “craven cowards.” Gary Cooper, wrote Bell, was to be “patted on the back for the fine display of American sagacity and scientific heroism.”<sup>159</sup> Mae Tinee, the byline for multiple female reviewers at the *Chicago Daily Tribune*, praised the depiction of American heroism against “the savage Moros who lived in the jungles” but was most interested in the “vivid and heartbreaking” scenes that showed Mysang in the grip of the cholera outbreak. “Science marches on, praise God!” it concluded.<sup>160</sup> Upon its re-release, the *Hartford Courant* claimed that *The Real Glory* was “rip-snorting film fare, without a shadow of a doubt, which could easily be enjoyable at second viewing, particularly in the light of today’s Philippine history.”<sup>161</sup> For reviewers, the Filipinos and Moros served as adequate victims and villains, respectively, but the real focus was on the intellectual and physical dynamism of Cooper, the one-man encapsulation of the American civilizing mission in Asia.

---

<sup>158</sup> Ibid.

<sup>159</sup> Nelson B. Bell, “There Is Enough of It For All in ‘Real Glory’,” *Washington Post*, 6 November 1939, 16.

<sup>160</sup> Mae Tinee, “‘The Real Glory’ Has Good Cast in Good Story,” *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 4 November 1939, 17.

<sup>161</sup> “The Real Glory,” *Hartford Courant*, 19 June 1942, 9.

## The Limits of Colonial Spectacle

In “Benefits of the Exposition,” featured in the opening pages of the *Official Guide to the Louisiana Purchase Exposition*, LPEC President David R. Francis claimed the “educational and moral benefits” of the fair could not be “measured in terms of dollars and cents,” and that “the far-reaching effect of such a vast display of man’s best works on the intelligent and emulous minds of fifty or sixty millions of students, is beyond computation.” For Francis and the LPEC, the fairgrounds were a vast classroom, where the progress of the world’s peoples was assessed. In terms dictated by the Victorian moral and racial concepts of the organizers, visitors could be taught “the noble lessons of human worth and human brotherhood.”<sup>162</sup> Yet for all these high-sounding pedagogical claims, the St. Louis World’s Fair retained the atmosphere of the carnival. Within the same guidebook, the “Moros of Mindanao” were described as “piratical” and representative of “some of the most savage tribes” in the Philippines. Spectators were warned about taking their pictures, and the rivalry between the Samal and Lanao villages was reportedly so intense that a special guard was posted to ensure peace. The “noble lessons” touted by Francis are nowhere in the write-up, with visitors’ interest instead being drawn by the more sensational aspects of human exhibits.<sup>163</sup>

“The shifting ways in which displayed peoples were recruited and marketed,” writes Sadiya Qureshi, “both reflected and contributed to an expanding imperial presence.”<sup>164</sup> Qureshi’s work focuses on expositions in the British Empire, but his observation can be applied to the United States in the early twentieth-century as well. As the American public came to terms with their role as colonial masters in the Philippines they were presented with competing visions that emphasized, on one hand, the innate morality of civilizational transformation through colonial tutelage, and, on the other, the spectacular and irresolvable barbarity of their subjects. These contradictory strains of thought often coexisted, as in the pages of the guidebook, and made America’s cultural interactions with the Moros curiously

---

<sup>162</sup> David R. Francis, “Benefits of the Exposition,” *Official Guide of the Louisiana Purchase Exposition* (St. Louis: The Official Guide Co., 1904), 7.

<sup>163</sup> Ibid., 118.

<sup>164</sup> Sadiya Qureshi, *Peoples on Parade: Exhibitions, Empire, and Anthropology in Nineteenth-Century Britain* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2011), 273.

diffuse. Essentialized Moro characters, real and imagined, were repurposed by writers for their own ends. Datu Facundo was a clueless savage coming to pay tribute to the “great white chief” Theodore Roosevelt, but Sultan Jamalul Kiram II was the possessor of Oriental riches (pearls) and came to the United States to learn about its technological marvels. Piang the Moro Jungle Boy was a resourceful ally of the American troops in the Southern Philippines, but the Moros in *The Real Glory* were deceitful murderers and obstacles to progress in the colonial state. This inchoate presentation of the Moros to the American public through official and unofficial channels meant that the story of benevolent assimilation was never as effectively applied as it was to Christian Filipinos.

To understand how the Moros materialized the American public consciousness, this chapter has examined a variety of cultural products. The average American citizen did not encounter a Tausūg or Samal Moro through travel to the Southern Philippines, or by reading colonial reports, or in the pages of scholarly articles. Rather, their contact with the Muslim South came through manufactured displays, as at St. Louis and Jamestown, or in newspaper reports about visiting Moro elites, or in popular entertainments. As Meg Wesling observes, supporters of empire were “united by a particular, and particularly timely, logic of cultural transmission, a pragmatic notion of culture as an ameliorative and powerful force in the formation of citizens and the submission of colonial subjects.”<sup>165</sup> While the overwhelming majority of cultural material produced about the Moros in America explicitly or implicitly supported their status as wards of the state, there were instances of subversion. George Ade’s play, *The Sultan of Sulu*, poked fun at self-serious American assumptions about the need to reconfigure Tausūg society, and Tarhata Kiram, the Tausūg princess educated in Illinois, resisted racially condescending depictions of her in the American press after she broke with the colonial government on Jolo. Although these examples are buried under the weight of material validating empire, they do indicate that the racial and cultural logic that drove the subjugation of the Moros did not pass through the vigorous public culture of the United States unchallenged.

---

<sup>165</sup> Wesling, *Empire’s Proxy*, 3.

## Chapter Eight / Imperial Exchanges

### *The Southern Philippines in a Connected World*

“Example is contagious,” José Rizal wrote about the drive for empire, “perhaps the great American Republic, which has interests in the Pacific and does not share in the spoils of Africa, may some day think of ultramarine possessions.”<sup>1</sup> The Filipino intellectual’s predictions manifested less than a decade later in the aftermath of the Spanish-American War. In the Philippines, the United States acquired a colony with its own pre-existing connections, which stretched between and through regions, nations, and empires. These dense relational networks and their numerous contingencies shaped how Americans, Filipinos, Moros, and a variety of other groups positioned themselves relative to one another. Americans also created their own networks as they solidified rule, participating in exchanges across a world that was, at the close of the nineteenth-century, permeated by colonial empire.<sup>2</sup> Far from existing in hermetic separation from the societies surrounding it (and those further afield), the Muslim South was in constant conversation with them.

This chapter investigates these transmissions, entanglements, and connected histories. Although sometimes considered outposts or frontiers by colonial officials and in the subsequent scholarly literature, Mindanao and Sulu were spaces shaped by a cacophony of competing and collaborating forces before, during, and after the American colonial period.

---

<sup>1</sup> José Rizal, *The Philippines A Century Hence* (Manila: Philippine Education Company, 1912), 107. The book collects Rizal’s writing for *La Solidaridad* in 1889 and 1890, which served as accompaniments to his two major novels, *Noli Me Tangere* and *El Filibusterismo*. The original article appears as: José Rizal, “Filipinas Dentro De Cien Años – IV,” *La Solidaridad* 18, 31 January 1890.

<sup>2</sup> The colony the Americans took from the Spanish was already a connected space. For examples of ties between the Philippines and other Spanish possessions, see Katharine Bjork, “The Link That Kept the Philippines Spanish: Mexican Merchant Interests and the Manila Trade, 1571-1815,” *Journal of World History* 9.1 (1998): 25-50. Spain was also involved in broader dialogues about environment and breakdown (see Chapter Six) and in the circulation of colonial professional classes: Raquel A.G. Reyes, “Environmental Thinking and the Question of Disease Causation in Late Spanish Philippines,” *Journal of the History of Medicine and Allied Sciences* 69.4 (2014): 554-579; Aitor Anduaga, “Earthquake Building Overseas: Military Engineers, Cyclonic-Seismic Affinity and the Spanish Dominion in the Philippines, 1860-1898,” *Engineering Studies* 6.1 (2014): 1-22. Sulu and Mindanao were linked into transcolonial and supraregional networks largely through their role in maritime trade, see James Francis Warren, “The Structure of Slavery in the Sulu Zone,” 111-128.

Prior chapters in this dissertation have suggested connections between the United States and other colonial entities: in the exhibition of racially othered subjects at exhibitions; through the use of colonial massacre as a civilizational corrective; in the way foreign peoples were imagined; through the work of globally networked social reformers. Here the entire focus is on how the global, the regional, and the local interacted with each other to influence the shaping of colonial *cultures* in the Southern Philippines. Accomplishing this means eschewing the type of methodological nationalism that envisions history as occurring within a series of containers circumscribed by the contours of the national body. A growing subfield that comparatively situates the American empire within constellations of imperial formations and transcolonial flows helps place this analysis outside traditional exceptionalist narratives, or, in the words of Yves-Pierre Saunier, “self-narratives of autonomous production.”<sup>3</sup> This is not to deny that American power had its own specificities. As demonstrated elsewhere in this project, the culture of the U.S. military and the republican character of American democracy both influenced the style of rule in Mindanao and Sulu. But to stipulate a purely dyadic relationship between the United States and Southern Philippines is to overlook multiple areas of reciprocal connection involving other actors.

By tapping into networks of cultural exchange, imperial or otherwise, the student of American empire sees that even in spaces perceived as remote or isolated there are high

---

<sup>3</sup> Pierre-Yves Saunier, *Transnational History*, 7. The transnational turn in writing the history of American foreign relations has led scholars to further investigate the diffuse and reciprocal relationships with foreign states, institutions, and individuals that shaped the character of not only U.S. colonial states but also the culture of America itself. The writings of Anne Foster and Julian Go, for example, have taken comparative approaches to demonstrate continuities, discontinuities, and exchange between the United States and European empires. See Foster, *Projections of Power*, 73-110; Julian Go and Anne L. Foster, eds., *The American Colonial State in the Philippines: Global Perspectives* (Durham: Duke University Press, 2003); Go, *Patterns of Empire*, 235-247. The benchmark collection on how American colonial possessions reshaped the metropole and one another is: Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano, eds., *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009). Moving beyond the metropole-colony binary, recent work focuses (as does this chapter) on circuits of exchange between and through empires – among colonizers and colonized alike – and emphasizes a complex reframing of American history within an evolving series of local, regional, national, and international social formations, in the process bridging the comparative and the transnational. See Michael Adas, “From Settler Colony to Global Hegemon: Integrating the Exceptionalist Narrative of the American Experience into World History,” *American Historical Review* 106.5 (2001): 1692-1720; Thomas Bender, ed., *Rethinking American History in a Global Age* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002); Frank Schumacher, “The United States: Empire as a Way of Life?” in *The Age of Empires*, ed. Robert Aldrich (London: Thames & Hudson, 2007), 278-303; Tyrrell, *Transnational Nation*; Zimmerman, *Alabama in Africa*.

degrees of connectivity. This does not mean that the local or national are rejected as tools of analysis. Rather, they are given further depth and texture by exploring their interactivities with ‘outside’ entities, from individuals to empires. Studying the resultant cross-pollinations – with their mimicries, adaptations, critiques, hybridities, or rejections – allows richer conceptualizations of the character of colonial societies. In this manner, we move past the comparative and into the transcolonial, or inter-imperial, and escape the constraints of methodological approaches that promote nationalist-exceptionalist or colonialist-exceptionalist models. Prasenjit Duara stresses territorial boundaries as “illusory means of keeping histories apart,” and here I add that nationalist historiographies and their intellectual boundaries operate in the same manner.<sup>4</sup> By mapping “the uneven pulses that linked regions and nations across the modern world” my approach treats histories and historiographies not as hermetic entities but as overlapping explanatory frameworks.<sup>5</sup> In the case of the Southern Philippines, it demonstrates that even the supposed frontiers of colonial empire were often heterogeneous spaces connected to and continuously reshaped by global flows of people, commodities, ideas, governance models, and so forth.

Understanding the colonial experience in the Southern Philippines is not simply a matter of comparing the policies of the United States to other European colonial empires, although that constitutes an important component. Part of this process involves assessing the relations between non-Western actors, and by moving outside notions of late nineteenth-century empire as the sole domain of Europeans and Americans to examine the role that non-European empires like the Ottomans played in the relationship between the United States and the Moros. As Tony Ballantyne and Antoinette Burton observe, “the metropole-colony binary that has organized so much writing on empires fails to illuminate the complex commercial arrangements, knowledge networks, and political affiliations that developed within and

---

<sup>4</sup> Prasenjit Duara, “Transnationalism and the Challenge to National Histories,” in *Rethinking American History in a Global Age*, ed. Thomas Bender (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002), 43.

<sup>5</sup> Shane Ewen, “Lost in Translation? Mapping, Molding, and Managing the Transnational Municipal Moment,” in *Another Global City: Historical Explorations into the Transnational Municipal Moment, 1850-2000*, ed. Pierre-Yves Saunier and Shane Ewen (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2008), 174

frequently split out of imperial systems.”<sup>6</sup> In moving beyond these binaries, we can better view how colonial power was shaped and mediated by traffic between and within empires, by imperial mimesis, and through the often surprising ability of the local to assert itself against broader prerogatives of control and reconfiguration. This complicates our view of the Southern Philippines between 1899 and the Second World War, but also provides a textured view of the colonial experience that is missed otherwise.

This chapter uses group and individual biography as a means of showing mobility and connection. If notions of the ‘transnational’ or the ‘transcolonial’ are sometimes theoretically oblique, it is in lived experiences that we can most readily grasp the permeability of borders and complexities of cultural transfer. I have peopled the following with wanderers, who passed through the Southern Philippines on lifelong global journeys, or who utilized their own hybrid identities to influence the societies they operated within. The manifestations of these encounters were alternately violent, intimate, exploitative, and productive. The men and women who travelled through empire did so for money, for adventure, for romance, for religion, for education, and for ideology. As we shall see, there was not an atypical transcolonial ‘type’ in Mindanao and Sulu. To borrow the words of Angela Woolacott, Desley Deacon, and Penny Russell, “transnationalism is not a mere analytic category. It is unalterably an element of human experience.”<sup>7</sup>

The following is broken into five sections, which together argue for an analytical approach to American colonialism in the Southern Philippines that acknowledges the formative role played by trans-regional and inter-imperial connectivities. The first section is an overview of how Americans in the Southern Philippines drew upon Spanish colonial knowledge and experience for their own projects. The second examines Mindanao and Sulu as hybrid spaces, where individuals from a diffuse array of backgrounds interacted against backdrop of empire, and where colonial empires themselves collaborated with and critiqued one another. The third section is a study of how colonial personnel and ideas circulated

---

<sup>6</sup> Tony Ballantyne and Antoinette Burton, “Empires and the Reach of the Global,” in *A World Connecting: 1870-1945*, ed. Emily Rosenberg (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2012), 296.

<sup>7</sup> Desley Deacon et al., eds., *Transnational Lives: Biographies of Global Modernity, 1700-Present* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2010), 10.



throughout Southeast Asia between 1899 and 1942. Numerous American officials involved in the administration of the Southern Philippines visited European colonial possessions and chronicled their experiences in letters to one another, in their diaries, and in official reports. Belying exceptionalist rhetoric, inter-imperial exchange between American and European colonials was an important means to chart developments in agriculture, engineering, sanitation, penology, education, and many other fields, as well as take stock of the competition. It was also an opportunity for professionals with transferrable skills – in our case soldiers and engineers – to market their abilities in multiple imperial contexts. The fourth section assesses the relationship between the Moros, the Americans, and the Muslim world. Forging their own global networks, Moro elites looked to the Islamic *ummah*, in particular the Ottoman Empire, to bolster claims of spiritual and temporal authority in the face of colonial incursion. American officials also attempted to profit from the relationship between the Moros and the Ottomans, creating tensions within the colonial government in the Philippines. The final section briefly considers ethnic diaspora and transnational connections between Japanese migrants, Filipinos, and Moros.

## Antecedents

Arriving in the Southern Philippines, American officials looked to Spanish colonial knowledge, which they consciously built on in their quest to remold their new subjects. Initially, press coverage of the Spanish-American War emphasized a feminized and morally debased Spanish colonial culture at odds with the martial masculinity and progressive outlook of the American republic. Whereas the Spanish authorities were irredeemably corrupted by their incestuous relationship with missionary Catholicism, Americans saw themselves as beyond such conflicts due to their elevated Protestant sensibilities and secular government.<sup>8</sup> Likewise, American colonials were confident that their transformational visions for the people of the Philippine Archipelago would not be compromised and fragmented like the ad hoc Spanish versions, which they viewed in racial terms as products of a sensuous and corrupt Latinate culture. New standards of rationalization and management would replace the

---

<sup>8</sup> For information on how antipathy towards Catholicism and an American sense of mission drove the conflict with Spain see Susan K. Harris, *God's Arbiters: Americans and the Philippines, 1898-1902*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2011), 3-37.

tyranny and inefficiency of the religious orders in managing the underdeveloped lands, and the peoples of the archipelago would be uplifted from neglected squalor via modern sanitation and hygiene technologies, secular education, and honest wage labour.<sup>9</sup>

As tends to happen, these strategies of differentiation were more pristine ideals than functional realities when Americans confronted the practicalities of managing a colonial possession. Famously, the Americans looked to Jesuit scientific research and production in reorganizing the Philippine Meteorological Service, recognizing the significant accomplishments of the religious order at their Manila Observatory.<sup>10</sup> Elsewhere, economic experts studied Spanish monetary policies to reduce the frictions of colonial transition.<sup>11</sup> The Spanish elites in Manila and other cities were called upon to provide intelligence on the Filipino *ilustrado* class and those among them most likely to intrigue against U.S. authorities.<sup>12</sup> While public pronouncements about the Spanish, such as those of John Foreman in the *Contemporary Review*, continued to emphasize the “religious despotism and greed” of their colonial enterprise, the Americans in the Philippines were also learning from their predecessors.<sup>13</sup>

---

<sup>9</sup> The best study of how Americans differentiated themselves from the Spanish in terms of gender, race, and culture remains: Kristen Hoganson, *Fighting for American Manhood*, 15-42. Greg Bankoff's comparison of the scientific outlooks of the Spanish and the Americans at the time of the Spanish-American War is a useful primer. See Greg Bankoff, “The Science of Nature and the Nature of Science in the Spanish and American Philippines,” in *Cultivating the Colonies: Colonial States and their Environmental Legacies*, ed. Christina Folke Ax et al. (Columbus: Ohio University Press, 2011), 78-108.

<sup>10</sup> Aitor Anduaga, “Spanish Jesuits in the Philippines: Geophysical Research and Synergies between Science, Education and Trade, 1865-1898,” *Annals of Science* 71.4 (2014): 519-521; Bankoff, “The Nature of Science,” 88-91; For ways that Americans further adopted Spanish environmental knowledge, see James Francis Warren, “Scientific Superman: Father José Algué, Jesuit Meteorology, and the Philippines Under American Rule, 1897-1924,” in *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, ed. Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009), 508-519.

<sup>11</sup> Allan E.S. Lumba, “Imperial Standards: Colonial Currencies, Racial Capacities, and Economic Knowledge During the Philippine-American War,” *Diplomatic History* 0.0 (Advance Publication – 2014): 1-26.

<sup>12</sup> On building surveillance networks, see McCoy, *Policing America's Empire*, 59-125.

<sup>13</sup> Foreman's condemnation of Spain's colonial endeavours was expansive: “Spain as a conquering nation has been a great success; but the days of conquest have long gone by. As a colonising nation she has proved a great failure from the beginning, for wherever she has ceased to hold her own by sheer force of arms no merited gratitude of a prosperous people has been able to hold together those bonds originally created by the sword. Where military despotism has opened the way, generous intelligent administration has not followed in the wake to promote the happiness and wellbeing of the subjected races. The two great factors in the decline of Spanish

In Sulu, negotiations between Brigadier General John Bates and Sultan Jamalul Kiram II occurred throughout the summer of 1899. Each man relied on treaties the Tausūg royals made with the Spanish in the previous half-century. In his notes from the negotiations, Bates and his staff paid close attention to material in previous treaties on the suppression of piracy, the purchase and sale of firearms, the exclusive use of the Spanish flag, the treatment of missionaries, matters of trade and taxation, and salaries for the Sultan and other important Tausūg leaders. Bates also took notes on the 1851 agreement that stipulated the Spanish not interfere in Tausūg religion and customs.<sup>14</sup> In interviews with Kiram and leading *datus*, he promised that the United States would replace Spain in honouring treaties. Bates sought a revised version of the 1878 treaty between Spain and the Sulu Sultanate, wherein the Spanish assumed sovereignty over the islands of the archipelago.

Elwell S. Otis, Military Governor of the Philippines, did not mince words, explaining that “the Kingly prerogatives of Spain, thus abridged by solemn concession, have descended to the United States, and conditions existing at the time of transfer should remain.” Otis continued, saying the Moros were “entitled to enjoy identical privileges” to those they maintained under the Spanish “until abridged or modified by future mutual agreement.”<sup>15</sup> The meetings that concluded with the Bates Treaty were forged upon the understandings the Sultan had had with the Spanish, although Otis believed that the United States would better handle revenue reform, trade, and “the educational and social conditions of the inhabitants” of the Sulu Archipelago.<sup>16</sup> At one point during the negotiations, Bates told Kiram sharply (through a translator) that:

The matter has been discussed a long time between his representatives and myself and I see no reason why we should bring it up again. We have

---

rule have been religious despotism and greed.” – John Foreman, “Spain and the Philippine Islands,” *The Contemporary Review* 74 (1898), 32-33.

<sup>14</sup> Memorandum I, 1899, Box 2, Folder 9. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>15</sup> Memorandum from Elwell Otis to John Bates, 3 July 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>16</sup> Memorandum from Elwell Otis to John Bates, 11 July 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

copies of treaties here with Spain, and I take them as evidence...It is published to the world in this shape, and this treaty says it will be published at Manila and at Madrid and it was so published to the world in this way and this is the way we got it, and we whipped the Spanish, drove them out and took their place, and we got all the rights that Spain had. We do not want to do an injustice.<sup>17</sup>

Bates' frustration with the Sultan arose from Kiram's unwillingness to accept that American legitimacy in Sulu was enshrined by their victory over the Spanish. In the same interview, Bates enticed Kiram by talking about the "great many Mohammedans" in the British possessions who were "living very contentedly," and the "proper dignity" shown to their chiefs and high officers. Kiram responded that he had "heard that Americans were just as good and better than the English as they gave more liberty than the English did."<sup>18</sup>

American military officers relied upon translated Spanish texts to interpret the Southern Philippines. With scant information from American sources available, Spanish histories of Mindanao and Sulu were invaluable. The Jesuit Priest Francisco X. Baranera's *Compendio de la Historia de Filipinas* was translated into English within a year of the American occupation. In it were long descriptions of the physical characteristics of the islands, including the flora and fauna, mineral resources, and a compendium of which crops could be grown successfully. More importantly for incoming colonial officials, it was a blueprint for Spanish colonial rule, giving numbers of troops stationed in each region, details on how the school system operated, and information on commercial operations. The massive collection of translated Spanish documents compiled by Emma Blair and James Alexander Robinson, under supervision of the colonial agent James A. LeRoy, stands as a testament to American fascination with Spain's experiences in the Pacific. *The Philippine Islands 1493-*

---

<sup>17</sup> Interview with Sultan Jamalul Kiram, 14 August 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid. Hugh Scott, Governor of Sulu, did not think highly of the Bates Treaty, observing that it created a situation where "the American, like the Spanish governor, must look on and permit the Moros to murder, rob, and enslave each other as they saw fit." – Scott, *Some Memories of a Soldier*, 288.

1898 spanned fifty-five volumes and served as a standard (albeit partial) resource for Americans seeking historical information about their new island possessions.<sup>19</sup>

In Baranera's work, Americans travelling to Mindanao and Sulu could consult sections on specific regions and find out, for example, that Jolo was "a pretty town with clean and shady streets" and the vegetation on the island was "similar to that of Mindanao. In the forests are found *narra*, *molave*, nipa-palm, cocoanut trees and others."<sup>20</sup> Spanish observations on the character of the Moros instructed Americans how to approach their new wards. An untitled translation of a Jesuit account of Mindanao and Sulu described the Moros as "very cunning characters, hypocritic, treacherous, suspicious, cowardly, not serviceable and beggarly beyond expression" who had "souls habituated towards crime." The text continued in this vein, mixing proto-anthropological observations about the traits of the natives with objective information on physical geography and trade.<sup>21</sup> As we have seen in Chapter Two, many Americans adopted these understandings with little alteration.<sup>22</sup>

Spanish experience fighting and governing the Moros became a reference point for American colonials as well. The enlisted soldier Walter Cutter noticed during his wanderings through Jolo "a number of tablets and monuments where the Moros had butchered Spanish soldiers in times past. One hundred fell at one place, and many were sleeping in the cemetery who had 'died with their boots on.'" He reasoned that Tausūg massacres of the Spanish proved "that our precautions were well taken. Blest by nature as lands are, these islands are

---

<sup>19</sup> Cano, "Evidence for the Deliberate Distortion of the Spanish Colonial Record," 27-30.

<sup>20</sup> Baranera, *Compendio de la Historia*, 120-21.

<sup>21</sup> Unmarked Spanish history of the Southern Philippines, Box 319. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>22</sup> The history of the Jesuits in Mindanao during the nineteenth-century is fascinating and fraught. The missionaries existed in a tentative position between government and rebel forces during the Philippine Revolution and were among the last Spanish residents to leave Mindanao. The final group of Jesuits departed the island on 17 April 1900. The historian José S. Arcilla claims that the influence of the Jesuits made it "easier for the Americans to teach the Filipino nation the ways of modern western democracy." – José S. Arcilla, "The Philippine Revolution and the Jesuit Missions in Mindanao," 376; José S. Arcilla, "The Jesuits During the Philippine Revolution," *Philippine Studies* 35.3 (1987): 296-315; José S. Arcilla (ed.), *Jesuit Missionary Letters from Mindanao, Vol. 1: The Rio Grande Mission* (Quezon City: Philippine Province Archives, 1990); José S. Arcilla, *Jesuit Missionary Letters from Mindanao Vol. 2: The Zamboanga-Basilan-Jolo Mission* (Quezon City: Philippine Province Archives, 1993).

cursed by ignorance and savagery of the worst description.”<sup>23</sup> John Finley enjoyed peppering Spanish colonial history into his writings and speeches to demonstrate how he improved upon their work. He did, however, credit the Spanish general Valeriano Weyler as being the first to properly understand the “pastoral and peaceful” nature of certain non-Christian tribes on Mindanao.<sup>24</sup> As late as 1934, the Spanish were still a reference point for managing the South. A memorandum crossing the desk of Vice Governor J.R. Hayden referenced Spanish rule in Sulu, stating that the Americans mistakenly followed the Spaniards “by obtaining the free or forced consent of the Sultan and then using military force to establish and maintain law and order,” a policy that “invariably met with failure.”<sup>25</sup>

After animosities from the Spanish-American War ebbed, many U.S. officials praised their erstwhile adversaries. Frank McCoy harboured a romantic view of Spain, observing that relinquishing colonial possessions meant the nation could “retake the brilliant place in the world which it occupied in the most famous days of its national history.” He further praised the Spanish special cavalry and the “distinguished services” rendered by the Spanish Engineer Corps.<sup>26</sup> During his time as Governor of the Moro Province, Tasker Bliss gave a ringing endorsement of the Spanish colonial legacy. He claimed that when the Americans came to the Southern Philippines, they encountered “in operation a form of government and code of laws not ill adapted to the requirements of the people, which had been evolved by the intelligence and the experience of a long line of Spanish rulers during 300 years.” The buildings, roads, and other infrastructural projects left behind by Spain demonstrated the

---

<sup>23</sup> “Wearing the Khaki: Diary of a High Private,” 1901-1902, Box 1. Walter Cutter Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>24</sup> Letter from John Finley to John Pershing, 1 January 1910, Box 320. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>25</sup> Memorandum on Policy for the Province of Sulu, 8 September 1934, Box 30, Folder 4. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>26</sup> “Military Spain,” Box 83. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD. The enthusiasm of McCoy for Spain is more fully expressed in his entire statement: “Besides, since being freed from the constant preoccupation of its old colonies, which cost so much money and so many lives, guided by its young sovereign, devoted to military things, perfect horsemen, fine shot, Spain has decided to live the modern life, no more to expend its energies in foolish and useless political and religious struggles, but to retake the brilliant place in the world which it occupied in the most famous days of its natural history.”

“skill” of their colonizers, while the “heroic labors of Spanish priests who carried the Cross and its influence into the most remote regions of the province” was honourable.<sup>27</sup>

Far from being dismissed outright, the remnants of Spanish colonialism in the Southern Philippines were frequently adopted and transformed by the Americans. While all American officials believed the progressive modernity of the United States would pacify and transform the region in ways a decayed European monarchy could not, they were also eager to utilize the intellectual and physical byproducts of Spain’s three centuries of engagement with Mindanao and Sulu. Rhetoric about Spain’s poisonous Catholic proselytizing and failure to bring their colonized subjects up to an acceptable civilizational standard was quickly dropped in the aftermath of the Spanish-American War. In the Southern Philippines, Americans consulted Spanish treaties to frame their own agreements with the Sultan of Sulu, read Spanish books to learn about the characteristics of the people and land they now controlled, used Spanish experiences to anchor their own understandings of conflicts with Muslim populations, and praised Spain’s accomplishments in public speeches. After its retreat from Asia at the close of the nineteenth-century, the Spanish Empire lived on through what it transmitted to the United States.<sup>28</sup>

## Hybrid Peoples, Hybrid Spaces

An examination of population figures for Mindanao and Sulu in 1913, just prior to the transition to civilian control, shows a region peopled by Moros, Lumads, and Filipinos. The estimated population of 518,695 included 324,816 Moros, 103,358 Lumads, and 85,148

---

<sup>27</sup> Speech at Zamboanga Fair, February 1907, Box 43, Folder 5. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

<sup>28</sup> The effects of Spain’s relationship with the Moros lingered as well. The Samal leader Datu Mandi, a favourite of the Spanish, served them as an interpreter on Bongao. He quickly became close with the Americans, transferring his loyalties from one colonial power to another. Arolas Tulawie, an important figure in the cultural battles waged between traditionalists and modernizers on Sulu in the 1920s and 1930s, was named after the Spanish military leader Juan Arolas. In a letter to Teopisto Guingona, the first director of the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, he claimed that his namesake was “respected and loved...because he was great and respected our religious rights.” However, Tulawie thought that in general the Spanish were never able to rule the Moros because they were morally weak. “A Moro despises weakness,” he wrote, going on to say that from what he had witnessed of “Filipinos, their morals, education, religion, and civilization” that Moros would prefer to look after themselves. Here he created linkages between the “weakness” of the Spanish and that of the Christian Filipinos. – Letter from Arolas Tulawie to Teopisto Guingona, 12 August 1920, Box 29, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

Filipinos. These numbers further broke down to account for the various cultural and tribal subdivisions on the islands. The Maguindanaos, for example, were the most populous of the Moro groups with 90,000 people. This left a small number of “Americans and foreigners” to round out the figures. In Zamboanga, the colonial hub of the Southern Philippines, there were 1,062 Chinese, 387 Americans and Europeans, and 343 Japanese. A further 3,584 Americans, Europeans, Japanese, and Chinese lived in other parts of the region, bringing the total number to 5,376. In the following years, the numbers of Americans dropped as Filipinization accelerated (although, as we have seen, Americans often occupied key posts into the late 1930s), while Japanese migration to the islands accelerated.<sup>29</sup>

While remnants of the Spanish planter class remained along the Zamboanga Peninsula, the Europeans in Zamboanga proper often represented foreign firms. Banks, steamship lines, trading concerns, and manufacturers all had interests in the region and many sent employees already well-practiced in colonial milieus. These men and their families participated in white colonial life alongside the Americans. They socialized at the same whites-only clubs, golfed together, and engaged in business ventures. Like the Americans, the Europeans remained socially aloof from Filipinos, Moros, and Lumads. In his memoirs, Charles Ivins commented at length on the “British and European business and plantation people” who circulated through the region in the 1930s. Ivins’ recollections of one Scottish couple, Ian and Heather McDougal, illustrated the competitive and collaborative relationship between the Americans and Europeans in Zamboanga. The McDougals, he wrote, were “mightily engaged in maintaining British superiority over the natives, the Americans, including the military, and all other persons of whatever origin. The fact that the British had no authority whatsoever in Zamboanga bothered neither of them a whit.” The verbal sparring between Ivins and Ian McDougal covered a variety of topics, including the state of the American banking system, the relative strengths of the U.S. and British militaries, and the marital status of the Prince of Wales. Ian McDougal represented the Chartered Bank of India, Australia and China (now Standard Chartered) and was also British Consul in Zamboanga.

---

<sup>29</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 50-53. The census of 1913 was the first made in Mindanao and Sulu since the nationwide one in 1903. Pershing’s report admitted that the population study was “made under quite adverse conditions.”



Friendly competition aside, Ivins and the other Americans used McDougal as their banker, golfed with him, and regularly attended parties thrown by his wife that featured “white coated bare-footed Filipino boys.”<sup>30</sup> Ivins’ interactions with the McDougals were emblematic of the relations between Americans and Europeans in the region more broadly, where matters of national pride and competition were often trumped by a shared sense of racial-civilizational kinship.

Chinese migration to the Muslim South had been occurring for centuries prior to America’s arrival, although settlement numbers increased from the mid nineteenth-century onwards.<sup>31</sup> As elsewhere in Southeast Asia, the Chinese in Mindanao and Sulu were firmly linked to regional and international trade networks, often acting as the primary merchants and moneylenders in settled areas. They also grew and sold produce from their small farms. This placed them in an unusual intermediary role between the Americans, Filipinos, Moros, and Lumads, as their livelihoods gave them cause to interact with each of the groups. The American view of the Chinese was predictably coloured by familiar racial tropes that emphasized their cunning nature and unclean habits, although more dispassionate accounts of the Chinese presence admitted they were “hard at work improving and developing the country.”<sup>32</sup> Although financially strong, Chinese merchants were outnumbered and rarely armed, making them easy prey for criminal elements or those jealous of their resources. Thus when the Americans occupied the island of Siasi, they were greeted by a “manifestation of joy” from its Chinese residents, victims of the pecuniary predations of Sultan Kiram’s representatives, who set off “a great number of firecrackers and other fireworks.”<sup>33</sup> Chinese merchants catered to the western penchant for kitsch throughout the American period. Ah Wah On of Jolo, who adopted the colloquial name “Chino Charlie,” claimed to have the

---

<sup>30</sup> “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 89-91, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>31</sup> Anthropologist Charles Eugen Guthe encountered evidence of ancient Chinese trading goods and graves during his expeditions in the Southern Philippines in the 1920s, surmising that intermarriage between Chinese traders and local families must have been common long before European contact. – “University of Michigan Philippines Expedition,” *Manila Times*, 13 May 1925.

<sup>32</sup> Bliss, *Annual Report 1907*, 23.

<sup>33</sup> Letter from John Bates to Adjutant General, 27 September 1899, Box 2, Folder 6. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

largest line of “Moro Curios” in Jolo and to carry a “complete line of Chinese lanterns, both large and small.” Additionally, a visitor to Ah Wah On’s shop could have a suit tailored, buy a new pair of shoes, or eat a meal from the short order restaurant.<sup>34</sup>

Connections between the Maguindanaos of Cotabato and the Chinese manifested themselves most readily in the person of Datu Piang. Piang was born in 1846 to a Chinese father and a Maguindanao Moro mother. His father, Tan Toy, was a trader from Amoy (present day Xiamen) who visited Dulawan, where he befriended the ruler, Datu Uto. Uto married Tan to the daughter of an ally and employed him as an advisor. Piang was born shortly thereafter, and although his father died when he was only eleven he was raised within the orbit of Datu Uto’s court.<sup>35</sup> During Piang’s early career he was a subordinate of Uto, serving as his Minister of Lands, but later turned on his mentor, who was viewed by the people of the Cotabato Valley as a tyrant. Piang sided with Moro oppositionists, led by Uto’s nephew Ali, and with the approval of the Spanish overthrew the old datu in 1890. After the ouster of the Spanish in 1899, Piang formed a government to oppose the rule of an *insurrecto* junta. He executed twelve Filipino leaders and took steps to protect the Chinese in town, who as traders and merchants were threatened by the instability. Piang raised the American flag before U.S. Army troops arrived in Cotabato.<sup>36</sup>

The only serious threat to Piang’s rule in the Maguindanaon areas of Western Mindanao was Datu Ali, who was tracked down and killed by American forces in late 1905. Until his death in 1933, Piang proved remarkable at both interpreting the prerogatives of the

---

<sup>34</sup> *Programme of the Jolo Agricultural and Industrial Fair* (Jolo: R.B. Hayes Printer, 1906), 10.

<sup>35</sup> Patricio Abinales, “From *Orang Besar* to Colonial Big Man,” 200; McKenna, *Muslim Rulers and Rebels*, 91-92. For Americans arriving in Cotabato, Piang’s Chinese heritage explained his acumen. A 1902 report to the Philippine Commission read: “He is the only prominent Moro who seems to appreciate what the American invasion means and the business opportunities it brings with it. The Chinese blood in him makes him a shrewd businessman, and he has accumulated quite a fortune and is daily adding to it. He practically controls all the business of Cotabato, especially exports, through his Chinese agents in that place; has complete control of the Moro productions, and working with the Chinese merchants makes it practically impossible for a white firm to enter into business in the Rio Grande Valley, even with much capital behind them.” – Quoted in Beckett, “Datus of the Rio Grande,” 57. For a good survey of Datu Uto’s rule, see Reynaldo Clemeña Iletto, *Magindanao, 1860-1888: The Career of Datu Uto of Buayan* (Manila: Anvil Vintage, 2007) – note: the book was originally published by the Southeast Asia Program at Cornell University in 1971.

<sup>36</sup> Letter from John Bates to 8<sup>th</sup> Army Chief of Staff, 17 December 1899, Box 2, Folder 13. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

colonial authorities and prospering greatly in his moneymaking ventures. Unlike many Moro figures from traditional noble lineages, Piang had keen business acumen that allowed him to prosper as a landlord, rice farmer, and owner of a photography studio. He also cultivated important connections with colonial grandees like Leonard Wood, W. Cameron Forbes, and Frank Carpenter. Visiting Piang in 1926, J.R. Hayden described him as a “a real personage” and, more disparagingly, as “an old, fat, dirty Chinese idol,” albeit one with a “jolly laugh and a keen sense of humor.” After talking with Piang, Hayden understood his “force and shrewdness” and why he had managed to retain power for so long.<sup>37</sup> Towards the end of his life, Piang became an advocate for separating Mindanao and Sulu from the rest of the Philippines and petitioned President Calvin Coolidge not to allow the Moros to fall under the control of the Filipinos.<sup>38</sup> Piang’s unlikely rise to power in Cotabato reveals a level of fluidity in the class structures and social relations of Maguindanaon society. His nebulous status – the biracial son of a concubine, albeit in the court of a powerful datu – and considerable natural abilities allowed him to negotiate not only the power dynamics of the Maguindanao elite, but also those of two colonial regimes.

Unlike more traditionally minded local strongmen in the Southern Philippines, Piang understood that the integration of Southeast Asia into larger colonial trade regimes signaled the end of Maguindanao as a politically independent space. Attempts to regulate commerce, originating first from the European colonial powers and later from the Americans, curtailed the trade in slaves, imposed taxation on goods, and regulated the movement of peoples. Piang and the Chinese traders he worked with adapted to these new realities better than most.

---

<sup>37</sup> Letter from Joseph Hayden to Betty Hayden, 7 September 1926, Box 28, Folder 26. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>38</sup> Letter from Datu Piang to Calvin Coolidge, 26 August 1927, Box 28, Folder 33. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. The letter is extraordinary in its indictment of the Filipinos, who are caricatured as villains in the extreme. According to Piang, the politics of the Filipino are as follows: “Never hesitate at an oath when it is desired to seduce, never want a pretext when inclined to betray. Insolent to the humble, sycophantic to the great; flatterers at the seat of power, extortioners at the hovel. Means the most atrociously cruel are resorted to as the more appealing, being the more swift and sure. Strength of character not one of his characteristics, courage with him not a point of honor. With a ponderous ego, his vanity is such it persuades him to believe that if he is present when any deed is done he did it. It is this strong hallucination that causes him to prate about and boast of the ‘liberty he has won’, when all the world knows – except the Filipino – that America won it for him and handed it to him.” The letter continues in this fashion, and gives an indication of how poor Moro-Filipino relations were in the 1920s.

Submitting to American rule readily, he was able to leverage the goodwill of U.S. military authorities (who viewed him as the ‘ideal’ Moro) to expand his commercial holdings, all while still exercising the firm control of a regional despot. Patricio Abinales argues that Piang was a transitional figure, linking the more independent nineteenth-century Maguindanao society to one increasingly subordinate to outside political power. “Piang became aware that to keep his power and influence he had to accept the conditions imposed by the new colonial reality,” writes Abinales.<sup>39</sup>

Migration to the Southern Philippines also created culturally hybridic families useful to the American colonial regime. Foremost among these were the Schucks of the Sulu Archipelago. In 1864, Captain Herman Schuck, returning to Singapore from a trading mission to Sulawesi, stopped on Jolo for freshwater and met the Sultan of Sulu Jamalul Alam. The German trader-explorer and the Tausūg leader liked one another and the meeting marked the beginning of a long relationship. Eventually, the Sultan granted land to Schuck near the town of Jolo and in Sandakan Bay in North Borneo. The German used his new allotments to create his own trading network, originating in Singapore, where he acquired products from a German-British consortium called the Labuan Trading Company, and spreading across North Borneo and the Sulu Archipelago. Schuck moved opium, firearms, tobacco and other goods from Singapore to Tawi-Tawi, exchanging them there for slaves, which he in turn bartered on Jolo for mother-of-pearl shell. Operating against the backdrop of Spanish incursions into Sulu Archipelago and inter-imperial intrigue, Schuck managed to maintain his good relations with the Sultan, and served as an advisor to him in his 1878 treaty with Spain. Settling on Jolo to take advantage of his ties to Tausūg Royalty, Schuck ran a large plantation, continued his regional trading, and maintained links with German colonial enterprises in the region like the German Borneo Company. When he died in 1887 from cholera, Schuck left behind four sons

---

<sup>39</sup> Abinales, “From *Orang Besar* to Colonial Big Man,” 208. Abinales’ illuminating political biography of Piang is especially strong when considering his role in the face of Filipinization between 1914 and his death in 1933. The biographical sketch is not just the strongest analysis of Piang, but also a skillful mapping of the fortunes of Maguindanao society in the face of multiple colonial incursions.

from his first marriage, who came from Singapore to settle on Jolo, and another son from a Tausūg wife.<sup>40</sup>

The Schuck brothers – Edward, Charles, Herman, William, and Julius – were important intermediaries between the Tausūgs and the Americans, serving as interpreters, advisors, translators, guides, amateur police detectives, militia leaders, and local government agents.<sup>41</sup> Edward, the oldest, was the official translator during the negotiations between Sultan Jamalul Kiram II and John Bates in 1899. Bates thought Edward was “genuinely interested in the development of the country” and believed he had “great influence with the natives” in Sulu, recommending that the colonial authorities utilize the family in future.<sup>42</sup> During his time as the military commander of Bongao, an island in the Sulu Archipelago not far from British North Borneo, Sydney Cloman used Herman Schuck as his interpreter and an unofficial policeman of sorts. Cloman was fond of Herman, who “found a thousand ways to make himself useful” and who was “patient and keen.”<sup>43</sup> The Schuck brothers had all married local women, who themselves became notables and mediators on the islands they lived. William Kobbé, touring Jolo during his time as military governor of the South, witnessed the

---

<sup>40</sup> Volker Schult, “Sulu and Germany in the Late Nineteenth Century,” *Philippine Studies* 48.1 (2000): 80-99; Fulton, *Moroland*, 545. Herman Schuck’s time in Sulu coincided with the height of imperial intriguing in the region, with British, Spanish, and German interests all competing to utilize the archipelago for their own ends. Schuck’s fascinating life and Sulu’s turbulent nineteenth-century are covered in the following works, respectively: Michael Schuck Montemayor, *Captain Herman Leopold Schuck: The Saga of a German Sea Captain in 19<sup>th</sup>-Century Sulu-Sulawesi Seas* (Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2006); Warren, *The Sulu Zone*, 38-148. Sixto Orosa describes the testy relationship between Schuck and the Spanish as such: “...he soon got into trouble with the Spaniards because of his dealing directly with the Sultan of Sulu. They accused him of interfering with their ban against the importation of firearms for the use of the Moros. On one of his trips to Singapore his ship was seized by a Spanish gunboat; and he was compelled to put in at Manila, where his ship and his goods were confiscated. Representations were made to the Spanish government by the German government, and Captain Schuck was finally allowed to settle at Jolo under the protection of the Sultan, damages being paid to him by the Spanish government.” – Orosa, *The Sulu Archipelago*, 116.

<sup>41</sup> The careers of the Schuck brothers and the travels of the family between Germany, Singapore, Borneo, and Jolo prior to, as well as after, the arrival of the Americans is detailed in Michael Schuck Montemayor’s impressive family history. On their time in Borneo during the 1890s, see Montemayor, *Captain Herman Leopold Schuck*, 113-123.

<sup>42</sup> Report by John Bates on Trip to Jolo, 21 August 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC. Najeeb Saleeby, America’s resident Moro expert, was less enthused with Edward Schuck, whom he accused of distorting the translation of the treaty, thereby increasing tensions between the Americans and the Moros – Proceedings of a Board of Officers Convened at Jolo, 13 December 1903, Box 55, Folder 6. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>43</sup> Cloman, *Myself and a Few Moros*, 100.

wife of Eddy “settling a dispute over a cock-fight from the second-story window of her house” with “large crowds standing below to await her decision.”<sup>44</sup> The brothers also interceded in local affairs occasionally. In 1903, Edward Schuck was accused of keeping the runaway wife of Hadji Tahir, a girl named Asda who claimed she sought refuge at his homestead because of abuses she suffered at the hands of her husband.<sup>45</sup>

It is difficult to overstate the reliance of American officials on the Schuck brothers, especially during the first years of military rule. Few American personnel had any knowledge of the region or its people when they arrived and the Schucks, straddling the liminal space between Westerners and natives, were ideal middlemen. In military encounters, one or more Schuck brother inevitably served as translators and guides. Charlie Schuck was chief interpreter for Colonel Joseph W. Duncan during the expedition that culminated in the Bud Dajo massacre, and the 4<sup>th</sup> Cavalry and 6<sup>th</sup> Infantry used the Schuck family plantation southeast of the town of Jolo as a staging point beforehand.<sup>46</sup> Charlie was also involved in the hunt for pirate Jikiri in 1908-1909, briefly capturing him in 1908 and guiding Captain Charles Rhodes on an expedition to Siet Lake in May 1909. The following month, he was shot in the leg and abdomen during an encounter on Pata Island, but recovered in time to participate in the violent final confrontation with Jikiri on Patian Island.<sup>47</sup> In 1911, Charlie and Julius Schuck once again advised military officers during the crisis over disarmament on Jolo that caused Pershing’s cordon of a band of Tausūg holdouts on Bud Dajo.<sup>48</sup>

By 1914, three of the Schuck brothers were dead. Herman moved to Bongao and was beheaded in a dispute there, Edward died in 1912, and Charlie was murdered on Jolo in

---

<sup>44</sup> Diary of Field Service in the Philippines 1898-1901, 2 November 1900, Box 1. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>45</sup> Proceedings of a Board of Officers Convened at Jolo, 13 December 1903, Box 55, Folder 6. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>46</sup> Report of Engagement with the Enemy on Bud Dajo, Island of Jolo, 10 March 1906, Box 217, Folder 6. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>47</sup> Diary of Pirate-Hunting in the Sulu Archipelago, 4-5 June 1909, Box 1. Charles Rhodes Papers, USAHEC. For a lively narrative account of Schuck’s participation in the hunt for Jikiri, see Fulton, *Moroland*, 333-350.

<sup>48</sup> Letter from Matthew Steele to Stella Steele, 23 December 1911, Box 12, Folder 1. Matthew Steele Papers, USAHEC.

1914.<sup>49</sup> Nevertheless, the two remaining brothers, Willie and Julius, and the surviving children and wives of the deceased ensured the family continued playing an important, if occasionally controversial, role in the politics of Sulu. Willie and Alexander Schuck served as special agents for the Province of Sulu into the 1920s, and the former became Deputy Governor of Tawi-Tawi in 1928.<sup>50</sup> The family incessantly politicked on Jolo, making and breaking alliances with political officials, the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, and members of the Philippine Constabulary. As Governor of Sulu in the 1930s, James Fugate was often frustrated by the attempts of Julius Schuck and his Tausūg wife Ruckaya to intervene in the appointment of officials, stating at one point that they tried to “destroy” Arolas Tulawie, a Moro notable who at the time served as Third Member in the provincial government.<sup>51</sup> During the later colonial years, various family members continued their plantation work and also produced railway ties.<sup>52</sup>

In Zamboanga, the Jurika family were also fascinating intermediary figures. Stefan Jurika was a Czech born in the Austro-Hungarian Empire who became an American citizen. He volunteered to fight in the Spanish-American War, and was sent to the Southern Philippines, where he settled after leaving the army. Stefan started a trading company that later opened branches in Zamboanga, Davao, and Cotabato. In Jolo, the headquarters of the trading company doubled as a bar and pawnshop for servicemen and Filipinos. “Jurika’s Place” advertised itself as “the finest drinking place in Jolo” and offered alcohol of all types as well as “a line of the finest cigars.” An advertisement for the business from 1906 informed

---

<sup>49</sup> On Herman: Cloman, *Myself and a Few Moros*, 86. On Eddy: Letter from Carl Garmson to J.R. Hayden, 10 May 1934, Box 28, Folder 21. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. On Charles: Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 125.

<sup>50</sup> Ignacio Villamor, *Census of the Philippine Islands: Appendix to Volume I – Organization, Census Acts, and Regulations* (Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1920), 378; Letter from James Fugate to Henry L. Stimson, 1 September 1928, Box 29, Folder 28. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>51</sup> Letter from James Fugate to J.R. Hayden, 28 December 1933, Box 29, Folder 29. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. Previously, Julius Schuck had run against Tulawie for the position and lost, perhaps explaining some of the animosity between the two.

<sup>52</sup> Report for the Province of Sulu for 1929, 25 March 1930, Box 29, Folder 14. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL. Julpa Schuck, daughter of Edward, received an education typical of upper-class Joloanos and attended the Manila Normal School. She later translated fragments of traditional epic poetry from Sulu. See E. Arsenio Manuel, “A Survey of Philippine Folk Epics,” *Asian Folklore Studies* 22 (1963): 18; Brandon Joseph Reilly, “Collecting the People,” 146. For a much more detailed history of the Schuck family between the 1920s and 1940s, see Montemayor, *Captain Herman Leopold Schuck*, 140-156.

guests that they were “always sure of receiving the finest of goods, a hearty welcome and drinks made up by skilled drink dispensers.”<sup>53</sup> Blanche and Stefan had children and moved to Zamboanga, where they entered into business with a local Filipino and started Torrejon, Jurika & Co. Inc., becoming the official distributor for Colgate products, including “hair tonics, cosmetics, shampoos, and dental preparations.”<sup>54</sup>

As president of the company, Stefan Jurika created closer links between the Muslim South and trade networks in the Americas and Europe. Visiting Washington in 1907 en route to sell pearls in Austria, he told the *Washington Post* that savvy American investors would be wise to educate themselves on “the abundance of coal, iron, gold, and other minerals” found in the Philippines, and claimed there had been “much misrepresentation of the mutinous disposition of the natives” in the American press.<sup>55</sup> After moving to Zamboanga, Jurika became the representative for a variety of concerns, including steamship lines, the Milton G. Cooper Dry Goods Company, and the Goodyear Tire Company. He used a trip to Los Angeles in 1923 to encourage American businesses to buy unprocessed native products from the Philippines and, in return, sell their manufactures there.<sup>56</sup> When he died in 1928, Stefan had spent three decades in the islands and established himself as one of the most active merchants in Mindanao and Sulu.

His wife Blanche continued the business, using their savings to start a cocoanut plantation at Panabutan Bay, seventy miles northeast of Zamboanga. She also opened a hardware and dry goods store which, visiting in the mid-1930s, Charles Ivins called “the equivalent of any oriental bazaar I have ever seen.” The shop carried items from all over the world and, unlike some of the other American and European businesses in the region, catered primarily to Moro customers. “Most of the Moros traded there,” wrote Ivins, “and it was one of the Zamboanga sights to watch her and a group of native women haggle over the price of a

---

<sup>53</sup> *Program of the Jolo Agricultural and Industrial Fair*, 1.

<sup>54</sup> Advertisement, *Mindanao Herald*, 17 January 1914, 5.

<sup>55</sup> “People Met in Hotel Lobbies,” *Washington Post*, 17 July 1907, 6. On Jurika’s career as a pearl trader, see “Wonderful Pearl of Great Value from Sulu,” *Washington Post*, 3 February 1907, A9.

<sup>56</sup> “Filipino Buyer Urges Closer Trade Contact,” *Los Angeles times*, 27 June 1923, 110.



box of matches or a cooking pot.”<sup>57</sup> Unlike like many Americans and Europeans in the Southern Philippines, the Jurikas were long-time residents who became close with their Moro neighbours. Ivins, whose personal life in Zamboanga was typically segregated from the Moros and Filipinos, was surprised by Blanche Jurika’s ability to “go anywhere” among the Moros “completely unarmed, day or night, and not be afraid of personal violence.”<sup>58</sup>

Blanche relocated to Manila in the late 1930s, where she spent her time writing fantastical children’s stories about the animals of the Philippines for the Sunday edition of the *Manila Tribune*. She also presented a radio program for children on KZRH that aired three times a week where she told “old legends and stories out of the living literature of all nations east and west.”<sup>59</sup> She stayed in Manila during the Japanese occupation, volunteering in a hospital while covertly raising money for the resistance movement. In early 1944, a Filipino double agent betrayed her cell and she was arrested by the *Kempeitai* (Japanese military police) and imprisoned at Fort Santiago. She was beheaded in August 1944 in Manila’s North Cemetery and buried in an unmarked grave along with other executed American and Filipino civilians.<sup>60</sup>

Regional relationships likewise linked Mindanao and Sulu to the wider world. This is best illustrated in linkages with British North Borneo (present-day Sabah). The region, on the northeastern tip of the island, was acquired through 1878 negotiations between the Austrian businessman Baron von Overbeck, Sultan Abdul Mumin of Brunei, and Sultan Jamalul Alam of Sulu. Alfred and Edward Dent, powerful British traders operating out of Shanghai and

---

<sup>57</sup> Ivins, “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 181, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., 180.

<sup>59</sup> “Just Little Things,” *The American Chamber of Commerce Journal* 20.2 (March 1940), 40.

<sup>60</sup> Louis Jurika, “A Philippine Odyssey,” *Beyond the Wire* 4.1 (2011), 4-5. The account of Blanche’s death is based on this document, which itself is a fascinating story of how the author’s father, Tom Jurika, searched for his mother’s grave after the liberation of Manila. The wartime experiences of the Jurikas and their relations, including the spymaster Chick Parsons, are worthy of their own monograph. See also: Katsy Jurika Parsons, “A Life in Moroland: A Memoir of Blanche Walker Jurika by Her Daughter – Part I,” *Bulletin of the American Historical Collection* (January-March 2004): 77-95; Katsy Jurika Parsons, “A Life in Moroland: A Memoir of Blanche Walker Jurika by Her Daughter – Part II,” *Bulletin of the American Historical Collection* (April-June 2005): 31-41; “U.S. Civilians Slain in Manila,” *Cass City Chronicle* (Mi.), 27 July 1945, 4.

London, backed the deal and William H. Treacher, a career colonial administrator who was then acting Governor of Labuan, supervised the negotiations. Overbeck sold his shares in the land to the Dents in 1880, and they returned to London to petition the Foreign and Colonial Offices for a Royal Charter, which was granted in November 1881. The resulting British North Borneo Chartered Company, modeled upon the East India Company, controlled around 28,000 square kilometers of land, which it attempted to develop industrially, agriculturally, and commercially for the profit of its shareholders and the glory of the British Empire.<sup>61</sup>

The natives of the Sulu Archipelago saw little distinction between their islands and North Borneo. The lease or sale (depending on who one asked) of Sabah by the Sultan of Sulu was a revenue generation scheme for both parties, but for the average Tausūg merchant who plied his trade between Tawi-Tawi and Sandakan there was little impact. In the years prior to the Spanish-American War and for some time afterwards, Zamboanga and Jolo maintained closer communication links with Sandakan than they did with Manila. In practical terms, this meant people, manufactures, and information passing in and out of the Southern Philippines had closer ties with British colonial networks originating in Singapore, Hong Kong, and London.<sup>62</sup> Spanish and Moro residents of Mindanao, fleeing instability and *insurrecto* violence after the collapse of Spanish colonial power, went to Sandakan. One such person was Don Jose Alvarez y Sebastian, a *mestizo* plantation owner who travelled to the British colony by way of Jolo. While temporarily exiled in Sandakan, he received news updates from the Moros and Chinese travelling between the port settlements. Visiting Jolo in September 1899, Don Jose was interviewed by the Americans and pleaded his case as a

---

<sup>61</sup> Amity Doolittle, "Colliding Discourses: Western Land Laws and Native Customary Rights in North Borneo, 1881-1918," *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 34 (1): 99-100. For a useful primer on material about British possessions in Borneo, see Nicholas Tarling, "Further Notes on the Historiography of British Borneo," *Borneo Research Bulletin* 36 (2005): 213-228. Tarling, the preeminent chronicler of modern Southeast Asia, also provides excellent accounts of the histories of British North Borneo and the Sulu Archipelago in the nineteenth-century in Tarling, "The Establishment of Colonial Regimes," 9-28; Nicholas Tarling, *Sulu and Sabah: A Study of British Policy Towards the Philippines and North Borneo from the Late Eighteenth Century* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1978). For primary source accounts of the British acquisition and management of Sabah (each of which include colonial comparisons), see Joseph Hatton, *The New Ceylon': Being a Sketch of British North Borneo, or Sabah* (London: Chapman & Hall Limited, 1881); Owen Rutter, *British North Borneo: An Account of its History, Resources and Native Tribes* (London and Bombay: Constable & Company Limited, 1922).

<sup>62</sup> Vic Hurley, *Swish of the Kris*, 79-80. Information from Manila was so scarce during the war that "at one time, the Spanish padres of Zamboanga received word that Boston had been captured by the troops of Spain."

“Zamboangan...a mixed race, formed by the union of Spaniards, Chinos, Moros, Tagalos and Visayan” and not a Spaniard. He expressed his desire to return to Zamboanga and embraced American sovereignty.<sup>63</sup>

People and goods moved freely between North Borneo and the new American possessions. The Schuck brothers left Sulu for a number of years after the death of their father and started a coffee plantation in Borneo, where they grew Liberian beans through a combination of wage and slave labour.<sup>64</sup> Population transfers between the two territories were common, and famines or serious epidemics occurring in the Sulu Archipelago often led residents there to relocate to North Borneo, where many had familial and commercial connections. Since Spanish control over the Sulu Archipelago had always been tentative, and the British were wont to encourage the channeling of trade through Sandakan, the traffic between these contiguous spaces was largely unregulated. The sultans of Sulu always insisted that they were merely ‘renting’ Sabah to the British North Borneo Chartered Company for \$5,000 per annum, although their ability to renege on the deal was non-existent.<sup>65</sup> American officials also saw themselves as connected to the British possessions in Borneo. Hugh Scott compared the efforts of the Americans to those of James Brooke, more commonly known as Rajah Brooke, in Sarawak. Brooke’s work reducing banditry and creating a “strong and substantial government,” thought Scott, made the people of Sarawak disposed towards colonial rule. “In like manner the better class of people in Jolo feel thus towards the United States,” he claimed.<sup>66</sup>

During his negotiations with Sultan Jamalul Kiram II, John Bates contacted officials in British North Borneo for assistance, attempting to secure the academic Nicholas Belfield

---

<sup>63</sup> Interview with Don Jose Alvarez y Sebastian, 6 September 1899, Box 2, Folder 6. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>64</sup> Charlie Schuck’s exact quote: “Our labour was made up of natives, some of whom were slaves. At first I lived with the workmen, often sleeping with 50 of them in the same house. I use such men and women on the estate today. They are Moros. I find they work very well, although I pay even my slaves for their labour, doing so, as far as possible, by the piece.” – Frank G. Carpenter, “Coffee in the Philippines,” *Boston Daily Globe*, 29 July 1900, 33.

<sup>65</sup> Letter from Charles R. Cameron to Dean Worcester, 19 May 1913, Box 1. Dean Worcester Papers, BHL.

<sup>66</sup> “Killing of Moros,” *Washington Post*, 20 March 1906, 1.

Dennys, who was then working for the North Borneo Company at Sandakan, as an interpreter. Dennys was the author of a work that made cultural comparisons between Chinese folklore and “its affinities with that of the Aryan and Semitic Races,” as well as *A Descriptive Dictionary of British Malaya*.<sup>67</sup> Kiram likewise used connections in the British colony, calling upon Hadji Usman, a Tausūg appointed as the Sultan’s representative on the island of Siasi two years prior. Between 1881 and 1897, Usman was in the employ of the North Borneo Company as a maritime pilot. Knowing some English, he helped translate the meetings between Bates and the Sultan, and told Bates: “I am very glad the Americans came here as I have been accustomed to English rule for many years and as English and American rule are practically identical I am very glad they are here.” Usman then inquired about employment opportunities with the new colonial government.<sup>68</sup>

Illegal traffic between the Southern Philippines and Borneo was a recurring issue for American officials. As early as June 1899, Commander Very of the USS *Castine* was reporting “illicit traffic” between Sandakan and Mindanao, noting that “if the reports are true there are several chartered steamers trading on that group.”<sup>69</sup> Americans wanted to regulate trade, migration, and eliminate the vices of gambling, opium, and prostitution from Mindanao and Sulu. They were shocked to find dubious characters from North Borneo openly seeking business opportunities in Zamboanga and Jolo. A Japanese brothel-owner in Sandakan named Otama, for instance, petitioned William Kobbé to open up an “accommodation house” in Zamboanga and bring fifteen to twenty young women to work there. Although he ensured Kobbé that the brothel would meet the highest standards of safety and conduct, it is doubtful authorities gave Otama permission for his operation.<sup>70</sup> The smuggling of people and goods between Borneo and the Sulu Archipelago was so vexatious to E.L. Cook, a regional customs

---

<sup>67</sup> Letter from John Bates to Adjutant General, 21 August 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Paper, USAHEC. Dennys’ works on Asia included: N.B. Dennys, *A Descriptive Dictionary of British Malaya* (London: London and China Telegraph Office, 1894); N.B. Dennys, *The Folk-Lore of China* (London: Trubner and Co., 1876).

<sup>68</sup> Conferences and Interviews from Mindanao and Sulu Group, 31 July 1899, Box 2, Folder 3. John Bates Papers, USAHEC; Letter from John Bates to Adjutant General, 27 September 1899, Box 2, Folder 6. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>69</sup> Extracts from letters of Commander Very, 15 June 1899, Box 2, Folder 3. John Bates Papers USAHEC.

<sup>70</sup> Letter from Otama to William Kobbé, 27 February 1901, Box 3, Folder 7. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC.

official in Jolo, that he submitted a plan to Manila aimed at reorganizing the district. Cook suggested that a large customs boat be put on constant patrol of the water, ensuring “a large amount of these smaller craft would be forced to relinquish this illicit trade, and so in time the greater part of the same would be brought under the surveillance of the Customs.” In the same letter, Cook advised Morgan Shuster that appointing a permanent customs official with Constabulary-backing would also curb illegal activities.<sup>71</sup>

Slaving and smuggling, often inextricably intertwined, continued apace. At the end of his time in the Insular Government, Dean Worcester complained that “unless the long arm of Uncle Sam is vigorously exercised slavery and peonage will continue to flourish in the Philippines,” and referenced his experiences at an open-air slave market where Dutch planters from Borneo purchased the human wares from the Moros.<sup>72</sup> John C. Early complained of a “constant ingress of Chinese from Borneo through the southern islands.” The coastguard ship that patrolled the waters off of Mindanao was not fast enough to catch the quick *vintas* the migrants arrived in and the government in the South lacked the funds to hold or deport them.<sup>73</sup> By the Commonwealth period, the transitional government was experimenting with travel passes aimed at “minimizing the smuggling of aliens between the southern islands and the colonies near Mindanao, like Borneo and the East Indies.”<sup>74</sup>

Connected to this human traffic were questions of inter-colonial policing and surveillance. Contact and coordination between the Americans and the British authorities in Borneo benefited both. Philippine commissioner Jacob Gould Schurman made an inspection tour to British North Borneo in the summer of 1899, where he met the British resident at Labuan, R.M. Little. On returning to the small British colony, just off the coast of Brunei, Little contacted the U.S. Navy, inviting any ships travelling past Labuan to visit there,

---

<sup>71</sup> Letter from E.L. Cook to W. Morgan Shuster, 11 August 1906, Box 15, Folder 66. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

<sup>72</sup> Dean Worcester, “What Would Lincoln Do? Slave Trading Under the Stars and Stripes,” *Semi-Monthly Magazine*, 11 January 1914.

<sup>73</sup> Memorandum from John C. Early to Dwight F. Davis, 20 December 1930, Box 28, Folder 29. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>74</sup> “Passes for Moros,” 29 August 1926, Box 30, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

discussing the possible coordination of trade routes between Sulu and the island, and providing information on a seditious character who had been aiding the *insurrecto* General Emilio Aguinaldo. "I shall not allow Labuan to be made a centre for any intrigues with the Filipinos," he declared in his letter.<sup>75</sup> Once a system of colonial policing was established in Sulu and Mindanao, dialogue between Americans and the British in Borneo became standard practice. Crossing the invisible border that separated the colonies was often a means of escaping capture, hence the efforts to coordinate. The British regularly contacted authorities in Sulu. In October 1902, Lieutenant George Duncan, then stationed in Tawi-Tawi, received word from the Superintendent of Police in Sandakan of a break-in at the museum there. Two elephant tusks had been stolen and the Sandakan police believed Datu Tan Tong of Simunul was responsible. As Simunul was under American control, Duncan made a search of Datu Tan Tong's property on behalf of the British. Nothing was found, however, and Tan Tong requested he be allowed to travel to Sandakan to clear his name.<sup>76</sup>

A more serious incident occurred in January 1905, when a mercenary and pirate named Pala, previously hired by Sultan Kiram to hunt down Panglima Hassan, raided a settlement in British North Borneo. He and his men killed thirty-five people, returning to Jolo afterwards. With him, Pala brought "a number of recruits from other islands, deserters from the Constabulary, and disorderly characters of all kinds" and fomented unrest, exploiting the widespread dislike of the cedula tax. Scott received an official arrest and extradition request from Whitehall in March and asked Leonard Wood to send him more troops for a campaign against Pala and his band. Some twelve hundred men representing a variety of companies and detachments of the U.S. Army, the Philippine Scouts, and the Moro Constabulary moved against Pala in early May. It was the native Constabulary troops who finally tracked down and killed the outlaw, confronting his band in close quarters fighting. In the days immediately following, Wood's men attacked other hostile groups on the island, including that of

---

<sup>75</sup> Letter from R.M. Little to U.S. Navy Commander (Signature Illegible), 23 August 1899, Folder 2, Box 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC; Kramer, "Empires, Exceptions, and Anglo-Saxons," 1352. On R.M. Little see D.S. Ranjit Singh, *The Making of Sabah, 1865-1941: The Dynamics of Indigenous Society* (Kuala Lumpur: University of Malaya Press, 2000), 198-201.

<sup>76</sup> Letter from George Duncan to Adjutant General, 1 November 1902, Box 55, Folder 3. Hugh Scott Papers, LOC-MD.

Tungalang, a prophet claiming his divine powers bestowed invulnerability and invisibility upon his followers. Afterwards, Wood concluded that Pala was “the head and front of the trouble, and realizing what must happen to him eventually on account of his crimes in Borneo, made every effort to gather about him others like himself.”<sup>77</sup>

Despite these impressive displays of force, crimes committed between empires continued, as did coordinated responses to them. In April 1909, a group of seven Moros from Manuk Manka, near Bongao in the Sulu Archipelago, travelled to Sulawesi where they robbed and killed two Dutch planters. The Moros made the long voyage back to Manuk Manka chased by a Dutch gunboat, which was unable to catch them before they disembarked. The Dutch contacted the Constabulary detachment on Bongao, and the Americans took the attack seriously enough that they reinforced the Constabulary with four companies of infantry from Jolo. While the Americans searched the island for the fugitives, the Dutch gunboat patrolled the waters. The partnership bore fruit when all of the suspects were apprehended apart from the leader, who was captured shortly thereafter by “friendly Moros.”<sup>78</sup>

Americans visiting North Borneo inevitably wrote about what they saw with a critical eye, comparing it with their own efforts in the Philippines. Taking a vacation in 1922, John Early travelled aboard a steamship en route to Sandakan. His first-class companions were an assortment of colonial characters, including a Scotsman who regaled the others with his tales of the Boer War, a drunken British naval officer, a British couple representing a firm that hoped to export guano from the Micronesian island of Nauru (then a German colony), and a New Zealander who bought curios in China for sale back home. Onboard, Early witnessed the beating of Chinese prisoners, en route from Macao to a penal colony in Timor, by a Portuguese lieutenant who had spent years living in England. This demonstrated, according to Early, “how thin was the veneer of Anglo-Saxon fair play” in the “Latin” army officer. In this

---

<sup>77</sup> Report from Leonard Wood to Military Secretary on 3<sup>rd</sup> Sulu Expedition, 22 May 1905, Box 11, Folder 2. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD; Fulton, *Moroland*, 242-244.

<sup>78</sup> John Pershing, *Annual Report of Brigadier General John J. Pershing, U.S. Army, Governor of the Moro Province, for the Year Ending August 31, 1910*. (Zamboanga: The Mindanao Herald Publishing Co., 1910), 19-20.

case, and many others, long sea voyages were often sites of inter-imperial contact and dialogue.<sup>79</sup>

Early's first impressions of Sandakan were unfavourable. He sneered at the government living off the "wages of shame" by legalizing and regulating vice, and observed that the "town was quite unimproved and there were few roads leading out from it to nearby plantations." Early's sense of colonial morality drove his criticisms. The British at Sandakan had failed in their paternal mission, and since the colony was run like a business (which, in effect, it actually was) "anything which did not pay was abandoned...there was in fact little done to ameliorate the harsh conditions of life in the jungle settlement." Early argued that the British kept their labourers in a state of ignorance as a "matter of policy" and this caused a disavowal of the "uplift movement" to the detriment of the colony. Such indifference to civilizational imperatives, combined with the toleration of vice, encouraged a state of dissipation in Sandakan. Chinese coolie labourers smoked opium "with the consent and to the profit of the state" and those who were unhappy with their work contracts fled to the Philippines, usually by way of Sulu and Mindanao. "They were content to risk capture and deportation to China," Early wrote, "rather than remain in Borneo under conditions as they were."<sup>80</sup>

Other Americans travelling through North Borneo were not as critical. Charles Ivins enjoyed his time in Sandakan, and compared the British North Borneo Chartered Company to "the old Hudson's Bay Company" in Canada. He was impressed with the organization of the town, but the Chinese opera he attended was "without doubt the dizziest affair ever dreamed up by man since the Flood."<sup>81</sup> Harry Bandholtz, Chief of the Philippine Constabulary from 1907 until 1913, purchased an orangutan from a British Constabulary officer there and named him Mike. Governor General Forbes was "absolutely fascinated" by the creature and "played

---

<sup>79</sup> "Reminiscences of John C. Early," 1920s, Box 1. John Early Papers, BHL.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid.

<sup>81</sup> Ivins, "The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga," Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 120, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.



with him a good deal.”<sup>82</sup> All of which is to say, Americans were linked to their fellow imperialists in North Borneo in any number of ways – travel, sociality, trade, and policing among them. As extensive as they were, however, relations with North Borneo were only one facet of a larger series of inter-imperial connections between the Southern Philippines and the rest of the world.

## Colonial Transfers

“One of the first things Wood did was to send me around to Borneo, Java, and the British Lake Peninsula to see how other people were doing,” George Langhorne told Leonard Wood’s biographer Hermann Hagedorn. “On that trip we went into all sorts of details with local governments and brought back a number of things in the way of plans for houses, ways of running things, and whenever we learned anything from that trip that was good, we put it into effect.” Langhorne observed that the Moro Exchanges were modeled on markets he and his travel companions saw in other Southeast Asian colonies.<sup>83</sup> Langhorne’s travels were not exceptional or isolated. Many of the soldiers and civilians shaping policy in Mindanao and Sulu did so by drawing inspiration or directly borrowing from other colonial contexts. The region itself hosted a variety of transcolonial characters – attracted through their work as professional soldiers or engineers, or because of business opportunities, or just stopping in the Southern Philippines before migrating to other outposts of empire.

Americans turned to the British Empire for guidance on how to run a colonial state, and, according to Frank Schumacher, these interactions “provided an intellectual framework within which Americans could discuss their own ideas about colonial rule.”<sup>84</sup> Sharing a common language, boosters of empire on both sides of the Atlantic swapped ideas in newspapers and periodicals, traveled on the same ocean liners and in the same train carriages, intermarried, went into business with one other, and attended international conferences together. “The success of Anglo-Saxonism as a racial-exceptionalist bridge between the

---

<sup>82</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 3, 4 July 1909. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>83</sup> Interview with George T. Langhorne, 8 June 1929, Box 15, Folder 2. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>84</sup> Schumacher, “The American Way of Empire,” 42.

United States and the British Empire,” Paul Kramer argues, “was due in part to the social, familial, intellectual, and literary networks that tied elite Americans and Britons together.”<sup>85</sup> In a rapidly connecting world, the perception of a shared racial and cultural heritage led many Americans to look to the British Empire as a blueprint upon which to model their own colonial future. While the Americans and British were often critical of one another, a conjoined sense of Anglo-Saxon moral mission ultimately overrode issues that arose. Evidence of this is found in the sustained collaboration between American and British colonial possessions during the first half of the twentieth-century. American businessmen arriving in the Philippines found well-established trade networks led by British merchants linking the islands with the economies of the Pacific world. These men modeled their racially exclusive clubs and associations on those the British had already established. Protestant moral reformers from Britain and the United States used the Philippines as a staging ground for their battles against prostitution and opium.<sup>86</sup>

Colonial elites circumnavigating the globe on their way to or from the Philippines stopped frequently in Britain and its colonies on their journeys. Such was the case with W. Cameron Forbes, who “consciously modeled himself on British officials” during his time as head of the colonial Philippines.<sup>87</sup> Forbes met multiple times with Lord Cromer, famous for his colonial administration of Egypt. During one meeting in 1909, the two discussed irrigation, land titles, the potentialities of the unused land in the Philippines, and systems of taxation. Cromer provided Forbes with reports from the Foreign Office and contacts with old colonial hands. After this meeting, Forbes continued onwards to Egypt. Now proconsul of Islamic peoples himself, he wanted to view the imperial management of a Muslim state. With

---

<sup>85</sup> Kramer, “Empires, Exceptions, and Anglo-Saxons,” 1326.

<sup>86</sup> On prohibition and moral reform in the colonial Philippines, see Ian Tyrrell, “The Regulation of Alcohol and Other Drugs in a Colonial Context: United States Policy Towards the Philippines, c. 1898-1910,” *Contemporary Drug Problems* 35 (2008): 539-569; Daniel J.P. Wertz, “Idealism, Imperialism, and Internationalism: Opium Politics in the Colonial Philippines, 1898-1925,” *Modern Asian Studies* 47.2 (2013): 467-499. For the British context, see John Stuart, “Beyond Sovereignty? Protestant Missions, Empire and Transnationalism, 1890-1950,” in *Beyond Sovereignty: Britain, Empire and Transnationalism, c. 1880-1950*, ed. Kevin Grant et al. (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007), 103-125.

<sup>87</sup> Carnes Lord, *Proconsuls: Delegated Political-Military Leadership from Rome to America Today* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012), 79.

the aid of a Foreign Office contact, Forbes examined irrigation plans, weighed the merits of British schemes for Egyptian wage labour, and visited the chief engineer at Port Said, who gave him a tour of the waterworks there. The trip was also something of a vacation, and Forbes climbed the Great Pyramid, tried to acquire an Arab stallion for polo (to no avail), and reflected on the *Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyam* in his idle moments. He returned to the Philippines by way of the Suez Canal and the Indian Ocean, and five months later was putting the ideas he gathered abroad to work on an inspection trip to Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>88</sup>

Charles Brent also visited Cromer, albeit in Cairo and not London. Writing to Frank McCoy, then serving as Leonard Wood's aide in Zamboanga, the Episcopal clergyman related that "General Wood was in the mouth of everyone" he met in Cairo, and that he had "lots to talk about" regarding Egypt when he returned to Mindanao. Cromer, Brent thought, was "a statesman of no ordinary caliber" to whom he was "greatly attracted."<sup>89</sup> His enthusiasm for Cromer did not dim, and years later in Zamboanga he used the British statesman as an example of morally upstanding imperial stewardship, alongside General Charles Gordon and the British Foreign Secretary Lord Palmerston. In devising "unselfish" colonial policies, the Americans could take inspiration from such men.<sup>90</sup> At the Lake Mohonk Conference in 1910, he quoted Sir Henry Maine's statements on India (which he took from Cromer's writings) to further his moral case for colonial empire, and concluded his lecture by paraphrasing Cromer on "handing over the torch of progress and civilization" to the colonized peoples.<sup>91</sup>

---

<sup>88</sup> Journal of W. Cameron Forbes, Vol. 3, January 1909. W. Cameron Forbes Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>89</sup> Letter from Charles Brent to Frank McCoy, 17 April 1905, Box 11, Folder 1. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>90</sup> "Bishop Brent at Zamboanga," *Hartford Courant*, 15 January 1913, 8.

<sup>91</sup> Charles Henry Brent, *The Inspiration of Responsibility*, 161-164. It was not just Republican supporters who looked to Cromer's example. In his book on the Philippines, Francis Burton Harrison wrote: "There is always the possibility of confusion in the mind of the Moros between religion and custom, their sultans being the religious heads of a people over whom too often rule meant the right to steal cattle and enslave women. Lord Cromer, in his first meeting with the beaten chieftains of the Soudan and after his promise to protect their religion, was confronted with English public opinion at home. Did that mean to permit slavery?" – Harrison, *Corner-Stone of Philippine Independence*, 100.

British colonial empire inspired other Americans involved in the reconfiguration of the Philippines. Leonard Wood was kept abreast of developments in India through correspondence with the journalist Richard Barry, who relayed his conversations with Lord Kitchener back to Mindanao. Aside from sharing colonial gossip about Lord Curzon's departure from India, Barry informed Wood that Kitchener had "asked many questions" about Wood and that his eyes "brightened" when he was told that Wood was acting as *both* civil and military Governor of the Moro Province.<sup>92</sup> Tasker Bliss, Wood's successor, had a fondness for British military history and in his spare time wrote letters to his wife about the topic. In one, he retold a comic experience the Duke of Wellington had during the Peninsular War against Napoleon that involved a drunken orderly attempting to get onto his horse and invoking the names of saints for help.<sup>93</sup> When discussing his work on the Moro Exchange system at Mohonk, John Finley claimed that his recognition of the Moros and Lumads as the "the real producers" of the country was inspired by Lord Cromer's "proper recognition and protection of the rights of the *fellahin* producing class" in Egypt.

John C. Early had colonial empire on his mind when he commemorated Leonard Wood and Charles Brent in 1932. At the Cathedral of St. Mary and St. John in Baguio, Early dedicated memorial windows to the two men, whom he viewed, quoted Cecil Rhodes, as "gentleman adventurers" of American empire. He set the army general and the moral reformer alongside a cast of colonial legends from both sides of the Atlantic that included Rhodes, T.E. Lawrence, John Nicholson, Merriweather Lewis, Sam Houston, and Marcus Whitman. The speech catalogued Wood's medical and military achievements in the Caribbean and the Philippines, as well as Brent's transnational fight against the opium trade and paternal kindness towards the Igorots and the Moros. Early returned to comparatives in his closing, recalling how the Pashtuns of the Indian colonial frontier mourned for John Nicholson upon his death, and that in the generations since Nicholson remained "a vivid personality to the Indian peasant." Likewise would Wood and Brent be "living personalities

---

<sup>92</sup> Letter from Richard Barry to Leonard Wood, 12 January 1906, Box 15, Folder 3. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>93</sup> Letter from Tasker Bliss to Eleanor Bliss, 9 July 1906, Box 22, Folder 3. Tasker Bliss Collection, USAHEC.

planted deep in the hearts of the masses.” Early’s imperial sentimentalism bonded the grand figures of the two empires within a unified moral history.<sup>94</sup>

Colonial models in other Southeast Asian states factored into the administrative considerations of officials. British North Borneo, the Malay States, the Straits Settlements, and the Dutch East Indies were all examined. In 1902, General George Davis, military commander of the Southern Philippines, looked at the composition of armies in Java, Sumatra, and the Straits Settlements, and found that the Dutch and British relied mainly on native soldiers, while maintaining a European officer class. Based on these calculations, he made recommendations for how many battalions were needed for the ongoing rule of the Philippine Archipelago (after the cessation of hostilities) and how Christian Filipinos and Moros could be used as soldiers to defray American costs.<sup>95</sup> Davis returned to colonial antecedents in his annual report the following year, arguing that the most effective colonial armies were those composed of long-term European residents. The Dutch who served in the army of the East Indies were usually from settler families, and a “very large proportion of the British Officers in India were born in India.” In French Indochina, soldiers enlisted for ten years and many stayed longer. Based on these facts, Davis recommended the average tour of duty for American soldiers be lengthened, creating a soldiery with a deeper understanding of the realities of military life in a colonial setting.<sup>96</sup> After outbreaks of beriberi and cholera in Mindanao in 1902, Davis dispatched army medical officers to India and the Dutch East Indies, where they visited hospitals, examined the diets of European colonials and the natives, and studied rates of infection with the goal of using the information to curb epidemics in the Philippines.<sup>97</sup>

---

<sup>94</sup> “Gentlemen Adventurers,” Speech given at Baguio, February 1932, Box 1. John Early Papers, BHL.

<sup>95</sup> Letter from George W. Davis to Adna R. Chaffee, 17 April 1902, Box 1, Folder 1. George Davis Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>96</sup> Davis, *Annual Report 1903*, 12.

<sup>97</sup> *Ibid.*, 106-110. In 1914, J. Franklin Bell commented on Davis’ inspirations in a speech: “It may not have been known to you that it was a soldier who wrote the original organic act of your province, because that act was passed and celebrated by the Civil Commission in Manila, but it was General George W. Davis who wrote the draft of that act. He wrote it not hastily, because he was a student, a student of colonial government, and especially the type of the colonial government which is exercised and maintained by the English.” – Speech by J. Franklin Bell at Zamboanga, 3 January 1914, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

A decade later, Governor General Francis Burton Harrison was similarly preoccupied with colonial precedents in Southeast Asia. Writing to Secretary of War Lindley Garrison, Harrison used the British as an example of maintaining tact when dealing with the “Mohammedan religion,” albeit not to the detriment of American values.<sup>98</sup> He also cited the problems the Dutch faced in their four-decade war against the Sultanate of Aceh when considering the specter of continued rebellion among the Moros. Harrison felt such an uprising was unlikely because the Moros lacked the cohesion of the Acehnese and had been mostly stripped of their weapons in Pershing’s disarmament campaign of the previous years. Nevertheless, he saw the Moros as fierce warriors and compared them to the Beja warriors who fought alongside the Mahdi against the British in Sudan, using the term “Fuzzy-Wuzzy” for them that Rudyard Kipling had popularized.<sup>99</sup>

In building up the area around Dansalan in 1908, American military officials looked to Dutch models of colonial labour in the East Indies. John McAuley Palmer, Governor of Lanao, thought that “enforced or directed labour” should be utilized in Moro agricultural colonies as it was on Java, with modifications. Where the Javanese were required “to cultivate crops for the profit of the Dutch Government” the Maranao Moro “would only labour for his own interest.” This progressive twist allowed Americans to avoid the label of slavery while producing sedentary agriculturalists out of the once-fierce Moros. The idea of forced labour would be “rather startling to Americans,” McAuley wrote to Tasker Bliss, but “its necessity in dealing with people like the Moros must be apparent to anyone who has had occasion to study them or similar peoples in Malaysia.” Although Javanese farmers were required to labour as much as fifty-two days per year, McAuley thought this number could be raised even higher in Lanao, as the Moros would be working towards “purely communal interests” in the proposed agricultural colony. “It would be better to require too much than too little,” he explained. A punishment and reward system for the behaviour of the colonists

---

<sup>98</sup> “Great Britain rules over more Mohammedans I believe than the Sultan of Turkey now, and they are very tactful in their handling of the questions affecting Mohammedan religion. We cannot of course permit the maintenance of customs in dominions under the American jurisdiction which are repugnant to the moral sense of the United States...” – Letter from Francis Burton Harrison to Lindley Garrison, 4 April 1915, Box 42. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid.

would be “similar to the method employed by the Dutch to secure the loyalty of the native chiefs on Java.”<sup>100</sup>

Knowledge also circulated through the Southern Philippines by way of low and mid-ranking personnel with transcolonial careers. As we have seen elsewhere in this project, “circuits of expert knowledge” where local observations and data could be “compared, tested, confirmed, and connected together” became prominent in a variety of scientific and humanistic disciplines.<sup>101</sup> On a more practical level, colonial knowledge often travelled through men and women plying their trades across empire: soldiers, nurses, engineers, teachers, and the like. The career of Oscar Preuss illustrates this phenomenon. Born in Germany, he enlisted at a young age with the Hussars, before transferring to the German colonies in East Africa, where he led a company of Askaris. After a short stint with the Austrian Army, Preuss joined the German expeditionary force in its campaigns during the Boxer Rebellion, and subsequently returned to Africa where he fought with the Boers against the British. Vic Hurley claimed Preuss had also seen action in “various South and Central American revolutions,” and in 1903 the German travelled to the United States and enlisted with the 3<sup>rd</sup> Cavalry. He served with his regiment for three years, and after being discharged immediately signed up with the Philippine Constabulary. He was still only twenty-five years old.<sup>102</sup>

As a lieutenant in the Philippine Constabulary, Preuss brought a wealth of martial knowledge to his work. He became a travelling expert on the elimination of banditry, and was stationed in various parts of Lanao, on Jolo, and (briefly) as Deputy Governor of Dapitan.<sup>103</sup> Preuss was renowned for his love of strong spirits (he reportedly drank a quart of Gordon’s

---

<sup>100</sup> Letter from John McAuley Palmer to Tasker Bliss, 12 January 1908, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>101</sup> Emily Rosenberg, “Transnational Currents in a Shrinking World,” in *A World Connecting, 1870-1945*, ed. Emily Rosenberg (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2012), 919-920.

<sup>102</sup> “Lieutenant Preuss Wounded in Action,” Undated, Box 1. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC; Vic Hurley, *Jungle Patrol*, 286-287; John Pershing, *My Life Before the World War, 1860-1917: A Memoir*, ed. John T. Greenwood (Lexington: The University of Kentucky Press, 2013), 572; Fulton, *Moroland*, 407-409.

<sup>103</sup> According to John Pershing: “The police of Dapitan, organized and trained by Captain Preuss of the Constabulary, is as fine a body of policemen as can be found in the islands.” – Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 56.

Gin each day) and his violent methods. Hurley called him “the most ruthless Moro killer of them all” and took delight in telling a comic anecdote about Preuss. The German bristled at accusations by a tribunal in Manila, which accused him of personally killing 250 Moros. “The report is in error, Colonel; my count places the total at 265,” Preuss told the panel.<sup>104</sup> Although the exchange could well have been the product of Hurley’s imagination, Preuss’ predilection for brutality was widely acknowledged by his fellow Constabulary officers.<sup>105</sup> His own reports were unblinking in their descriptions of the violence he and his men meted out.<sup>106</sup> Perennially restless, the German took leave of the Constabulary in late 1911 to serve for three months in the American gendarmerie in Persia under the direction of W. Morgan Shuster, an old Philippines hand himself.<sup>107</sup> Preuss returned to Germany and fought on the Galician front, where he was reported as killed in July 1915. Despite this “later reports by the AEF’s G-2 in France listed him as an agent in Spain in 1917-1918. He was also reported to be in the United States in the 1920s.”<sup>108</sup>

The young Sterling Larrabee, serving under Preuss in the Constabulary, took inspiration from his commanding officer in transferring his military skills elsewhere once his stint in the Philippines concluded. The son of Charles Larrabee, one-time Assistant Commissioner of Indian Affairs in the Roosevelt administration, Sterling was honourably discharged from West Point after being deemed deficient in mathematics. Nursing this blow to his pride, Larrabee quickly joined with the Constabulary and served under Preuss in Lanao before heading a company of Moro troops on Cagayan de Sulu, the most far-flung island in the Sulu Archipelago. Larrabee and his men “cleaned up” the island and were “mentioned in

---

<sup>104</sup> Hurley, *Jungle Patrol*, 287.

<sup>105</sup> Fulton, *Moroland*, 408.

<sup>106</sup> “As I was wrestling with the Moro for the possession of the *campilan*, several soldiers had their guns ready to fire although I was between the soldiers and the Moro and only prevented from doing so by Lieut. Whitney who told them not to shoot and waiting for an opportune moment, when the head of the Moro was uncovered, dispatched him by a well directed shot through his head.” – Official Reports Relating to Punitive Expedition to Lake Numungan, 1911, Box 2, Folder 2. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>107</sup> Preuss produced a fragmentary manuscript relating his experiences in Persia, which he left in the possession of Sterling Larrabee. See “Shuster’s Gendarmerie in Persia,” August 1912, Box 2, Folder 2. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>108</sup> Pershing, *My Life Before the War*, 573.



orders for it.”<sup>109</sup> After leaving the Constabulary in 1913, Larrabee looked to Europe for military adventure. His attempts to join the Seaforth Highlanders and the French Foreign Legion failed, but he managed to meet with Winston Churchill, then First Lord of the Admiralty, who placed him with the Mediterranean Expeditionary Force. With the MEF, Larrabee fought against Ottoman forces for nearly two years, before transferring to the Royal Field Artillery and serving at the Somme and Vimy Ridge. He finished the war with the American Expeditionary Force as a captain in the field artillery. During the interwar period, Larrabee became “one of the great figures of foxhunting” in the United States, founding the Old Dominion Hounds in Virginia and promoting the aristocratic British tradition amongst the patrician elite of the Eastern Seaboard.<sup>110</sup>

Transcolonial wanderers who came to the Southern Philippines were not limited to military types like Oscar Preuss and Sterling Larrabee.<sup>111</sup> Engineers also moved freely

---

<sup>109</sup> One habit of Larrabee and his men on Cagayan (present day Mapun) was shaving the ends off of their bullets to create dum-dums: “They tried them out first on dogs and old *carabao*, and found that they could blow a whole hind-end off a *carabao*. They blew a hole in a man as large as a bucket.” – “The Horseman’s Album: A Tribute to Sterling Loop Larrabee, Master of the Old Dominion Foxhounds,” January 1935, Box 2, Folder 3. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>110</sup> Ibid; Memo on Sterling Larrabee’s Service, 1941, Box 2, Folder 1. Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers, USAHEC. Larrabee’s wife, Constance Stuart Larrabee, was also a fascinating character with a career that spanned the globe. Born in Britain and raised in South Africa, she was a well-established photographer in Pretoria by her early twenties. As South Africa’s first female war correspondent, she documented the campaigns of the South African Sixth Armored Division during the Second World War, and became famous for her photographs of African tribespeople after the war. She married Sterling Larrabee in 1949 and in later life was a patron of the arts. Her African images are now housed at the National Museum of African Art at the Smithsonian Institution – “Constance Stuart Larrabee, 85, Photographer,” *New York Times*, 4 August 2000, C19.

<sup>111</sup> Military adventurism was not limited to men lower in the ranks. Ole Waloe, who commanded Constabulary forces in the Southern Philippines during the First World War, was born in Norway. After migrating to Minnesota and having a short-lived career in forestry, he joined the U.S. Army and fought in the campaign against Sitting Bull. Waloe came to the Philippines with the infantry and stayed on after the war with the Philippine Constabulary. He married a Spanish woman and ran a *hacienda* in Bukidnon before returning to the United States in later life. John R. White, famous for his role at Bud Dajo and for his book *Bullets and Bolos*, was born in England. After abandoning his schooling, he joined the Greek Army and fought against Ottoman Turkish forces, then travelled to the Klondike during the Gold Rush. Afterwards, he went to San Francisco and joined the U.S. Army in order to serve in the Philippines. Like Waloe, he joined the Constabulary, and soon became the youngest colonel in the organization. His career in the Philippines included a stint as director of the Iwahig Penal Colony and one as assistant director of the Constabulary Academy at Baguio. During the First World War, he served with the American Expeditionary Force, and in his later years was alternately a property manager for W. Cameron Forbes and an employee of the National Park Service, helping to build up Sequoia and Death Valley parks in California. – Research notes for ‘The Brethren,’ 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

between empires, finding work on the myriad transformative projects underway in the European and American colonies. As “engineering feats” were seen “as both definitive gauges of the level of development achieved by other societies and essential components of the civilizing mission” it was unsurprising that the government in Mindanao and Sulu tried to attract engineers.<sup>112</sup> In the early years of the Moro Province, a junior engineer in Zamboanga named Manly typified the acquisition and use of knowledge between empires. Prior to serving under Frank McCoy, the graduate of the Indiana College of Agricultural and Mechanical Arts had worked in Mexico, Central America, South America, New Zealand, and Australia. Using his engineering skills to finance further travels, Manly lived a “spartan life” and helped McCoy construct roads, bridges, docks, and the Provincial Building at Zamboanga. After a year in Zamboanga he left for Canton, where he prepared “plans for a sewerage system for the Vice-Roy,” before moving on to Burma and working for Standard Oil at the headwaters of the Irawaddy River. When McCoy last heard from Manly, the young engineer was proposing to travel to Mombasa in colonial Kenya to work on the construction of a railway line over the Nile.<sup>113</sup>

Americans operating in more coordinated official capacities in Southeast Asia also illustrated how the Southern Philippines tapped into networks of imperial knowledge. Under the tutelage of Leonard Wood, Frank McCoy saw much of the colonial world. The two travelled in Europe together in the late summer and autumn of 1902, “undertaking pilgrimages to European cultural shrines” and meeting with the British elite in London, including Prime Minister Arthur Balfour, King Edward VII, and Lord Kitchener, then Commander-in-Chief of the Indian Army. The two parties had much to discuss, Wood having recently concluded his stint as Governor of Santiago and the British still smarting from the hard-fought Boer War. In September, Wood and McCoy visited Germany, where they met

---

<sup>112</sup> Adas, *Dominance by Design*, 150.

<sup>113</sup> McCoy continued: “I read that letter to President Roosevelt, who said, ‘I want to know that man! Bring him to see me when he comes home!’ But I never heard from him again, and I think he must still be traveling, like the ‘Wandering Jew’” Address to be Delivered by Major General Frank R. McCoy at Graduation Exercises, New Mexico College of Agricultural and Mechanical Arts, 23 May 1933, Box 82. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

with Kaiser Wilhelm II and observed German military maneuvers.<sup>114</sup> The trip to Europe was an antecedent of the larger tour Wood, McCoy, and Hugh Scott took of European colonial possessions the following year en route to the Moro Province, where they all served as key members of the military government. Before arriving in Southeast Asia, the group visited Egypt and India. Observing the latter, McCoy thought that “the only decent, clean people east of Suez are the native Christians and the British native soldiers. The British flag stands for a lot more than one knows.” Reflecting that the work of civilizing India would be “a question of centuries” for the British, McCoy anticipated later Republican opposition to independence for the Philippines.<sup>115</sup>

McCoy was impressed by what he saw during his party’s ten-day visit to the Dutch East Indies in the summer of 1903. The civil service there was “such as we should build up for our colonies” and the colonial army was likewise impressive. The racial-paternalist assumptions of the Dutch rulers, and the way in which this coloured their treatment of the natives, appeared a successful template to Wood and McCoy.<sup>116</sup> The visit was marred by one small incident that occurred on a train in Java. A Dutch official, travelling in the same compartment as the Americans, became insolent and attempted to kick McCoy out of his seat. “Wood stood his insolence for about three minutes,” recalled McCoy, “then got up and threw him bodily out of the compartment.”<sup>117</sup> Despite this momentary lapse of inter-imperial harmony, the men looked favourably on their Dutch colleagues, and enjoyed similarly positive experiences in Singapore and Hong Kong. McCoy’s work in Mindanao and Sulu over the following years was informed by what he witnessed in other colonies, and, writing letters to his mother in the United States, he frequently mentioned other colonial examples to illustrate his points.<sup>118</sup>

---

<sup>114</sup> Andrew J. Bacevich, *Diplomat in Khaki: Major General Frank Ross McCoy and American Foreign Policy, 1898-1949* (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1989), 22-23.

<sup>115</sup> McCoy, quoted in Bacevich, *Diplomat in Khaki*, 26.

<sup>116</sup> *Ibid.*, 27.

<sup>117</sup> Interview with Frank McCoy, 7 June 1929, Box 15, Folder 4. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>118</sup> For example, McCoy’s description of dealing with a man running amuck: “Down in Java each police station and intermediate signal drums have a well known signal which is sounded right lustily when the loco runs amuck. Prominent citizens are supposed to get under their beds or atop the roof while the police spread their net,

The interpenetration of colonial empires through personnel and ideas continued to play a role in the Southern Philippines into the 1930s, the twilight years of American rule. Governor General Dwight F. Davis, formerly Secretary of War under Calvin Coolidge, made an extensive inspection tour of the Southeast Asian colonies of the European powers in 1931. Travelling aboard the *USS Pittsburgh*, Davis and his party – which included Filipino politicians, the President of the National Bank of the Philippines, his aides, and two of his children – covered six thousand miles over the course of forty-five days, stopping in various parts of French Indochina, Siam, British Malaya, and the Dutch East Indies. Billed as a “good-will and fact finding” mission, Davis declared that the party had “continually been comparing things and places throughout our travels with the conditions as they exist in the Philippine Islands.” Through an “interchange of ideas,” Davis believed, the “countries of the Far East” could learn from one another. The scope of the inspection tour included visits to “banks, post offices, scientific plants, hospitals, air services, roads, experimental stations, estates and farms given over to the production of sugar, rubber, fruit, tea, rice, and other products...schools, museums...palm oil factories, tin mines, automobile factories, opium plants, and other places of interest laid down by the protocol.” This ambitious itinerary allowed Davis and accompanying officials to map out broad comparisons between the Philippines and other colonial regimes, as well as exchange political, technical, governmental, and cultural information with them.<sup>119</sup>

More pointed observations and critiques from the trip were included in a confidential memorandum sent to Secretary of War Patrick J. Hurley in July 1931. European colonies were assessed in terms of their physical conditions; the role of the native elite; the lives of the

---

each guard being armed with the amuck spear, rather a trident, the middle prong foreshortened and all three prongs having barbs like fish-hooks, so arranged that there will be a nice clean fit around the neck; and once pinned with it the *juramentado* is completely at the mercy of the captor and the rule is not to run the risk of showing mercy.” – Letter from Frank McCoy to Margaret McCoy, 3 September 1903, Box 15, Folder 2. Hermann Hagedorn Papers, LOC-MD. At the end of his time in the Moro Province, McCoy again travelled to the Dutch East Indies and also did intelligence work for the military in Canton, China. See: Notes on Canton, 7 February 1906, Box 11, Folder 4. Frank McCoy Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>119</sup> Speech by Dwight F. Davis at Manila Hotel, 14 April 1931, 18865-55, Box 916, General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

native peasantry and their organization; governmental systems, policies, and personnel; the role and organization of the military in the colony; and revenues, expenditures, and commercial disposition. Davis dedicated the majority of the memorandum to the two colonial possessions where Muslims made up large segments of the population, British Malaya and the Dutch East Indies. In Malaya, he paid particular attention to the relationship between the British colonial state and native royalty, through whom they governed in the Malay Federated States. In the case of the Dutch, Davis was impressed by the organization and efficiency of the colony, but noted that chances for advancement among the natives were less than in the Philippines. He also commented that the Dutch, like the Americans in the Philippines, relied heavily on their native constabulary for law and order. The memo concluded with direct comparisons between the Philippines and the other colonies, with Davis noting that the American colony outpaced the others in terms of education and progressive taxation, but lagged behind on public works infrastructure.<sup>120</sup>

## Moros, Americans, and the Muslim World

For the Muslims of Mindanao and Sulu, shared faith often generated cultural transfers with the wider world. Although pilgrimage had long been an impetus for travel and exchange, rapidly expanding transportation technologies in the late nineteenth-century meant that journeys to holy sites became accessible to a far greater number of people. For pious Muslims in the Southern Philippines, Islamic religious tradition dictated that all those able make the *hajj* to Mecca do so at least once in their lives. Men who made the long trip were venerated in Moro communities, given the honorific ‘*hadji*,’ and wore tight white caps on their heads to denote their status.<sup>121</sup> Travelling the nearly nine thousand kilometers between Zamboanga and Mecca, through the South China Sea and across the entire Indian Ocean, was arduous. The third-class compartments many hopeful pilgrims bunked in were claustrophobic and poorly maintained. Steamship companies hired Arabic and Malay agents to advertise amongst

---

<sup>120</sup> Memorandum from Dwight F. Davis to Patrick J. Hurley, 18865-55, Box 916, General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP. Anne Foster examines Governor General Davis’ trip within the context of intelligence gathering and anti-communism in her work. See Foster, *Projections of Power*, 39-41.

<sup>121</sup> Worcester, “The Non-Christian Peoples of the Philippine Islands,” *National Geographic* 24.2 (1913): 1227.

the Moros, who spent large amounts to secure passage to the Holy Land. John Pershing disliked the endeavour, claiming that Muslims often mortgaged themselves into penury to make the journey. En route they were often “robbed and cheated” and some would “fall ill and die.” Those who did return had often contracted “loathsome diseases which they spread about the community.” Pershing recommended that the government do everything in its power to curtail the pilgrimages, except for those of proven financial capability (who would be given American consular support en route).<sup>122</sup> Although Pershing’s condemnations of the pilgrimage may have been too severe, there is abundant evidence that the journey was not an easy one. Charles Ivins recorded in his memoirs that groups of prospective *hadjis* occasionally appeared in Zamboanga and were lodged in the schoolhouse due to a lack of hostels. The travellers sometimes fell victim to the predations of “cheats and swindlers” and most did not make it out of Southeast Asia. Other Moros called these thwarted pilgrims “Singapore *Hadjis*...an honorific hardly comparable to that of a bona fide Mecca *hadji*.”<sup>123</sup>

In letters to his hometown newspaper in Pennsylvania, Frank Laubach described the journey that Maranaos made from Lanao to Mecca. In 1930, eleven went at a cost of between ₱700 and ₱1,000 each. The pilgrims travelled first to Ganassi, then onwards to Malabang. They took a small launch up to Zamboanga, and from there a steamer to Singapore. A larger ship took the Maranao faithful across the Indian Ocean and up the Red Sea to Jeddah, after which they travelled overland to Mecca. Once in the holy city, the pilgrims spent twenty-seven days praying at the Masjid al-Haram. Laubach was told the stories of the pilgrims by his Maranao confidante Datu Pambaya, and marvelled that there was little theft in the holy city. “It would be very fine if all the people in the world could trust each other as they do in

---

<sup>122</sup> Pershing’s stipulations about participating in the *haji* were extensive: “They usually come home with an exalted idea of their own importance, notwithstanding the fact that most of them return as indigents. After the journey to Mecca, they assume the title of *hadji* and are henceforth inclined to consider themselves above ordinary labor...In the future, Moros will not be encouraged to undertake the journey unless the district governor, upon investigation, ascertains that the prospective pilgrim is financially able to afford the expense, that he leaves his family in comfortable circumstances, that he has not borrowed the money to travel on, and that he has not sacrificed his property, nor pledged his personal services to pay his way.” – Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 58-59.

<sup>123</sup> Ivins, as an officer in the Philippine Constabulary, had to send one his sergeants, a Moro named Demao, to deal with the pilgrims when they arrived in Zamboanga without arrangements for lodgings. – Ivins, “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 174-175, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

Mecca,” he wrote home.<sup>124</sup> Matias Cuadra, working for the Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes in the 1930s, believed that Moros travelling to “Mecca, Colombo, Aden and other places” had learned modern methods of commerce, agriculture and “other essential factors for a decent living” from their journeys. He thought the pilgrimages, although religiously-inspired, were fundamentally positive in that they put the Muslims of Mindanao and Sulu in contact with more modern Islamic societies.<sup>125</sup>

The relationship between the Moros and other Muslims factored into the dynamics of American colonial rule as early as 1899. The U.S. Ambassador in Turkey, Oscar S. Straus, was sent to meet with Sultan Abdul Hamid II in Constantinople. Straus, who later became the first Jewish Cabinet Secretary under Theodore Roosevelt, feared that improperly handling the Moros might lead to a holy war. The ambassador requested that Abdul Hamid “as Caliph of the Muslim religion...act in behalf of his followers of Islam in the Philippines.” The Ottoman Sultan was unaware such a body of people even existed, but nevertheless contacted authorities in Mecca to see if the holy city was receiving Moro visitors. He was informed that the Moros “not only visited Mecca in considerable numbers but that at that very time there were Moros from Sulu in the Sacred City.” Straus presented the Sultan with the 1796 Treaty of Tripoli and stated that the United States intended to uphold its promise not to interfere with the religious rights of “any Mahometan nation,” citing the numerous treaties America had made with the Ottomans and their record of friendship towards Muslim peoples.<sup>126</sup> Straus’ diplomacy led Abdul Hamid to draft “a message to be sent to the Mohammedans of the Philippine Islands forbidding them to enter into any hostilities against the Americans,

---

<sup>124</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to *The Argus*, 15 January 1930, Box 1, Folder 3. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>125</sup> Memorandum from Matias Cuadra to G.K. Raval, Undated, Box 126, Folder 4. Frank Laubach Collection, SCRC.

<sup>126</sup> “Treaty of Peace and Friendship Between the United States of America and the Bey and Subjects of Tripoli of Barbary,” in Hunter Miller, ed., *Treaties and Other International Acts of the United States of America, Vol.2: Documents 1-40: 1776-1818* (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1931). Article 11, for example, stipulated that “as the government of the United States is not in any sense founded on the Christian Religion, as it has itself no character of enmity against the laws, religion or tranquility of Musselmen, - and as the said States never have entered into any war or act of hostility against any Mehomitan nation, it is declared by the parties that no pretext arising from religious opinions shall ever produce an interruption of the harmony existing between the two countries.”

inasmuch as no interference with their religion would be allowed under American rule.” Writing in 1915, John Finley argued that Straus’ work was the reason why the Moros never joined Emilio Aguinaldo’s forces during the Philippine Insurrection.<sup>127</sup>

Immigrants from the Ottoman Empire settled in Manila and other areas of the Philippines during Spanish rule. Mainly Druze and Maronite Syrians, these refugees “became well known both for their peddling businesses and trade in especially jewelry and watches.”<sup>128</sup> Spanish authorities attempted to funnel Ottoman settlers into Mindanao with moderate success, although they were vexed by “unofficial” migration from the Middle East, wherein missionary-traders settled among Moro populations and integrated into them. In doing so, they bypassed Spanish influence and represented what Isa Blumi calls a “steady stream of counter-colonialism” in Mindanao.<sup>129</sup> As we have seen, John Pershing and other Americans viewed these ‘Arabs’ with suspicion, fearing they would lead Muslim populations in Mindanao and Sulu away from the corrective modernity being promoted by the colonial state. Nevertheless, American authorities did hire Middle Eastern ‘experts’ like Najeeb Saleeby and Sheikh Mustafa Ahmad to act as conduits between the government and the Moros.<sup>130</sup>

For their part, Moros were highly aware of the existence of the Ottoman Sultan and his empire. In the waning years of the Spanish period and the early years of the American one, prominent Tausūg men from Jolo made the long journey to Mecca, including Sultan Jamalul Kiram II. During negotiations with John Bates in 1899, Kiram even boasted that the Spanish had allowed him to fly the flag of the Sultanate while he visited Mecca.<sup>131</sup> Datu Jokanain spent most of early 1903 in the city, and returned, according to American reports,

---

<sup>127</sup> Finley, “The Mohammedan Problem,” 357-358.

<sup>128</sup> Isa Blumi, *Ottoman Refugees, 1878-1939: Migration in a Post-Imperial World* (London and New York: Bloomsbury, 2013), 109.

<sup>129</sup> *Ibid.*, 111.

<sup>130</sup> *Ibid.*, 113-114.

<sup>131</sup> Conference between Sultan Kiram and John Bates, 14 August 1899, Box 2, Folder 1. John Bates Papers, USAHEC.



with friendlier views towards the occupying forces.<sup>132</sup> In Lanao, some *datus* viewed the Ottoman Sultan as leader of the *ummat al-Islamiyah*, the global Muslim community, and believed they should direct their fealty towards him and not the Americans. John Pershing grappled with this disposition in 1902 during his military campaigns around the lake. Datu Gundar of Maciu informed John Pershing that those opposing the Americans “look to the Sultan of Stanboul as the head of their government and insist that as he is not a friend of the Americans they cannot be.” Pershing told Gundar and his companions that the “Sultan of Stanboul” was, in fact, a friend of the Americans who sent his representatives to the United States, and that American citizens travelled regularly to regions of the Ottoman Empire. Gundar promised to relay the information to some of the more oppositional Maranaos, and the conversation moved on to discussions of circumcision, whether or not Americans would force Moros to wear hats, and a false rumour that Russia was at war with the United States.<sup>133</sup>

John McAuley Palmer also encountered *datus* who invoked the authority of the Ottoman Empire. In April 1907, Palmer received letters from Datu Nurul Hakim, a prominent political and religious figure on the eastern shore of Lake Lanao, saying that he should “take into account the agreement of the Sultan of Istanbul with the Government, including the President, the Secretary of War, and the Generals, that the Government established in Lanao shall merely watch over Lanao and should not injure the inhabitants or change their customs.” Hakim further stated he had specific orders from Sultan Abdul Hamid II “not to let the Americans come to my *rancheria*.” However unlikely this directive was, it displayed a belief among Maranao leaders that “the customs adopted by the said Sultan of Istanbul are the customs of all the *Datus* of Lanao.” By exaggerating his links to Ottoman authority, Hakim was symbolically placing himself under the protection of a Muslim entity that was a power on the world stage (albeit a declining one) and, in his view, increasing his bargaining abilities against the well-armed American forces at Dansalan and Camp Vicars. After Palmer responded negatively, Hakim’s next letter was filled with threats. His *rancheria* at Rumayas could not be attacked because it was “the domain of the Sultan of Istanbul” and if it was then

---

<sup>132</sup> Davis, *Annual Report 1903*, 109.

<sup>133</sup> Conversation with Datu Gundar, Datu Dumiar, Datu Ali, and Datu Acoti, 21 June 1902, Box 319. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

“America [would] also be attacked.” Hakim threatened the lives of American civilian and military officials, up to the President of the United States himself, and warned “by no means can you vanquish the Sultan of Istanbul.” Moro interpreters for the Americans were cautioned that “the day will soon come when your mouths will be cut and your feet and your hands and your ears and your eyes.” Between threats, the datu presented himself as a mere extension of the Sultan’s will. The ploy failed, and American forces destroyed Datu Nurul Hakim’s *cotta* soon thereafter, but his letters provide clear evidence of how members of the Moro elite used the wider Muslim world for leverage.<sup>134</sup>

An unusual intersection of the Moros, the Americans, and the Ottomans came in the final years of military rule, and arose from the cultural politicking of John Finley. Finley, the longest-serving district governor in the region, took it upon himself to be the voice of the Yakan and Samal Moros of Basilan and the Zamboanga Peninsula. In 1911, they bestowed upon him (at his urging) the title of *Tuan Maas*, an honorific that translates roughly to “Teacher, Sultan, and Father.” The following year, he convened a public meeting of Samal Moros at Taluksangay, twenty kilometers from Zamboanga, where he was appointed *Wakil Mutalak* (plenipotentiary) of the Muslims of the Zamboanga Peninsula and tasked with taking a petition to Sultan Mehmed V in Constantinople. Finley himself devised the journey to the Ottoman Empire, which was part of a complicated scheme to reorganize Moro power structures.<sup>135</sup>

According to the plan, the petition would first be given to the Ottoman ambassador in Washington, who would then forward it to the Sultan. It asked that the Ottomans take a “wider and deeper interest” in Moro affairs, and begged “that a representative of His most Supreme and Imperial Highness, The Sultan of the Ottoman Empire, Commander of All The Faithful, should be sent to look into and examine the state of affairs here in Moro Province.” This representative would help the Moros bring their “laws and customs...into line and

---

<sup>134</sup> Hakim’s letters to Palmer are quoted at length in correspondence between Palmer and J.P. Jervey, the officer who replaced George T. Langhorne as provincial secretary for the Moro Province in late 1906. See Letter from John McAuley Palmer to J.P. Jervey, 20 April 1907, Box 1, Folder 11. John McAuley Palmer Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>135</sup> Record of the Minutes of a Public Meeting of Moros Held at Taluksangay, District of Zamboanga, 29 March 1912, Box 1, Folder 1. John Finley Papers, USAHEC.

agreement with the laws and customs of the American Government.” It also requested the Sultan “advise and assist” the Moros in arriving “at a better, truer and purer Mohammedan faith in obedience to that laid down in the Kuran and Hadis by the Prophet Muhamad, without obstructing the laws of the State in any way.” The petition, signed by sixty Moro datu, introduced Finley to the Ottoman potentate and informed him that the American was “more than a father or an elder brother” to the Moros, and that the decision to name him *Tuan Maas* was made “spontaneously and unanimously” by them. It concluded with florid praise of the Sultan and the declaration that “no other person” besides him could “help us to the accomplishment of our desires and wishes for a purer Mohammedan faith.”<sup>136</sup>

Finley explained the petition’s rationale in detail in a collection of documents he forwarded to President William Howard Taft through Leonard Wood, who was then serving as the Army Chief of Staff. Finley explained that the “religious coloring” of the petition was there to manifest “the spirit of the Moro people,” before giving a long recounting of his various achievements during the previous decade. Though the plan and petition were products of Finley himself, he framed them as genuine expressions of the Moro desire for a greater degree of self-government. “These people are wards of the government and as such children of the state. They should receive paternal care, more especially as they ask for it,” Finley wrote to Taft. “It is the burden of their petition and their call should be heeded. If the Moros believe that they can accomplish more for themselves and thereby for the progress of the government by operating through the agency of a modern Mohammedan the plan is worthy of a trial.”

The plan further stipulated that a representative of the Ottoman Sultan would be sent to Mindanao and placed in a position of moral leadership. The Moros were to be instructed by this “modern” Muslim, who would combat the “degraded form of Mohammedanism” that was “manipulated by ignorant, fanatical native priests.” Persistent impediments to progress identified by Finley – substance use, *juramentados*, gambling, swindling – would be lessened, and the Ottoman representative would campaign against such “serious evils...through the instrumentality of modern Mohammedanism.” On a practical level, Finley

---

<sup>136</sup> Ibid.

suggested whoever was selected for the job be “taken from a higher learning institution in the Ottoman Empire.” The Moro Province would pay his salary, he would have his living expenses covered, and would have an official title like “Moro Agent and Instructor” or “Travelling Moro Deputy” or “Provincial Moro Advisor.” He would serve “for one year or up 18 months” preparing datus to assume his duties once he returned to Ottoman Turkey.<sup>137</sup>

Finley’s plan was unabashedly paternalistic, and driven by the admission that “the American rush for money and the material things of life has tended to upset the deliberate and slow-going oriental ideas and methods of the Moros.” It would reorient Islamic teaching towards American aims, giving religious legitimation to the colonial project. Finley laid out in detail how the representative would instruct the Moros to follow sanitary laws, respect the state monopoly on violence, curb gambling and other vices, develop their lands through industry and agriculture, obey the local courts system, appreciate the separation between church and state, and be “frugal, temperate, industrious, obedient to the laws, and respectful of the authorities.” The Ottoman representative was to be supervised by an American official in each district to ensure that these ends were pursued. The plan, in essence, was one of moral and commercial reform not so different from the goals of Protestant missionaries like Charles Brent, but filtered through an Islamic source more amenable to the Moros. To bolster the plan, he cited English, French, and Dutch colonial precedents. These other Western powers, he argued, recognized native titles and customs and it did “not appear to endanger the maintenance of proper control by the home government.” The Ottoman intermediary would allow for reasonable concessions to be made to the Moros while avoiding anything that would strain “the Constitution or the policy of the Government.”<sup>138</sup>

Shortly after the petition was drafted, Finley was sent back to the United States on the orders of the War Department. John Pershing, no fan of the so-called *Tuan Maas*, made clear to him that any return to Zamboanga would be unwelcome. Upon his arrival in Washington, Finley met with a variety of powerful figures, including President Taft, Secretary of War

---

<sup>137</sup> “A Review of the Moro Petition, its Origin, Scope and Purpose, and How Its Object May Be Realized In Aid of the American System of Control,” 1912, Box 1, Folder 1. John Finley Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>138</sup> Ibid.

Henry Stimson, and Leonard Wood. Convincing these men that the petition he brought “represented the decision of the more thoughtful and intelligent leaders of the Moros,” Finley was given a personal letter of recommendation from Stimson and continued on to Turkey.<sup>139</sup> In Constantinople, he received an audience with the Sultan, who appointed Sayid Mohammed Wajih ul-Gilani as *Sheikh-ul-Islam* for the Philippine Archipelago. Gilani was a graduate of the theological school in Nablus (in present-day Palestine), and had also done training as a religious judge at the Qadi College in Constantinople.<sup>140</sup> After securing Gilani, Finley departed Constantinople and was back in the Philippines by mid-July 1913. In Manila, he met with the outgoing Governor General Forbes and explained that he had only travelled to Turkey to collect and “deliver certain religious texts from the Ottoman Religious authorities to the Moros....he said nothing to Governor Forbes of having induced or discussed with the authorities in Constantinople the possibility or advisability of sending a religious teacher to Mindanao.”<sup>141</sup>

The appearance of Wajih Gilani in Mindanao at the end of January 1914 was met with surprise and dismay on the part of American officials. Francis Burton Harrison had just replaced Forbes in anticipation of the new Wilson Administration in Washington. In the South, military rule was being dissolved and the Moro Province was transitioning into the Department of Mindanao and Sulu. At the appearance of Finley and Gilani, the Governor Frank Carpenter cabled Manila stating that their activities were “inopportune and probably perverse of public order.” He added that Finley’s credentials were “solely with Muslims in Zambo” and that he was unknown to Moros in Lanao, Sulu, or Cotabato. Nevertheless, Finley was requesting transportation around the region, claiming that he was “authorized by the Democratic Party to go around with this Mohammedan to preach the Mohammedan religion and to teach the people here their Mohammedan catechism.”<sup>142</sup> The military commander of

---

<sup>139</sup> Letter from Edward Bowditch to J. Franklin Bell, 5 February 1914, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>140</sup> “Colonel Finley Gives Interesting Account of His Trip to Turkey in Behalf of the Mohammedan Moros,” *Army and Navy Weekly* 1.10 (1914), 1.

<sup>141</sup> Letter from Edward Bowditch to J. Franklin Bell, 5 February 1914, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>142</sup> Telegram from Frank Carpenter to Francis Burton Harrison, 8 February 1914, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

the Philippines, General J. Franklin Bell, was likewise concerned, and wrote to Harrison that he was trying to find a way to get Gilani and Finley out of the country as soon as possible. Bell believed that Gilani did not represent a way for the United States to more effectively govern the Moros, but was an agent of Islamic revivalism who was a “grave menace” to public order in Mindanao and Sulu. That Finley wore his U.S. Army officer uniform during his travels was of added concern, and Bell felt the entire mission was “blocking [the] civilizing influence [of the] United States Government and Christian denominational and undenominational efforts in their private undertakings here.” Finley’s actions were “objectionable from a military point of view...it is plainly inappropriate for any Army officer to inject himself into the situation there,” particularly when it was in the service of what Bell deemed “religious propaganda.”<sup>143</sup>

Frank Carpenter’s concerns, stemming from an antipathy towards Finley’s meddling, were serious enough that his annual report that year included an extensive commentary on the Gilani affair. The governor placed Gilani in a category alongside other foreign Muslim missionaries who appeared in the Southern Philippines “independent of any superior ecclesiastical direction or control.” Exacerbating matters were wild rumours spreading through the region that Constantinople was preparing to declare holy war against Christendom. Carpenter thought that an emissary from the Ottoman Empire would only make matters worse, and argued besides that the predatory behaviour of previous missionaries from the Greater Middle East prejudiced Moro communities against them. Calling Gilani a “Mohammedan propagandist” and, echoing Bell, a “grave menace” to the well being of the department, Carpenter was categorical in his condemnation. Introducing the “reactionary and militant propaganda” emanating from Constantinople into Mindanao and Sulu would “prove fatal to immediate and continued progress in the execution of the government’s program here.”<sup>144</sup>

---

<sup>143</sup> Letter from J. Franklin Bell to Francis Burton Harrison, 11 February 1914, Box 41. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>144</sup> Carpenter, *Annual Report 1914*, 391-393.

Conversely, John Finley viewed the visit by Sheikh Gilani as an unmitigated success, and penned an account of it for the *Army and Navy Weekly*, a newspaper for active and retired servicemen in the Philippines. Although the article was published without a byline, the level of detail and syntactical style suggest only Finley could have written it. In the article, he spoke of Moros in Zamboanga crowding around Gilani to kiss his hands and garment. “To them,” wrote Finley, “it was as the coming of the Messiah; their hopes were at last fulfilled. Being Orientals their expressions of joy were the same as those of the crowds that followed Jesus in Galilee in days of old.” He used the article to reassure American readers that “more linkages between the sublime porte and Moroland” would better the Moros and help with the “settlement of the difficulties that now surround the question of their government.” Hyperbole aside, Finley sincerely believed that forging ties between the Moros and the Ottoman state would make colonial governance in the Southern Philippines easier for the Americans.<sup>145</sup>

John Finley’s plan to join the Ottoman and American empires failed. Wajih Gilani was ‘obliged’ to leave the Philippines within a few months of his arrival and Finley was transferred back to the United States where he could no longer bother officials like Carpenter. Nevertheless, Gilani took his appointment as *Sheikh-ul-Islam* seriously and shortly after arriving in Turkey in September 1914 wrote to Secretary of War Lindley M. Garrison requesting funds to organize a return trip. In the letter, he spoke of the “pitiful state” of the Moros and the desire of the “religious authorities in Constantinople” to provide them with “instruction on the moral principles of our religion.”<sup>146</sup> The Sheikh had some support, as his possible return to the Philippines the following year “on a battleship” concerned Governor General Harrison so much that he wrote to the Insular Bureau that such an event would

---

<sup>145</sup> Finley-as-newspaper-correspondent further commented: “So long as the Moslem allows Christian missions in his territory, why should he not establish Moslem missions in ours, especially as we are on his territory to proselytize and he only comes to ours to teach his own. In a country that welcomes Buddhists, Theosophists, and any ‘ism’ on earth, it seems a little hard to explain just why we should refuse to allow the influence of a refined, educated, high class Mohammedan gentleman, such as Wajih Gilani proved himself, to be exerted in behalf of the Moros when it would so obviously make for their betterment and for the settlement of the difficulties that now surround the question of their government.” Found in “Colonel Finley Gives,” *Army and Navy Weekly*, 11.

<sup>146</sup> Letter from Wajih Gilani to Lindley Garrison, 23 September 1914, 2509, Box 1025. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

increase Gilani's "prestige and influence among the Mohammedan population" and "the embarrassment and possible consequences to us can not be too strongly considered." Apart from this, he said that most Moros were opposed to the return of Gilani, and that those "encouraging his interest or return" were "negligible elements and a few Arabs, Turks, [and] Malays."<sup>147</sup>

Undeterred by official indifference or opposition to his mission, Gilani travelled to the United States in August 1915 in hopes of meeting with President Wilson, to whom he wanted to express his "great respect and admiration for the American people."<sup>148</sup> The *New York Times* reported on the Sheikh's arrival, noting that his underage manservant, Nabou, was held up at Ellis Island by customs due to being below the age of sixteen. The newspaper quoted Gilani announcing that the Moros would "become citizens of whom the United States will not be ashamed."<sup>149</sup> John Finley continued his involvement with the Sheikh, writing a letter of introduction for him to Hugh Scott in which he claimed the Ottoman envoy was best suited to advise the Moros "regarding their religion and their duty to the government, in the preservation of order and in progressive development."<sup>150</sup> While in the United States, Gilani wrote to Najeeb Saleeby for advice, but received only a terse response that he should inform the proper official channels before returning to the Philippines. He also contacted Secretary of War Garrison again to let him know that while in Constantinople he had not informed Ottoman authorities that he had been asked to leave the Philippines during his previous visit so as not to jeopardize his mission. Gilani claimed he had come to the United States to publish his "most progressive and peaceful religious views to American people."<sup>151</sup>

---

<sup>147</sup> Letter from Francis Burton Harrison to Insular Bureau, 26 June 1915, 2509, Box 1025. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>148</sup> Letter from Wajih Gilani to Woodrow Wilson, 2 September 1915, 2509, Box 1025. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>149</sup> "Sheikh Here to Lecture," *New York Times*, 13 August 1915, 9.

<sup>150</sup> Letter from John Finley to Hugh Scott, 23 September 1915, 2509, Box 1025. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>151</sup> Letter from Wajih Gilani to Lindley Garrison, 23 October 1915, 2509, Box 1025. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.



Officials in the United States and the Philippines were irritated by Gilani's persistence, but Governor General Harrison was directed by the Bureau of Insular Affairs to give the envoy grudging permission to return to the colony. The bureau drafted a response to Gilani's requests saying that the separation of church and state meant that "the government has no interest whatever in religious work in the islands, and has no disposition whatever to interfere with anyone in the pursuit of such work," but for that reason "cannot lend encouragement or aid to any particular missionary work in the islands."<sup>152</sup> In essence, the insular authorities would marginalize Gilani by providing him with absolutely no aid, thereby stripping him of any prestige gained had he been a guest of the government in Manila. The affair resolved itself in an unspectacular manner in May 1916 with the death of Wajih Gilani. The *Sheikh-ul-Islam* fell ill while in Washington and was sent to the Hygeia Hospital and Sanitorium in Richmond, Virginia, where he died May 5<sup>th</sup>. Writing two years later, Frank W. Carpenter called Gilani's death "timely" in that it eliminated him as a threat to public order in Mindanao and Sulu.<sup>153</sup>

Muslim missionary figures from the Ottoman Empire and the Greater Middle East were a reoccurring issue throughout the colonial period. As with Gilani, some Americans feared their influence would turn the Moros away from the American secular model and towards religious fanaticism, while others sought to direct them towards colonial ends. William Kobbé, military chief of Mindanao and Sulu prior to the formation of the Moro Province, wrote to Najeeb Saleeby asking for information on Islam. Saleeby responded by giving him a breakdown of temporal and spiritual authority in the Ottoman world, as well as a primer on Moro usage of the Arabic alphabet. He told Kobbé that Moros were generally unschooled in Islam, but that he knew of four Afghan *hadjis* who acted as religious teachers in the region.<sup>154</sup> Saleeby provided officials with information that situated the Moros within a global Islamic context for over three decades. In 1935, for example, he forwarded Vice

---

<sup>152</sup> Letter from T.L. Hurt to Francis Burton Harrison, February 1916, 2509, Box 1025. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>153</sup> Letter from Frank Carpenter to Carl Moore, 1 June 1918, 2509, Box 1025. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

<sup>154</sup> Letter from Najeeb Saleeby to William Kobbé, 11 August 1901, Box 3, Folder 7. William Kobbé Papers, USAHEC.

Governor J.R. Hayden a translation and interpretation of an encyclical letter drafted by Sultan Jamalul Kiram II in the wake of the 1915 Carpenter Agreement. Saleeby's commentary on the text viewed the Sultan's proclamations within the tradition of "Malayan sovereigns" who all modified "the customary laws so as to conform as much as practicable to Mohammedan principles and articles of faith." He also linked questions of leadership and succession in Sulu to those that were taking place within the crumbling Ottoman Empire, and to larger traditions within Sunni Islam.<sup>155</sup>

Charles Cameron, longtime Superintendent of Schools for the Moro Province, sought to harness foreign religious leaders to influence the Moros. In 1906, he sent Sheikh Mustafa Ahmed, an Arab religious teacher in Zamboanga, on a recruitment trip throughout the Sulu Archipelago. Cameron hoped to establish a 'Datu School,' where the sons of prominent Moros could be taught Middle Eastern iterations of Islam and Western notions of secular government. This, he believed, would create a class of future Moro leaders who were religious yet respectful of governmental authority.<sup>156</sup> In the prospectus for the school, Cameron wrote that Ahmed would "have direct charge of the students and great care will be taken to teach them to respect their religion and live in accordance with its mandates...students will be taught to read and write their own dialect, to read the Qur'an and translate it into their own language. American teachers will instruct them in English, the American laws relating to government, and in all subjects which will enable these young men to assist their people."<sup>157</sup>

More often, however, there was suspicion of foreign Muslims as potential fifth columnists. Leonard Wood certainly thought this way, and blamed sustained resistance to American rule during his tenure on "the Arab priest," whom he called a "disturbing element."

---

<sup>155</sup> Document on 1915 Agreement Between Sultan and U.S. Government, 17 June 1935, Box 30, Folder 2. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>156</sup> Letter from Charles Cameron to David Barrows, 24 September 1909, Box 320. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>157</sup> Prospectus of the Proposed Datu School to be Established in Zamboanga, 24 September 1906, Box 320. John Pershing Papers, LOC-MD.

Wood also pointed his finger at returning *hadjis* radicalized by their travels.<sup>158</sup> John Pershing was even more strident in his condemnations of outside Islamic influences. According to him, “Arabian and other Mohammedan teachers” plagued the Moro Province and their presence not only hindered governmental initiatives but also gave “occult inspiration” to the “opposition we have met among the Moros during the last ten years.” That some, like Cameron or Finley, had suggested using foreign Muslims as teachers or guides with the goal of reforming the Moros was “almost beyond belief” to Pershing, who opposed “any plan for the propagation of Mohammedanism through the prostitution of the public schools.”<sup>159</sup>

For religiously inclined empire builders, the question of global Islam was existential and world historical. In a sermon given in Manila in 1912, Charles Brent worried that the United States was treating the ‘Moro Problem’ as a local issue when in reality it was a transnational predicament. Islam itself was a “world problem” and a “plague spot” in Europe, British India, and Southeast Asia. Brent described Islam as a fanatic’s religion, where crazed mystics convinced heathens they were invulnerable to the bullets of European and American guns. Brent believed that the Islamic world was “a unified and sensitive organ” and as an example of this claimed that “a word in Europe to the Turk sets the wild Pathan tribes in Asia aflame.” The Moros suffered the attentions of “Arab priests” who transmitted the worst aspects of Islam. While not prepared to call for the annihilation of these interlopers, Brent was desirous that “Arabian immigration” be forbidden “for the sake of the personal safety of our people.” In this outlook, the Moros were little more than pawns caught between the civilizing tendencies of American culture and the fanaticism of Arabs and Ottoman Turks. Blocking the latter while promoting the former through “hospitals and schools” was the surest path to redemption. At the height of his oration, Brent summoned the memory of British colonial missionary heroes like William Wilberforce, Henry Martyn, and David Livingstone,

---

<sup>158</sup> Wood and Bliss, *Annual Report 1906*, 9.

<sup>159</sup> Pershing, *Annual Report 1913*, 33.

whose “fiery love for slave and Mohammedan and savage” was inspirational and instructional.<sup>160</sup>

Even more fervent in his fantasies of spiritual reform, Frank Laubach believed the colonial state in Mindanao and Sulu represented “the one weak spot in Mohammedanism to be found in the entire world today” and wrote of readying “a new assault on Mohammedanism.” Because the Moros had been disarmed (at least officially), Laubach thought that they presented a unique opportunity for conversion to Christianity. Writing to Frank Carpenter in 1921, he mapped a plan to convert the Tausūg Moros of Sulu, who would then “turn down upon Borneo, Java (with its 30,000,000 of Mohammedans), Sumatra, the Straits settlements and, perhaps India... They will point back to the Philippines in proof of what Christian civilization can do for Mohammedans, and you will have the privilege of beginning the end of the Moslem regime.” Laubach implored Carpenter to help with the global conversion project in messianic terms. “If God ever called a man for a specific work of world significance,” he wrote, “you are that man, and America is that nation.”<sup>161</sup> Although Carpenter never seriously entertained these notions, Laubach’s letter evidenced a view of the Moros as an offensive tool against the global menace of Islam.

## Pervasive Connections

In the 1920s and 1930s, the emergent influence of an ethnic diaspora in the Southern Philippines became a cause for alarm among Filipino politicians and business leaders. Mindanao was by then home to the largest Japanese population in Southeast Asia, the majority of whom lived in Davao Province. The colonial state initially encouraged Japanese migrants to relocate to Mindanao and aid in development. By the end of the 1930s, they dominated the hemp industry.<sup>162</sup> As early as 1916, Filipino nationalist publications bemoaned

---

<sup>160</sup> Sermon by Charles Brent Preached at the American Cathedral in Manila, 22 December 1912, Box 42. BNHF Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>161</sup> Letter from Frank Laubach to Frank Carpenter, 23 September 1921, Box 01. Frank Carpenter Papers, LOC-MD.

<sup>162</sup> Comparatives from census figures show zero Japanese in Davao Province in 1903, 4,920 in 1918, and 17,888 in 1939, see Lydia N. Yu Jose and Patricia Irene Dacudao, “Visible Japanese and Invisible Filipino: Narratives of the Development of Davao, 1900s to 1930s,” *Philippine Studies* 63.1 (2015): 104.

the presence of Japanese plantations and businesses in the South, with one reporting that the Japanese had “materially invaded Moroland” and become “enormously rich” while Filipinos remained destitute.<sup>163</sup> As American planters left the region and Filipino migrants to Mindanao swelled in numbers, the competitive development of the South became rooted in the intra-colonial dynamics of the Philippines as well as the growing assertion of Japanese power in Asia.<sup>164</sup>

An American memorandum from 1930 described the Japanese in Davao in admiring terms, saying they were as “compact in organization as an army. Their field leadership is able and their technical advisors the best procurable.” The same memorandum commented on the relative poverty of the Filipino migrants compared to the Japanese.<sup>165</sup> The two thousand Moros in Davao leveled complaints of land grabbing against the Japanese and Filipinos alike, leading American commentators (not for the first time) to toy with the idea of creating “a special reservation” to protect “the wild man” from “the land-hungry immigrant.” One proponent of this plan compared it to the work that was being done with the Maoris in New Zealand.<sup>166</sup> The question of Japanese control of the hemp trade became colloquially referred to as the ‘Davao Problem.’ Those opposed to Philippine Independence raised the specter of Japanese colonial designs in their arguments for the continued importance of American stewardship.<sup>167</sup> Nationalists used the issue to encourage increased Filipino migration to the region, prosecuted illegal leaseholders, and accelerated the surveying and subdivision of lands in Mindanao.<sup>168</sup> The Japanese government monitored the situation closely, and

---

<sup>163</sup> “The Moros, Too, Are Fechistas,” *Consolidación Nacional*, 5 March 1916.

<sup>164</sup> Of the five thousand American colonists who lived in Davao in the first decade of American rule only around eighty remained by the 1920s, their numbers having been sharply reduced by the Jones Law (which stipulated eventual independence for the Philippines), the First World War, and increased Japanese domination of the plantations, see *Ibid.*, 108.

<sup>165</sup> “Japanese and Filipino Pioneers in Davao,” 23 August 1930, Box 28, Folder 1. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>166</sup> “Non-Christians of Davao,” 3 September 1930, Box 28, Folder 1. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>167</sup> Melencio, *Arguments Against Philippine Independence*, 9.

<sup>168</sup> Juan C. Orendain, “Exploit Lands in Davao to Prevent Japanese Expansion while P.I. Seeks Solution, Assemblyman Suggests,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 25 May 1936.

Japanese naval cruisers visited Zamboanga and Davao on inspection tours.<sup>169</sup> The Second World War and its outcomes resolved the question of Japanese settlement in Mindanao, but the issue, at its height in the 1930s, illustrated the complexity of the social, political, racial, and commercial dynamics at play in the Southern Philippines, and how these dynamics simultaneously drew from and transcended the spatial demarcations of the region, nation, and empire. The ‘Davao Problem’ demonstrated that as American colonial empire receded in the Southern Philippines, other agents from outside of Mindanao and Sulu, whether they were from within the national body or further afield, would compete for influence and power in the region against a backdrop of local collaboration and resistance.<sup>170</sup>

Colonial state and society in the Southern Philippines during the period under discussion was enmeshed in pervasive connections. Ostensibly an example of the colonial remote – the hinterlands of America’s Pacific empire – Mindanao and Sulu were in reality anything but isolated. Linked to Maritime Southeast Asia (and beyond) through a myriad of regional and supraregional networks antedating and postdating Western colonialism, the Southern Philippines was culturally and economically sequestered in imagination only. Americans in the region embraced this heterogeneous landscape, participating in and contributing to reciprocal flows of imperial knowledge production. In the preceding, we encounter instances of Americans interacting officially and unofficially with the British, Dutch, French, Portuguese, Spanish, German, Ottoman, and Japanese empires. A glance at the mailing list for annual reports from the Moro Province provides succinct evidence of these global connections. Among many others, the reports were sent to: Lieutenant General Bindon Blood – commander of British forces in Lahore; Jules Cambon – the French ambassador to Spain; Lord Cromer – former Consular-General of Egypt; Lionel Carden – British minister in Havana; Dutch officials on Java; a variety of European and American academics and journalists; a ‘Mr. Davis’ who represented Standard Oil in Batavia; Colonel

---

<sup>169</sup> “Determined to Have Solution Says Minister,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 15 May 1936. Charles Ivins recounted one such visit, where the Americans in Zamboanga went on board the cruiser to watch demonstrations of *bōjutsu* and *sumo*. Afterwards, Ivins and his companions got drunk on *sake* with the visitors. – “The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga,” Unpublished Memoirs of Charles Ivins, 147, Box 1. Charles Ivins Papers, USAHEC.

<sup>170</sup> A comprehensive breakdown of the Japanese planter years is found in Abinales, *Making Mindanao*, 81-86.

William C. Gorgas of the Panama Canal Commission; Major Wilhelm Von Frihr of the German Imperial Army; and the headmistresses of two girls' schools in Havana.<sup>171</sup>

Through writings and pilgrimages, Moros also looked abroad, often using their religious identity to situate themselves within Muslim histories of power and resistance to foreign incursion. These intersections of the local and the global occurred in a region shaped before, during, and after the American period by the circulation of peoples, religions, and empires through it. The societies of the Southern Philippines and their American rulers operated at a time when systems of imperial power were increasingly connected and interdependent in their culture productions. In these places, individuals – Moro pilgrims, American soldier-administrators, European merchants, Filipino agricultural colonists, Japanese settlers – negotiated their positions in the world between and through colonial empire.

---

<sup>171</sup> Mailing List for Annual Reports of the Governor – Moro Province, 1900s, Box 217, Folder 4. Leonard Wood Papers, LOC-MD.

## Conclusion / “The Ambient Air of Americanism”

The cacophonous variability of the colonial experience in Mindanao and Sulu resists simplification. Throughout this project, I have struggled with the tension between drawing neat conclusions and the urge to forswear the argumentative reductionism required of me by the discipline. The chaos of history expressed through an individual life is difficult enough to capture. Where does that leave the preceding, which spans decades and continents as it attempts to draw conclusions about a cast of characters, religions, languages, and governing bodies repeatedly, and often blindly, intersecting with one another? I fully sympathize with the notion that writing histories brings order to the past, but am uncertain if I agree with it. To conclude with the didacticism and concision expected of me means a rehashing of each section capped by a flailing attempt to draw together their arguments and sub-arguments into a pithily-worded whole. I shall do so, albeit with mild protest. Forgive this selfish authorial aside, which stems from a neurotic resistance to ‘drawing conclusions’ – as though I were a scientist rather than a humanist feigning objectivity. “To be interested in something,” writes Geoff Dyer, “is to be involved in what is essentially a stressful relationship with that thing, to suffer anxiety on its behalf.”<sup>1</sup> I echo the sentiment.

Moving on. There are two seams of argumentation running through the preceding chapters, each related to a historiographical approach to American foreign relations. The first concerns the study of culture. Here, the project contends that during the period between 1899 and 1942 American colonials, in both official and non-official capacities, carried out a project of cultural reconfiguration in the Muslim South. To achieve this, they first essentialized ‘the Moro’ by placing ‘him’ in an evolutionary continuum mapping human progress and blurring the history of the United States and the Philippines together. They then implemented a series of contemporaneous programs designed to transform Muslim societies in Mindanao and Sulu. I have grouped these programs under the banner of ‘civilizational imperatives.’ When these

---

<sup>1</sup> Geoff Dyer, *Out of Sheer Rage: Wrestling with D.H. Lawrence* (London: Little, Brown, and Company, 1997), 205.



imperatives were resisted or rejected by Muslim populations, armed representatives of the colonial state used violence as a means of correction, resulting in numerous massacres. The American public learned of the evolution of their Muslim wards through human exhibits, visits by Moro elites, and popular entertainments.

The second seam is linked to transnational interpretations of modern history, although for our purposes the term ‘transcolonial’ is most accurate. I argue that the American project in the Islamic Philippines can only be properly understood if one places it within the global colonial culture of the early twentieth-century. Each chapter contains instances of Americans consciously and unconsciously mimicking or adapting European colonial practices. Beyond this, the final chapter demonstrates how the Southern Philippines as a whole was shaped by relationships with the ‘outside world.’ These exchanges force us to reconsider the notion of the colonial remote as disconnected, and illustrate how even peripheral spaces drew from and contributed to global flows of people and information. Only by conceptualizing the Muslim South beyond its relationships with Washington and Manila do we gain a fuller appreciation of the colonial experience there.

This project closes with two brief illustrative tales about the aftermaths of empire, a consideration of the final years of U.S. colonialism in the Islamic Philippines, and a small personal reflection.

## Two Scenes

### *i.) A Death in Cotabato, 1937-1939*

James Fugate, the last American provincial governor in the Muslim South, became a private citizen in 1936. Uninterested in returning to the United States after decades in the Philippines, the retired colonial official settled in the hills of Upi, Cotabato, where he supervised the grounds of a small Episcopal mission. Fugate’s life was one of solitude, and in correspondence with his friend, the Honolulu-based engineer H.F. Cameron, he admitted some loneliness. Despite this, Fugate thought Upi was the “most attractive place in the islands...outside of Baguio” and claimed his health was the best it had been in years. In ambling letters, Fugate mulled over Cameron’s offer to run a plantation in Davao, gave

character assessments of various ex-colonials still living in the Philippines, and expressed lingering resentment about Bishop Brent's school at Indanan. He bitterly related to Cameron that he had received information that the school was "in a low condition" and in "poor standing with the Moro people generally." Fugate blamed this on MEF President Curtis J. Mar, who he maintained only wanted "the racket of raising money to continue, irrespective of what goes on at Indanan or the nature of school conducted."<sup>2</sup>

In another letter to Cameron from November 1937, Fugate complained of conservationists who "lamented the cutting of any tree as a tragedy" and lumped his former employers, Charles Brent and Caroline Spencer, into this category. With a surfeit of time alone, his letters digressed into rants on the "parlor Bolsheviks" and "anti-imperialists of Massachusetts" who lived off ancestral fortunes built upon exploitation. "So it goes and continues," he fumed. "One generation slaves, gets its money by any means whatsoever its ingenuity can devise for its progeny to make asses of themselves."<sup>3</sup> The following year, Fugate wrote Cameron in a more contemplative mood and spoke of the passing of American "Old Timers" in the Philippines. "Eighteen nine eight was quite some time ago," he ruminated. Conjuring familiar notions of tropical breakdown, Fugate reflected that some Americans in the Philippines "seemed to determinedly try to kill themselves – some by labor, some by dissipations – drink, food, exposures Etc. Etc. Etc." He closed the letter with the spectral image of the last colonials, who still existed "in remote places where once in a while one can run [into] them."<sup>4</sup> Reliably maudlin in his writings, we can reasonably assume Fugate saw himself as a leftover from a vanishing era.

James Fugate was murdered in mid-December 1938 a short distance away from the mission where he worked. Death came from a *kris* blow that nearly severed his head. Leo G. McAfee, the mission clergyman, sent a brief telegram to Manila reading "Governor Fugate

---

<sup>2</sup> Letter from James Fugate to H.F. Cameron, 1 November 1937, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, 1937-1939, BHL. Fugate's opinion of American school superintendent Edward Kuder was low: "He is a kind of human freak, I learned too late and all to my sorry and disgust." – Letter from James Fugate to H.F. Cameron, 17 November 1937, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>3</sup> Letter from James Fugate to H.F. Cameron, 17 November 1937, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>4</sup> Letter from James Fugate to H.F. Cameron, October 1938, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

murdered Wednesday night. No clues.”<sup>5</sup> In Manila, President Manuel Quezon expressed shock at the “act of savagery” and praised Fugate as “one of those Americans who have written their names in the history of the American noble work in the Philippines.”<sup>6</sup> The Manila papers immediately suspected Moro treachery in the crime, with the *Daily Bulletin* suggesting it probable that “one of his old political enemies finally accomplished his vow since it is said Moros ‘never forget.’”<sup>7</sup> H.F. Cameron relayed developments in the investigation and condolences from other Americans to Fugate’s brother Isaac in Louisville, Kentucky. The initial belief that Fugate’s murder “originated in Jolo” among Muslim political enemies caused Remsen Ogilby, head of Trinity College in Connecticut and acquaintance of Fugate, to express a sense of colonial betrayal. “It would be tragic to think that he may [have] finally [been] killed by a Moro, since he was in many ways as good a friend as this strange people ever had.”<sup>8</sup>

Both the local Philippine Constabulary and investigators from Manila followed leads on the murder. The early detention of a Maguindanao Moro with bloodstains on his pants proved groundless, and the suspected political motive also bore no fruit.<sup>9</sup> In the meantime, Isaac Fugate received reminiscences from those who had served with “Jim” during his nearly four decades in the Philippines. Some evinced a deep bitterness. Greville Haslam, an Episcopal teacher who met Fugate at the Brent School in Baguio, thought it “a travesty that a man who put in forty years of martyrdom for what Mr. Taft called ‘our little brown brothers’ to have finally been murdered by them.”<sup>10</sup> H.F. Cameron likewise called Fugate a “martyr.”<sup>11</sup> The reasons for the murder of James Fugate, revealed through investigation some months after his death, were petty. No assassin travelled from Jolo to settle old scores on behalf of some aggrieved Tausūg aristocrat. In fact, neither the Moros nor Fugate’s colonial service

---

<sup>5</sup> “Fugate Murdered in Moro Province,” *New York Times*, 16 December 1938, 14.

<sup>6</sup> Carlos F. Nivera, “Dragnet Out for Moros in Fugate Death,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 17 December 1938.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid.

<sup>8</sup> Letter from H.F. Cameron to Isaac Fugate, 6 February 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>9</sup> Letter from Frank Mosher to Theo L. Hall, 17 February 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>10</sup> Letter from Greville Haslam to Isaac Fugate, 15 June 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>11</sup> Letter from H.F. Cameron to Isaac Fugate, 14 April 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

figured into the story at all. His murder was the result of a soured relationship with three local men. One was a Christian Filipino clerk at the mission whom Fugate forced to do increased manual labour, another a Lumad with unpaid debts to the church, and the third was the clerk's father-in-law, who clashed with Fugate over a botched pig castration.<sup>12</sup> The men stopped Fugate on the trail behind the church property, ostensibly to talk, and when he bent over to retrieve a dropped item the clerk mortally wounded him with a *kris*.<sup>13</sup>

The old colonial was buried a hundred yards behind the church after a brief ceremony. There was no headstone. Leo McAfee forwarded a request to Senator Alben W. Barkley, representative from Kentucky, that Fugate's body remain in Cotabato "as a place of pilgrimage for the people he loved."<sup>14</sup> Although Fugate's family was informed that his "grave was looked upon by the people as a sort of shrine" it is unlikely that it was. The teacher and official spent many years on Siquijor and Jolo, but not in Cotabato. His friend, the Constabulary officer Alejandro Suarez, thought the idea of burying him in Upi was "nonsense."<sup>15</sup> Writing to Isaac Fugate after the apprehension of the killers, H.F. Cameron used language that essentialized Malay characteristics. Malays, he declared, had "a very small brain capacity for seeing the right or wrong" of a situation, and when they could not understand an issue got "that small brain into a fever heat."<sup>16</sup> Racial reductionism and native irrationality, it seemed, explained the murder.

In his final letter on the matter, Cameron wrote that, alongside Hugh Scott, Fugate had been one of "the only big men that ever worked in Sulu Province." Following the lead of dozens before him, he combined the story of the reconstruction of the Moros with that of the American frontier. Fugate was atoning for the mistakes made in the previous century as the

---

<sup>12</sup> Letter from Alejandro Suarez to H.F. Cameron, 20 May 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>13</sup> Clipping from *Manila Tribune* attached to letter, 14 April 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>14</sup> Letter from Howard Eager to Alben W. Barkley, 28 December 1938, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>15</sup> Letter from E.E. Wing to Isaac Fugate, 16 February 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL; Letter from Alejandro Suarez to H.F. Cameron, 20 May 1939, Folder 1. James Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>16</sup> Letter from H.F. Cameron to Isaac Fugate, 9 May 1939, Folder 1. Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

republic aggressively expanded. Instead of being an agent of a transformative order in Sulu, he was a bulwark against an outside threat: Christian Filipinos. Fugate's "uplifting ideals," Cameron believed, had saved the Moros "from being murdered outright by the armed Filipinos as we in the United States killed off the Indians with our military in the West."<sup>17</sup> In this convenient vision, the violence of the American colonial state during the early decades of the occupation vanished, and those who remained, like Fugate, became protectors against the rapaciousness of a new order.

*ii.) Philippine Valhalla, 1956*

Two decades later and on the other side of the Pacific, William Cameron Forbes and Edward Bowditch considered James Fugate for inclusion on their list of "The Brethren," a group of fifty men who shaped the colonial enterprise in the Philippines between 1898 and 1942. "He was a thin undersized individual," Forbes wrote in his brief biography of Fugate, "with the heart of a lion, the spirit of a missionary, and the understanding of a father."<sup>18</sup> Forbes had previously memorialized the slain official in a December 1939 speech, where he incorrectly claimed a "fanatical Moro" had murdered Fugate and called him "one of the many martyrs to the great cause of pacification and betterment" of the Muslims.<sup>19</sup> Alongside Fugate in the Brethren were other familiar characters, including Leonard Wood, J. Franklin Bell, Frank McCoy, George Langhorne, Frank Parker, Charles Brent, John R. White, Ole Waloe, Dean Worcester, Morgan Shuster, Frank W. Carpenter, and Bowditch himself. If all went to plan, they would be valorized in a book charting the history of the American Philippines.

In 1956, Forbes lived in an apartment at the luxury Hotel Vendome in Boston's Back Bay neighbourhood. Eighty-six years old, the former proconsul was increasingly preoccupied

---

<sup>17</sup> Letter from H.F. Cameron to Isaac Fugate, 14 June 1939, Folder 1. Fugate Correspondence, BHL.

<sup>18</sup> Research notes for *The Brethren*, 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>19</sup> "Proceedings of the Memorial Anniversary Dinner Held Under the Auspices of the National Committee for the Moro School, Jolo, Philippine Islands and the Bishop Brent International Memorial Committee," 17 December 1939, 28011, Box 1277. General Classified Files 1898-1945 (1914-1945 Segment), RG 350.3, NA-CP.

with preserving the legacy of those who served in the Philippines. Six years prior, Forbes had commissioned a book by Arthur S. Pier, *American Apostles to the Philippines*. Public response was lukewarm. According to Forbes and Pier, “The Apostles” were a group of twelve men, a number of whom were important to the recent history of the Muslim South: Leonard Wood, John Pershing, Charles Brent, Frank Carpenter, and Dean Worcester. Pier echoed Forbes in tone and ideological disposition. Those who once criticized the American colonial venture had since been proven wrong. “No history is free from blots,” the epilogue began. “In retrospect the page recording our adventure in the Philippines seems white and shining.”<sup>20</sup> In the pages of *Apostles*, American officials performed heroic civilizing feats against resistance from uncomprehending natives and naysaying anti-imperialists back home. Predictably, Pier and Forbes portrayed the acquisition of empire in passive terms. Creating the Philippine nation-state was an unexpected duty thrust upon the men who peopled the book, and their excellence stood in stark contrast to what came before and after.<sup>21</sup>

Not satisfied with the impact of Pier’s work or his own book, *The Philippine Islands*, Forbes corresponded with Bowditch and transcolonial sanitation specialist Victor Heiser about the new project.<sup>22</sup> Bowditch had served as Forbes’ assistant and later as the Vice Governor of the Moro Province. A Harvard man like his mentor, Bowditch, then living in California, was responsible for compiling material and modifying plans based on the increasingly ornery demands of his aging collaborator. In one letter, Forbes complained that Bowditch was merely recording “interesting and amusing anecdotes” and including “the black shading and the reverse side of the medal.” The former governor general sought something transcendent and mythical: a “Valhalla” or “hall of fame” for American colonial legends.<sup>23</sup> The Brethren, conceived as an expanded version of the Apostles, were the team

---

<sup>20</sup> Arthur S. Pier, *American Apostles in the Philippines* (Boston: The Beacon Press, 1950), 152.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., xi-xxi.

<sup>22</sup> William Cameron Forbes, *The Philippine Islands* (New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1928). The revised edition of the book was published by Harvard University Press in 1945.

<sup>23</sup> Letter from W. Cameron Forbes to Edward Bowditch, 11 April 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

who selflessly brought the Philippine nation into existence and its inhabitants into the modern world.<sup>24</sup>

Beyond paying tribute to the Brethren, Forbes intended the work to be a sustained exercise in colonial comparison. The book was “to start off with analysis of the objectives in past colonial administrations, as for example: the spread of religion, acquisition of territory, acquisition of peoples; acquisition of materials such as coal, iron, etc.; and the acquisition of strategic points, such as Gibraltar.”<sup>25</sup> Forbes and Bowditch compiled a short essay tracking Western expansion from early Spanish and Portuguese forays all the way up to the American acquisition of the Philippines, placing the latter within a unified global history of colonial empire. Cataloguing European objectives, climactic conditions, warfare, and commercial motives, the two men finally arrived at “the appearance of the United States on the stage.” This development, coinciding with the “yeasty desire for independence and freedom from white domination” among colonized peoples, marked a paradigm shift in the rule of empires. “For the first time, the future and well being of the native population, rather than the interests of the conqueror, are the prime consideration,” they wrote. This paternal model for trusteeship and decolonization, the two believed, was exceptional. In their retelling, Forbes and Bowditch avoided discussions of state violence or debates over Philippine independence, instead portraying the American period as an unbroken march towards freedom that inspired the rest of the globe.<sup>26</sup>

The Brethren and their achievements in the Philippines was intended to comprise the bulk of the narrative. Here the penchant for antiquity and myth took over. The group of fifty constituted a “Philippine Valhalla.” Its “heroes,” all Americans or Americanized Europeans, lived their stories in a “Philippine saga.” These men “wrote a new page in colonial history,”

---

<sup>24</sup> Letter from W. Cameron Forbes to Edward Bowditch, 27 April 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>25</sup> Memorandum by W. Cameron Forbes on Book Structure, 28 June 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>26</sup> Essay on the History of Colonial Empire, 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

according to Forbes and Bowditch.<sup>27</sup> Inexperienced in colonial rule, challenged by climate and disease, and imperiled by aggressive natives, these “crusaders” eventually “won even the most hostile elements over to the cause of civilization.” The authors claimed the Americans inspired European colonial administrations in Southeast Asia, and convinced the King of Siam to establish medical schools.<sup>28</sup>

Bowditch was at his most grandiose in a letter sent to Forbes and Heiser about female contributions to the Philippine Valhalla:

Should there be ladies in Valhalla? I suppose not for Valhalla was limited to heroes fallen in battle, brought to be the warriors of Odin by the Valkyries who hovered over the fields of battle mounted on winged horses. The fact that they rode winged steeds gives us authority to let the polo players and the grooms into the sacred halls. Yet there were the Rhine Maidens, the Norns, and the wives of the Gods must have eaten somewhere. I prefer the Greek version of a Mount Olympus, where there were many maidens and heroines, the Muses, and all the rest. A very pleasant company.<sup>29</sup>

Waxing poetic and borrowing freely from antique spiritual realms, Bowditch spoke of the wives of Leonard Wood and John Pershing, both of whom lived with their husbands in the Moro Province. He singled out for special mention Caroline Spencer, the Rhode Island socialite who, alongside Charles Brent, established the agricultural school on Jolo. Forsaking “the delights of Newport” to serve on “that beautiful but volatile isle,” Bowditch thought Spencer “a heroine” and nominated her “as a candidate for Valhalla.”<sup>30</sup>

---

<sup>27</sup> Memorandum by W. Cameron Forbes, 28 June 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>28</sup> “Genesis of the Philippine Valhalla,” 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>29</sup> Letter from Edward Bowditch to W. Cameron Forbes and Victor Heiser, 2 November 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid.



In his early seventies, Bowditch was the youngest of the three men. Despite their energies, the sequel to *American Apostles in the Philippines* was never completed. Wealthy and socially connected, W. Cameron Forbes was the main force behind the project. His death in 1959 effectively ended it. Despite this, the drafts and correspondence relating to the planned book show the last surviving colonial officials preoccupied with shaping public memory of America's colonial legacy. Crucially, Forbes and his collaborators – the very men who helped design the Philippine state – openly referred to American actions as “colonial activity.”<sup>31</sup> They believed the methods employed in Manila and Zamboanga were a corrective to the imperfect strategies of the Europeans; that the United States had mastered colonialism and thereby eradicated it; that their civilizational imperatives were exceptional in modern history. Far from expressing a sense of imperial denial, they wanted their fellow citizens to recall the colonial experiment as a source of pride.

## Of Lost Time<sup>32</sup>

“As I look about the streets of Zamboanga, I realize that we Americans have made a great many mistakes in the Philippines,” Vic Hurley wrote in his memoirs. “We do not know how to colonize a brown people. We have attempted to implant an Occidental civilization in the lives of a race of brown Malays. The experiment was bound to fail...We went paternalistic in a big way.”<sup>33</sup> Hurley's cynicism darkly juxtaposes the triumphant mythmaking of W. Cameron Forbes. The irony is that the same race-thinking motivated both. For Forbes, the annexation and reconfiguration of the islands was an unmitigated victory and proof that a *distinct* form of American colonialism could conquer Asiatic civilizational torpor. For Hurley, transmitting “Occidental civilization” to “brown Malays” was impossible. He believed Americans lacked the European appreciation of innate racial characteristics. Forbes and Hurley represented polarities of thought on the civilizing mission, even though their racial assumptions were broadly compatible.

---

<sup>31</sup> Memorandum by W. Cameron Forbes, 28 June 1956, Box 1. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>32</sup> Apologies to Proust.

<sup>33</sup> Hurley, *Southeast of Zamboanga*, 30.

Most commentators fell somewhere between Forbes (success) and Hurley (failure), yet there was hardly a consensus opinion on whether or not the so-called ‘Moro Problem’ – the transformation and integration of Muslim subjects into the Philippines – was waning at the end of the American era. A succession of supposed ‘turning points,’ including disarmament and the political normalization of Muslim majority provinces, failed to resolve tensions. In the late 1930s, violent flare-ups saw the Philippine Army deployed against Maranao *cottas*. Military planes bombed Maranao communities and Filipino soldiers were given shoot to kill directives.<sup>34</sup> Republican critics of Filipinization and the establishment of the Commonwealth positioned themselves as protectors of the Muslims. The United States, they claimed, now had a duty to safeguard their former wards against the predations of Christian Filipino nationalists. In a strange inversion, the fate of the Moros was tied to the threat they faced from a colonial incursion within their own state, and *also* the threat they posed to an independent Philippines. To illustrate the impossibility of Christian-Muslim cooperation, American skeptics emphasized the incompatibility of the two groups, often resorting to familiar tropes about Moro “fanaticism and cruelty.”<sup>35</sup> Filipinos were incapable of governing Muslims, the argument went, and Muslims were incapable of governing themselves. If independence for the Christians was inevitable, then Western Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago should be partitioned and continue as an American tutelary regime.<sup>36</sup>

Governor General Frank Murphy countered critics by adopting the progressive language of the Roosevelt Administration in Washington. There would be a “new deal” for the Moros, with expanded funding for a range of government programs aimed at integration. In 1934, Murphy toured the South promising the “complete recognition of Moro religious and other rights” as well as “more and better schools, roads and improvement of economic

---

<sup>34</sup> “Rush More Soldiers to Lanao Area,” *Manila Tribune*, 8 April 1937; “Six Outlaws Die as Troops Attack Cotta,” *Manila Tribune*, 30 April 1907; “Planes Join Moro Battle,” *New York Times*, 3 December 1937, 18.

<sup>35</sup> Carl N. Taylor, “Powder Keg in Mindanao,” *Today Magazine*, 7 March 1936.

<sup>36</sup> Sydney Glazer, “The Moros as a Political Factor in Philippine Independence,” *Pacific Affairs* 14.1 (1941): 78-79.

conditions.”<sup>37</sup> For their part, Filipino politicians claimed problems in the South stemmed from American colonialism, and that without it enmity between Christians and Muslims would dissolve. Nacionalista Party grandee Sergio Osmeña wrote that Moros were concerned that Christian Filipinos were in league with the Americans. Once dissuaded of this erroneous notion, Osmeña believed, Muslims could assimilate without friction.<sup>38</sup> Writing in the 1920s for an American audience, Filipino journalist José Melencio took a different approach, contending that the non-Christians, “reared exclusively under the ambient air of Americanism,” were “immunized to the medieval” and “destined to be a vigorous element in the ensuing processes of Philippine nationalism.”<sup>39</sup>

Despite such reassurances, in private correspondence some Filipino leaders were skeptical. A 1933 report from Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes chief Teopisto Guingona to the Department of the Interior encapsulates these reservations:

How long will these good conditions last? How long will this peace be enjoyed? Nobody can tell. As long as the majority of the Mohammedan people live under the influence of their beliefs and traditions which justify crime and glorify the criminal; as long as they do not give to human life its true value, do not respect the rights of others to property, and have a misguided, or at least different, conception of human justice; as long as they ignore the law or attempt to ignore it in order to avoid its observance; as long as the Mohammedan people feel in their veins the vigour with which their fearless ancestors bravely fought to defend what they thought, rightly or wrongly, was their independence from all outside interference, and are zealous as they have been for centuries to preserve their own moral and physical characteristics; as long as the Mohammedan people, although

---

<sup>37</sup> Robert Aura Smith, “Murphy Returns to Manila Determined to Place Fresh Emphasis Upon Problems Discovered During Trip of Inspection through Southern Provinces,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 12 March 1934; E.E. Bomar, “Filipino-Moro Amity Encouraged by Gov. Murphy,” *Manila Daily Bulletin*, 19 June 1934; Brands, *Bound to Empire*, 163.

<sup>38</sup> Memorandum from Sergio Osmeña of the Nationalist Party, Box 2. Edward Bowditch Papers, DRMC.

<sup>39</sup> Melencio, *Arguments Against Philippine Independence*, 11.

already changed to a certain extent, still consider themselves superior, different and distinct from the Christians, nobody can state the time in which our Moroland could enjoy complete peace and tranquility. There, no bloody tragedy could be considered the last. We have to train, educate and develop its inhabitants, moulding them to the type which we want, in order to amalgamate them later with the rest of the nation. But for this gigantic task, one decade is not enough, neither two, but the whole cycle of a generation. A nation cannot be built overnight.<sup>40</sup>

Emphasizing the criminal nature of the Moro and the need for civilizational reconfiguration, Guingona wrote like an American colonial official at the turn of the twentieth-century. In the North, 'Moroland' existed as a prehistoric space of myth and danger. Stories like Isidro L. Retizos' "Maguindanao Pearls" emphasized difference to children.<sup>41</sup> Even as Filipino politicians in Manila stressed cultural compatibility, the notion of the Muslim South as a zone of darkness persisted in the national imaginary.

Moro groups, caught between currents of Filipino nationalism and American colonial revanchism, responded in a variety of ways. Some leaders, like Sultan Aragon of Momungan, wrote directly to President Franklin D. Roosevelt to "beg" the Americans to stay. "I wish to inform your honor," Aragon wrote, "that ever since I heard that the 'independence' is to be offered in the Philippines through the hands of the Christian Filipino Leaders, I heartily opposed it, and do not like independence, for we Moros, the so-called non-Christians, never agreed with the Filipinos."<sup>42</sup> On Jolo, local datus petitioned against James Fugate's impending dismissal as governor, warning of "bloodshed again in Sulu" were a Filipino appointed in his place.<sup>43</sup> The death of Sultan Jamalul Kiram II in 1936 and subsequent power struggle among potential successors allowed the Philippine Government to discontinue

---

<sup>40</sup> Report from Teopisto Guingona to Teofilo Sison, 27 September 1933, Box 30, Folder 3. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>41</sup> Isidro L. Retizos, "Maguindanao Pearls," *Philippine Magazine* 28.4 (1931): 179-189.

<sup>42</sup> Letter from Sultan Momungan to Franklin Roosevelt, 26 May 1934, Box 28, Folder 11. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>43</sup> Petition from Jolo Datus to Frank Murphy, Box 29, Folder 32. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

recognition of the Sulu Sultanate. Datu Piang's passing in 1933 similarly reduced local power in Cotabato. For some Moros, especially those from well-connected families, the transitions of the 1930s were a period of opportunity. These were years that young educated Moros (mainly of Tausūg and Maguindanao extraction) began identifying as 'Muslim Filipinos' and used religious difference to stake a place within the multiethnic state.<sup>44</sup> Representative Ibra Gundarangin, a Maranao from Lanao, pressed for greater Moro presence in government organizations. Gundarangin specifically requested more Muslims in the Philippine Constabulary. "The Moro officer who speaks the dialect, knows the customs, traditions and even idiosyncrasies," he wrote to J.R. Hayden in 1934, "of the people among whom he works is preeminently more qualified than Christian officers who are sometimes ignorant of the customs and traditions of the Moros."<sup>45</sup>

During the Second World War, many Muslims fought alongside Americans and Filipinos in guerilla operations against the Japanese occupation. When U.S. forces returned to the Sulu Archipelago in May 1945, they were welcomed by the datus of Jolo, who promised "the assistance of the Sultan's subjects."<sup>46</sup> A year later, in June 1946, the United States relinquished all sovereignty over the Philippines. After independence, Moro groups attempted to integrate into the young nation and found their access to power limited. A national minority on the fringes of the state, they existed outside of the semiotically linked cultures of the Christian Filipinos. The marginality of Muslims and Lumads was exacerbated even in the Southern Philippines itself as Christian settlers flooded into Mindanao. Newspapers reported familiar tales of government encounters with Moro 'outlaws.' In December 1949, rebels on Jolo killed fifteen Constabulary officers in attacks protesting recent election results. The Philippine Air Force responded by killing at least thirty Tausūg holdouts on Jolo, dropping

---

<sup>44</sup> Abinales, *Making Mindanao*, 61-65; Ralph Benjamin Thomas, "Muslims but Filipinos: The Integration of Philippine Muslims, 1917-1946" (PhD diss., University of Pennsylvania, 1971), 239-288.

<sup>45</sup> Letter from Ibra Gundarangin to J.R. Hayden, 10 April 1934, Box 28, Folder 24. J.R. Hayden Papers, BHL.

<sup>46</sup> Richard C. Bergholz, "Sultan of Sulu, Who Surrendered Moros to Pershing in 1913, Greets Americans Loyally this Time – And Gets Another Gun," *Washington Post*, 20 May 1945, B3. This article incorrectly identifies the Sultan of Sulu as Janail Abirin.

“flaming drums of gasoline” on them.<sup>47</sup> Despite such confrontations, in the first two decades after independence Muslim elites demonstrated a willingness to work with central authorities, as well as orient their people towards national citizenship. Political events in the late 1960s and early 1970s disrupted this process, particularly the 1968 massacre of Tausūg and Samal military recruits on the island of Corregidor.<sup>48</sup> The conflict continues at present.

In the United States, the afterlives of the colonial state had scant resonance. Citizens of a global superpower post-1945, Americans reoriented themselves towards questions of ideology and international order at the dawn of the Cold War. The newly independent Philippines became an ally in the fight against Asian communism. Contrary to the wishes of W. Cameron Forbes, the half-century transformation of the islands quickly receded as a topic of interest in newspapers and periodicals. There was no “Philippine Valhalla” in the American public imagination. On the contrary, the violent crescendo of racial logics during the Second World War and the rise of nationalist movements in the Global South afterwards made Western colonial projects deeply unfashionable. Oblivious to these shifts, Forbes and his ilk assembled commemoratives to a period Americans no longer cared to remember.

If the transformation of the Philippines swiftly became a footnote in American history, what occurred in Mindanao and Sulu was an addendum to that footnote. Depictions of the Moros remained consistent. A *New York Times* account from 1950 described the “primitive” Maranao Moros greeting Ambassador to the Philippines Myron Cowen with “shrill yells” and “war dances.” The paper reported Cowen’s visit to Dansalan as “the first journey through this wild, remote area ever attempted by an American chief of mission.”<sup>49</sup> Despite a half-century of colonial expansion and development, descriptions of the Mindanao interior remained remarkably similar to those penned in the first years of the twentieth-century. The war provided a convenient demarcation for Americans. No longer was the

---

<sup>47</sup> “Outlaws Slay 15 Police in Philippines,” *Washington Post*, 16 December 1949, 6; “Philippine Planes Wreck Moro Camp,” *Los Angeles Times*, 26 December 1949, 1.

<sup>48</sup> Rizal G. Buendia, “The State-Moro Armed Conflict in the Philippines: Unresolved National Question or Question of Governance?” *Asian Journal of Political Science* 13.1 (2005): 114.

<sup>49</sup> Tillman Durdin, “Americans Hailed in Visit to Moros,” *New York Times*, 10 June 1950, 4.

Muslim South a crucible for Occidental ingenuity and willpower, as it had been in decades prior. Instead, it was a curious testing ground for a fledging nation-state.

This dissertation is an effort to recenter marginalized and unstoried histories, and recreate the fabric of the colonial relationship between Americans and Muslims in the Southern Philippines. For Moro groups, the extended encounter altered or demolished native leadership structures, remade urban and rural landscapes, reoriented power north towards Manila, and provided harsh lessons about the fate of national minorities. Although Americans quickly forgot their ‘Mohammedan wards’ in the postwar era, during the period of U.S. sovereignty they actively promoted colonial rule in the Southern Philippines. The Moro Province was a prolonged experiment in civilizational transformation and reform. Many of the period’s famed military officials tested their governance skills among peoples and landscapes they understood in relation to the frontiers of the United States. After 1913, American civilian officials in an array of bureaucratic positions simultaneously tutored Christian Filipinos to govern non-Christians *and* viewed themselves as the protectors of minority cultures. The relationship between colonizer and colonized was often fraught, and state violence became normalized. Throughout the four decades under study, an array of journalists, academics, teachers, missionaries, businesspeople, adventurers, and others circulated through the Southern Philippines, recording their impressions and interacting with the natives. Moros visited the United States, both as display objects and independent travellers. Americans produced cultural products about their subjects in the form of novels, films, poems, songs, and radio programs. In Mindanao and Sulu, colonial officials borrowed from European models of rule, Europeans borrowed from the Americans, and the Moros looked to the Islamic world for alternatives to Western dominance. Westerners and non-Westerners alike passed through or settled in Mindanao and Sulu, giving urban areas a hybridic quality.

\*\*

On my office desk is a postcard from the 1904 Louisiana Purchase Exposition in St. Louis. The print quality is low and indicative of its status as tourist kitsch – something for visitors to send their relations in Arkansas or Ohio or Georgia. On the front of the postcard is a

photograph, off-kilter, with the simple caption: “Moro Girl.” The girl in question appears to be a teenager, perhaps fourteen or fifteen but possibly younger. She is pictured from the waist up and wears a simple striped robe and rudimentary headdress. Her hair flows out of the headdress and over her shoulders. In the background are the walls of a nipa-thatched hut, the primary residences of the Samal and Maranao Moros at the Philippine Reservation. None of these details are remarkable. Anthropological portraiture was commonplace during the period, its gaze doubling as scholarly documentation and racialized spectacle. What is striking is the girl’s facial expression. Frowning, she avoids the camera’s gaze. Her look is at once defiant and ineffably sad.

This melancholy photograph captures a brief moment in 1904, yet writing the preceding chapters I glanced at it often as a reminder that beyond theorization and sweeping narrative are an overwhelming number of individual histories. The colonial exchange between Americans and the Muslims of the Southern Philippines was tremendously variable, which is why I avoid imposing any master narrative upon these stories. Doing so would be an act of intellectual dishonesty. In my partial way, I’ve chosen to map the various patterns and connections that drew Americans, Moros, Filipinos, and the rest of the world to one another. Such impulses violently displaced and destroyed human bodies. Some were products of questionable moralism and a sense of civilizational mission. Others were less troubling, as very few stories are mere compendiums of ceaseless coercion. I also kept the postcard of the Moro girl on my desk as an admission of failure. All histories are selective and presumptuous assemblies of vanished peoples. As I collected the stories that comprise this project, I acknowledged the unlikelihood of ever being able to give an account of the girl’s experiences at St. Louis or in Mindanao. Her contribution to the historical record is a single photograph encapsulating the strange and alienating experience of being a human exhibit, an experience lasting mere months in a life that likely spanned many decades. I explored the histories of American rule in Mindanao and Sulu with these shortcomings in mind.









Seventy Philippine Exhibit, World's Fair.

Mero Orl.

## Appendix A / Maps

**All Map Data © 2015: Google, Scripps Institution of Oceanography, National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration, National Geospatial-Intelligence Agency, General Bathymetric Chart of the Oceans, United States Navy**

**Key:**

- i.)  Urban center or regional capital
- ii.)  Settlement
- iii.)  Natural landmark (island, mountain, lake, etc.)
- iv.)  Government or military facility

**Figure I – The Philippines and British North Borneo**



**Figure II – Southern Philippines**



**Figure III – Zamboanga and the Sulu Archipelago**





**Figure IV – Jolo Island**

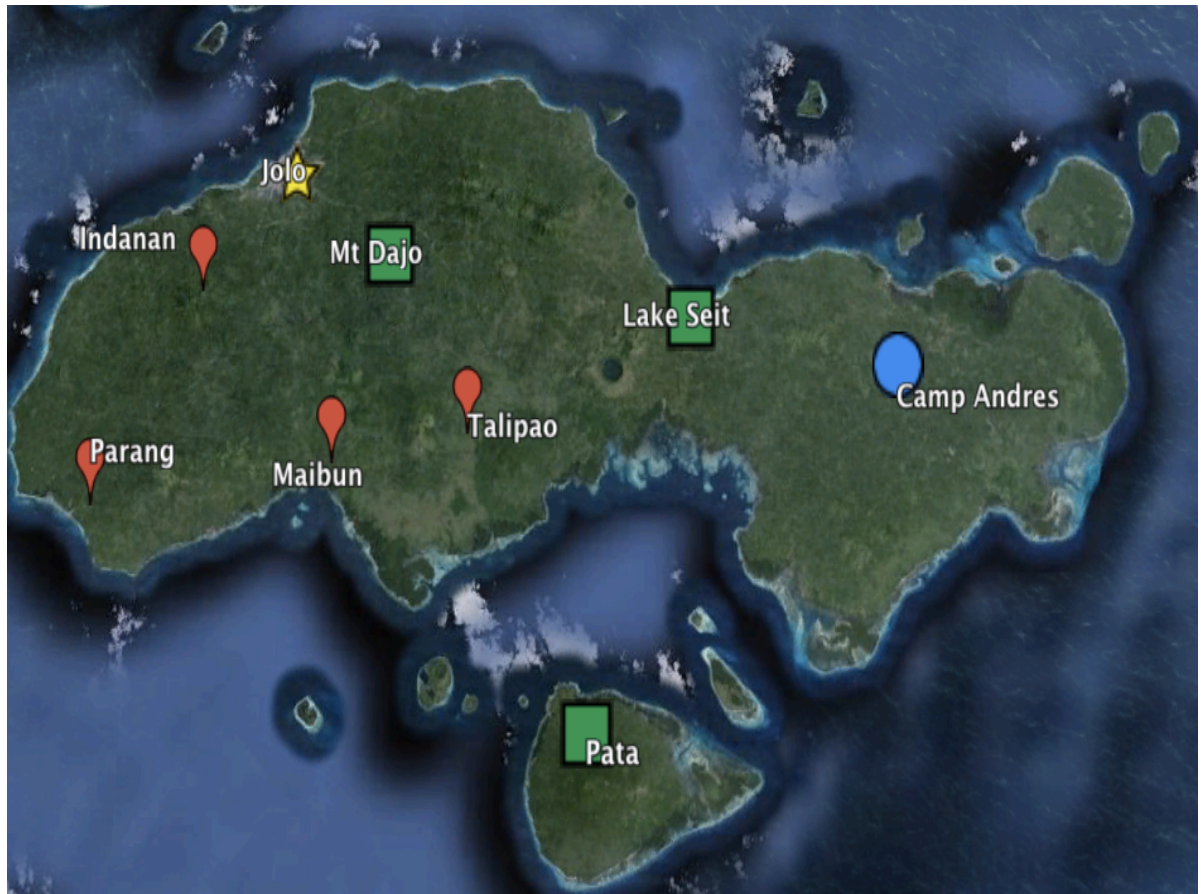


Figure V – Lake Lanao Region



Figure VI – Southwestern Mindanao





## Appendix B / Glossary

***Abaca*** – A commercial crop harvested for its fiber. Also called ‘Manila Hemp.’ Commonly grown on plantations in Mindanao and Sulu.

***Agama Courts*** – Religious courts. The term ‘agama’ means ‘acquisition of knowledge.’ Courts conducted by Moro sultans and religious leaders.

***Agong*** – Two heavy gongs suspended vertically. A common musical instrument in the Southern Philippines.

***Barong*** – A short dagger with a heavy, leaf-shaped blade.

***Bejuco*** – A dense vine sometimes used to make switches.

***Bichara*** – A ceremonial meeting of community leaders

***Bolo*** – A machete-like knife. Often used to remove vegetation.

***Buyo Box*** – An ornamental container for the storing of betel nuts

***Campilan*** – A long Malay sword used on Mindanao. Appears in many Moro epics.

***Carabao*** – Domestic water buffalo. Common throughout the Philippines.

***Cotta*** – A Moro earthworks fortification. Often reinforced with trenches and traps. Common around Lake Lanao and on Jolo during the early years of American occupation.

***Datu*** – Community leader or headman. Common title for local strongmen in the Southern Philippines.

***Deportado*** – A person who has been deported or banished. In the context of Spanish colonialism in the Philippines, the term often referred to prisoners who had been shipped to Mindanao from the islands of the North.

***Hadji* or *Hajji*** – A honorific given to a person who has made the pilgrimage to Mecca

***Ilustrado*** – Hispanicized Christian Filipinos who argued for greater autonomy from Spanish colonial rule. Provided intellectual momentum for Philippine independence movement.

***Juramentado*** – “One who has taken an oath.” Spanish term referring to Moros engaging in suicidal attacks on non-believers. Adopted by the Americans.

***Kris*** – A wavy dagger common throughout Maritime Southeast Asia. Americans in Mindanao and Sulu often collected them.

***Lantaka*** – A small bronze canon used by Moros and other groups in Southeast Asia. Sometimes mounted to a seafaring vessel but often handheld.

***Mestizo*** – A Spanish term for somebody of mixed ethnic ancestry.

***Paliuntud*** – Homemade single-shot rifles used by Filipino and Moro insurgents.

***Pandita*** – A Sanskrit term adopted by Moro groups to refer to a community priest or religious leader. A *pandita* often served as the local teacher as well.

***Panglima*** – A minor noble. Alternately, a commander or military leader.

***Pensionado*** – A student who receives subsidies from the government to study outside of his home district or province.

***Prao*** – A small Malay sailing vessel, usually with a triangular sail and two parallel hulls.

***Sacop*** – A peasant or subordinate.

***Sherif*** – One who claims familial descent from the prophet Muhammad. Occasionally used a designation for a community leader.

***Vinta*** – A dugout canoe, often with a small sail. Used for inter-island trade and transport.



## Bibliography

### Archives

#### Bentley Historical Library, University of Michigan – Ann Arbor, Michigan

Harley Harris Bartlett Papers

John C. Early Papers

James Fugate Correspondence

Carl Eugen Guthe Papers

Joseph Ralston Hayden Papers

Dean C. Worcester Papers

#### Division of Rare and Manuscript Collections, Cornell University – Ithaca, New York

Edward Bowditch Papers

#### Library of Congress, Manuscript Division – Washington, D.C.

Robert Lee Bullard Papers

Frank W. Carpenter Papers

W. Cameron Forbes Papers

Charles W. Hack Papers

Burton Norvell Harrison Family Papers

Hermann Hagedorn Papers

Frank R. McCoy Papers

John McAuley Palmer Papers

John J. Pershing Papers

Records of the Sultanate of the Sulu Archipelago

Hugh Lenox Scott Papers

Leonard Wood Papers

#### Missouri History Museum Library and Research Center – St. Louis, Missouri

Louisiana Purchase Exposition Scrapbooks

#### National Archives – College Park, Maryland

Record Group 350.3 – Entry 5: Bureau of Insular Affairs

#### Special Collections Research Center, Syracuse University – Syracuse, New York

Frank Laubach Collection

#### State Historical Society of Missouri – Columbia, Missouri

American Radio Collection

Charles Monroe Reeves Papers

The Louisiana Purchase Exposition Collection

United States Army Heritage and Education Center – Carlisle, Pennsylvania

John C. Bates Papers  
 Tasker H. Bliss Collection  
 Walter L. Cutter Papers  
 George W. Davis Papers  
 Hugh A. Drum Papers  
 John P. Finley Papers  
 Marvin C. Hepler Papers  
 Howell-Taylor Family Papers  
 Charles F. Ivins Papers  
 William A. Kobbé Papers  
 Sterling Loop Larrabee Papers  
 Charles E. MacDonald Papers  
 Joseph A. Marmon Papers  
 Charles D. Rhodes Papers  
 Matthew F. Steele Papers  
 G. Soulard Turner Papers

University of Iowa Libraries Special Collections Department – Iowa City, Iowa  
Redpath Chautauqua Collection**Newspapers and Pamphlets**

Army and Navy Weekly  
 Atlanta Constitution  
 Binghampton Leader-Chronicle  
 Boise Bulletin  
 Boston Daily Globe  
 Boston Evening Transcript  
 Boxoffice  
 Cass City Chronicle (Michigan)  
 Chicago Daily Tribune  
 Chicago Evening Post  
 Chicago Record-Herald  
 Christian Science Monitor  
 Consolidación National  
 Empire  
 Evening Standard (Ogden City, Utah)  
 Free Pictorial Map of the Philippine Exposition  
 Hartford Courant  
 Indianapolis Journal  
 Jolo Howler  
 Kansas City Star  
 La Opinion Y El Comercio

Los Angeles Times  
 Manchester Guardian  
 Manila Cable-News  
 Manila Daily Bulletin  
 Manila Times  
 Manila Tribune  
 Mindanao Herald  
 New York Evening Post  
 New York Globe  
 New York Herald  
 New York Times  
 Philippines Free Press  
 Philippine Presbyterian  
 Pittsburgh Dispatch  
 St. Louis Republic  
 Sydney Morning Herald  
 The Globe  
 The Independent  
 The Independent (Christian Newspaper)  
 The Lanao Progress  
 The Michigan Alumnus  
 The Saturday Review of Literature  
 The Student Weekly  
 Toledo Times-Bee  
 Twenty-Third Infantry Bolo  
 Twenty-Third Infantry Lantaka  
 Washington Evening Star  
 Washington Herald  
 Washington Post  
 World's Fair Bulletin

### **Published Primary Sources**

Abbott, Edward. *The Battle of the Crater: Letter in the Boston Daily Advertiser, March 20, 1906*. Boston: Anti-imperialist League, 1906.

Ade, George. *Fables in Slang*. Chicago: Herbert Stone & Company, 1899.

--- *The Sultan of Sulu: An Original Satire in Two Acts*. New York: R.H. Russell, 1903.

Aguilar, José Nieto. *Mindanao – Su Historia y Geographia*. Madrid: Imprenta Del Cuerpo Administrativo Del Ejército, 1894.

Baranera, Francisco X. *Compendio de la Historia de Filipinas*. Manila: Establecimiento Tipo-Litografico de M. Perez, 1884.

Baranera, Francisco X., and Alexander Laist. *The Handbook of the Philippine Islands*. Manila: William Partier, 1890.

Barrows, David Prescott. *A Decade of American Government in the Philippines, 1903-1913*. New York: World Book Company, 1914.

--- *Circular of Information Instructions for Volunteer Field Workers – The Museum of Ethnology, Natural History and Commerce*. Manila: The Bureau of Non-Christian Tribes, 1901.

--- “Education and Social Progress in the Philippines.” *Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Science* 30 (1907): 69-82.

Barry, Richard. “The End of Datto Ali.” *Collier’s Weekly*, 9 June 1906.

Bartter, Frances E. *English-Samal Vocabulary*. Zamboanga: The Sulu Press, 1921.

Beard, George M. and A.D. Rockwell. *A Practical Treatise on Nervous Exhaustion (Neurasthenia) its Symptoms, Nature, Sequences, Treatment*. New York: E.B. Treat, 1889.

Benjamin, Anna N. “Our Mohammedan Wards in Sulu.” *Outlook*, 18 November 1899.

Blair, Emma Helen and James Alexander Robertson, editors. *The Philippine Islands 1493-1803, Volume XXVII – 1636-1637*. Cleveland: The Arthur H. Clark Company, 1903.

Bliss, Tasker. *Annual Report – Department of Mindanao*. Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1907.

--- *The Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province – For the Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1907*. Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1907.

--- *The Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province – For the Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1908*. Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1908.

Blumentritt, Ferdinand. *The Philippines: A Summary Account of their Ethnographical, Historical and Political Conditions*. Chicago: Donohue Brothers, 1900.

Brent, Charles Henry. *The Inspiration of Responsibility and Other Papers*. New York and London: Longmans, Green & Company, 1915.

Brownell, Atherton. “Turning Savages Into Citizens.” *Outlook*, January 1911.

--- “What Ideas of American Citizenship May Do for Oriental Peoples: A Moro Experiment.” *Outlook*, January 1905.

Buffum, Katharine G. and Charles Lynch. *Joloano Moro*. Manila: E.C. McCullough & Company, 1914.

- Butterfield, Kenyon. "Toward A Literate Rural World." *Journal of Adult Education* 4.4 (1932): 383-388.
- Cameron, Charles R. *Sulu Writing: An Explanation of the Sulu-Arabic Script as Employed in Writing the Sulu Language of the Southern Philippines*. Zamboanga: The Sulu Press, 1917.
- Carpenter, Frank W. *Report of the Governor of the Department of Mindanao and Sulu (Philippine Islands) 1914*. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1916.
- Circular Letter of Governor Taft and Information and Instructions for the Preparation of the Philippine Exhibit for the Louisiana Purchase Exposition to be Held at St Louis, Mo, 1904*. Manila: Bureau of Public Printing, 1904.
- Clifford, Charles L. *The Real Glory*. London: Heinemann, 1937.
- Cloman, Sydney. *Myself and a Few Moros*. New York: Doubleday, Page & Company, 1923.
- Cole, Mabel Cook. *Philippine Folk Tales*. Chicago: A.C. McClurg & Company, 1916.
- Combés, Francisco. *Historia de Mindanao y Jolo*. Madrid: n.p., 1897.
- Daily Official Program – World's Fair, 25 April 1904*. St. Louis: St. Louis World's Fair Program Company, 1904.
- Davis, George W. *Annual Report of Major General George W. Davis, United States Army, Commanding Division of the Philippines, from October 1, 1902 to July 26, 1903*. Manila: n.p., 1903.
- Dennys, N.B. *A Descriptive Dictionary of British Malaya*. London: London and China Telegraph Office, 1894.
- *The Folk-Lore of China*. London: Trubner & Company, 1876.
- Dwight, Henry O. "Our Mohammedan Wards." *The Forum*, March 1900.
- Editorial, "The Latest Moro Slaughter." *The Nation*, 15 March 1906.
- Eighth Army War Corps Songs*. Manila: Freedom Publishing Company, 1899.
- Elliot, Charles Winslow. *A Vocabulary and Phrase Book of the Lanao Moro Dialect*. Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1913.
- Forbes, William Cameron. *The Philippine Islands*. New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1928.
- Foreman, John. "Spain and the Philippine Islands." *The Contemporary Review* 74 (1898): 20-33.

Finley, John Park. "Race Development by Industrial Means among the Moros and Pagans of the Southern Philippines." *The Journal of Race Development* 3.3 (1913): 343-368.

--- "The Commercial Awakening of the Moro and Pagan." *The North American Review* 197.688 (1913): 325-334.

--- "The Mohammedan Problem in the Philippines." *The Journal of Race Development* 5.4 (1915): 353-363.

Finley, John Park and William Churchill. *The Subanu: Studies of a Sub-Visayan Mountain Folk of Mindanao*. Washington: The Carnegie Institute of Washington, 1913.

Francis, David R. *The Universal Exposition of 1904, Vol. I*. St. Louis: Louisiana Purchase Exposition Company, 1913.

Freer, William B. *The Philippine Experiences of an American Teacher*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1906.

Glazer, Sidney. "The Moros as a Political Factor in Philippine Independence." *Pacific Affairs* 14.1 (1941): 78-90.

Hancock, H. Irving. *Uncle Sam's Boys in the Philippines: or, Following the Flag Against the Moros*. Philadelphia: Henry Altemus Company, 1912.

Harrison, Francis Burton. *The Corner-Stone of Philippine Independence*. New York: The Century Company, 1922.

Hatton, Joseph. *'The New Ceylon': Being a Sketch of British North Borneo, or Sabah*. London: Chapman & Hall Limited, 1881.

Hayden, Joseph Ralston. "What Next for the Moro?" *Foreign Affairs* 6.4 (1928): 633-644.

Hurley, Vic. *Jungle Patrol: The Story of the Philippine Constabulary*. New York: E.P. Dutton & Company, 1938.

--- *Southeast of Zamboanga*. New York: E.P. Dutton & Company, 1935.

--- *The Swish of the Kris: The Story of the Moros*. New York: E.P. Dutton & Company, 1936.

Hoyt, Ralph W. *Annual Report of Colonel Ralph W. Hoyt, 25<sup>th</sup> United States Infantry, Governor of the Moro Province, for Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1909*. Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1909.

Jenkins, John S. *Voyage of the U.S. Exploring Squadron*. Auburn and Rochester: Alden and Beardsley, 1855.

Jenks, Maud Huntley. *Death Stalks the Philippine Wilds: Letters of Maud Huntley Jenks*. Minneapolis: Lund Press, 1951.

“Just Little Things.” *The American Chamber of Commerce Journal* 20.2 (1940), 40.

Kuder, Edward M. “The Moros in the Philippines.” *Far Eastern Quarterly* 4.2 (1945): 119-126.

Langhorne, George T. *Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province – September 1, 1903, to August 31, 1904*. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1904.

--- *Second Annual Report of the Governor of the Province of Moro*. Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1905.

Laubach, Frank C. “An Odyssey from Lanao, Pt. III.” *Philippine Public Schools* (December 1930): 459-468.

--- “Christianity and Islam in Lanao.” *The Muslim World* 25.1 (1935): 45-49.

--- *Letters by a Modern Mystic*. Colorado Springs: Purposeful Design Publications, 2007.

--- “My Approach to the Moros.” *The Muslim World* 36.2 (1946): 113-114.

--- *Planning Ahead for Better Christian-Moslem Relations*. Lanao: American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions in the Philippine Islands, 1942.

--- *Rizal: Man and Martyr*. Manila: Community Publishers Inc., 1936.

--- *The People of the Philippines: Their Religious Progress and Preparation for Spiritual Leadership in the Far East*. New York: George H. Doran Company, 1925.

--- *Wake Up or Blow Up – America: Lift the World or Lose It!* New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1951.

--- “What Shall We Do With The Moros?” *Envelope Series* 24.3 (1921): 3-23.

Leupp, Francis E. *The Indian and His Problem*. New York: Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1910.

Little, Burtis M. *Francisco the Filipino*. New York: American Book Company, 1915.

Madary, Marjorie. *Each One Teach One: Frank Laubach, Friend to Millions*. New York: Longman, Green & Company, 1954.

Mayo, Katharine. *The Islands of Fear: The Truth About the Philippines*. New York: Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1925.

Meek, S.P. *The Monkeys Have No Tails in Zamboanga*. New York: William Morrow & Company, 1935.

McGee, W.J. “Strange Races of Men.” *The World’s Work* (August 1904): 5185-5188.

- Melencio, José P. *Arguments Against Philippine Independence and their Answers*. Washington: The Philippines Press Bureau, 1919.
- Miller, Hunter, editor. *Treaties and Other International Acts of the United States of America, Vol. 2: Documents 1-40: 1776-1818*. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1931.
- Official Guide of the Louisiana Purchase Exposition*. St. Louis: The Official Guide Company, 1904.
- Orosa, Sixto. *The Sulu Archipelago and Its People*. Yonkers, N.Y.: World Book Company, 1931.
- Palmer, Frederick. "Americanizing the Southern Philippines." *Collier's Weekly*, 1 September 1900.
- Pershing, John J. *Annual Report of Brigadier General John J. Pershing, U.S. Army, Governor of the Moro Province, for the Year Ending August 31, 1910*. Zamboanga, Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1910.
- *Annual Report of Brigadier General John J. Pershing, U.S. Army, Governor of the Moro Province, for the Year Ending June 30, 1911*. Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1911.
- *The Annual Report of the Governor of the Moro Province, for the Fiscal Year Ended June 30, 1913*. Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1913.
- Pickens, Claude L. "With the Moros of the Philippines." *The Muslim World* 30.1 (1940): 36-40.
- Pier, Arthur S. *American Apostles to the Philippines*. Boston: The Beacon Press, 1950.
- Porter, Ralph S. *A Primer and Vocabulary of the Moro Dialect (Magindanau)*. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1903.
- "The Story of Bantugan." *The Journal of American Folklore* 15.58 (1902): 143-161.
- Programme of the Jolo Agricultural and Industrial Fair*. Jolo: R.B. Hayes Printer, 1906.
- Report of the Philippine Exposition Board to the Louisiana Purchase Exposition*. St. Louis: Greeley Printery of St. Louis, 1904.
- Report of the Thirty-Fourth Annual Lake Mohonk Conference on the Indian and Other Dependent Peoples*. Lake Mohonk, N.Y.: Lake Mohonk Conference on the Indian and Other Dependent Peoples, 1916.
- Retizos, Isidro L. "Maguindanao Pearls." *Philippine Magazine* 28.4 (1931): 179-189.
- Rizal, José. *The Philippines A Century Hence*. Manila: Philippine Education Company, 1912.



- Roberts, Helen M. *Champion of the Silent Billion: The Story of Frank C. Laubach, Apostle of Literacy*. St. Paul: Macalester Park Publishing Company, 1961.
- Russel, Florence Kimball. *A Woman's Journey Through the Philippines*. Boston: L.C. Page & Company, 1907.
- Russell, Charles Edward. *The Outlook for the Philippines*. New York: The Century Company, 1922.
- Ruth, H.S. "Chemical Warfare Against a Semi-Civilized Enemy with Particular Reference to its Use Against the Moros." *Chemical Warfare* 16 (1930): 12-13.
- Rutter, Owen. *British North Borneo: An Account of its History, Resources and Native Tribes*. London and Bombay: Constable & Company Limited, 1922.
- Saleeby, Najeeb M. *Studies in Moro History, Law, and Religion*. Manila: Bureau of Public Printing, 1905.
- *The History of Sulu*. Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1908.
- *The Moro Problem: An Academic Discussion of the History and Solution of the Problem of the Government of the Moros of the Philippine Islands*. Manila: E.C. McCullough & Company, 1913.
- Santayana, Agustin. *La Isla de Mindanao su Historia y su Estado Presente*. Madrid: Imprenta De Alhambra Y. Comp., 1862.
- Scott, Hugh L. "A Soldier's View of the Philippine Question." In *Proceedings of the Twenty-Fifth Annual Meeting of the Lake Mohonk Conference of Friends of the Indian and Other Dependent Peoples*, edited by Lilian D. Powers, 119-122. Lake Mohonk, N.Y.: Lake Mohonk Conference, 1907.
- *Some Memories of a Soldier*. New York: The Century Company, 1928.
- Slater, Eleanor. *Charles Henry Brent – Everybody's Bishop*. Milwaukee: Morehouse Publishing Company, 1932.
- Smith, C.C., translator. *A Grammar of the Maguindanao Tongue According to the Manner of Speaking it in the Interior of the South Coast of the Island of Mindanao*. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1906.
- Smith, E.L. *Report on Sulu Moros*. Manila: E.C. McCullough & Company, 1908.
- Storey, Moorfield. *The Moro Massacre*. Boston: Anti-Imperialist League, 1906.
- Stuart, Florence Partello. *The Adventures of Piang the Moro Jungle Boy*. New York: The Century Company, 1917.
- Taylor, Carl N. "Powder Keg In Mindanao." *Today Magazine*, 7 March 1936.

*The Department of Mindanao and Sulu at the Second Philippine Exposition*. Zamboanga: Mindanao Herald Publishing Company, 1914.

*The Real Glory*. Directed by Henry Hathaway. 1939. Los Angeles: MGM Movie Legends Collection, 2007. DVD.

*The Sixteenth Annual Report of the Missionary District of the Philippine Islands*. Manila: The Printing Committee, 1920.

*The Sulu Archipelago Typhoon: Official Report of Relief Work in Jolo and Cagayan de Sulu*. Manila: Philippines Chapter – American Red Cross, 1932.

Turner, Frederick Jackson. *The Frontier in American History*. New York: Henry Holt & Company, 1921.

United States Senate. Committee on Territories and Insular Affairs, *Frank W. Carpenter* (S. 1699), by Henry Cabot Lodge Jr. (Washington: United States Government Printing Office, 1937).

*Upbuilding of the Wards of the Nation: The Work of Charles H. Brent, of the Philippine Islands*. New York: Harmony Club of America, 1913.

Villamor, Ignacio. *Census of the Philippine Islands: Appendix to Volume I – Organization, Census Acts, and Regulations*. Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1920.

Wainright, Fonrose. "Blue Wings Over Sulu." *Survey Graphic* 18.8 (1939): 485-491, 509-512.

White, John R. *Bullets and Bolos: Fifteen Years in the Philippine Islands*. New York and London: The Century Company, 1928.

Wilkes, Charles. *Narrative of the U.S. Exploring Expedition, Volume 5*. Philadelphia: n.p., 1849.

--- *Synopsis of the Cruise of the U.S. Exploring Expedition*. Washington: Peter Force, 1842.

Williams, Herschel. *Uncle Bob and Aunt Becky's Strange Adventures at the World's Great Exposition*. Chicago: Laird and Lee Publishers, 1904.

Wilson, W.P. *Official Catalogue of Exhibits – Philippine Government*. St. Louis: Official Catalogue Company, 1904.

Wilson, W.P. "The Philippines at St. Louis." *The Booklovers Magazine* 4.1 (1906): 3-16.

Wood, Leonard, and Tasker Bliss. *Annual Report Department of Mindanao – From July 1, 1905 to June 30, 1906*. Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1906.

Wood, Leonard and W. Cameron Forbes. *Report of the Special Mission on Investigation to the Philippine Islands*. Manila: Bureau of Printing, 1921.

Worcester, Dean. "The Non-Christian Peoples of the Philippine Islands." *National Geographic* 24.2 (1913): 1157-1256.

--- *The Philippine Islands and their People*. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1898.

--- "What Would Lincoln Do? Slave Trading Under the Stars and Stripes." *Semi-Monthly Magazine*, 11 January 1914.

### **Secondary Sources**

Abernathy, David B. *The Dynamics of Global Dominance: European Overseas Empires, 1415-1980*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2002.

Abinales, Patricio N. "American Military Presence in the Southern Philippines: A Comparative Overview." *East West Center Working Papers, Politics and Security Series* 7 (2004): 1-20.

--- "From *Orang Besar* to Colonial Big Man: Datu Piang of Cotabato and the American Colonial State." In *Lives at the Margin: Biography of Filipinos Obscure, Ordinary, and Heroic*, edited by Alfred W. McCoy, 193-227. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2000.

--- *Making Mindanao: Cotabato and Davao in the Formation of the Philippine Nation-State*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2000.

--- *Orthodoxy and History in the Muslim-Mindanao Narrative*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2010.

--- "State Authority and Local Power in the Southern Philippines. PhD Dissertation, Cornell University, 1997.

--- "The Good Imperialists? American Military Presence in the Southern Philippines in Historical Perspective." *Philippine Studies* 52.2 (2004): 179-207.

Abinales, Patricio N. and Donna J. Amoroso. *State and Society in the Philippines*. New York and Oxford: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers, 2005.

Abubakar, Carmen A. "Review of the Mindanao Peace Processes." *Inter-Asia Cultural Studies* 5.3 (2004): 450-464.

Abuza, Zachary. "The Moro Islamic Liberation Front at 20: State of the Revolution." *Studies in Conflict and Terrorism* 28 (2005): 453-479.

Adas, Michael. *Dominance by Design: Technological Imperatives and America's Civilizing Mission*. Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2006.

- "From Settler Colony to Global Hegemon: Integrating the Exceptionalist Narrative of the American Experience into World History." *American Historical Review* 106.5 (2001): 1692-1720.
- "Improving on the Civilizing Mission? Assumptions of United States Exceptionalism in the Colonization of the Philippines." *Itinerario* 22.4 (1998): 44-66.
- *Prophets of Rebellion: Millenarian Protest Movements Against the European Colonial Order*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1979.
- Aguilar, Filomeno V. "Tracing Origins: *Ilustrado* Nationalism and the Racial Science of Migration Waves." *Journal of Asian Studies* 64.3 (2005): 605-637.
- Aldrich, Robert *Colonialism and Homosexuality*. New York: Routledge, 2002.
- editor. *The Age of Empires*. London: Thames and Hudson, 2007.
- "Colonial Man." In *French Masculinities: History, Culture and Politics*, edited by Christopher E. Forth and Bertrand Taithe, 123-140. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007.
- Alidio, Kimberly. "Between Civilizing Mission and Ethnic Assimilation: Racial Discourse, U.S. Colonial Education and Filipino Ethnicity, 1901-1946." PhD Dissertation, University of Michigan, 2001.
- "'When I Get Home, I Want to Forget': Memory and Amnesia in the Occupied Philippines, 1901-1904." *Social Text* 59 (1999): 105-122.
- Amoroso, Donna J. "Inheriting the 'Moro Problem': Muslim Authority and Colonial Rule in British Malaya and the Philippines." In *The American Colonial State in the Philippines: Global Perspectives*, edited by Julian Go and Anne L. Foster, 118-147. Durham: Duke University Press, 2003.
- Anderson, Benedict. *Imagined Communities: Reflections of the Origins and Spread of Nationalism*. New York: Verso, 1991.
- *Under Three Flags: Anarchism and the Anti-Colonial Imagination*. New York: Verso, 2005.
- Anderson, Clare. *Legible Bodies: Race, Criminality and Colonialism in South Asia*. Oxford: Berg, 2004.
- Anderson, Warwick. *Colonial Pathologies: American Tropical Medicine, Race, and Hygiene in the Philippines*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2006.

- "Immunization and Hygiene in the Colonial Philippines." *Journal of the History of Medicine and Allied Sciences* 62.1 (2007): 1-20.
- "The Trespass Speaks: White Masculinity and Colonial Breakdown." *The American Historical Review* 102.5 (1997): 1342-1370.
- Andrews, Birdie, and Mary P. Sutphen, editors. *Medicine and Colonial Identity*. New York: Routledge, 2003.
- Andriolo, Karin. "Murder by Suicide: Episodes from Muslim History." *American Anthropologist* 104.3 (2002): 734-742.
- Anduaga, Aitor. "Earthquake Building Overseas: Military Engineers, Cyclonic-Seismic Affinity and the Spanish Dominion in the Philippines, 1860-1898." *Engineering Studies* 6.1 (2014): 1-22.
- "Spanish Jesuits in the Philippines: Geophysical Research and Synergies Between Science, Education and Trade, 1865-1898." *Annals of Science* 71.4 (2014): 497-521.
- Angeles, Vivienne SM. "Moros in the Media and Beyond: Representations of Philippine Muslims." *Contemporary Islam* 4.1 (2010): 29-53.
- "Philippine Muslim Women: Tradition and Change." In *Islam, Gender, and Social Change*, edited by Yvonne Yazbeck Haddad and John L. Esposito, 209-234. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1998.
- Antolihao, Lou. *Playing with the Big Boys: Basketball, American Imperialism, and Subaltern Discourse in the Philippines*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2015.
- Apilado, Mariano C. *Revolutionary Spirituality: A Study of the Protestant Role in the American Colonial Rule of the Philippines, 1898-1920*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1999.
- Arcilla, José S, editor. *Jesuit Missionary Letters from Mindanao, Vol.1: The Rio Grande Mission*. Quezon City: Philippine Province Archives, 1990.
- editor. *Jesuit Missionary Letters from Mindanao Vol.2: The Zamboanga-Basilan-Jolo Mission*. Quezon City: Philippine Province Archives, 1993.
- "The Jesuits During the Philippine Revolution." *Philippine Studies* 35.3 (1987): 296-315.
- "The Philippine Revolution and the Jesuit Missions in Mindanao, 1896-1900." *Archivum Historicum Societatis Iesu* 47 (1978): 361-377.
- Armitage, David, editor. *Theories of Empire, 1450-1800*. Aldershot: Ashgate, 1998.

- Arnold, David. *Science, Technology, and Medicine in Colonial India*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Arnold, James R. *The Moro War: How America Battled a Muslim Insurgency in the Philippine Jungle, 1902-1913*. New York: Bloomsbury Press, 2011.
- Ax, Christina Folke, Niels Brimnes, Niklas Thode Jensen, and Karen Oslund, editors. *Cultivating the Colonies: Colonial States and their Environmental Legacies*. Athens: Ohio University Press, 2011.
- Bacevich, Andrew J. *Diplomat in Khaki: Major General Frank Ross McCoy and American Foreign Policy, 1898-1949*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1989.
- "Disagreeable Work: Pacifying the Moros, 1903-1906." *Military Review* 62.6 (1982): 49-61.
- editor. *The Short American Century: A Postmortem*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2012.
- Baker, Julian C.T. "Mobility, Tropicality and Landscape: The Darjeeling Himalayan Railway, 1881-1939." *Journal of Historical Geography* 44 (2014): 133-144.
- Baldoz, Rick. *The Third Asiatic Invasion: Empire and Migration in Filipino America, 1898-1946*. New York: New York University Press, 2011.
- Balce, Nerissa S. "The Filipina's Breast: Savagery, Docility, and the Erotics of the American Empire." *Social Text* 87 (2006): 89-110.
- Ballantyne, Tony, and Antoinette Burton. "Empires and the Reach of the Global." In *A World Connecting, 1870-1945*, edited by Emily S. Rosenberg, 285-434. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2012.
- Bankoff, Greg. "Breaking New Ground? Gifford Pinchot and the Birth of 'Empire Forestry' in the Philippines, 1900-1905." *Environment and History* 15.3 (2008): 369-393.
- *Cultures of Disaster: Society and Natural Hazards in the Philippines*. London: Routledge Curzon, 2003.
- "Deportation and the Prison Colony of San Ramon, 1870-1898." *Philippine Studies* 39.4 (1991): 443-457.
- "First Impressions: Diarists, Scientists, Imperialists and the Management of the Environment in the American Pacific, 1899-1902." *The Journal of Pacific History* 44.3 (2009): 261-280.

- "One Island Too Many: Reappraising the Extent of Deforestation in the Philippines Prior to 1946." *Journal of Historical Geography* 33.2 (2007): 314-334.
- "The Science of Nature and the Nature of Science in the Spanish and American Philippines." In *Cultivating the Colonies: Colonial States and Their Environmental Legacies*, edited by Christina Folke Ax, Niels Brimnes, Niklas Thode Jensen, and Karen Osland, 78-108. Columbus: Ohio University Press, 2011.
- Barclay, Paul D. "Peddling Postcards and Selling Empire: Image-Making in Taiwan under Japanese Colonial Rule." *Japanese Studies* 30 (2010): 81-110.
- Barnett, Louise K. *Atrocity and American Military Justice in Southeast Asia: Trial By Army*. New York: Routledge, 2010.
- Bashford, Alison. *Imperial Hygiene: A Critical History of Colonialism, Nationalism and Public Health*. New York: Palgrave MacMillan, 2004.
- Bassin, Mark. *Imperial Visions: Nationalist Imagination and Geographic Expansion in the Russian Far East, 1840-1865*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999.
- Beattie, James. *Empire and Environmental Anxiety: Health, Science, Art and Conservation in South Asia and Australasia, 1800-1920*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2011.
- Beaujard, Philippe. "The Indian Ocean in Eurasian and African World-Systems Before the Sixteenth Century." *Journal of World History* 16.4 (2005): 411-465.
- Beaupre, Miles. "'What are the Philippines Going to do to us?' E.L. Godkin on Democracy, Empire and Anti-Imperialism." *Journal of American Studies* 46.3 (2012): 711-727.
- Beckett, Jeremy. "The Datus of the Rio Grande de Cotabato Under Colonial Rule." *Asian Studies* 5 (1977): 46-64.
- Beisner, Robert. *Twelve Against Empire: The Anti-Imperialists, 1898-1900*. New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company, 1969.
- Bender, Daniel E. *American Abyss: Savagery and Civilization in the Age of Industry*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2009.
- Bender, Daniel E., and Jana K. Lipman, editors. *Making the Empire Work: Labor and United States Imperialism*. New York: New York University Press, 2015.
- Bender, Thomas. *A Nation Among Nations: America's Place in World History*. New York: Hill and Wang, 2006.
- editor. *Rethinking American History in a Global Age*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2001.

- Benton, Laura. *Law and Colonial Cultures: Legal Regimes in World History, 1400-1900*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- Best, Jonathan. "Empire Builders: American City Planning in the Philippines." *Bulletin of the American Historical Collection* 37.1 (2009): 23-34.
- Bhabha, Homi K. *The Location of Culture*. New York: Routledge, 1994.
- Bhattacharya, Nandini. *Contagion and Enclaves: Tropical Medicine in Colonial India*. Liverpool: Liverpool University Press, 2012.
- "Leisure, Economy, and Colonial Urbanism: Darjeeling, 1835-1930." *Urban History* 40.3 (2013): 442-461.
- Bhattacharya, Tithi. *The Sentinels of Culture: Class, Education, and the Colonial Intellectual in Bengal, 1848-85*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2005.
- Bigon, Liora. "Urban Planning, Colonial Doctrines and Street Naming in French Dakar and British Lagos, c. 1850-1930." *Urban History* 36.3 (2009): 426-448.
- Bjork, Katherine. "The Link That Kept the Philippines Spanish: Mexican Merchant Interests and the Manila Trade, 1571-1815." *Journal of World History* 9.1 (1998): 25-50.
- Blackhawk, Ned. *Violence Over the Land: Indians and Empires in the Early American West*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2006.
- Blumi, Isa. *Ottoman Refugees, 1878-1939: Migration in a Post-Imperial World*. London and New York: Bloomsbury, 2013.
- Boot, Max. *Savage Wars of Peace: Small Wars and the Rise of American Power*. New York: Basic Books, 2002.
- Bose, Sugata. *A Hundred Horizons: The Indian Ocean in the Age of Global Empire*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2011.
- Boyd, Colin. "The Nestlé Infant Formula Controversy and a Strange Web of Subsequent Business Scandals." *Journal of Business Ethics* 106.3 (2012): 283-293.
- Brewer, Susan. *Why America Fights: Patriotism and War Propaganda from the Philippines to Iraq*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2008.
- Brower, Matthew. "Trophy Shots: Early North American Photographs of Nonhuman Animals and the Display of Masculine Prowess." *Society and Animals* 13.1 (2005): 13-32.



- Bradford, Marlene. *Scanning the Skies: A History of Tornado Forecasting*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 2001.
- Brands, H.W. *Bound to Empire: The United States and the Philippines, 1890-1990*. Oxford: Oxford University, 1990.
- Brody, David. "Building Empire: Architecture and American Imperialism in the Philippines." *Journal of Asian American Studies* 4.2 (2006): 123-145.
- *Visualizing American Empire: Orientalism and Imperialism in the Philippines*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2010.
- Brown, Mark. *Penal Power and Colonial Rule*. New York: Routledge, 2014.
- Buendia, Rizal G. "The State-Moro Armed Conflict in the Philippines: Unresolved National Question or Question of Governance?" *Asian Journal of Political Science* 13.1 (2005): 109-138.
- Burbank, Jane, and Frederick Cooper. *Empires in World History: Power and the Politics of Difference*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011.
- Burke III, Edmund. *The Ethnographic State: France and the Invention of Moroccan Islam*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2014.
- Byler, Charles. "Pacifying the Moros: American Military Government in the Southern Philippines, 1899-1913." *Military Review* 85.3 (2005), 41-45.
- Calhoun, Craig, Frederick Cooper, and Kevin W. Moore, editors. *Lessons of Empire: Imperial Histories and American Power*. New York: The New Press, 2006.
- Cano, Gloria. "Evidence for the Deliberate Distortion of the Spanish Philippine Colonial Historical Record in *The Philippine Islands 1493-1898*." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 39.1 (2008): 1-30.
- Carter, Bentley G. "Implicit Evangelism: American Education Among the Muslim Maranao." *Pilipinas* 12 (1989): 73-96.
- Carter, Matthew. *Myth of the Western: New Perspectives on Hollywood's Frontier Narrative*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 2014.
- Çelik, Zeynep. *Displaying the Orient: Architecture of Islam at Nineteenth-Century World's Fairs*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1992.
- Chakrabarti, Pratik. *Medicine and Empire: 1600-1960*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2013.

- Chakrabarty, Dipesh. *Provincializing Europe: Postcolonial Thought and Historical Difference*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2007.
- Chang, Jiat-Hwee, and Anthony D. King. "Towards a Genealogy of Tropical Architecture: Historical Fragments of Power-Knowledge, Built Environment and Climate in the British Colonial Territories." *Singapore Journal of Tropical Geography* 32 (2011): 283-300.
- Chatterjee, Partha. *The Nation and its Fragments: Colonial and Postcolonial Histories*. Princeton: University of Princeton Press, 1993.
- Che Man, W.K. *Muslim Separatism: The Moros of Southern Philippines and the Malays of Southern Thailand*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1990.
- Choy, Catherine Ceniza. *Empire of Care: Nursing and Migration in Filipino American History*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2003.
- Ciarlo, David. *Advertising Empire: Race and Visual Culture in Imperial Germany*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2011.
- Clymer, Kenton J. "Humanitarian Imperialism: David Prescott Barrows and the White Man's Burden in the Philippines." *Pacific Historical Review* 45.4 (1976): 495-518.
- *Protestant Missionaries in the Philippines, 1898-1916: An Inquiry into the American Colonial Mentality*. Champaign: University of Illinois Press, 1986.
- "Religion and American Imperialism: Methodist Missionaries in the Philippine Islands, 1899-1913." *Pacific Historical Review* 49.1 (1980): 29-50.
- Coffman, Edward M. *The Regulars: The American Army, 1898-1941*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2004.
- Coleborne, Catharine and Angela McCarthy. "Health and Place in Historical Perspective: Medicine, Ethnicity, and Colonial Identities." *Australian and New Zealand Society of the History of Medicine* 14.1 (2012): 1-11.
- Colomo, Roland Sintos. "Empire and Education: Filipino Schooling Under United States Rule, 1900-1910." PhD Dissertation, Ohio State University, 2004.
- Cook, Harold J. *Matters of Exchange: Commerce, Medicine, and Science in the Dutch Golden Age*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2007.
- Cooper, Frederick. *Colonialism in Question: Theory, Knowledge, History*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2005.

- "Modernizing Colonialism and the Limits of Empire." In *Lessons of Empire: Imperial Histories and American Power*, edited by Craig Calhoun, Frederick Cooper, and Kevin W. Moore, 63-72. New York: The New Press, 2006.
- Cooper, Frederick, and Ann Laura Stoler, editors. *Tensions of Empire: Colonial Cultures in a Bourgeois World*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1997.
- Cornelio, Jayeel S. "Popular Religion and the Turn to Everyday Authenticity: Reflections on the Contemporary Study of Philippine Catholicism." *Philippine Studies* 62.3/4 (2014): 471-500.
- Coyle, Lee. *George Ade*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1964.
- Craib, Raymond B. "Relocating Cartography." *Postcolonial Studies* 12.4 (2009): 481-490.
- Crawford, James Grant. "'Civilize 'Em With a Krag!' Punitive Violence and the American Mission of Uplift." *Journal of the North Carolina Association of Historians* 17 (2009): 135-167.
- Crozier, Anna. "What Was Tropical about Tropical Neurasthenia? The Utility of the Diagnosis in the Management of British East Africa." *Journal of the History of Medicine and Allied Sciences* 64.4 (2009): 518-548.
- Cruz, Denise. *Transpacific Femininities: The Making of the Modern Filipina*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2012.
- Cullinane, Michael. "Bringing in the Brigands: The Politics of Pacification in the Colonial Philippines, 1902-1907." *Philippine Studies* 57.1 (2009): 49-76.
- Cummings, Bruce. *Dominion from Sea to Sea: Pacific Ascendancy and American Power*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2010.
- "'Revising Postrevisionism,' or, The Poverty of Theory in Diplomatic History." *Diplomatic History* 17.4 (1993): 539-570.
- Dale, Stephen Frederic. "Religious Suicide in Islamic Asia: Anticolonial Terrorism in India, Indonesia, and the Philippines." *Journal of Conflict Resolution* 32.1 (1988): 37-59.
- Darwin, John. *After Tamerlane: The Rise and Fall of Global Empires, 1400-2000*. New York: Bloomsbury Press, 2007.
- *Unfinished Empire: The Global Expansion of Britain*. New York: Penguin, 2013.
- De Bevoise, Ken. *Agents of Apocalypse: Epidemic Disease in the Colonial Philippines*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1995.

- "Until God Knows When: Smallpox in the Late-Colonial Philippines." *Pacific Historical Review* 59.2 (1990): 149-185.
- De Grazia, Victoria. *Irresistible Empire: America's Advance through Twentieth-Century Europe*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2005.
- Deacon, Desley, Penny Russell, and Angela Woolacott, editors. *Transnational Lives: Biographies of Global Modernity, 1700-Present*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2010.
- Dean, Robert D. *Imperial Brotherhood: Gender and the Making of Cold War Foreign Policy*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 2003.
- Dikötter, Frank, and Ian Brown, editors. *Cultures of Confinement: A History of the Prison in Africa, Asia and Latin America*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2007.
- Dodson, Michael S. *Orientalism, Empire, and National Culture: India, 1770-1880*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007.
- Doeppers, Daniel F. *Manila, 1900-1941: Social Change in a Late Colonial Metropolis*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1984.
- Domosh, Mona. *American Commodities in the Age of Empire*. New York: Routledge, 2006.
- Doolittle, Amity. "Colliding Discourses: Western Land Laws and Native Customary Rights in North Borneo, 1881-1918." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 34.1: 97-126.
- Dower, John. *War Without Mercy: Race and Power in the Pacific War*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1986.
- Dphrepaulezz, Omar. "'The Right Sort of White Men': General Leonard Wood and the U.S. Army in the Southern Philippines." PhD Dissertation, University of Connecticut, 2013.
- Drinnon, Richard. *Facing West: The Metaphysics of Indian-Hating and Empire-Building*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1980.
- Driver, Felix, and Luciana Martins, editors. *Tropical Visions in an Age of Empire*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2005.
- Duara, Prasenjit. "Transnationalism and the Challenge to National Histories." In *Rethinking American History in a Global Age*, edited by Thomas Bender, 25-46. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002.
- Dumont, Jean-Paul. *Visayan Vignettes: Ethnographic Traces of a Philippine Island*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1992.

- Duncan, James S. "The Struggle to be Temperate: Climate and 'Moral Masculinity' in Mid-Nineteenth Century Ceylon." *The Singapore Journal of Tropical Geography* 21.1 (2000): 34-47.
- Dunning, John. *On the Air: The Encyclopedia of Old-Time Radio*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1998.
- Duque, Estela. "Modern Tropical Architecture: Medicalisation of Space in Early Twentieth-Century Philippines." *Architectural Research Quarterly* 13.3/4 (2009): 261-271.
- Dyer, Geoff. *Out of Sheer Rage: Wrestling with D.H. Lawrence*. London: Little, Brown, & Company, 1997.
- Echenberg, Myron. *Africa in the Time of Cholera: A History of Pandemics from 1817 to the Present*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011.
- Ekbladh, David. *The Great American Mission: Modernization and the Construction of an American World Order*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2011.
- Elias, Robert. *The Empire Strikes Out: How Baseball Sold U.S. Foreign Policy and the American Way Abroad*. New York: New Press, 2010.
- Ellingson, Ter. *The Myth of the Noble Savage*. Berkeley: The University of California Press, 2001.
- Ephraim, Frank. "The Mindanao Plan: Political Obstacles to Jewish Refugee Settlement." *Holocaust and Genocide Studies* 20.3 (2006): 410-436.
- Ewen, Shane. "Lost in Translation? Mapping, Molding, and Managing the Transnational Municipal Moment." In *Another Global City: Historical Explorations into the Transnational Municipal Moment, 1850-2000*, edited by Pierre-Yves Saunier and Shane Ewen, 173-184. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2008.
- Falola, Toyin, and Emily Brownell, editors. *Landscape, Environment, and Technology in Colon and Postcolonial Africa*. New York: Routledge, 2013.
- Federspiel, Howard M. "Islam and Muslims in the Southern Territories of the Philippine Islands during the Colonial Period (1898 to 1946)." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 29.2 (1998): 340-356.
- *Sultans, Shamans, and Saints: Islam and Muslims in Southeast Asia*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007.
- Ferguson, Niall. *Colossus: The Rise and Fall of the American Empire*. New York: Penguin, 2004.

- Feuer, A.B. *America at War: The Philippines, 1898-1913*. Westport: Praeger Publishers, 2002.
- Fischer-Tiné, Harald, and Susanne Gehrman, editors. *Empires and Boundaries: Rethinking Race, Class, and Gender in Colonial Settings*. New York: Routledge, 2009.
- Foster, Anne L. "Prohibition as Superiority: Policing Opium in South-East Asia, 1898-1925." *The International History Review* 22.2 (2000): 253-273.
- *Projections of Power: The United States and Europe in Colonial Southeast Asia, 1919-1939*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2010.
- Foucault, Michel. *Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison*. New York: Vintage, 1995.
- Francia, Luis H. *Vestiges of War: The Philippine-American War and the Aftermath of an Imperial Dream, 1899-1999*. New York: New York University Press, 2002.
- Frank, Elizabeth S. "Advocating War Preparedness: H. Irving Hancock's *Conquest of the United States Series*" In *Pioneers, Passionate Ladies, and Private Eyes: Dime Novels, Series Books, and Paperbacks*, edited by Larry E. Sullivan and Lydia Cushman Schurman, 215-231. Binghamton: The Haworth Press, 1996.
- Friedman, Max Paul. "From Manila to Baghdad: Empire and the American 'Mission Civilisatrice' at the Beginning and End of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century." *Revue Francaise d'Etudes Americaines* 113 (2009): 26-38.
- Fry, Howard T. "The Bacon Bill of 1926: New Light on an Exercise in Divide-and-Rule." *Philippine Studies* 26.3 (1978): 257-273.
- Fry, Joseph. "Imperialism, American Style, 1890-1916." In *American Foreign Relations Reconsidered, 1890-1993*, edited by Gordon Martel, 52-70. London: Routledge, 1994.
- Frydt, Vivian Green. *Art and Empire: The Politics of Ethnicity in the United States Capital, 1815-1960*. Columbus: Ohio State University Press, 2001.
- Fulton, Robert. *Honor for the Flag: The Battle for Bud Dajo – 1906 and the Moro Massacre*. Bend, Oregon: Tumalo Creek Press, 2011.
- *Moroland: The History of Uncle Sam and the Moros, 1899-1920*. Bend, Oregon: Tumalo Creek Press, 2009.
- Gaddis, John Lewis. *Strategies of Containment: A Critical Appraisal of Postwar American National Security Policy*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1982.
- Gadgil, Madhay and Amachandra Guba. *This Fissured Land: An Ecological History of India*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1992.

- Gaerlan, Barbara S. "In the Court of the Sultan: Orientalism, Nationalism, and Modernity in Philippine and Filipino American Dance." *Journal of Asian American Studies* 3.2 (1999): 251-287.
- Garrido, Samuel. "Water Management, Spanish Irrigation, and Colonial Engineers." *Journal of Agrarian Change* 14.3 (2014): 400-418.
- Gatewood, Willard B. *Black Americans and the White Man's Burden, 1898-1903*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1975.
- Gedacht, Joshua. "'Mohammedan Religion Made It Necessary to Fire': Massacres on the American Imperial Frontier from South Dakota to the Southern Philippines." In *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, edited by Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano, 397-409. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009.
- Geiger, Jeffrey. *Facing the Pacific: Polynesia and the U.S. Imperial Imagination*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007.
- George, T.J.S. *Revolt in Mindanao: The Rise of Islam in Philippine Politics*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1980.
- Gems, Gerald R. *The Athletic Crusade: Sport and American Cultural Imperialism*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2006.
- Gianakos, Perry E. "George Ade's Critique of Benevolent Assimilation." *Diplomatic History* 7.3 (1983): 223-238.
- Gibbon, Guy and Scott F. Anfison. "Digging Up Minnesota's Past: A History of Minnesota Archaeology." *Publications in Anthropology* 8 (2012). Accessed January 15 2015. <http://anthropology.umn.edu/labs/wlnaa/history/contents.html>.
- Gienow-Hecht, Jessica. *Transmission Impossible: American Journalism as Cultural Diplomacy in Postwar Germany, 1945-1955*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1999.
- Gienow-Hecht, Jessica, and Frank Schumacher, editors. *Culture and International History*. New York: Berghahn Books, 2003.
- Gijswijt-Hofstra, Marijke, and Roy Porter, editors. *Cultures of Neurasthenia from Beard to the First World War*. Amsterdam: Rodopi, 2001.
- Gilbert, James. *Whose Fair? Experience, Memory, and the History of the Great St. Louis Exposition*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2009.

- Ginoza, Ayano. "Articulations of Okinawan Indigeneities, Activism, and Militourism: A Study of Interdependencies of U.S. and Japanese Empires." PhD Dissertation, Washington State University, 2010.
- Gleach, Frederic W. "Pocahontas at the Fair: Crafting Identities at the 1907 Jamestown Exposition." *Ethnohistory* 50.3 (2003): 419-445.
- Gleeck, Lewis E. *American Institutions in the Philippines, 1898-1941*. Manila: Historical Conservation Society, 1976.
- *The American Governors-General and High Commissioners in the Philippines: Proconsuls, Nation-Builders and Politicians*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1987.
- Go, Julian. "Global Perspectives on the U.S. Colonial State in the Philippines." In *The American Colonial State in the Philippines: Global Perspectives*, edited by Julian Go and Anne L. Foster, 1-42. Durham: Duke University Press, 2003.
- *Patterns of Empire: The British and American Empires, 1688 to the Present*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011.
- "The Provinciality of American Empire: 'Liberal Exceptionalism' and U.S. Colonial Rule, 1898-1912." *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 49.1 (2007): 74-108.
- Go, Julian, and Anne L. Foster, editors. *The American Colonial State in the Philippines: Global Perspectives*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2003.
- Gobat, Michel. *Confronting the American Dream: Nicaragua Under U.S. Imperial Rule*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2005.
- "The Invention of Latin America: A Transnational History of Anti-Imperialism, Democracy, and Race." *American Historical Review* 118.5 (2013): 1345-1375.
- Goh, Daniel. "States of Ethnography: Colonialism, Resistance, and Cultural Transcription in Malaya and the Philippines, 1890s-1930s." *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 49.1 (2007): 109-142.
- Gonzalez, Vernadette Vicuña. *Securing Paradise: Tourism and Militarism in Hawai'i and the Philippines*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2014.
- Goss, Andrew. "Decent Colonialism? Pure Science and Colonial Ideology in the Netherlands East Indies, 1910-1929." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 40.1 (2009): 187-214.
- Goswami, Supriya. "Fictions of Empire: Colonial India and Nineteenth-Century Children's Literature." PhD Dissertation, George Washington University, 2002.



- Gouda, Frances. *Dutch Culture Overseas: Colonial Practice in the Netherlands Indies, 1900-1942*. Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam Press, 1995.
- Govaars, Ming. *Dutch Colonial Education: The Chinese Experience in Indonesia, 1900-1942*. Singapore: Chinese Heritage Center, 2005.
- Gowing, Peter G. *Mandate in Moroland: The American Government of Muslim Filipinos, 1899-1920*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1983.
- "Mandate in Moroland: The American Government of Muslim Filipinos, 1899-1920. PhD Dissertation, Syracuse University, 1968.
- "Moros and Indians: Commonalities of Purpose, Policy and Practice in American Government of Two Hostile Subject Peoples." *Philippine Quarterly of Culture & Society* 8.2/3 (1980): 125-149.
- "Muslim-American Relations in the Philippines, 1899-1920." In *The Muslim Filipinos: Their History, Society and Contemporary Problems*, edited by Peter G. Gowing and Robert D. McAmis, 372-382. Manila: Solidaridad Publishing House, 1976.
- *Muslim Filipinos: Heritage and Horizon*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1979.
- "Muslim Filipinos Today." *The Muslim World* 54.1 (1964): 39-48.
- "Of Different Minds: Christian and Muslim Ways of Looking at their Relations in the Philippines." *International Review of Mission* 67 (1978): 74-85.
- "The Legacy of Frank Charles Laubach." *International Bulletin of Missionary Research* 7.2 (1983): 58-62.
- editor. *Understanding Islam and Muslims in the Philippines*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1988.
- Grandmaison, Olivier Le Cour. "The Exception and the Rule: On French Colonial Law." *Diogenes* 53.4 (2006): 34-53.
- Grann, David. *The Lost City of Z: A Tale of Deadly Obsession in the Amazon*. New York: Vintage, 2010.
- Green, David. *The Containment of Latin America: A History of the Myths and Realities of the Good Neighbor Policy*. Chicago: Quadrangle Books, 1971.
- Greenberg, Amy S. *Manifest Manhood and the Antebellum American Empire*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005.

- Grewal, Inderpal. *Transnational America: Feminisms, Diasporas, Neoliberalisms*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2009.
- Guidotti-Hernández, Nicole. *Unspeakable Violence: Remapping U.S. and Mexican National Imaginaries*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2011.
- Guttmann, Allen. *Games and Empires: Modern Sports and Cultural Imperialism*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1994.
- Hack, Karl, and Tobias Rettig, editors. *Colonial Armies in Southeast Asia*. New York: Routledge, 2006.
- Hale, Dana S. *Races on Display: French Representations of Colonized Peoples*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2007.
- Halili Jr., Servando D. *Iconography of the New Empire: Race and Gender Images and the American Colonization of the Philippines*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007.
- Hall, Catherine. *Civilizing Subjects: Metropole and Colony in the English Imagination, 1830-1867*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2002.
- Hall, Catherine, and Sonya Ross, editors. *At Home with the Empire: Metropolitan Culture and the Imperial World*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006.
- Hancock, Mary. "Home Science and the Nationalization of Domesticity in Colonial India." *Modern Asian Studies* 35.4 (2001): 873-903.
- Hansen, Anne Ruth. *How to Behave: Buddhism and Modernity in Colonial Cambodia, 1860-1930*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2007.
- Harris, Susan K. *God's Arbiters: Americans and the Philippines, 1898-1902*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2011.
- "Women, Anti-Imperialism and America's Christian Mission Abroad: The Impact of the Philippine-American War." In *Becoming Visible: Women's Changing Presence in Late Nineteenth Century America*, edited by Alison Easton, R.J. Ellis, Janet Floyd, and Lindsay Traub, 307-326. Amsterdam: Rodopi, 2010.
- Harrison, Mark. *Climates and Constitutions: Health, Race, Environment and British Imperialism in India, 1600-1850*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- *Medicine in an Age of Commerce and Empire: Britain and its Tropical Colonies, 1660-1830*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2010.
- Hart, Jonathan. *Comparing Empires: European Colonialism from Portuguese Expansion to the Spanish-American War*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2003.

- Hartley, Douglas Thompson Kellie. "American Participation in the Economic Development of Mindanao and Sulu, 1899-1930." PhD Dissertation, James Cook University of North Queensland, 1983.
- Hayase, Shinzō. *Mindanao Ethnohistory Beyond Nations: Maguindanao, Sangir, and Bagobo Societies in East Maritime Southeast Asia*. Manila: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2007.
- Hawkins, Michael C. "David Barrows and Perceptions of Historical Consciousness in the Colonial Philippines." *Journal of Social Issues in Southeast Asia* 27.1 (2012): 153-167.
- "Imperial Historicism and American Military Rule in the Philippines' Muslim South." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 39.3 (2008), 411-429.
- *Making Moros: Imperial Historicism and American Military Rule in the Philippines' Muslim South*. DeKalb: University of Northern Illinois Press, 2013.
- "Managing a Massacre: Savagery, Civility, and Gender in Moro Province in the Wake of Bud Dajo." *Philippine Studies* 59.01 (2011): 83-105.
- "Masculinity Reborn: Chivalry, Misogyny, Potency and Violence in the Philippines' Muslim South, 1899-1913." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 44.2 (2013): 250-265.
- Herbst, Matthew T. "Regime Change, Occupation, and Aggressive Christianity: The Detroit Annual Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church and the U.S. Occupation of the Philippines, 1898-1903." *Methodist History* 43.4 (2005): 297-308.
- Herring, George C. *From Colony to Superpower: U.S. Foreign Relations since 1776*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2008.
- Hevia, James. *The Imperial Security State: British Colonial Knowledge and Empire-Building in Asia*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012.
- Hillemann, Ulrike. *Asian Empire and British Knowledge: China and Networks of British Imperial Expansion*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2009.
- Hinton, Alex. "Savages, Subjects, and Sovereigns: Conjunctions of Modernity, Genocide, and Colonialism." In *Empire, Colony, Genocide: Conquest, Occupation, and Subaltern Resistance in World History*, edited by A. Dirk Moses, 440-460. New York and Oxford: Berghahn Books, 2008.
- Hixson, Walter L. *Parting the Curtain: Propaganda, Culture, and the Cold War, 1945-61*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1997.
- Hobsbawm, Eric. *Bandits*. London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 2000.

- Hoffman, Elizabeth Cobbs. *American Umpire*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2013.
- Hoganson, Kristin L. *Consumers' Imperium: The Global Production of American Domesticity, 1865-1920*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2007.
- *Fighting for American Manhood: How Gender Politics Provoked the Spanish-American and Philippine-American Wars*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2000.
- Holden, William N. "The Samar Counterinsurgency Campaign of 1899-1902: Lessons Worth Learning?" *Asian Culture and History* 6.1 (2014): 15-30.
- Holden, Stacey E. "Constructing an Archival Cityscape: Local Views of Colonial Urbanism in the French Protectorate of Morocco." *History in Africa* 34 (2007): 121-132.
- Holt, Elizabeth Mary. *Colonizing Filipinas: Nineteenth-Century Representations of the Philippines in Western Historiography*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2002.
- Horsman, Reginald. *Race and Manifest Destiny: The Origins of American Racial Anglo-Saxonism*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1981.
- Horvath, Patricia. "The Martyr and the Mayor: On the Politics of Identity in the Southern Philippines." In *Cultural Citizenship in Island Southeast Asia: Nation and Belonging in the Hinterlands*, edited by Renato Rosaldo, 16-44. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2003.
- Hsu, Funie. "Colonial Articulations: English Instruction and the 'Benevolence' of U.S. Overseas Expansion in the Philippines, 1898-1916." PhD Dissertation, University of California, Berkeley, 2013.
- Hui, Wang. *The Politics of Imagining Asia*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2011.
- Hunt, Michael H. *Ideology and U.S. Foreign Policy*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1987.
- Hunt, Michael H. and Steven I. Levine. *Arc of Empire: America's Wars in Asia from the Philippines to Vietnam*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2012.
- Hutchcroft, Paul D. "Colonial Masters, National Politicos, and Provincial Lords: Central Authority and Local Autonomy in the American Philippines, 1900-1913." *Journal of Asian Studies* 59.2 (2000): 277-306.
- Ileto, Reynaldo Clemena. "Cholera and the Origins of the American Sanitary Order in the Philippines." In *Imperial Medicine and Indigenous Societies*, edited by David Arnold, 125-148. Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1988.

- *Magindano, 1860-1888: The Career of Datu Uto of Buayan*. Manila: Anvil Vintage, 2007.
- Iriye, Akira. "Cultural and International History." In *Explaining the History of American Foreign Relations*, edited by Michael J. Hogan and Thomas J. Paterson, 241-256. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2004.
- *Cultural Internationalism and World Order*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997.
- *Global Community: The Role of International Organizations in the Making of the Contemporary World*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002.
- editor. *Global Interdependence: The World After 1945*. Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2013.
- *The Cambridge History of American Foreign Relations, Volume III: The Globalizing of America, 1913-1945*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993.
- "The Internationalization of History." *American Historical Review* 94.1 (1989): 1-10.
- Jackson, Iain. "Tropical Architecture and the West Indies: From Military Advances and Tropical Medicine, to Robert Garner-Medwin and the Networks of Tropical Modernism." *The Journal of Architecture* 18.2 (2013): 167-195.
- Jacob, Wilson Chacko. *Working Out Egypt: Effendi Masculinity and Subject Formation in Colonial Modernity, 1870-1940*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2011.
- Jacobson, Matthew Frye. *Barbarian Virtues: The United States Encounters Foreign Peoples at Home and Abroad*. New York: Hill and Wang, 2001.
- Jaffe, James. *Ironies of Colonial Governance: Law, Custom and Justice in Colonial India*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2015.
- Jenista, Frank L. *The White Apos: American Governors in the Cordillera Central*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1987.
- Jennings, Eric T. "From *Indochine* to *Indochic*: The Lang Bian / Dalat Palace Hotel and French Colonial Leisure, Power and Culture." *Modern Asian Studies* 37.1 (2003): 159-194.
- Jones, Arun W. "Pragmatic Anti-Imperialists? Episcopal Missionaries in the Philippines, 1933-1935." *Anglican and Episcopal History* 82.1 (2013): 1-28.

- Jornacion, George William. "The Time of the Eagles: United States Army Officers and the Pacification of the Philippine Moros, 1899-1913." PhD Dissertation, University of Maine, 1973.
- Joyce, Barry Alan. *The Shaping of American Ethnography: The Wilkes Exploring Expedition, 1838-1942*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2001.
- Jurika, Louis. "A Philippine Odyssey." *Beyond the Wire* 4.1 (2011): 4-5.
- Kagan, Robert. *Dangerous Nation: America's Foreign Policy from its Earliest Days to the Dawn of the Twentieth Century*. New York: Alfred P. Knopf, 2006.
- *The World America Made*. New York: Alfred P. Knopf, 2012.
- Kaplan, Amy. "Manifest Domesticity." *American Literature* 70.3 (1998): 581-606.
- *The Anarchy of Empire in the Making of U.S. Culture*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2002.
- Kaplan, Amy, and Donald E. Pease, editors. *Cultures of United States Imperialism*. Durham: Duke University Press, 1993.
- Karnow, Stanley. *In Our Image: America's Empire in the Philippines*. New York: Random House, 1989.
- Kawashima, Midori. "The Uprising of the 'Fearful Ruler of Lanao': Banditry and the Internalization of Violence in a Southern Philippine Muslim Society During the 1930s." In *Popular Movements and Democratization in the Muslim World*, edited by Masatochi Kisaichi, 78-99. New York: Routledge, 2006.
- Keller, Richard. *Colonial Madness: Psychiatry in French North Africa*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2007.
- Kelly, Gail P. "The Presentation of Indigenous Society in the Schools of French West Africa and Indochina, 1918 to 1938." *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 26.3 (1984): 523-542.
- Kennedy, Dane Keith. *The Magic Mountains: Hill Stations and the British Raj*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1996.
- Kilpatrick, Jacquelyn. *Celluloid Indians: Native Americans and Film*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1999.
- King, Anthony D. *Colonial Urban Development: Culture, Social Power, and Environment*. New York: Routledge, 2010.

- Kirsch, Scott. "Insular Territories: U.S. Colonial Science, Geopolitics, and the (Re)Mapping of the Philippines." *The Geographical Journal* 0.0 (Advance Publication - 2014): 1-13.
- Knellwolf, Christa. "The Exotic Frontier of the Imperial Imagination." *Eighteenth-Century Life* 26.3 (2002): 10-30.
- Kochhar, Rajesh. "Seductive Orientalism: English Education and Modern Science in Colonial India." *Social Scientist* 36.3/4 (2008): 45-63.
- Koese, Yavuz. "Nestlé in the Ottoman Empire: Global Marketing with Local Flavor 1870-1927." *Enterprise and Society* 9.4 (2008): 724-761.
- Kolb, Harold H. "George Ade (1866-1944)." *American Literary Realism* 4.2 (1971): 157-169.
- Kolodney, Ziva, and Rachel Kallus. "From Colonial to National Landscape: Producing Haifa's Cityscape." *Planning Perspectives* 23.3 (2008): 323-348.
- Kolsky, Elizabeth. *Colonial Justice in British India*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2010.
- Kramer, Paul A. "Empires, Exceptions, and Anglo-Saxons: Race and Rule Between the British and United States Empires, 1880-1910." *Journal of American History* 88.4 (2002): 1315-1353.
- "Making Concessions: Race and Empire Revisited at the Philippine Exposition, St. Louis, 1901-1905." *Radical History Review* 73 (1999): 74-114.
- "Power and Connection: Imperial Histories of the United States in the World." *The American Historical Review* 116.5 (2011): 1348-1391.
- "Race, Empire, and Transnational History." In *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, edited by Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano, 199-209. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009.
- "Race-Making and Colonial Violence in the U.S. Empire: The Philippine-American War as Race War." *Diplomatic History* 30.2 (2006): 169-210.
- *The Blood of Government: Race, Empire, the United States, and the Philippines*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2006.
- "The Darkness that Enters the Home: The Politics of Prostitution During the Philippine-American War." In *Haunted by Empire: Geographies of Intimacy in Colonial North America*, edited by Ann Laura Stoler, 366-404. Durham: Duke University Press, 2006.

- "The Pragmatic Empire: U.S. Anthropology and Colonial Politics in the Occupied Philippines, 1898-1916." PhD Dissertation, Princeton University, 1998.
- Kratoska, Paul, and Ben Batson. "Nationalism and Modernist Reform." In *The Cambridge History of Southeast Asia, Volume II – The Nineteenth and Twentieth Centuries*, edited by Nicholas Tarling, 249-324. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- Kutzer, M. Daphne. *Empire's Children: Empire and Imperialism in Classic British Children's Books*. New York: Routledge, 2001.
- Kwantes, Anne C. *Presbyterian Missionaries in the Philippines: Conduits of Social Change, 1899-1910*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1989.
- Labi, Hadji Sarip Riwarung. "Dimakaling – Hero or Outlaw? A View from a Meranao Folk Song." *The Journal of Sophia Asian Studies* 27 (2009): 161-180.
- LaFeber, Walter. *America, Russia, and the Cold War, 1945-2006 – Tenth Edition*. Boston: McGraw-Hill, 2008.
- *The New Empire: An Interpretation of American Expansion, 1860-1898*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1963.
- Laurie, Clayton. "The Philippine Scouts: America's Colonial Army, 1899-1913." *Philippine Studies* 37.2 (1989): 174-191.
- Lawrimore, David Keoni. "Imperial Ambivalence: Gender, Discourse and Empire in Early Twentieth-Century Women's Travel Narratives of the Philippines." *Interventions* 17.4 (2015): 585-602.
- Lehning, James R. *European Colonialism Since 1700*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2013.
- Levine, Philippa. "Modernity, Medicine, and Colonialism: The Contagious Diseases Ordinances in Hong Kong and the Straits Settlements." *Positions* 6.3 (1998): 675-705.
- "States of Undress: Nakedness and the Colonial Imagination." *Victorian Studies* 50.2 (2008): 189-219.
- Leibsohn, Dana. "Dentro y Fuera de los Muros: Manila, Ethnicity, and Colonial Cartography." *Ethnohistory* 61.2 (2014): 229-251.
- Lieven, Dominic. *Empire: The Russian Empire and its Rivals*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2002.
- Linfield, Susie. *The Cruel Radiance: Photography and Political Violence*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2010.



- Linn, Brian M. *The Philippine War: 1899-1902*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 2000.
- *The U.S. Army and Counterinsurgency in the Philippine War, 1899-1902*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1989.
- Loeffler, Jane C. *The Architecture of Diplomacy: Building America's Embassies*. Princeton: Princeton Architectural Press, 2011.
- Lord, Carnes. *Proconsuls: Delegated Political-Military Leadership from Rome to America Today*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012.
- Love, Eric T. *Race Over Empire: Racism and U.S. Imperialism, 1865-1900*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2004.
- Lumba, Allan E.S. "Imperial Standards: Colonial Currencies, Racial Capacities, and Economic Knowledge During the Philippine-American War." *Diplomatic History* 0.0 (Advance Publication – 2014): 1-26.
- Lyndon, Irwin N. *Reporting Live: Articles and Letters from the 1904 St. Louis World's Fair*. Wyandotte: Gregath Company Inc., 2008.
- Mahoney, James. *Colonialism and Postcolonial Development: Spanish America in Comparative Perspective*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2010.
- Maier, Charles S. *Among Empires: American Ascendancy and its Predecessors*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2007.
- *Leviathan 2.0: Inventing Modern Statehood*. Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2014.
- Majul, Cesar Abid. "Islam and Philippine Society: The Writings of Cesar Abid Majul." *Asian Studies: Retrospective Issue 1* 46.1/2 (2010).
- *Muslims in the Philippines*. Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 1973.
- Makdisi, Ussama. *Artillery of Heaven: American Missionaries and the Failed Conversion of the Middle East*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2007.
- Makki, Fouad. "Culture and Agency in a Colonial Public Sphere: Religion and the Anti-Colonial Imagination in 1940s Eritrea." *Social History* 36.4 (2011): 418-442.
- Mangan, J.A. *'Manufactured' Masculinity: Making Imperial Manliness, Morality and Militarism*. New York: Routledge, 2012.

- Manuel, E. Arsenio. "A Survey of Philippine Folk Epics." *Asian Folklore Studies* 22 (1963): 1-76.
- Markus, Thomas A. *Buildings and Power: Freedom and Control in the Origin of Modern Building Types*. New York: Routledge, 1993.
- Marr, Timothy. *The Cultural Roots of American Islamicism*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006.
- Marriott, John. *The Other Empire: Metropolis, India and Progress in the Colonial Imagination*. Manchester and New York: Manchester University Press, 2003.
- Martin, Phyllis. *Leisure and Society in Colonial Brazzaville*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Mastura, Michael O. "A Short History of Cotabato City and its Historic Places." In *Cotabato City Guidebook*, edited by Simeon F. Millan, 5-25. General Santos City: Simeon F. Millan, 1979.
- *Muslim-Filipino Experience: A Collection of Essays*. Marawi City: Mindanao State University Research Center, 1982.
- Mathur, Saloni. *India by Design: Colonial History and Cultural Display*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2007.
- May, Glenn A. *Social Engineering and the Philippines: The Aims, Execution, and Impact of American Colonial Policy, 1900-1913*. Westport: Greenwood Press, 1980.
- McCormick, Thomas J. *America's Half-Century: United States Foreign Policy in the Cold War*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989.
- McCoy, Alfred W, editor. *An Anarchy of Families: State and Family in the Philippines*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 1998.
- "Fatal Florescence: Europe's Decolonization and America's Decline." In *Endless Empire: Spain's Retreat, Europe's Eclipse, America's Decline*, edited by Alfred W. McCoy, Josep M. Fradera, and Stephen Jacobson, 3-42. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2012.
- *Policing America's Empire: The United States, the Philippines, and the Rise of the Surveillance State*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009.
- McCoy, Alfred W., and Francisco A. Scarano, editors. *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009.

- McCoy, Alfred W., Josep M Fradera, and Stephen Jacobson, editors. *Endless Empire: Spain's Retreat, Europe's Eclipse, America's Decline*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2012.
- McCoy, Alfred W., Francisco A. Scarano, and Courtney Johnson, "On the Tropic of Cancer: Transitions and Transformations in the U.S. Imperial State." In *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, edited by Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano, 3-33. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009.
- McKenna, Rebecca Thinio. "American Imperial Pastoral: The Baguio Scheme and United States Designs of the Philippines, 1898-1921." PhD Dissertation, Yale University, 2010.
- McKenna, Thomas. *Muslim Rulers and Rebels: Everyday Politics and Armed Separatism in the Southern Philippines*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1998.
- McClintock, Anne. *Imperial Leather: Race, Gender, and Sexuality in the Colonial Contest*. New York: Routledge, 1995.
- McMahon, Robert J. *Colonialism and Cold War: The United States and the Struggle for Indonesian Independence, 1945-1949*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1981.
- Meléndez, A. Gabriel. *Hidden Chicano Cinema: Film Dramas in the Borderlands*. New Brunswick: Rutgers University Press, 2013.
- Mendoza, Victor Roman Reyes. "The Erotics of 'White Love': Or, Queering Philippine-U.S. Imperial Relations." PhD Dissertation, University of California, Berkeley, 2007.
- Merrill, Dennis. *Negotiating Paradise: U.S. Tourism and Empire in Twentieth-Century Europe*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2009.
- Merry, Sally Engle. "Colonial Law and its Uncertainties." *Law and History Review* 28.4 (2010): 1067-1071.
- Milligan, Jeffrey Ayala. "Democratization or Neocolonialism? The Education of Muslims Under US Military Occupation, 1903-1920." *History of Education* 33.4 (2004): 451-467.
- "Faith in School: Educational Policy Responses to Ethno-Religious Conflict in the Southern Philippines, 1935-1985." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 36.1 (2005): 67-86.
- *Islamic Identity, Postcoloniality, and Educational Policy: Schooling and Ethno-Religious Conflict in the Southern Philippines*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2005.
- "The Prophet and the Engineer Meet Under the Mango Tree: Leadership, Education, and Conflict in the Southern Philippines." *Educational Policy* 24.1 (2010): 28-51.
- Mills, Sara. *Gender and Colonial Space*. Manchester: Manchester University Press, 2005.

- Montemayor, Michael Schuck. *Captain Herman Leopold Schuck: The Saga of a German Sea Captain in 19<sup>th</sup> Century Sulu-Sulawesi Seas*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 2006.
- Murphy, Erin Leigh. "Anti Imperialism During the Philippine American War: Protesting 'Criminal Aggression' and 'Benevolent Assimilation.'" PhD Dissertation, University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, 2009.
- Neill, Stephen C. "Charles Henry Brent." *Canadian Journal of Theology* 8.3 (1962): 153-171.
- Ngozi-Brown, Scot. "African-American Soldiers and Filipinos: Racial Imperialism, Jim Crow and Social Relations." *Journal of Negro History* 82.1 (1997): 42-53.
- Ninkovich, Drank. *Global Dawn: The Cultural Foundation of American Internationalism, 1865-1900*. Harvard: Harvard University Press, 2009.
- Nobles, Gregory H. *American Frontiers: Cultural Encounters and Continental Conquest*. New York: Hill & Wang, 1997.
- Non, Domingo M. "Moro Piracy During the Spanish Period and its Impact." *Southeast Asian Studies* 30.4 (1993): 401-419.
- Norbeck, Mark D. "The Legacy of Charles Henry Brent." *International Bulletin of Missionary Research* 20.4 (1996): 163-168.
- Norcia, Megan A. "Playing Empire: Children's Parlor Games, Home Theatricals, and Improvisational Play." *Children's Literature Association Quarterly* 29.1 (2004): 294-314.
- O'Brien, Patty. *The Pacific Muse: Exotic Femininity and the Colonial Pacific*. Seattle: University of Washington Press, 2006.
- Ochonu, Moses. "African Colonial Economies: Land, Labor, and Livelihoods." *History Compass* 11.2 (2013): 91-103.
- Oliveros, Renato T. "Islam in the Moro-American War (1899-1913)." PhD Dissertation, Temple University, 2005.
- Onuf, Peter S. *Jefferson's Empire: The Language of American Nationhood*. Charlottesville and London: University of Virginia Press, 2000.
- Osterhammel, Jürgen. *Colonialism: A Theoretical Overview*. Princeton: Markus Wiener Publishers, 2005.
- *The Transformation of the World: A Global History of the Nineteenth Century*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2014.

- Pagden, Anthony. *The Burdens of Empire, 1539 to the Present*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2015.
- Paterson, Thomas G. *Soviet-American Confrontation: Postwar Reconstruction and the Origins of the Cold War*. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 1973.
- Parsons, Timothy H. *The Rule of Empires: Those Who Built Them, Those Who Endured Them, and Why They Always Fall*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2010.
- Pante, Michael D. "A Collision of Masculinities: Men, Modernity and Urban Transportation in American-Colonial Manila." *Asian Studies Review* 38.2 (2014): 253-273.
- Parezo, Nancy J., and Don D. Fowler. *Anthropology Goes to the Fair: The 1904 Louisiana Purchase Exposition*. Lincoln and London: University of Nebraska Press, 2007.
- Parsons, Katsy Jurika. "A Life in Moroland: A Memoir of Blanche Walker Jurika by Her Daughter – Part 1." *Bulletin of the American Historical Collection* (January-March 2004): 77-95.
- "A Life in Moroland: A Memoir of Blanche Walker Jurika by Her Daughter – Part 2." *Bulletin of the American Historical Collection* (April-June 2005): 31-41.
- Paulet, Anne. "To Change the World: The Use of American Indian Education in the Philippines." *History of Education Quarterly* 47.2 (2007): 173-202.
- Paxton, Nancy L. *Writing Under the Raj: Gender, Race, and Rape in the British Colonial Imagination, 1830-1947*. New Brunswick: Rutgers University Press, 1999.
- Pershing, John J. *My Life Before the War, 1860-1917: A Memoir*. Edited by John T. Greenwood. Lexington: The University of Kentucky Press, 2013.
- Philbrick, Nathaniel. *Sea of Glory: America's Voyage of Discovery, The U.S. Exploring Expedition, 1838-1842*. New York: Penguin, 2003.
- Pope, Steven W. "Rethinking Sport, Empire, and American Exceptionalism." *Sport History Review* 38 (2007): 92-120.
- Porter, Bernard. *Empire and Superempire: Britain, America and the World*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2006.
- Pradhan, Queeny. "Empire in the Hills: The Making of Hill Stations in Colonial India." *Studies in History* 23.1 (2007): 33-91.
- Prakash, Gyan. *After Colonialism: Imperial Histories and Postcolonial Displacements*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1995.

- Preston, Andrew. *Sword of the Spirit, Shield of the Faith: Religion in American War and Diplomacy*. New York: Knopf, 2012.
- Protschky, Susie. *Images of the Tropics; Environment and Visual Culture in Colonial Indonesia*. Leiden: KITLV Press, 2011.
- "Seductive Landscapes: Gender, Race and European Representations of Nature in the Dutch East Indies during the Late Colonial Period." *Gender & History* 20.2 (2008): 372-398.
- "The Colonial Table: Food, Culture and Dutch Identity in Colonial Indonesia." *Australian Journal of Politics and History* 54.3 (2008): 346-357.
- Pruitt, James Herman. "Leonard Wood and the American Empire." PhD Dissertation, Texas A&M University, 2011.
- Quigley, Tom. "The Bells of Balangiga." *Commonweal* 142.1 (2015): 8-9.
- Qureshi, Sadiah. *Peoples on Parade: Exhibitions, Empire, and Anthropology in Nineteenth-Century Britain*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2011.
- Rafael, Vincente L. "Colonial Domesticity: White Women and United States Rule in the Philippines." *American Literature* 67.4 (1995): 639-666.
- "The War of Translation: Colonial Education, American English, and Tagalog Slang in the Philippines." *Journal of Asian Studies* 74.2 (2015): 283-302.
- *White Love and Other Events in Filipino History*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2000.
- Rajan, Balachandra, and Elizabeth Sauer, editors. *Imperialisms: Historical and Literary Investigations, 1500-1900*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2004.
- Reed, Robert Ronald. *City of Pines: The Origins of Baguio as Colonial Hill Station and Regional Capital*. Berkeley: Center for South and Southeast Asian Studies, University of California, 1976.
- Reilly, Brandon Joseph. "Collecting the People: Textualizing Epics in Philippine History from the Sixteenth Century to the Twenty-First." PhD Dissertation, University of California, Los Angeles, 2013.
- Reinhard, Wolfgang. *A Short History of Colonialism*. Manchester: Manchester University Press, 2011.
- Reinkowski, Maurus, and Gregor Thum, editors. *Helpless Imperialists: Imperial Failure, Fear and Radicalization*. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 2013.

- Renda, Mary A. *Taking Haiti: Military Occupation and the Culture of U.S. Imperialism, 1915-1940*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2001.
- Resurrección, Babette P. "Engineering the Philippine Uplands: Gender, Ethnicity, and Scientific Forestry in the American Colonial Period." *Critical Asian Studies* 31.1 (1999): 13-30.
- Reyes, Raquel A.G. "Environmental Thinking and the Question of Disease Causation in Late Spanish Philippines." *Journal of the History of Medicine and Allied Sciences* 69.4 (2014): 554-579.
- Rifkind, David. "Gondar: Architecture and Urbanism for Italy's Fascist Empire." *Journal of the Society of Architectural Historians* 70.4 (2011): 492-511.
- Rice, Mark. *Dean Worcester's Fantasy Islands: Photography, Film, and the Colonial Philippines*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2014.
- Roberts, Hilary. "War Trophy Photographs: Proof or Pornography?" In *Picturing Atrocity: Photography in Crisis*, edited by Geoffrey Batchen, Mick Gidley, Nancy K. Miller, and Jay Prosser, 200-208. London: Reaktion Books, 2012.
- Robin, Ron Theodore. *Enclaves of America: The Rhetoric of American Political Architecture Abroad, 1900-1965*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1992.
- Rogers, Charlotte. *Jungle Fever: Exploring Madness and Medicine in Twentieth-Century Tropical Narratives*. Nashville: Vanderbilt University Press, 2012.
- Rogers, Randal. "Colonial Imitation and Racial Insubordination: Photography at the Louisiana Purchase Exhibition of 1904." *History of Photography* 32.4 (2008): 347-367.
- Rosenberg, Emily S. "Considering Borders." In *Explaining the History of American Foreign Relations*, edited by Michael J. Hogan and Thomas J. Paterson, 176-193. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2004.
- *Financial Missionaries to the World: The Politics and Culture of Dollar Diplomacy, 1900-1930*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1999.
- *Spreading the American Dream*. New York: Hill and Wang, 1982.
- "Transnational Currents in a Shrinking World." In *A World Connecting, 1870-1945*, edited by Emily Rosenberg, 815-996. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2012.
- "Turning to Culture." In *Close Encounters of Empire: Writing the Cultural History of U.S.-Latin American Relations*, edited by Gilbert M. Joseph, Catherine C. LeGrand, and Ricardo D. Salvatore, 497-514. Durham: Duke University Press, 1998.

- "U.S. Mass Consumerism in Transnational Perspective." In *America in the World: The Historiography of American Foreign Relations Since 1941, Second Edition*, edited by Frank Costigliola and Michael J. Hogan, 307-337. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2013.
- Rosenberg, Emily S., and Shanon Fitzpatrick, editors. *Body and Nation: The Global Realms of U.S. Body Politics in the Twentieth Century*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2014.
- Roma-Sianturi, Dinah. "At Home in the Cordillera Wilds: Colonial Domesticity in the Letters of Maud Huntley Jenks, 1901-1903." *Asia-Pacific Social Science Review* 7.1 (2007): 59-74.
- Rydell, Robert. *All the World's a Fair: Visions of Empire at American International Expositions, 1876-1916*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1985.
- Saada, Emmanuelle. *Empire's Children: Race, Filiation, and Citizenship in the French Colonies*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2012.
- Salesa, Damon Ieremia. *Racial Crossings: Race, Intermarriage, and the Victorian British Empire*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2011.
- Salman, Michael. *The Embarrassment of Slavery: Controversies over Bondage and Nationalism in the American Colonial Philippines*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2003.
- "'The Prison That Makes Men Free': The Iwahig Penal Colony and the Simulcra of the American State in the Philippines." In *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, edited by Alfred McCoy and Francisco Scarano, 116-130. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2007, 116-130.
- Said, Edward. *Culture and Imperialism*. New York: Vintage, 1993.
- *Orientalism*. London: Penguin Press, 1977.
- Samuel, Moses and Mahmud Hasan Khan. "Construction of Nationhood through Education in Malaya: Revisiting the Barnes and Fenn-Wu Reports." *Asia-Pacific Journal of Education* 33.3 (2013): 249-260.
- Santiago-Valles, Kevin. "American Penal Forms and Colonial Spanish Custodial-Regulatory Practices in Fin de Siècle Puerto Rico." In *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, edited by Alfred McCoy and Francisco Scarano, 87-96. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2007.
- Saunier, Pierre-Yves. *Transnational History*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2013.



- Sato, Masayuki. "Imagined Peripheries: The World and its Peoples in Japanese Cartographic Imagination." *Diogenes* 44.173 (1996): 119-145
- Savitt, Todd L. *Medicine and Slavery: The Diseases and Health Care of Blacks in Antebellum Virginia*. Champaign: University of Illinois Press, 1978.
- Schueller, Malini Johar. "Colonial Management, Collaborative Dissent: English Readers in the Philippines and Camilo Osias, 1905-1932." *Journal of Asian American Studies* 17.2 (2014): 161-198.
- Sen, Indira. "Colonial Domesticities, Contentious Interactions: Ayahs, Wet-Nurses and Memsahibs in Colonial India." *Indian Journal of Gender Studies* 16.3 (2009): 299-328.
- Sen, Siddhartha. "Between Dominance, Dependence, Negotiation, and Compromise: European Architecture and Urban Planning Practices in Colonial India." *Journal of Planning History* 9.4 (2010): 203-231.
- Seth, Sanjay. *Subject Lessons: The Western Education of Colonial India*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2007.
- Schumacher, Frank. "Colonization through Education: A Comparative Exploration of Ideologies, Practices, and Cultural Memories of 'Aboriginal Schools' in the United States and Canada." *Zeitschrift für Kanada-Studien* 26.2 (2006): 97-117.
- "Creating Imperial Spaces: Baguio and the American Empire in the Philippines, 1898-1920." In *Taking Up Space: New Approaches to American History*, edited by Anke Ortlepp and Christopher Ribbat, 59-75. Trier: WVT, 2004.
- "Cultural Turn in the History of US Foreign Relations." In *The Oxford Encyclopedia of American Military and Diplomatic History*, edited by Timothy J. Lynch, 281-286. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2013.
- "Kulturtransfer und Empire: Britisches Vorbild und US-Amerikanische Kolonialherrschaft auf den Philippinen im fruehen 20 Jahrhundert." In *Kolonialgeschichten: Regionale Perspektiven auf ein globales Phaenomen*, edited by Claudia Kraft, Alf Luedtke, and Jürgen Martschukat, 306-327. Frankfurt: Campus Verlag, 2010.
- "'Marked Severities': The Debate Over Torture During America's Conquest of the Philippines, 1899-1902." *Amerikastudien* 51.4 (2006): 475-498.
- "On the Frontier of Civilization: Deliberations of Exceptionalism and Environmental Determinism in the Creation of America's Tropical Empire, 1890-1910." In *Frontiers and Boundaries in U.S. History*. Edited by Cornelius A. van Minnen and Sylvia L. Hilton, 127-142. Amsterdam: VU University Press, 2004.

- "The American Way of Empire: National Tradition and Transatlantic Adaptation in America's Search for Imperial Identity, 1898-1910." *GHI Bulletin* 31 (2002): 35-50.
- "The United States: Empire as a Way of Life?" In *The Age of Empires*, edited by Robert Aldrich, 278-320. London: Thames & Hudson, 2007.
- Schumacher, John N. *Growth and Decline: Essays on Philippine Church History*. Quezon City: Ateneo University Press, 2009
- "Syncretism in Philippine Catholicism: Its Historical Causes." *Philippine Studies* 32.3 (1984): 251-272.
- Schult, Volker. "Sulu and Germany in the Late Nineteenth Century." *Philippine Studies* 48.1 (2000): 80-108.
- Shellum, Brian G. *Black Officer in a Buffalo Soldier Regiment: The Military Career of Charles Young*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2010.
- Sichrovsky, Harry. *Ferdinand Blumentritt: An Austrian Life for the Philippines*. Manila: National Historic Institute, 1987.
- Singh, D.S. Ranjit. *The Making of Sabah, 1865-1941: The Dynamics of Indigenous Society*. Kuala Lumpur: University of Malaya Press, 2000.
- Singh, Rashna B. *Goodly is Our Heritage: Children's Literature, Empire, and the Certitude of Character*. Washington: Scarecrow Press, 2004.
- Singaravelou, Pierre. "The Institutionalisation of 'Colonial Geography' in France, 1880-1940." *Journal of Historical Geography* 37.2 (2011): 149-157.
- Slotkin, Richard. *The Fatal Environment: The Myth of the Frontier in the Age of Industrialization, 1800-1890*. Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Press, 1985.
- Smallman-Raynor, Matthew, and Andrew Cliff. "The Philippines Insurrection and the 1902-4 Cholera Epidemic, Part I: Epidemiological Diffusion Processes in War." *Journal of Historical Geography* 24.1 (1998): 69-80.
- "The Philippines Insurrection and the 1902-4 Cholera Epidemic, Part II: Diffusion Patterns in War and Peace." *Journal of Historical Geography* 24.2 (1998): 188-210.
- Smith, Michelle J. *Empire in British Girls' Literature and Culture: Imperial Girls, 1880-1915*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2011.
- Sneider, Allison L. *Suffragists in an Imperial Age: U.S. Expansion and the Woman Question, 1870-1929*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2008.

- Soderstrom, Mark. "Family Trees and Timber Rights: Albert E. Jenks, Americanization, and the Rise of Anthropology at the University of Minnesota." *The Journal of the Gilded Age and Progressive Era* 3.2 (2004): 176-204.
- Söldenwagner, Philippa. *Spaces of Negotiation: European Settlement and Settlers in German East Africa, 1900-1914*. Munich: Martin Meidenbauer Verlag, 2006.
- Stanton, William Ragan. *The Great United States Exploring Expedition of 1838-1942*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1975.
- Steinmetz, George. *The Devil's Handwriting: Precoloniality and the German Colonial State in Qingdao, Samoa, and Southwest Africa*. Chicago and London: University of Chicago Press, 2007.
- Steinmetz, George, and Julia Hell. "The Visual Archive of Colonialism: Germany and Namibia." *Public Culture* 18.1 (2006): 147-183.
- Stewart, Christine. "Men Behaving Badly: Sodomy Cases in the Colonial Courts of Papua New Guinea." *Journal of Pacific History* 43.1 (2008): 77-93.
- Stoler, Ann Laura. *Along the Archival Grain: Epistemic Anxieties and Colonial Common Sense*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2009.
- *Carnal Knowledge and Imperial Power: Race and the Intimate in Colonial Rule*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002.
- "Intimidations of Empire: Predicaments of the Tactile and Unseen." In *Haunted by Empire: Geographies of Intimacy in Colonial North America*, edited by Ann Laura Stoler, 1-22. Durham: Duke University Press, 2006.
- *Race and the Education of Desire: Foucault's History of Sexuality and the Colonial Order of Things*. Durham: Duke University Press, 1995.
- Stoler, Ann Laura, editor. *Haunted by Empire: Geographies of Intimacy in North American History*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2006.
- Streeby, Shelley S. *American Sensations: Class, Empire, and the Production of Popular Culture*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2002.
- Stuart, John. "Beyond Sovereignty? Protestant Missions, Empire and Transnationalism, 1890-1950." In *Beyond Sovereignty: Britain, Empire and Transnationalism, c. 1880-1950*, edited by Kevin Grant, Philippa Levine and Frank Trentmann, 103-125. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007.
- Sullivan, Rodney J. *Exemplar of Americanism: The Philippine Career of Dean C. Worcester*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1991.

- Tai, Eika. "The Discourse of Intermarriage in Colonial Taiwan." *The Journal of Japanese Studies* 40.1 (2014): 87-116.
- Tan, Samuel K. *Decolonization and Filipino Muslim Identity*. Quezon City: University of the Philippines Department of History, 1989.
- *Selected Essays on the Filipino Muslims*. Marawi City: Mindanao State University Research Center, 1982.
- *Sulu Under American Military Rule, 1899-1913*. Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 1968.
- *The Critical Decade, 1921-1930*. Quezon City: College of Social Science and Philosophy, University of the Philippines, 1993.
- *The Filipino Muslim Armed Struggle*. Manila: The Filipinas Foundation Inc., 1977.
- *The Muslim South and Beyond*. Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 2010.
- Tarling, Nicholas. "Further Notes on the Historiography of British Borneo." *Borneo Research Bulletin* 36 (2005): 213-228.
- *Sulu and Sabah: A Study of British Policy Towards the Philippines and North Borneo from the Late Eighteenth Century*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1978.
- "The Establishment of Colonial Regimes." In *The Cambridge History of Southeast Asia, Volume II – The Nineteenth and Twentieth Centuries*, edited by Nicholas Tarling, 5-78. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- Teng, Emma Jinhua. *Taiwan's Imagined Geography: Chinese Colonial Travel Writing and Pictures, 1683-1895*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2006.
- Thomas, Martin. *Violence and Colonial Order: Police, Workers and Protest in the European Colonial Empires, 1918-1940*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012.
- Thomas, Megan C. *Orientalists, Propagandists, and Ilustrados: Filipino Scholarship and the End of Spanish Colonialism*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2012.
- Thomas, Nicholas. *Colonialism's Culture: Anthropology, Travel, and Government*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1994.
- *Islanders: The Pacific in the Age of Empire*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2011.
- Thomas, Ralph Benjamin. "Muslims but Filipinos: The Integration of Philippine Muslims, 1917-1946." PhD Dissertation, University of Pennsylvania, 1971.

- Thompson, Krista. *An Eye for the Tropics: Tourism, Photography, and Framing the Caribbean Picturesque*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2006.
- Thompson, Lanny. *Imperial Archipelago: Representation and Rule in the Insular Territories Under U.S. Dominion after 1898*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 2010.
- Thompson, Wayne Wray. "Governors of the Moro Province: Wood, Bliss, and Pershing in the Southern Philippines, 1903-1913." PhD Dissertation, University of California, San Diego, 1975.
- Torres, Cristina Evangelista. *The Americanization of Manila, 1898-1921*. Quezon City: The University of the Philippines Press, 2010.
- Trumbell IV, George R. *An Empire of Facts: Colonial Power, Cultural Knowledge, and Islam in Algeria, 1870-1914*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009.
- Tuason, Julie A. "The Ideology of Empire in National Geographic Magazine's Coverage of the Philippines, 1898-1908." *Geographical Review* 89.1 (1999): 34-53.
- Tyrrell, Ian. "American Exceptionalism in an Age of International History." *American Historical Review* 96.4 (1991): 1031-1055.
- *Crisis of the Wasteful Nation: Empire and Conservation in Theodore Roosevelt's America*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2015.
- *Reforming the World: The Creation of America's Moral Empire*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2010.
- *Transnational Nation: United States History in Global Perspective Since 1789*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007.
- "The Regulation of Alcohol and Other Drugs in a Colonial Context: United States Policy Towards the Philippines, c. 1898-1910." *Contemporary Drug Problems* 35 (2008): 539-569.
- *Woman's World / Woman's Empire: the Woman's Christian Temperance Union in International Perspective, 1880-1930*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1991.
- Tyrell, Ian, and Jay Sexton, editors. *Empire's Twin: U.S. Anti-Imperialism from the Founding Era to the Age of Terrorism*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2015.
- Vann, Michael G. "Of Pirates, Postcards, and Public Beheadings: The Pedagogic Execution in French Colonial Indochina." *Historical Reflections* 36.2 (2010): 39-58.

- Vaughan, Christopher A. "Ogling Igorots: The Politics and Commerce of Exhibiting Cultural Otherness, 1898-1913." In *Freakery: Cultural Spectacles of the Extraordinary Body*, edited by Rosemarie Garland Thomson, 219-233. New York: New York University Press, 1996.
- Wade, Geoff. "An Early Age of Commerce in Southeast Asia, 900-1300 CE." *Journal of Southeast Asian Studies* 40.2 (2009): 221-265.
- Warren, James Francis. "Scientific Superman: Father José Algué, Jesuit Meteorology, and the Philippines Under American Rule, 1897-1924." In *Colonial Crucible: Empire in the Making of the Modern American State*, edited by Alfred W. McCoy and Francisco A. Scarano, 508-519. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2009.
- "The Structure of Slavery in the Sulu Zone in the Late Eighteenth and Nineteenth Centuries." *Slavery and Abolition* 24.2 (2003): 111-128.
- *The Sulu Zone: The Dynamics of External Trade, Slavery, and Ethnicity in the Transformation of a Southeast-Asian Maritime State*. Singapore: National University of Singapore Press, 2007.
- Walsh, Thomas P. *Tin Pan Alley and the Philippines: American Songs of War and Love, 1898-1946, A Resource Guide*. Lanham: Scarecrow Press, 2013.
- Walther, Daniel J. "Sex, Race and Empire: White Male Sexuality and the 'Other' in Germany's Colonies, 1894-1914." *German Studies Review* 33.1 (2010): 45-71.
- Walther, Karine V. *Sacred Interests: The United States and the Islamic World, 1821-1921*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2015.
- Watt, Carey A., and Michael Mann, editors. *Civilizing Missions in Colonial and Postcolonial Southeast Asia*. London: Anthem Press, 2011.
- Watts, Edward. *In this Remote Country: French Colonial Culture in the Anglo-American Imagination, 1780-1860*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2006.
- Weaver, Adam. "Tourism and the Military: Pleasure and the War Economy." *Annals of Tourism Research* 38.2 (2011): 672-689.
- Welch Jr., Richard E. "American Atrocities in the Philippines: The Indictment and the Response." *Pacific Historical Review* 43.2 (1974): 233-253.
- Wendt, Reinhard, and Jürgen G. Nagel. "Southeast Asia and Oceania." In *Empires and Encounters, 1350-1750*, edited by Wolfgang Reinhard, 555-738. Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2015.

- Wernstedt, Frederick L. and Paul D Simkins. "Migrations and Settlement of Mindanao." *Journal of Asian Studies* 25.1 (1965): 83-103.
- Werth, Nicolas. *Cannibal Island: Death in a Siberian Gulag*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2007.
- Wertz, Daniel J.P. "Idealism, Imperialism, and Internationalism: Opium Politics in the Colonial Philippines, 1898-1925." *Modern Asian Studies* 47.2 (2013): 467-499.
- Wesling, Meg. *Empire's Proxy: American Literature and U.S. Imperialism in the Philippines*. New York: New York University Press, 2011.
- Wexler, Laura. *Tender Violence: Domestic Visions in an Age of U.S. Imperialism*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2000.
- Whitehead, Clive. *Colonial Educators: The British Indian and Colonial Education Service, 1858-1983*. London: I.B. Tauris, 2003.
- Wilder, Gary. *The French Imperial Nation-State: Negritude and Colonial Humanism Between the Two World Wars*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2005.
- Wiener, Martin J. *An Empire on Trial: Race, Murder, and Justice Under British Rule, 1870-1935*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2009.
- Williams, Walter L. "United States Indian Policy and the Debate over Philippine Annexation: Implications for the Origins of American Imperialism." *The Journal of American History* 66.4 (1980): 810-831.
- Williams, William Appleman. *The Tragedy of American Diplomacy*. Cleveland: World Publishing Company, 1959.
- Winichakul, Thongchai. *Siam Mapped: A History of the Geo-Body of a Nation* Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press, 1994.
- Wolford, Andrew, Jeff Benvenuto, and Alexander Laban Hinton, editors. *Colonial Genocide in Indigenous North America*. Durham: Duke University Press, 2014.
- Woollacott, Angela. *Gender and Empire*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2006.
- Worth, Aaron. *Imperial Media: Colonial Networks and Information Technologies in the British Literary Imagination, 1857-1918*. Columbus: The Ohio State University Press, 2014.
- Wright, L.R. *The Origins of British Borneo*. Hong Kong: Hong Kong University Press, 1970.

- Wrobel, David M. *Global West, American Frontier: Travel, Empire, and Exceptionalism from Manifest Destiny to the Great Depression*. Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press, 2013.
- Yegar, Moshe. *Between Integration and Secession: The Muslim Communities of the Southern Philippines, Southern Thailand, and Western Burma / Myanmar*. Oxford: Lexington Books, 2002.
- Yu, Lidia N., and Patricia Irene Dacudao. "Visible Japanese and Invisible Filipino: Narratives of the Development of Davao, 1900s and 1930s." *Philippine Studies* 63.1 (2015): 101-129.
- Zantop, Susanne. *Colonial Fantasies: Conquest, Family, and Nation in Precolonial Germany, 1770-1870*. Durham: Duke University Press, 1997.
- Zimmerman, Andrew. *Alabama in Africa: Booker T. Washington, the German Empire, and the Globalization of the New South*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2010.
- Zinoman, Peter. *The Colonial Bastille: A History of Imprisonment in Vietnam, 1862-1940*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2001.
- Zwick, Jim, editor. *Mark Twain's Weapons of Satire: Anti-Imperialist Writings on the Philippine-American War*. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 1992.



# Curriculum Vitae

## EDUCATION

---

### Ph.D., History

- University of Western Ontario
- 2010–2016
- Faculty Supervisor: Professor Frank Schumacher
- Dissertation Title: “Civilizational Imperatives: American Colonial Culture in the Islamic Philippines, 1899-1942”

### M.A., History

- University of Western Ontario
- 2007–2008
- Faculty Supervisor: Professor Robert Ventresca
- Cognate Title: “An Ideal Administrator: Nikolai Ezhov, Joseph Stalin, and the Great Terror”

### B.A., History

- Dalhousie University
- 2003–2006

## ACADEMIC AND RELATED PROFESSIONAL EXPERIENCE

---

### Co-Instructor

- Department of History – King’s University College
- History 1403E: Totalitarianism
- November 2015 - Present

### Graduate Teaching Assistant

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- History 1601E: History of East Asia
- Course Coordinator: Professor Cary Takagaki
- September 2015 - Present

### Graduate Student Assistantship

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- History 2149B: Medieval Lives
- Course Coordinator: Professor Eona Karakacili
- January 2015 – May 2015

### Marking Assistant

- Department of History – King’s University College
- History 1403E: Totalitarianism in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century
- Course Coordinator: Professor Robert Ventresca

- September 2012 – Present

#### **Research Assistant – Digital Lab Manager**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- Digital Lab
- Supervisor: Professor Bill Turkel
- September 2012 – May 2014

#### **Researcher and Designer – Tecumseh Lies Here Augmented Reality Game**

- SSHRC-funded project; Assisted in design of augmented reality workbook
- Supervisors: Professor Robert MacDougall and Timothy Compeau
- Summer 2013

#### **Marking Assistant**

- Department of History – Huron University College
- History 2701E: Patterns and Perspectives in World History
- Course Coordinator: Professor Geoff Read
- September 2012 – May 2013

#### **Research Assistant – History at Play**

- SSHRC-funded project investigating the use of alternate and augmented reality in classrooms
- Supervisors: Professor Robert MacDougall and Timothy Compeau

#### **Graduate Teaching Assistant**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- History 1401E: Modern Europe, 1715 to the Present
- Course Coordinator: Professor Pierre Reynard
- University of Western Ontario Graduate Teaching Award Nominee
- September 2010 – May 2012

#### **Graduate Teaching Assistant**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- History 2606E: Introduction to Islamic History and Civilization
- Course Coordinator: Professor Maya Shatzmiller
- September 2007 – May 2008

#### **English Teacher**

- English Storm Summer Camp – residential training program
- Ulaanbaatar, Mongolia
- Summer 2007

#### **Researcher**

- Genealogical project mapping the lives of African-Canadians in the Hamilton area
- City of Hamilton – Culture Division
- Supervisor: Anna Bradford
- November 2006 – February 2007

**Web Database Content Editor and Researcher**

- Project funded by Canada's Digital Collections Initiative, Industry Canada
- Project Director: Dr. Mary Anderson
- September 2002 – February 2003

**ACADEMIC AWARDS**

---

**Harris Steele Travel Fund Award**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- April 2014

**Doctoral Fellowship**

- Social Sciences and Humanities Research Council
- June 2013 – June 2014

**Western Graduate Research Scholarship**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- September 2010 – August 2014

**Ivie Cornish Memorial Fellowship**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- April 2012

**University of Western Ontario Ph.D. Entrance Scholarship**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- September 2010

**Western Graduate Research Scholarship**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- September 2007 – August 2008

**Dean's List Award**

- Faculty of Arts and Social Sciences – Dalhousie University
- January 2005 – August 2006

**PUBLICATIONS**

---

**“The Moro Problem’: Race, Religion, and American Colonial Empire in the Southern Philippines, 1899-1939.”** In *Empires and Nations from the Eighteenth to the Twentieth Century, Volume 2*, edited by Antonello Biagini and Giovanna Motta, 36-45. Newcastle-upon-Tyne: Cambridge Scholars Publishing, 2014.

---

## REVIEWS

---

### **Sacred Interests: The United States and the Islamic World, 1821-1921**

- Author: Karine V. Walther
- Reviewed for: H-Empire
- Forthcoming: Winter 2015
- Review Editor: Charles Reed

### **Ethnography from the Mission Field: The Hoffmann Collection of Cultural Knowledge**

- Author: Annekie Joubert
- Reviewed for: Intinerario
- December 2015
- Review Editor: Matthew Cook

### **Empires and Encounters, 1350-1750**

- Editor: Wolfgang Reinhard
- Reviewed for: H-Empire
- Forthcoming: Winter 2015
- Review Editor: Charles Reed

### **Wendell Fertig and His Guerilla Forces in the Philippines**

- Author: Kent Holmes
- Reviewed for: H-War
- September 2015
- Book Review Editor: Margaret Sankey

## CONFERENCE PRESENTATIONS AND PUBLIC LECTURES

---

### **“Through the Instrumentality of Modern Mohammedanism’: Looking Towards Constantinople in the Islamic Philippines, 1899-1913”**

- Panel Organizer: ‘Imperial Reciprocities: Strategies of Rule and Knowledge Transfer in American Foreign Relations, c. 1898-1914
- The Society for Historians of American Foreign Relations Annual Meeting
- University of San Diego
- Upcoming – June 2016

### **“Colonial Antecedents: Spain and the United States in the Islamic Philippines, 1899-1913”**

- Global History: Eroding the Barricades of Historical Interpretation
- Graduate Student Global History Conference
- Department of History – Tufts University
- Upcoming - March 2016

### **“Imagining the Moro: Ethnographic and Geographic Fantasies on the Colonial Frontier”**

- Disentangling Empire: The United States and the World

- The Graduate Conference in U.S. History
- Department of History – University of Michigan
- May 2015

**“Confusions and Contradictions: Wilsonian Internationalism and the Politics of Imperialism in Sulu Province, 1918-1939”**

- Empires and Nations from the 18<sup>th</sup> to the 20<sup>th</sup> Century
- University of Rome, Sapienza
- June 2013

**“Photography and Mass Violence: Reflections on the Theory, History, and Typology of the Violent Image”**

- The Bruce McCaffrey Memorial Graduate Seminar Series
- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- January 2013

**“‘The Moro Problem’: Race, Religion, and American Colonial Empire in the Southern Philippines.”**

- From Here to There: Change, Travel, and Transformation
- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- September 2012

**“‘The Assimilation of the Moro as a Race will be Impossible’: Race, Spectacle, and the Transmission of Imperial Knowledge at the 1904 St. Louis World’s Fair”**

- Deception: The 12<sup>th</sup> Annual East Asian Studies Graduate Conference
- Department of East Asian Studies – University of Toronto
- March 2012

## **GUEST LECTURES**

---

**“Visuality, Violence, and Public Space”**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- History 9808a: Digital History
- November 2015

**“Late Stalinism, 1945-1956”**

- Department of History – King’s University College
- History 1403E: Totalitarianism in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century
- March 2015

**“Mass Violence and Modern History”**

- Department of History – Huron University College
- History 1801E: Major Issues in World History
- February 2015

**“Looking and Looking Away: Photography and Mass Violence”**

- Department of History – University of Western Ontario
- History 9831A: The Killing Fields: A Global History of Mass Violence
- November 2013

**“American Colonial Empire, 1898-1945”**

- Department of History – Huron University College
- History 2301E: The United States, Colonial Period to the Present
- January 2013

**“The Global Impact of 9/11”**

- Global Studies Department – Wilfrid Laurier University
- Global Studies 101: Introduction to Global Studies
- November 2012

## **ACADEMIC AFFILIATIONS / MEMBERSHIPS**

---

**Middle East and North Africa Research Group (MENARG)**

- An interdisciplinary group dedicated to research on Islamic topics and related fields
- Director: Professor Maya Shatzmiller
- Summer 2012 – Present

**American Historical Association**

- Current Member

**The Society for Historians of American Foreign Relations**

- Current Member

## **RESEARCH AND TEACHING INTERESTS**

---

- The United States in the World
- Colonial Empires and Imperialism
- Transnational History
- Visuality and Mass Violence
- Comparative Genocide Studies
- Intellectuals and State Violence
- Colonialism in Southeast Asia
- Islam in Southeast Asia
- Digital History

## **CURRENT PROJECTS**

---

**“Civilizational Imperatives: American Colonial Culture in the Islamic Philippines, 1899-1942”**

- Dissertation

**“Tropical Idylls: Charles Ivins and the Maintenance of Anglo-American Leisure Space in Colonial Zamboanga”**

- Article, in progress

**“Shifting Frontiers: Understanding the Philippines’ Muslim South Against the Backdrop of the American West”**

- Article, in progress

**“‘Kingly Prerogatives’ and ‘Benevolent Intentions’: The United States, Spain, and Colonial Legacies in the Islamic Philippines, 1899-1920**

- Article (w/ Gregg French), in Progress

## **LANGUAGES**

---

- English (Native Speaker)
- Spanish (Reading)
- French (Reading)